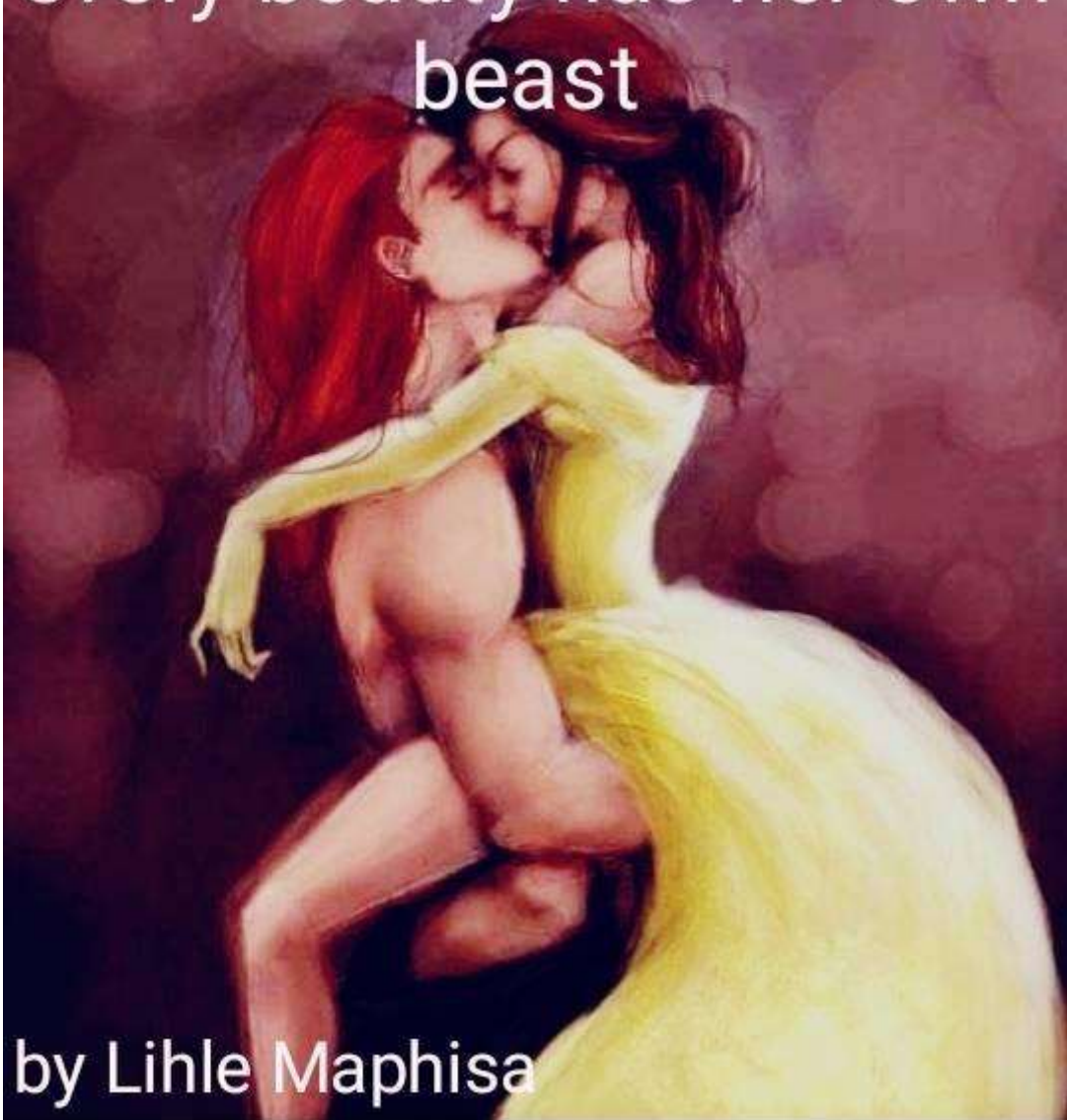


every beauty has her own  
beast



by Lihle Maphisa



This Novel provide it

Every beauty has her own beast

EVERY BEAUTY HAS HER OWN BEAST.

AMARA MCKENZIE.

I kicked off my blankets and took my glasses from my bed table arising for a boring and normal day ahead . I had nothing to look up to , been sending out my CV's with hope and get disappointment or no call at all , i felt useless a 27 year old , a business graduate with a degree but nothing to match my whole life's struggle for education , having sleepless nights for nothing . I lived with my Sister Rose , She works in a salon just down the street just so we keep afloat , i would help out out with sweeping and cleaning just to get those few cent of money to buy my basic needs such as toiletries and pads , it was really hard surviving as two orphan girls , we spent most of our childhood life in a orphanage fighting over a mere slice of bread but as soon as Rose turned 19 she had already learned to hustle and we were out of that place , i don't know why our parent's left us on the porch of the orphanage, Rose never talked about it , she has hustled all her butt off to get me to school and now it was my turn but i had nothing to offer than send out my CV in every opening let it be domestic work or even cleaning toilets i was desperate to the point i was to take anything given to me. I had a bath and got dressed and tied up my wild Afro going to help at the salon.

Rose: Look who is awake early today.

Me: Come on guys i don't even sleep that much.

Lucy: Really now? So how is finding employment for you Miss Degree?

Lucy is Rose's boss the owner of the salon , She and Rose have been friend's for a long time now . She would help us when we were down and out picked us up and never asked for anything in return.

Me: Just hold on tight Lucy , when i get a job i will be spraying you two with gifts ! Gifts everywhere , everyday.

Rose: I believe in you Amie .

Me: I know you do , that's why i love you.

She smiled plaiting a client's hair , i picked up the broom just sweeping hair off the floor , my phone buzzed on my back pocket , i took it and placed it on my ear.

Me: Hello.

Caller : Am i talking to Amara McKenzie?

Me: Speaking.

Caller: We calling you about the job you applied for in Alpha advertisement company.

Me: (excited) The secretary job yes.

Caller : You can come by tomorrow for your preview before you

begin work.

Me: No , Oh my god thank you so much ! Thank you so much!

I screamed jumping up the floor , and spinning around laughing in joy. They all looked at me in the salon smiling with confused faces. The lady across the phone laughed.

Caller: It's a pleasure honey, thank you bye.

She dropped the call , i tossed the broom aside , dancing my tight body just swinging my hips.

Rose: And you what's going on?

Me: Guess who is going to Alpha advertisement company tomorrow.

Rose: Oh my god congratulations!

Lucy: You deserve this .

They both approached me as we had a tight group hug, i sniffed crying.

Me: (crying) I have been praying for this.

Rose: Don't cry.

Lucy: Amara and being a cry baby , come on girl you got the job now stop being a cry baby and come seat down so i do your hair you ain't going to your new job looking like that .

Me: But my hair is fine.

They looked at me frowning , i touched my puffy Afro .

Rose: It's bad , it's terrible, awful.

Me: What am i going to wear ? This is short notice .

I begun panicking , they sat me on the chair as i looked myself in the mirror.

Lucy: Relax , repeat after me , I'm king , I'm a legend in a making , I'm a champion.

I rephrase her words over and over again , relaxing my nerves.

Rose: We'll figure out what you will wear later on in the mean time let us wash your hair.

I sat on the chair as they washed my hair , nervous about tomorrow, i had to put on my big girl pants on .

ALPHA SMITH.

I buttoned up my shirt apply my cuffs and body cologne on , i placed my ear pods in a call with my media assistance .

Me: Pearl , what's going on with my account?

Pearl: Uhm Sir i just uploaded a few links that link to the business ad , i even scheduled you for a photo shoot for new photos.

Me: Cancel that Photoshop i don't have time for that sort of nonsense and my PA have you found someone?

Pearl: I just got off the call with her , she will be in early in the morning tomorrow .

Me: That's good , order me my black coffee and placed it on the side of my table .

Pearl: Yes Sir.

I dropped the call , Diana woke up , wrapping her hands around me , i pushed her way getting my suit on .

Diana: Going to work already?

Me: As you see , get dressed and get out of house.

Diana: Really Alpha? You are such a asshole.

She took a pillow and threw it against my direction.

Me: I will not have you disrespect me in my house , if you feel like I'm too hot to handle , walk the fuck out of my life , am i clear? (Raising his voice) I asked if I'm clear !

Diana: You clear Alpha.

Me: Here a card , go spoil yourself but not too much.

I got my car keys and walked out the house to my car i drove to my building. I am Alpha Smith , a very wealthy business man aged 36 , I'm more like the trust fund babies , I'm the only child

of my parents which made me even more filthy rich. I own a company an advertisement company well also inherited from my father but it's mine now. People in the advertising world called me all sort of names because of my leadership skills, i steer my ship using hardwork and determination but my employees say I'm a slave worker, they call me cold , ruthless , brutal but the one name that circulated much was beast, i am the Alpha after all , i have to have those features. I have dominated all the smaller companies they resorted to merging into mine with the talent i Ofcause accepted the mergers now i was just in the battle ground with the bigger companies , in every pack the has to be one Alpha and that was me ! I dropped my car and the front door the security got in driving it to the parking downstairs, i got on the elevator to my office in the 24 stair tall building with a big sign on the front , i got off the elevator Pearl was waiting for me as i got off heading to my office.

Pearl: We got a meeting with an agent that wants to advertise a new product in about 15 minutes.

Me: What company is it?

Pearl: It's a skin care project.

Me: That meeting I'm not coming , I'm busy.

Pearl: But Alpha it's a very important project , we need to go.

Me: I don't care , if it's that important then you go , attend to those clients yourself.

Pearl: It's the Mayor's daughter's project? The Mayor will be there he wanted to see you.

Me: i don't have time sucking up to pot-bellied old man okay ! Handle the project what's so hard to understand in what I'm saying?

Pearl: Another thing you trending on the gossip column.

Me: What is it now?

Pearl: Does Diana ring a bell?

Me: What has that girl done now?

Pearl: She posted a picture of you sleeping (laughs softly) you actually look cute.

Me: Don't ever say that again ! Call her and tell her i want the photo off her Instagram or I'm suing her for invasion of privacy , i will milk her dry.

Pearl: Milk her dry which money the money you give her?

Me: Hahaha , get out Pearl before you lose your job.

She walked to the door releasing limps of laughs, i looked at her as she closed the door and bursted out in laughter. I rolled my eyes looking at the picture, i was actually naked here sleeping



after we had sex with Diana , the hell have i gotten myself into , my phone kept beeping , i looked at the messages notifying me on how much money has been going out of the credit card i gave Diana, i called my bank to block the card , i blocked her number and got to work.

DIANA

I am in a shopping spree with my bestfriend just showering her with clothes and jewelry. We shopped around the Versace store , i picked a black dress and fitted it walking out the fitting room.

Me: Honey ! He will go mad by just looking at me in this dress , look at the curves baby.

My phone rang , i rolled my eyes and placed the phone on speaker.

Me: Pearl speak to me , has something happened to my man? Cause I'm busy shopping you disturbing me.

Pearl: Your Man actually told me to tell you to remove the picture of him you posted on your gram before he sues you.

Me: What ! This must be a prank.

The whole store looked at my direction as i awkwardly laughed. I quickly removed the call from speaker.

Pearl: Please i don't want to argue just remove the photo will

you.

Me: Tell Alpha i will not ! Let him sue me .

I dropped the call clicking my tougue, i looked at my friend that was clearly embarrassed to be with me in the shop.

Me: Friend I'll take this dress.

Friend: ofcause it looks great on you.

Me: Let's go swip and get out of here.

I walked to the till , waving my weave in the air , i placed the dressed he handed me the card machine. I swiped the black card , the machine beeped.

Me: try it again these something wrong with that machine.

He pressed on the machine again and handed it on me. It beeped again, again and again.

Friend: Let's go babe , maybe these something wrong with the machines in this store.

Me: Or maybe they selling fong kongs cause a black card always declines when i buy cheap stuff. Never mind you can't take the dress i don't need it.

I blinked my eye lashes and we got out of the store to one of Alpha's car i was using it for today , it's not like he will notice.

To be continued.

Comments on the new story please.♥♥

02

ROSE

I looked at her as Lucy made her look at her freshly washed and puffy looking african Afro , she has grown so much , My 4 year old sister is 27 now and she will be going to her first job ever this was a milestone of her life , i took my phone and took a shot. We had a rough time all our childhood life but i made sure Amara never went to bed with a hungry stomach. She looked at herself not quite sure of the hairstyle , Amara is nerdy , shy and very quiet she doesn't like anything that will get her on the spotlight . Her taking that receptionist job is really a push to her introverted personality, she is going to be the face of such a big company with a shy personality i can already see her smiling with those dimples behind that desk as someone approaches her.

Amara: How do i look?

Me: Beautiful.

Amara: Guys please don't lie , i don't want to jinx things at my work place.

Me: You won't worry duckling. It's just a job you will nail it , you the most smartest girl i know Amara, go get that job , for the

both of us we need that job.

Amara: I will.

She got up and gave me a hug and walked to storage to get hair supplies

Lucy : So much pressure on the poor girl.

Me: I not pressuring her , I'm just worried.

Lucy: What you worried about?

Me: Amara has a very nice heart , i don't want people taking advantage of her.

Lucy: They won't , it's a job momma bear she'll be okay , you worry too much about Amara and even forget she's grown now she's a woman.

Me: I know right (crying) I'm so proud for her My friend.

Lucy: You did well raising this lady.

She gave me a hug and we got to work. Amara was on her phone checking up first day outfits.

Amara: What do you guys think of a long skirt and boots with a sweater?

Lucy : you must be kidding , Girl get you a tight dress that's going to measure your assets out.

Me: uhmm excuse me I'm going to work not in a brothel.

Lucy: Rose talk to your sister please , talk to your sister that wants to dress up like a granny on her first day at work.

Me: Put on whatever you feel you will be comfortable in Ammie.

Amara: exactly and i am comfortable in a long skirt.

We talked about Amara's interview with the day quickly rushing to sunset , i don't know if it was the universe favouring Amara on her new job or what , but the time moved pretty fast. We locked up the salon and went to grab takeaways for lunch then headed home , we just got in and took off our shoes and tossed ourselves on the couch watching our favourite reality show.

PEARL

It was getting dark and i didn't want to go home , i played with the diamond necklace on my chest looking at the setting sun through the glass wall. I'm Pearl a 35 year old woman , CFO of the company, i work closely with Alpha . Alpha and I have worked together for 4 years now , he is a hard man to warm up too but he is very nice under that nutshell . My husband John and i have been trying for a baby these past 2 years but nothing, i didn't understand cause i had been checked by every gynecology in town and i was fit to have a child , so was he . But the bun just refuse to get in the oven . Alpha peeped at the

door , his deep voice disrupted me as i sunked deep in thoughts.

Alpha: You still in the office?

Me:Uhm no I was just leaving.

I said quickly packing up my files in my laptop bag.

Alpha: What's wrong? You look sad.

Me: Alpha we have sex everyday with John but nothing , I'm trying so hard even eating home remedies to stimulate my fertility but nothing.

Alpha: Then why don't you adopt?

Me: I don't want that.

Alpha: A Surrogate ?

Me: I want to carry my own child.

Alpha: opss that's a bummer , have you tried having sex with another man?

He said with his head tilted playfully at me.

Me: I am a married woman Alpha .

Alpha: I'm not saying having it with me .

Me: I know what you mean you saying i should cheat.

Alpha: Cheating is a strong word, exploring that sounds nicer.

I took my bag and walked him out of my office.

Me: I am not cheating , exploring whatever you call it , i will wait till it's the right time.

Alpha: The is never the right time , do it now and face the consequences later.

Me: Is it you talking or your altered ego Beast?

Alpha: I have an altered ego?

Me: You do and he sucks !

Alpha: Ouch.

He said , i got in the elevator and left. Going to my car , i drove home and walked in John wasn't home yet , the house was dark. I lite up the lights and got into my slippers preparing dinner. As it began raining.

DIANA

I sat on his comfortably laid down couches that took up space in the dinning area watching a romantic movie , with some wine and pop corn. He walked in the house his pitbull dog barked running to him , he kneeled and brushed the big dog talking sweet words to it , he then looked at me , i smiled.

Alpha: I thought i said get out of my house?

Me: I did and i came back.

Alpha: What for?

Me: I felt it will be selfish if i let you sleep alone .

Alpha : Well i have no problem sleeping alone not after what you did?

Me: But it was just a harmless photo.

Alpha: It is harmless to me it could damage my reputation!

Me: So you saying I'm not worthy for you?

Alpha: Are you worthy of me?

I blinked with tears on the edge of my eyes .

Me: (mumbling) But..but..

Alpha: Don't you dare cry ! Don't you dare ! I gave you strict instructions to get out of my house , how will you be worthy of me if you don't obey? Diana you don't listen i want my girl to listen to me when i talk , i wanted to be alone tonight but you didn't listen and you here sobbing? Bitch get out .

Me: (sobbing) Alpha it's raining.

Alpha: you will sleep in the guest bedroom then , when i wake up i want you gone , i will call you when i need you.

He walked up the stairs , i wiped my cheeks with finger carefully so i don't poke my eye with my nails , i don't know why he acts like this , one minute he wants me his needy for me



the next he just wants me to vanish , i sat down in his shirt , taking a handful of pop corns and shoving them in my mouth sobbing.

[ THE FOLLOWING MORNING]

ALPHA

I woke up early the next morning for a jog , Diana was laying on the couch with her head hanging on the edge , i walked over and gently pushed her to the back rest and covered her in with a fleece. I walked out the house and inserted my pods having my run. I played on my favourite calm song , Gentleman by Gallant.

[ I know it's winter somewhere,But it's spring time right here,You need me to water the grass before it all disappears,So you seek up that highschool shit,You need a college degree, so you took all your tractions on me , tell me have you ever had a gentleman]

I kept running down the road across the suburban houses catching a breath and checking my timer , a two hour run was okay for me , when it comes to gym i am addicted , i gym everytime i get the chance too. I jogged to my house and got in , my house was smelling oil, something was getting fried in here , I walked to the kitchen it was Diana frying god knows what .

Me: What you doing?

Diana: Making breakfast.

Me: better open up the Windows cause whatever breakfast you making smells awful.

She threw the spoon the table raising her hands showing she surrendered.

Diana: I swear you getting paid for being a bastard Alpha .

Me: Thank you for the compliment you made my day.

I walked upstairs and had a shower preparing for work , i took my jacket and walked downstairs heading to work , i walked in the kitchen quickly blending myself a smoothie. I looked at her as she paced my kitchen with my shirt on barefooted.

Diana: What !

Me: What am i not allowed to look now?

Diana: No you not allowed to look!

Me: You in my kitchen with my shirt on , with nails? i paid for, hair ?i paid for , lashes? I , Alpha paid for , practically I'm your daddy, i support you , young lady.

I took my smoothie cup and walked out , she was pissed to the core but i didn't care. Even the piss she has I'm paying for that shit.

AMARA

I got ready for work and tied my afro upright and walked out with Rose kissing me goodluck, i crossed my fingers on the uber , i took out my mini mirror and i looked at myself one more time , i look cute , i kept staring at the mirror , admiring myself, the minute the car stopped infront of the building with tha Alpha sign i felt like telling him to take me home the nerves i had. I walked out and carried my sling back , i took a deep breath.

Me : Okay Ammie let's go kill this , let's go murder this job.

I walked in with my cheeks turning pink with excitement just stepping on the shiney floors of Alpha sent butterflies in my intestines. I got on the elevator and walked out to the top floor that is where i will be working , i felt like fainting looking at the beautiful poeple around , these people were dressed to kill and here i was with my shirt and Dr Martin boots with a tucked in sweater. I carried my sling bag looking around , i looked at this office it had it's door slightly opened , with lion door knobs, i looked around to see if the was anyone looking at me , i walked in and the man perfume that ranked in the office you'd swear the guy is inside , i walked in and looked at ornaments on the room , touching the glass black table and leather chair. I don't know but i felt the urge to seat on the chair , i pulled the chair backwards and sat on it. I smiled feeling so powerful.

Me: (playfully) Yes please darling , you cant get me a cappuccino, add milk please and three cups.

I touched the laptop on the desk , slightly opening it a hardcore , just a dark roaring voice that almost throw me off the seat filled up the room.

Alpha: (yelling) What are you doing here ! What you doing in my office!

I got up from the chair and brushed my sweaty palms on my skirt. I couldn't say a word to him . It was just him yelling to the top of his scary deep voice , it was Alpha , the one and Only Alpha Thee Alpha , oh shit i fucked up .

Me: (muttering) i..i..i.

Alpha: (yelling) Pearl who the hell allowed this young lady in my office?

Me: i..I'm sorry.

Alpha: What you doing here ?

Me: I'm here for the reception job.

Alpha: So what you thought my office was HR ? Does this office look like HR to you?

I shook my hand playing with my fingers shamefully of what i did. A lady walked in guess that was Pearl.

Pearl: What's going on?

Alpha: Pearl i need you to talk to the security to set boards up this place that would show stupid people like this lady here where HR is !

Pearl: Come on Alpha , she can't be that bad , she made a mistake have mercy on her.

Alpha: The word mercy is invalid in my dictionary , get her out of my office we don't even know if she's a thief or what !

Me: (shaking her head) No , No Sir , I'm not a thief.

Alpha: Who asked you ! Get out !

Pearl: Let's go sweetie.

She held my hand leading me out that monsters office , i looked back as we walked out the door , he still had his eyes on me , looking like he'd jump at me and kill me the rage in his eyes.

Me: i will be that man's PA?

Pearl: unfortunately yes.

Me:Oh my god his so mean? How will i deal with that?

Pearl: Just do everything he says without questioning him you will be okay.

I feel like taking this job up was a mistake , or was it?

To be continued.

What do you guys think of the story , too frictional or just good?❤️😞

03

ALPHA

My door was widely open since it was hot today after last nights rain it got hot , i got up and took off my jacket hanging it on the my chair , The girl was in the reception desk. I would look at my laptop and steal glances of her . I unbuttoned my shirt leaving only the 3 unbuttoned bottom buttons . I got up and approached the door.

Me: (shouting) the hell are air cons in this building?

staff: They still fixing then sir.

Me: Damn it i hate incompetence!

She looked at me glancing at my body clearly looking like she hasn't seen a guy half naked before , i looked at her.

Me: Looking at something you like?

Amara: No sir.

Me: What's your name?

She got up and approached me handing out her hand to me

giving me a big smile with dimples on both sides . I looked at the hand , she looked down dropping her hand on the side.

Me: Are you dum ? I said what's your name?

Amara: Amara McKenzie Sir.

Me: Oh Okay Miss McKenzie , ain't you hot with you sweater?

Amara: Not at all , I'm used to these hot conditions so i adapted to days that are sunn...

Me: Okay quiet ! I don't like long sentences, it's a yes or a no !

Amara: Yes sir.

Me: Go get me ice cold water.

I walked inside my office as she walked along going to get what i demanded. The aircons were on now , i could work now. She walked in the office blancing the glass of ice cold water .

Amara: Your water sir.

Me: too late I'm no longer feeling like ice cold water , get yourself ready I'm going in a meeting in 2 minutes.

I took my laptop and walked to the boardroom. I only handled the big clients and let Pearl deal with the small, I had a meeting with Mr Prav that was advertising his wife's henna designs, for an ad he paid 200k I'm a man in high demand they understand. She sat besides me in the boardroom meeting with her notepad

and a pen that had a pink fluffy afro whatever that thing was and it was annoying me. I let the client view the ad and he nodded his head.

Me: (annoyed) i did this one myself.

Prav: I'm very impressed here Junior Smith.

Me: Alpha.

Prav: My apologie Alpha.

She kept writting down with her pen and fuffly part wiggly, i looked at it as it distracted me from the client.

Me: Excuse me a little .

I walked to her and grabbed the pen off her hands smiling , i replaced it with a black and matured pen.

Me: There you go (fakes a smile)

I continued with Mr Prav and he after the deal , i walked him out the boardroom. I walked back in holding the pink pen. I held it with both my hands and broke it apart , i threw it on the floor the fear in her eyes. I walked out the boardroom to my office.

ROSE

i looked at my phone trying to check of Amara had called but she hasn't, i couldn't help but think maybe she lost the job and



she's scared to come home.

Lucy: Quit worry you will create bad lucks for her.

Me: She hasn't called.

Lucy: She's probably busy.

Me: Why can't she reply to my text atleast?

Lucy: She's busy P.A for the hottest guy .

Me: what you talking about?

Lucy: Alpha? You don't know Alpha?

Me: No what kind of name is Alpha?

Lucy: Where do you live ? Under a rock?let me show you.

She gave me her phone while i browsed on Alpha's profile.

Me: He looks dangerous.

Lucy: Oh come on Rose !

Me: no this guy looks mean as fuck.

Lucy: He actually is , he got that dark natural sexy side .

Me: No i don't approve of this job , it will emotional drain Amara.

Lucy: She will decide that not you girl.

I handed her phone back , picturing my younger sister being

stared with such eyes all day long.

AMARA

I woman walked in , she looked like a model , the brands she was wearing not to mention her wig it just swinging on her back meant it was a real deal , she had a lunch box with a salad in. She approached my desk and looked at me raising her nose.

Diana: You must be the new P.A?

Me: Yes Mem nice to meet you.

I handed outmy hand for a hand shake she gave me the same look Alpha did. I don't want to lie i was close to crying now , i felt my tears piling up my piling up , she walked to Alpha's office, i looked down and blinked with tears falling on my thighs. I tried getting a hold of myself , i took a packt of tissues in my bag and wiped my eyes. Alpha's lunch was delivered, Salad with half cooked steak , i didn't even have Lunch money but it was okay i will drink water and eat home. I knocked on the door.

Alpha: Get in.

He said with his deep demanding voice , The girl was sitting on the chair corresponding his chair .

Me: your lunch Sir.

Alpha : Place it before me.

I got on his side of the table and placed the takeaway. The lady looked at me in a very dangerous look.

Diana: Why you dressed like this?(laughs)

I looked at my outfit , looking around the room embarrassed , i could feel my eyes filing up.

Alpha: How is she dressed?

Diana: She's wearing (she held on her chest and exhaled) Rags  
(Laughs)

I couldn't take the emotional torture and embarrassment, A whole woman making fun of another woman, i let my tears out , with my hands shaking nervously.

Me: Ca..can i go now?

Diana: Where you going cause I'm not done!

Alpha focused on his lunch, cutting up the steak. He didn't pay attention to what his wife or girlfriend was doing to me.

Me: (embarrassingly) I'm sorry.

She got up and walked to me holding my clothes like they were dirty .

Diana: Where did you get this stuff , No baby , i think i should donate her half my wodrope mean no i can't.

Alpha: I see nothing wrong in how she's dressed, she is pretty ,

cute , i like it.

i smiled a little through my tears , he looked at me. He took out his handkerchief from his suit pocket and handed it to me.

Me: Thank yo..

She grabbed the handkerchief off my hand .

Daina: Do you know how much it cost ? It could feed you and your generations to come !

Alpha: (shouts) Diana stop it !

I felt my heart pounding out my chest , it beating on in my ear like a drum.

Diana: i told you to give the job to my friend Alpha and this is what you hand the job too? Mean look at her .

Alpha: i like her know why?

Diana: why?

Alpha: She doesn't have to beg up to a man to get fancy clothes, i like your style Amara it's cute and not sluttish. You may walk out that door and don't ever flood that pretty face with tears bacause of worthless woman like Diana.

Diana's jaw dropped, i couldn't believe it too what mind of a man that will speak ill of his woman like this if i was Diana i would do some self discovery.

Diana: Oh really look who the lucky princess is , girl if i were you i wouldn't be took by his sweet words this man is mine , he is my Lucifer on earth ! And you look young ....and... tight , you won't be able to handle him,After all his name is Fucken Alpha my alpha !

She took her bag and walked out the office raising her middle finger.

Alpha: Be at home when i get there !

He looked at me as i still stood on the same spot i was humiliated in.

Alpha: I'm giving you the rest of the day off, you look exhausted and don't mind her nonsense she just feels jelouse.

Me: thank you sir.

I walked out the office and closed the door behind me wiping my tears using my sleeve, i should stop being so emotional ! I felt weak broken down to my knees. But alpha said she jealous of me , why would such a beauty lady like Diana be jealous of such dirt like me . I requested a uber and i was driven home , i laid on the window looking at the buildings as the car passed , i was deep in my thoughts with Diana's words circulating in my head telling me the best clothes in my wodrope were rugs , if these were rugs imagine if i wore something else cause this outfit is the best i could . I walked inside the salon , dragging my

feet .

Rose : Ammie? What's wrong? you see Lucy i told you ! I told you they were going to emotional beat her down , what happened?

Me: What happened? Nothing happen , i got the job and i wish we had more , i will go sleep.

Rose: I'm sorry Ammie.

Lucy: I'm sorry too baby girl.

I walked out the salon to the our apartment i took off my clothes and wore my animal jumpsuit and got into bed escaping reality.

DIANA

I did go to Alpha's house and i did wait for him, his my man after all . I was watching tv when he got back .

Me: You back early.

Alpha: This is my house i can come back anytime i want.

Me: I know.

I rolled my eyes , he looked at me confused.

Alpha: Did you just roll you eyes at me?

Me: No i didn't.

Alpha: So what I'm fool now?

Me: I'm sorry.

Shivering slightly from his voice and fear , i could get really scared of Alpha at times , his commanding voice with his sharp eyes and dark skinned body with upper cut and trimmed nicely hairline , He is one of the man we call gorgeous man , i have always thought maybe if i stay with him through his hundreds moods he'd see me as his kind of girl and wife me , I'm here for the ring i want that Mrs Smith title. Him and i are not in a relationship atleast i think we in a relationship cause we fuck a lot and I'm always around but with him we just like sex mates and the annoying part about this whole thing , He has a big crotch for a guy that actually goes to gym and drinks supplements, when we intimate it feels like it has grown again you never could get used to it. He approached me on the couch and sat next to me. He smiled slightly biting his dark lips that perfectly cared for , fine as hell .

Alpha: Come here why you running away from me?

Me: I'm not.

I got closer to him seating next to him.

Alpha: (demanding) opening your thighs.

I slightly opening up my thighs he placed his hand on my thighs and gave me a list of printed rules.

Me: Alpha what are these ?

Alpha: Rules or let's call them terms and conditions of our little arrangement

He moved to the edge of the couch and laid me on my back , ripping the dress i had on , he tackled me like i was nothing , i screamed.

Alpha: I left work to do this activity with you , don't you feel guilty that you made a girl younger than you insecure about herself. I believe in feminism and you should be a disgrace to even be called a woman .

He loved touching my skin , after a few careless touches , he inserted his hand in the middle of my bra he gripped on it with one hand and ripped it off my skin , i felt the pain cause my Bra was tight i had to show my boobs.

Me: (whispers in fear) A..Alpha...

Alpha: Shut up ! You weren't whispering when you told that girl i had a big dick !

Me: I'm sorry i was angry and jealous!

Alpha : Read rule number one.

I took the paper and looked at the first rule.

Me: Alpha is not my man , he never will be ( sobbing)



Alpha: number two?

Me: We are just fucking no string attached.

Alpha: number three?

Me: Alpha is the only person that determines if there is a relationship or not.

Alpha: the Last one?

He looked at me smiling , i swallowed a lump.

Me: Is this one really necessary?

Alpha : if you know what's right for you , you will read it.

Me: I'm a gold-digger .

I said rolling my eyes . He got up , unbuttoning his shirt walking up the stairs.

Me: Here i am thinking you will fuck the living brains out of me but it's just these rules what ever you call it.

Alpha: You wanted sex?

Me: Yes !

Alpha: Go get sex then , i decided that I'm saving myself up for my future wife. I ain't got no crotch to feed you greedy whores.

Me: And when you horny cause you always horny, Alpha : I'll

juck it off.

He disappeared in the staircase, what the hell is wrong with him? First he wanted me to delete the photo i took of him, secondly now his making rules drawing boundaries and now no sex ! He is getting a new coochie somewhere , his cheating.

PEARL

I prepared dinner and we both sat down on the table having a meal together , with just quietness between me and my husband. I played with my ring looking at him as he fed on his food.

John: Is there something you want to talk about?

Me: I will ask you this question and i need a honest answer.

He placed his fork and knife and looked at me chewing his meat.

Me: Are you... cheating on me?

He choked on the meat and took the beer besides him, he drank it up .

John: What did you hear, from who?

Me: What do you mean John , so you are cheating?

John: I'm not cheating i just wanted to know who's feeding you this nonsense that i was cheating.

Me: Mean that's the only possible answer for us not having children , we are both okay ain't we so why we not getting children?

John: Why does it have to be me what about you?

Me: the only possible explanation is that you have intimate relationship with girls on the otherside and when you come to me you shoot blanks cause your sperm is weak.

John: Shoot blanks? What the fuck ! I won't talk to you about this !

Me: Babe you just need to got to men's clinic.

He shoved the chair backwards and got up.

John: Excuse me Mem what did you do to my wife? Cause this ain't the woman i married! No i refused!

He walked up the stairs and climbed down.

John: Who the hell are you Pearl telling me I'm shoot blanks if you think you can do better take this scrotum sac and get yourself pregnant! The hell telling me I'm shooting blanks ! You the on with dead ovaries here you reaching 40 now lady didn't you think that ! Facts !

He got up the stairs and slammed the door to the room i covered my face with my hands.

To be continued.

Every beauty has her own beast

SetpS1cotn3em7bc8erm0 20u4 .

03

ALPHA

My door was widely open since it was hot today after last nights rain it got hot , i got up and took off my jacket hanging it on the my chair , The girl was in the reception desk. I would look at my laptop and steal glances of her . I unbuttoned my shirt leaving only the 3 unbuttoned bottom buttons . I got up and approached the door.

Me: (shouting) the hell are air cons in this building?

staff: They still fixing then sir.

Me: Damn it i hate incompetence!

She looked at me glancing at my body clearly looking like she hasn't seen a guy half naked before , i looked at her.

Me: Looking at something you like?

Amara: No sir.

Me: What's your name?

She got up and approached me handing out her hand to me giving me a big smile with dimples on both sides . I looked at the hand , she looked down dropping her hand on the side.

Me: Are you dum ? I said what's your name?

Amara: Amara McKenzie Sir.

Me: Oh Okay Miss McKenzie , ain't you hot with you sweater?

Amara: Not at all , I'm used to these hot conditions so i adapted to days that are sunn...

Me: Okay quiet ! I don't like long sentences, it's a yes or a no !

Amara: Yes sir.

Me: Go get me ice cold water.

I walked inside my office as she walked along going to get what i demanded. The aircons were on now , i could work now. She walked in the office blancing the glass of ice cold water .

Amara: Your water sir.

Me: too late I'm no longer feeling like ice cold water , get yourself ready I'm going in a meeting in 2 minutes.

I took my laptop and walked to the boardroom. I only handled the big clients and let Pearl deal with the small, I had a meeting with Mr Prav that was advertising his wife's henna designs, for an ad he paid 200k I'm a man in high demand they understand.

She sat besides me in the boardroom meeting with her notepad and a pen that had a pink fluffy afro whatever that thing was and it was annoying me. I let the client view the ad and he nodded his head.

Me: (annoyed) i did this one myself.

Prav: I'm very impressed here Junior Smith.

Me: Alpha.

Prav: My apologie Alpha.

She kept writting down with her pen and fuffly part wiggly, i looked at it as it distracted me from the client.

Me: Excuse me a little .

I walked to her and grabbed the pen off her hands smiling , i replaced it with a black and matured pen.

Me: There you go (fakes a smile)

I continued with Mr Prav and he after the deal , i walked him out the boardroom. I walked back in holding the pink pen. I held it with both my hands and broke it apart , i threw it on the floor the fear in her eyes. I walked out the boardroom to my office.

ROSE

i looked at my phone trying to check of Amara had called but

she hasn't, i couldn't help but think maybe she lost the job and she's scared to come home.

Lucy: Quit worry you will create bad lucks for her.

Me: She hasn't called.

Lucy: She's probably busy.

Me: Why can't she reply to my text atleast?

Lucy: She's busy P.A for the hottest guy .

Me: what you talking about?

Lucy: Alpha? You don't know Alpha?

Me: No what kind of name is Alpha?

Lucy: Where do you live ? Under a rock?let me show you.

She gave me her phone while i browsed on Alpha's profile.

Me: He looks dangerous.

Lucy: Oh come on Rose !

Me: no this guy looks mean as fuck.

Lucy: He actually is , he got that dark natural sexy side .

Me: No i don't approve of this job , it will emotional drain Amara.

Lucy: She will decide that not you girl.

I handed her phone back , picturing my younger sister being stared with such eyes all day long.

AMARA

A woman walked in , she looked like a model , the brands she was wearing not to mention her wig it just swinging on her back meant it was a real deal , she had a lunch box with a salad in. She approached my desk and looked at me raising her nose.

Diana: You must be the new P.A?

Me: Yes Mem nice to meet you.

I handed out my hand for a hand shake she gave me the same look Alpha did. I don't want to lie i was close to crying now , i felt my tears piling up my piling up , she walked to Alpha's office, i looked down and blinked with tears falling on my thighs. I tried getting a hold of myself , i took a packt of tissues in my bag and wiped my eyes. Alpha's lunch was delivered, Salad with half cooked steak , i didn't even have Lunch money but it was okay i will drink water and eat home. I knocked on the door.

Alpha: Get in.

He said with his deep demanding voice , The girl was sitting on the chair corresponding his chair .

Me: your lunch Sir.



Alpha : Place it before me.

I got on his side of the table and placed the takeaway. The lady looked at me in a very dangerous look.

Diana: Why you dressed like this?(laughs)

I looked at my outfit , looking around the room embarrassed , i could feel my eyes filing up.

Alpha: How is she dressed?

Diana: She's wearing (she held on her chest and exhaled) Rags  
(Laughs)

I couldn't take the emotional torture and embarrassment, A whole woman making fun of another woman, i let my tears out , with my hands shaking nervously.

Me: Ca..can i go now?

Diana: Where you going cause I'm not done!

Alpha focused on his lunch, cutting up the steak. He didn't pay attention to what his wife or girlfriend was doing to me.

Me: (embarrassingly) I'm sorry.

She got up and walked to me holding my clothes like they were dirty .

Diana: Where did you get this stuff , No baby , i think i should donate her half my wodrope mean no i can't.

Alpha: I see nothing wrong in how she's dressed, she is pretty , cute , i like it.

i smiled a little through my tears , he looked at me. He took out his handkerchief from his suit pocket and handed it to me.

Me: Thank yo..

She grabbed the handkerchief off my hand .

Daina: Do you know how much it cost ? It could feed you and your generations to come !

Alpha: (shouts) Diana stop it !

I felt my heart pounding out my chest , it beating on in my ear like a drum.

Diana: i told you to give the job to my friend Alpha and this is what you hand the job too? Mean look at her .

Alpha: i like her know why?

Diana: why?

Alpha: She doesn't have to beg up to a man to get fancy clothes, i like your style Amara it's cute and not sluttish. You may walk out that door and don't ever flood that pretty face with tears bacause of worthless woman like Diana.

Diana's jaw dropped, i couldn't believe it too what mind of a man that will speak ill of his woman like this if i was Diana i

would do some self discovery.

Diana: Oh really look who the lucky princess is , girl if i were you i wouldn't be took by his sweet words this man is mine , he is my Lucifer on earth ! And you look young ....and... tight , you won't be able to handle him,After all his name is Fucken Alpha my alpha !

She took her bag and walked out the office raising her middle finger.

Alpha: Be at home when i get there !

He looked at me as i still stood on the same spot i was humiliated in.

Alpha: I'm giving you the rest of the day off, you look exhausted and don't mind her nonsense she just feels jelouse.

Me: thank you sir.

I walked out the office and closed the door behind me wiping my tears using my sleeve, i should stop being so emotional ! I felt weak broken down to my knees. But alpha said she jealous of me , why would such a beauty lady like Diana be jealous of such dirt like me . I requested a uber and i was driven home , i laid on the window looking at the buildings as the car passed , i was deep in my thoughts with Diana's words circulating in my head telling me the best clothes in my wodrope were rugs , if these were rugs imagine if i wore something else cause this

outfit is the best i could . I walked inside the salon , dragging my feet .

Rose : Ammie? What's wrong? you see Lucy i told you ! I told you they were going to emotional beat her down , what happened?

Me: What happened? Nothing happen , i got the job and i wish we had more , i will go sleep.

Rose: I'm sorry Ammie.

Lucy: I'm sorry too baby girl.

I walked out the salon to the our apartment i took off my clothes and wore my animal jumpsuit and got into bed escaping reality.

DIANA

I did go to Alpha's house and i did wait for him, his my man after all . I was watching tv when he got back .

Me: You back early.

Alpha: This is my house i can come back anytime i want.

Me: I know.

I rolled my eyes , he looked at me confused.

Alpha: Did you just roll you eyes at me?

Me: No i didn't.

Alpha: So what I'm fool now?

Me: I'm sorry.

Shivering slightly from his voice and fear , i could get really scared of Alpha at times , his commanding voice with his sharp eyes and dark skinned body with upper cut and trimmed nicely hairline , He is one of the man we call gorgeous man , i have always thought maybe if i stay with him through his hundreds moods he'd see me as his kind of girl and wife me , I'm here for the ring i want that Mrs Smith title. Him and i are not in a relationship atleast i think we in a relationship cause we fuck a lot and I'm always around but with him we just like sex mates and the annoying part about this whole thing , He has a big crotch for a guy that actually goes to gym and drinks supplements, when we intimate it feels like it has grown again you never could get used to it. He approached me on the couch and sat next to me. He smiled slightly biting his dark lips that perfectly cared for , fine as hell .

Alpha: Come here why you running away from me?

Me: I'm not.

I got closer to him seating next to him.

Alpha: (demanding) opening your thighs.

I slightly opening up my thighs he placed his hand on my thighs and gave me a list of printed rules.

Me: Alpha what are these ?

Alpha: Rules or let's call them terms and conditions of our little arrangement

He moved to the edge of the couch and laid me on my back , ripping the dress i had on , he tackled me like i was nothing , i screamed.

Alpha: I left work to do this activity with you , don't you feel guilty that you made a girl younger than you insecure about herself. I believe in feminism and you should be a disgrace to even be called a woman .

He loved touching my skin , after a few careless touches , he inserted his hand in the middle of my bra he gripped on it with one hand and ripped it off my skin , i felt the pain cause my Bra was tight i had to show my boobs.

Me: (whispers in fear) A..Alpha...

Alpha: Shut up ! You weren't whispering when you told that girl i had a big dick !

Me: I'm sorry i was angry and jealous!

Alpha : Read rule number one.

I took the paper and and looked at the first rule.

Me: Alpha is not my man , he never will be ( sobbing)

Alpha: number two?

Me: We are just fucking no string attached.

Alpha: number three?

Me: Alpha is the only person that determines if the is a relationship or not.

Alpha: the Last one?

He looked at me smiling , i swallowed a lump.

Me: Is this one really necessary?

Alpha : if you know what's right for you , you will read it.

Me: I'm a gold-digger .

I said rolling my eyes . He got up , unbuttoning his shirt walking up the stairs.

Me: Here i am thinking you will fuck the living brains out of me but it's just these rules what ever you call it.

Alpha: You wanted sex?

Me: Yes !

Alpha: Go get sex then , i decided that I'm saving myself up

for my future wife. I ain't got no crotch to feed you greedy whores.

Me: And when you horny cause you always horny, Alpha : I'll juck it off.

He disappeared in the staircase, what the hell is wrong with him? First he wanted me to delete the photo i took of him, secondly now his making rules drawing boundaries and now no sex ! He is getting a new coochie somewhere , his cheating.

PEARL

I prepared dinner and we both sat down on the table having a meal together , with just quietness between me and my husband. I played with my ring looking at him as he fed on his food.

John: Is there something you want to talk about?

Me: I will ask you this question and i need a honest answer.

He placed his fork and knife and looked at me chewing his meat.

Me: Are you... cheating on me?

He choked on the meat and took the beer besides him, he drank it up .

John: What did you hear, from who?



Me: What do you mean John , so you are cheating?

John: I'm not cheating i just wanted to know who's feeding you this nonsense that i was cheating.

Me: Mean that's the only possible answer for us not having children , we are both okay ain't we so why we not getting children?

John: Why does it have to be me what about you?

Me: the only possible explanation is that you have intimate relationship with girls on the otherside and when you come to me you shoot blanks cause your sperm is weak.

John: Shoot blanks? What the fuck ! I won't talk to you about this !

Me: Babe you just need to got to men's clinic.

He shoved the chair backwards and got up.

John: Excuse me Mem what did you do to my wife? Cause this ain't the woman i married! No i refused!

He walked up the stairs and climbed down.

John: Who the hell are you Pearl telling me I'm shoot blanks if you think you can do better take this scrotum sac and get yourself pregnant! The hell telling me I'm shooting blanks ! You the on with dead ovaries here you reaching 40 now lady didn't

you think that ! Facts !

He got up the stairs and slammed the door to the room i covered my face with my hands.

To be continued.

05

ROSE

My finger tips were sore with braiding people the whole day , Lucy had no clients so she was just sitting on her phone daydreaming about men she won't have .

Me: I have been thinking if going to college and get a Matric certificate.

Lucy: Thats a good idea friend.

She said chewing her bubblegum loudly and making a pop.

Me: Know that thing is annoying.

Lucy: Come on it's chewing gum it's meant to chewed.

Me: This morning Amara didn't want to got to work saying she doesn't fit in.

Lucy: Friend Amara is old school no modern fashion sense that's why she will feel like she doesn't fit in . When you are in places like The Alpha building you must dress like you going to awards competition all girls want to be Mrs Smith.

Me: Amara is not there for Men she's there to work.

Lucy: Don't be so sure , imagine being surrounded by strong sexy successful men , i would walk in smelling love potion every morning.

Me: (laughs)Lucy what's wrong with you .

Lucy: It's the truth if you can't secure the bag , secure a man with a bag. Help him clear those bank accounts.

Me: Now that's nonsense!

Lucy: if Amara would secure Alpha will you resist his money?

Me: i didn't say i wouldn't but it would be wrong to love someone for their materialistic things , if they gone then What?

Lucy: these no relationship.

Me: See that's not life .

I carried on with the client as she folded her legs high pressing on her phone

DIANA

I packed up my sleep over clothes and got in the uber and went over to Alphas house , i loved that house a lot of space with just fresh breeze blowing in and out , talking about living a coastal life in a packed neighbourhood. I walked to the door and pressed in the pin , in Alpha's he doesn't use a key but a 4

digit number, I begin pressing the numbers i know.

Machine: Access denied.

Me: What ! It can't be that he locked me out !

I took my phone and called him , he didn't pick up but i know he saw me calling Alpha always had his phone with him , i got on the uber and headed to the company, i can't be disrespected like this , that man has fucked me too many times to not want me. I got in the elevator and walked in carrying my bag , i meet Amara , she looked at me smiling.

Me: You dress like a innocent teenager the next thing you dress like a stripper , your wodge really need a make over.

I walked to his office and opened the door. He looked at me taking off his reading glasses.

Me: and now?

Alpha : You should stop bagging in my office Diana like this is your families company, this is my working place.

Me: I'm locked out the house.

Alpha: So?

Me: Did you hear me?

Alpha: Yes i did , that's my house i can change the password whenever i like .

Me: What is the password then.

Alpha : No telling get out of my office I'm busy.

I closed the door and took off my thong under my dress.

Me: Too busy for this.

I tossed the thong on the table , on his paper work, i picked it up and smiled sniffing my panties.

Alpha: You liking playing dont you.

He got up from the desk and approached me with the with thong , He kissed my lips, i reshly grabbed on his lips , just swiping my tougue across his lips, he placed the thong in my hand and kissed me to the door, i opened up the door , he pushed me out and tossed my bag too.

Alpha: ( shouting) Out , can't you see I'm working ? Get out.

His employees looked at me with the thong in my hands. He slammed the door closed in my face , Amara got off her chair and came to helping me pick up my clothes that were scatter on the floor . Alpha opened the door.

Alpha: Amara!

Amara: Yes sir.

Alpha: What you doing get up and come inside we got work to do!

Amara: I'm sorry.

Me: (sobbing) It's okay.

She helped me pick up last clothes on the floor, Alpha walked to her and grabbed the clothes off her hands throwing them on the ground

Alpha: Get in here ! I don't pay you to help people pick up their rubbish you are my assistant! Am i clear.

I looked at him , he looked possessed but i just knew that today was one of his bad days.

PEARL

I had a number of a private investigator in my hand and a phone on my other with my wedding picture looking at me. I tread up the number and threw it in a bin. I took my phone and called him pacing up and down . The phone was picked up as i just about to talk a woman spoke on the other side with children chanting.

Speaker: hello ? Who is this?

Me: I'm sorry wrong number.

I quickly hung up with my heart racing, I heard children in the back ground. Maybe his in a friends house and left hid phone mean that happens. I envied to call again but my pride wouldn't let me . I feel cursed , i can't get myself overthinking about that

call he has a reason , he will tell me those children's are his friend.

ALPHA

I looked at her .

Me: we have work to do here and you busy doing what you not paid for.

Amara: she needed help.

Me: so? Is it your job to pick up her mess?

She shook her head and i talked to her she made her away pinning herself i against the wall , with her black leather dress looking like my wall and it was made for each other.

Me: (yelling) I pay you to make my life easy , Not everyones am i clear to you?

She nodded her head . I walked to my desk and sat down

Amara: May i ask?if I'm allowed to.

I looked at her.

Me: Talk ! I don't have all day.

Amara: Why you always angry?

Me: What kind of a question is that?

Amara: A question that needs an answer which you can't

answer because you don't know too , you have everything any man and woman can dream of , you got the bank , the cars , the lavishing life, but what is wrong? What is this big thing that is making you resemble so much hate towards other people.

I looked at her and laughed.

Me: If that's all get out.

Amara: You are actually not a bad person Alpha you just need someone to love you unapologetically , that wants nothing in the world but you.

Me: Listen here unapologetically love , that happens in fairy tales and in movies , here it's either you work hard and be reach or you starve to death . I choose to be rich , love doesn't pay my bills !

Amara: love is feelings you can't explain, money is not everything.

Me: Maybe in your world , in mine power , dominance, money is what matters, i might be a breast but I'm a beast with a fat bank account !

Amara: If money is where you happiness lay then why are you not smiling?

Me: Because i haven't made enough money !

Amara: You already rich .



Me: I want to be the richest.

Amara: That's now greedy.

Me: i don't care what you call it .

She walked to the door and looked at me as i tried diverting my attention to my work , she walked out and closed the door , i looked up as her words circulate in my head " You have all the money but why don't you smile" i reached in my drawer looking for headache pills Amara talked about love and i got a headache.

To be continued .

04

PEARL

He woke up and just left today, was my husband of 6 years cheating on me? What was happening in my marriage? I found myself crying in front of my mirror while apply make up, i looked at myself wondering is am i that cold? What was wrong with me . I thought maybe if i gave him children our marriage would be more solid. Now I'm failing my wife duties. I wiped my tears and applied my make up , i got my hills on and took my bag leaving the house. I drove to the coffee shop and got me and Alpha some coffee. I got upstairs and walked in his office , He looked at me

Me: hey brought you coffee , black and strong just like you.

Alpha: Ohh thank you , so flirty in the morning.

Me: I just wanted to talk.

He closed up his laptop and had a sip on his coffee.

Alpha: What's going on?

Me: I think John is cheating.

Alpha: That explains why he can't get you pregnant.

Me: I asked him this last night and he just got up tossing things, agitate.

Alpha: Damn! Remember what i told you yesturday if you want a child don't wait on a man you a beautiful independent woman Pearl go make that baby .

Me: You make it sound like it's easy opening up to another man.

Alpha: It actually is , you lay on your back and let him do the work.

Me: Will you be my sperm donor?

Alpha: I have too much work to do , can you please excuse me , thank you for the coffee.

Me: I'm joking .

Alpha: i need to get back to work.

Me: Oh okay.

I got up and walked out of his office somethings i forget that you can never play with alpha.

AMARA

Rose pulled my blankets off the bed , i opened up my eyes.

Me: What!

Rose: Shouldn't you be at work?

Me: I don't want to work over there.

Rose: Why Amara why? You got a job that actually is willing to pay you good and you here saying you don't want it.

Me: Rose i just , feel like i don't fit in that workplace.

Rose: What's wrong?

Me: My clothes.

Rose: What's wrong with your clothes?

Me: They are rags Rose.

Rose: The is no such thing you got the cutest clothes ever , okay how about you go bath and i will set an you an outfit from my wodrope?

Me: Okay I'll go bath.

I got up and had a fast bath , i quickly did all the necessary body lotioning , she gave me a black leather dress , i got it on as it covered my whole body , exposing my skin a little , i looked myself in a mirror with some hills on .

Rose: You look so beautiful.

Me: I do.

I took my bag and walked out with them hills feeling like i have made it in life. I got out the uber and walked in the building with Clients looking at me. I got into the elevator.

ALPHA

I looked at the reception table and this girl wasn't at work yet , i got up and looked through the window looking at the busy cars in the street. I looked about and saw a leather dress passing by the reception, i walked to the door to check who it was cause wow i love what i saw . I looked over at the reception table, my heart almost froze seeing it was Amara that had the dress on. I felt like some kind of a pervet just looking at her as she had her back on me. She lifted her head up. I inserted my hands in my pockets.

Amara: Sir.

Me: In my office Now!

Amara: Did i do something wrong?

Me: I hate repeating myself.

She walked to door entering my office, i walked behind and and closed the door behind me , i looked at her as she stood infront of my table , i imagined myself just walked over and pinning her on the desk and slowly penetrating her insides as she screamed my name. I quickly zoomed out of that gruesome and horny place . She looked at me , i walked over to her and leaned , she sat on the table as i placed my hands on the sides of her hips. I whispered in her ear.

Me: Is this the time to get to work?

She shook her head .

Me: I want you to speak to me.

Amara: No Sir.

Me: Can you do me a favour.

Amara: Yes sir.

Me:Stop calling me Sir , I'm Alpha , who am i Amara?

Amara: You Alpha.

Me: Drag the A.

Amara: You Aalpha.

I looked at her and smiled , she actually is good in this moaning thing , how i was dying to ask her if she is a virgin or not but that would seem unprofessional. I got off her , as she blinked awkwardly under her spectacles.

Me: Seat on chair or you prefer the desk, cause i don't mind , you can lay on it if you want to.

Amara: Alpha are you flirty with me?

Me: Do you like it?

She blushed and sat on the chair , i handed her the paperwork i needed to be photocopied.

Me: I want 40 copies of each pages

Amara: Sir these are like 10 pages so you want 400 copies?

Me: Are you complaining?

Amara: No Alpha.

Me: Good , run along , good girl.

She got up from the chair and walked out i looked at her behind , i nodded my head and got back to work.

JOHN (Pearl's husband)

I drove to my house , and walked in the house , My kids ran to me , giving me hugs and kisses , i have two families , well me and Pearl ain't really a family so i have one family , After my

family found about me and Pearl having troubles to conceive i was allowed to marry another woman who got pregnant on a one night stand we have 2 children , two 3 year old boy twins and she's pregnant .

Kylie: Hey honey.

Me: Hey my only love in the whole white world.

She giggled, I held on the tummy and kissed her lips, felt so good to be somewhere where you don't be shouted at all the damn time and looked at with suspicious eyes.

Me: How is the baby?

Kylie: Very well she's kicking and now that I'm almost closed to giving birth I'm so excited .

Me: I'm a excited too , we having a princesse.

Kylie: But John , this work of yours that makes us go weeks or even months without seeing your family it's stressing me out that maybe i will give birth and you away.

Me: Baby , look at me.

I held her hands and kissed them.

Kylie: Don't even try to sweet talk me John, i want my husband home.

Me: I will just a little patience please, you know i love you and

even if you give birth while I'm away just know my heart and soul are with you okay.

She nodded her head

AMARA

I stood in the copy making machine till the hill were too hot for me. I would lean the machine and i was left with a few copies to make , as soon as i was done, i walked to his office, my feet were burning. I placed the copies on the desk and sat down i reached to my feet slowly massaging myself. He looked at me and took off his glasses.

Alpha: your feet hurt?

Me: Yes the heels, they killing me.

Alpha: Come here.

Me: I can't walk not an inch anymore please.

I took of the shoes and walked to the leather couch , i sat down , he picked up both my feet and placed them on his thighs. He begin massaging my feet , he rubbed the arch with his fingers on the excess pain point's , i thought I'd just fall asleep in his finger, it felt so good , i laid my head on his couch , his fingers reached my toes, he encircled on my toes , the feeling was orgasmic , i let out a sigh that dropped moan.

Me: (heavy breathing) Ahhh, feels so good.



I kept moaning as he touched my toes , i couldn't believe this , can someone really cum from someone rubbing your toes? Or was it because i haven't had sex in a long time ? I slightly opened up my eyes , He got ontop of me and kissed me . I pushed him off. And got up panicking.

Me: You kissed me.

Alpha: I'm sorry.

Me: No I'm sorry ! I shouldn't have worn heels I'm sorry.

He held my arm and met my eyes gosh i cummed for the second time , i could feel my panties soaking wet .He looked at me face serious not smiling or smirking. I looked at him .

Alpha: I played a part too , i saw a lady in need for a foot massaged kissing you was wrong yes but hear you moan to my touch got me strapped, i won't lie to you , i was going to fuck you right here an hour top without disruption. The door opened Pearl peeped at the door .

Pearl: Sorry , i didn't know you were busy.

Alpha: I'm not , come in Amara was just leaving .

Me: Yes please.

He let go of my arm , i walked out the room just my feet carrying me out , i closed the door and leaned biting my lower lip.

Me: Amara stop it ! His your boss.

I took deep breaths and walked to my working station. I couldn't wait to get home to tell my sister about my day , wonders shall never cease to amaze me .

To be continued.

07

ALPHA

It looked like this project will be hard , i just couldn't seem to get an idea that will have the clients blown away , i got up and looked through the window to the streets , i mind suddenly blocked it's self , i felt dum . Pearl walked in the office panting in anger , i turned and looked at her as she helped herself seating on the chair.

Pearl: I'm done ! I give up !

Me: Done with what?

Pearl: (sobbing) I tried keeping myself together but Alpha I'm falling apart.

Me: Then what that you falling apart? The world should stop ?

Pearl: Alpha!

Me: That's not an answer , get yourself together and keep moving! The world doesn't stop just because your husband is a

cheater, cheat back ! Gain control hit him where it hurts the most and stop sobbing like a fool! She broke down and cried, realising i made things worst i just walked out and called Amara , she's a woman she will no what to do. She sat down besides her giving her a hug , i rolled my eyes , i hated affection cause i never got that kind of love when i was a child , i was raised by a nanny my whole life , my parents were too fixated in building a legacy for themselves than show love to their only child. I sat down and got on my laptop as Amara spoke to her softly, Pearl began to calm down , i looked at Amara the way her lips moved as she spoke to her how she touched her hands and brushed her shoulder. Pearl nodded like a little girl being given instructions, she got up and collected her bag, she looked at me and walked out the office .

Me: And what was that about?

Amara: She got in a argument with a client so it triggered a lot of hurt of what is happening in her private life.

Me: Oh .

I continued with my work, she got up .

Amara: I'll leave you to work.

Me: I got a really important project I'm working on i want you here , call your boyfriend and tell him you will be home late tonight.

Amara: (laughs)

Me: What's funny?

Amara: i don't have a boyfriend but I'll let my sister know even though she won't be happy about this.

Me: Why is that?

Amara: She's not really fond of you Sir.

Me: Oh really what did i do now?

Amara: she thinks you want to sleep with me .

Me: And what do you think?

Amara: i don't think you trying to sleep with me.

Me: Tell your sister to rest assured i won't touch you , unless you want to.

I took out a piece of paper and wrote down my Instagram account, email account passwords.

Amara: i will be handling these?

Me: Yes but i want you to focus more on my emails , i want atleast the important ones all filter some out.

Amara: i will get on it Sir.

Me: And my Photoshoot?

Amara: Scheduled for an hour.

Me: Go get your things we leaving.

Amara: Me?

Me: You my PA you meant to follow me around, P.A ..Per-sonal Assistance?

Amara: I know i just didn't expect you will have me in your photo shoot.

Me: My god , you more stupid than i thought.

ROSE

After receiving the text from Amara that she will be working late tonight. I had a painful headache. I sat down drinking water.

Lucy: are you okay?

Me: No I'm not ! I think my sister is falling inlove with this Alpha Man.

Lucy: That's a good thing Amara has been single for long now

Me: yes she can fall inlove I'm not disputing that , but not with him.

Lucy: Why not ?his rich, handsome everything a woman wants in a man.

Me: I don't want that man near my sister, infact i will talk to Amara and she will quit that job.

Lucy: Now you just over reacting, why would you even suggest such !

Me: Last night she told me Alpha kissed her.

She grabbed her mouth shocked with a little excited smile.

Lucy: No ! You lying!

Me: She said that , they kissed.

Lucy: Oh my word!

Me: Why do i get the feeling you happy about this.

Lucy: Why will i be sad? If Amara is happy then I'm happy for her let it be that she and Alpha sleep together or not it doesn't concerned us.

Me: And if he breaks her heart , because you and i know how Amara is when she falls inlove , remember that guy she dated in varsity that broke her heart , she cried for a whole 2 months , i don't think i could handle her being hurt like that anymore.

Lucy: You are not god but you her sister, if she is meant to be hurt she will be , hurt is part of growth how will she grow up if you keep detecting who she sees, where she works and who she is allowed to have sex , you will die young Rose! Stroke will

kill you cause you stressing over something you can't change.

Me: Maybe you right friend.

Lucy: Obviously I'm always right , you here stressing that your sister is being kissed by a millionaire . I would be online looking for a wedding Venue, we securing that man !

She got up and took the nail filter chewing her gum .

Me: Securing that man my foot.

Lucy: Your broke foot.

I looked at her and laughed, Lucy had a point here . If Amara is happy with playing along with this game then i should back off. I might be her elder sister and the only person she looks up to but i shouldn't overwhelm her with what i feel and forget what she feels, God please let it be not love, that man comes with a lot of baggage, that camera and famous life has ruined a lot of people.

JOHN

I bought a bouquet of roses and drove to Pearl's office, I walked to the reception being welcomed by such a cute smile.

Me: you must be Amara .

Amara: Yes Sir , welcome , who you here for?

Me: My wife , Pearl.

Amara: I will inform her you here.

Me: Thank you.

She pressed on the phone and talked to Pearl.

Amara: she will be here shortly.

Pearl walked through the hallway to me , i hid the roses behind me.

Pearl: what are you doing here?

Me: Violets are blue, sunflowers are yellow, the most beautiful roses for my beautiful lady.

I handed her the flowers as her face lite up as she inhaled the scent of the roses.

Pearl: These are beautiful my love.

Me: I got them freshly for you.

Pearl: I'm charmed.

Me: Baby , i just want to say I'm sorry for everything okay .

I looked at Amara , she took a tablet and walked away from her desk giving us space.

Pearl: It's okay baby really , I'm just happy you came back to your senses and I'm sorry too for insulting you i shouldn't have said what i said.



Me: You were frustrated it's understandable my love .

I held her cheeks and kissed her , licking her lipstick off. She kissed back wrapping her hands around my neck. A deep voice called out to us at the background.

Alpha: This is not a brothel !

Pearl broke the kiss wiping her lips embarrassed , i turned and looked at him , i have always suspected that this boy is sleeping with my wife i always had a gut feeling telling me this and i would never lie to myself , all here acting like he isn't scared of anything.

Me: I can flip my wife anywhere i want Alpha.

Alpha: In that anywhere exclude my company, you here talking about flipping your wife but you can't even get her pregnant.

I looked at Pearl.

Me: Who else have you told about our marital problems?

Pearl: baby Alpha got it all wrong.

Me: So you here telling Alpha too that i shoot blanks?

Pearl: No . (sobbing)

Me: I'm very disappointed in you !

I grabbed my flowers off her hands and looked around the room , i saw a small bin and i threw them in . I walked to Alpha

and looked at me , wiggling my finger at him.

Me: Watch how you move!

I got on the elevator and left.

08

ALPHA

We got in my car and she sat besides me in the passenger seat , We drove to the building where i will be having my photo shoot. She didn't say anything in the car just sitting looking pretty in my car , I reached for my gear and held on it , slightly touching her thigh, she looked at me collecting her lower body together and squeezing on towards the door.

Me: If you apply too much weight on my door , i will have you walk to the photo shoot by foot it's not like i held your thigh completely i slightly touched it and i felt nothing .

I told her , lying to myself .I didn't want things to be awkward between me and her , i liked her and seeing her just makes me happy , i wanted to see her for the rest of my life , she challenged emotionally challenged me , no one has ever told me i just needed love , guess she saw a prince in this beast i am. I parked the car and we got off approaching the building the press was waiting for me at the door , i tried speeding into the building leaving her behind but noticing how she panicked, i exhaled and walked back , i held her hand and those trolls got

exactly what they wanted the scoop of the day.

Reported 1: hey Alpha are you dating or it's just a hook up?

Reported: Any comment from your lady Mr Alpha?

Reported 3: We know you as a Bachelor are you finally off the Single's list?

Chanting of the crowd: Mr Alpha ! Mr Alpha.

We walked in the elevator , I was still holding her hand , i felt her slowly removing her soft , small hand off my grip.

Amara: I'm sorry.

Me: You better be ! Now i will be the news of tomorrow.

Amara: But we did nothing wrong.

Me: (Shouting ) I held your hand ! it means a lot to them !

Amara: (bows her head) Don't yell at me please.

Me: Aaargh !

I punched my fist in the Elevator door as it , my knuckles bled.

Amara:(crying) No please, you hurting yourself

She looked at me and sobbed , i walked closer to her and pulled her in my arms and gave her a hug , she held on me wrapping her arms around me.The elevator door open up , I let her go and walked out , she followed behind me. We walked in

the room i will be taking shots in. Alberto approached me , his my private photographer.

Alberto: The King , Alpha.

Me: You know what's up !

We shared a brotherly hug , Amara walked in too , i introduced her to Alberto , he gave me a collection of clothes to choose from. I looked at the suits , feeling the texture, i couldn't post pictures of me wearing cheap clothes. I looked at Amara as she was sitting in a chair.

Me: How about Amara's choice in what i should wear.

Amara: (shocked) Me?

Me: Yes come choose an outfit for me.

She got up and looked at the clothes, her hand held on a black suit that had a white flower tagged on the pocket but she still browsed through the clothes, i placed my hand on her hand , she looked at me.

Me: Is it this one?

Amara: Yes.

Me: took you long.

I took the suit and walked to the changing room, i got the suit on and looking in the mirror her choice is good it suited me but

the problem was the white flower. And it just refused to be pulled out. I gave up and walked out to seat on the throne. Alberto took snaps of me just flexing kingly on the chair .

Alberto: Every Alpha has a Luna besides him.

Me: No !

Alberto: Come on just a few snaps with the girl won't hurt. Hey sweetie come here .

Amara got up , he walked to the woman's clothes that were hanged, he pulled out a white max dress . He handed it to her . She walked into the fitting room . In the meantime waiting for her he took snaps of me , i changed the way i was sitting on the chair and laid back my eyes met an Angel, i looked at her leaning on the chair.

Alberto:( taking a shot) Marvelous! This is a shot of the day.

I got up from the chair with my eyes locked at her , my heart was racing. for a minute i zoomed out of reality and just for a moment i was in a world where she and i existed , She didn't only sweep me off my feet , she swept me and i fell .

Me: You..you look amazing , (quickly zooms back to reality) I mean that dress is amazing, can we get this over and done with.

Alberto: ofcause and she does look amazing, this dress looks

like it was designed for you.

Amara: thank you.

Alberto held her hand up to the shoot booth , she was barefooted since there weren't any shoes available yet but the dress swept the floor so no one will notice. Alberto instructed her to seat on the throne's arms , she fixed her dress and sat down since she was short and the chair was high she almost fell off , i impulsively held her by her waist , she placed her hand on my arm holding firmly. The flash light blinged at us , She closed her eyes that were sensitive to the flash light, the minute her toes reached the floor , i was still holding on her waist. Another shot was taken , i let go of her and walked out of set to change , this was getting awkward and very wrong , I felt a warm not horny warm another feeling i just couldn't explain. I changed and walked out buttoning up my shirt.

Amara: I'll go change too.

Me: Keep the dress , i will pay for it.

Alberto handed me my phone that had the pictures loaded in , We walked to the door with the press still outside.

Me: You going to be okay? Or we will use the back door.

Amara: No it's okay.

I held her hand so i don't have to go back this time around.

We walked out with the pressing taking photo's of us, i walked to the passengers seat and opened the door for her , we drove away.

DIANA

My phone rang as i was in the bathtub having a bath with my salts. I got out and wrapped the towel around my body.

Me: friend?

Friend: Where are you?

Me: I'm at home.

Friend: As soon as you drop this call sit down and get on your phone i tag you on a photo in Instagram.

Me: Okay , what's going on , you scaring me.

Friend: Just go online.

She dropped the call , i took my phone and went online, i looked at my timeline , it was a photo of Alpha and a girl ! Not just any girl it was that damn PA . He was holding her hand , i grabbed my mouth and cried , i read the caption on the post.

\* Alpha Smith finally off the Single's list , laides you should begin looking for another target cause this fine young man is took\*

I felt my heart go stone cold , how could he though with that

girl ! I took my phone and tried calling him. It went straight to voicemail. I tried again, again and again just pacing up and down as people flooded my profile calling me a liar.

@Diana , you a liar a golddigger seeking attention from someone else's man .

@Diana, I'm not surprised that the will be likes like her , she's a struggling golddigger looking for a guy to suck dry , you went wrong girl ! Posting @Alpha's photo saying you were in bed with him was a lie you probably downloaded the photo somewhere. #saveourmenfromgolddiggers

I couldn't keep reading the nasty comments i didn't even have the strength to adress them. My phone kept buzzing off the hook i grabbed it and switched it off .

To be continued.

09

LUCY

I took my phone and browsed through Instagram , The was a trending photo of Alpha with a girl in a white dress , due to how Alpha protected her , her face wasn't visible. I noticed something about her hair but styles are the same, i needed to find out who the girl was , she can't just boyfriend our Alpha yho ! Some girls are lucky , just looking at how he held her hand it just screams that love lives here.



Rose: I'm going home now.

Me: Ofcourse sweetheart.

Rose: what are you looking at?

Me: Just a trending picture .

Rose: What trending picture.

I handed her the phone , she looked at it.

Me: Can't believe his taken sies (clicks her tougue)

Rose: this is Amara!

I looked at her , she was zooming in the picture looking at it.

Me: what ! No it can't be her mean look at how Alpha is holding the girls hand , will the CEO hold his PA like that?

Rose: A CEO that kissed my sister ! I know Amara i raised her this is her.

I took the phone and checked again but i didn't notice anything that this was Amara .

Rose: I told her nicely to stay away from this man ! And mind her job! Now they walking like Kim Kardashian and Kanye West in the street? She will quit that job i won't have my sister being called a gold digger cause any girl that get's closer to that man they get dragged and be called names ! I won't have that ! To hell with that job I'm perfectly fine with sleeping with

Sweetwater and Bread ! Not my sister selling her vagina!

She took her bag and walked out the Salon infuriated, i took my bag too and locked up following her to their flat.

AMARA.

His eyes were fixated on the road , just him driving into the Suburban neighborhood. He stopped the car and got out , I looked at him as he walked in front of the car. He looked at me shrugging his shoulders.

Alpha: And then ? Get out!

I climb out the car holding my bag closey to my body.

Me: I'm sorry , you didn't say we have reached your house.

Alpha: Did i have to say so?

Me: I guess not.

We walked to the door , more like i followed behind him to the door , he walked way too fast for me , i am 5,7 in height while he looked like he is 7 or maybe 8 inchs tall. He pressed a pin in and the door opened up , he walked in leaving the door widely opened for me , i walked in and couldn't believe my eyes, now when we talked out making it in life we talking about this type of a home . It looked like the houses i would watch on Top building on SABC 3 . I looked around as he walked up the stairs. I took out my phone and took a few snaps . I sat down on

my couch touching the leather on the couch. I got up and walked to the kitchen holding the surface of the counter. He walked down the stairs in a tracksuit.

Alpha: Are you still exploring the house or should we get to work?

Me: Work.

Alpha: You hungry?

Me: No I'm okay.

Alpha: I didn't see you eat at work so you are hungry i will order something for you.

Me: No , please you don't have too.

Alpha : I am getting you food and you are going to eat , I don't take orders! I give orders.

I swallowed a lump as he gave me that statement with a straight face , We in the dinning area brainstorming ideas , he turned down each and every one them . I was getting annoyed and my stomach growling, the minute the door bell went off , he got up and collected the pizza , placing the box on the table. I was shy taking a piece or eating infront of him.

Alpha: Are you going to wait for me to say you can eat.

Me: No I'm just not hungry, i don't have an appetite for food.

Alpha: Why you lying? Wait.. are you shy?

Me: No , I'm not shy.

Alpha: Then why you not eating cause i can see you hungry even your stomach is betraying you.

I looked at him picking up a slice , i stole glances of him as i took a bite. Oh lord i closed my eyes embracing the bombastic flavours in my mouth . We ate up , he discarded jokes as it got dark outside , i looked at him laughing , He smiled for the first time he smiled , i took my phone and took a photo of him , he looked at me.

Alpha: What you doing?

Me: Proof.

Alpha: Of? What's going on?

Me: That you smiled , you literally smiled.

Alpha: You took a photo of me smiling?

I nodded my head , smiling, he reached out to me trying to grab my phone off my hands, I lifted my hand up .

Alpha: (playfully) Give me that phone you naughty girl.

Me: (laughs) No !

He reached out holding my hand down , leaning on my body with the small weight i had against his, i fell on the mat , he

placed his hand under my head climbing ontop of me laying between my thighs. His dick pressed on my coochie. I cummed . The dress lifted up to my knees, his free hand, made it's way in , his warm hand settled on my skin gently rubbing up to my thighs inside the dress . He leaned on my lips, kissing my lower lip. My heart raced , pouding on my chest , i felt embarrassed as he kissed me and i kissed back i felt he felt my heart speeding in my chest. I held his cheeks and kissed him pressing his lips against mine as we hungrily kissed . He reached to my panties inserting his hand in , i held his arm.

Me: Alpha , please don't.

Alpha: It's okay.

He got up and helped me up , i requested an uber , collecting my tablet and phone . I lowered down the dress that has raised to my thighs .

Me: look at the time , i have to leave.

Alpha: We not done .

Me: Please i have to get home.

Alpha: okay i will drop you off.

Me: i have already request thank you for the pizza.

Alpha: (calling) Amara ! You can't walk out on me like this .

I walked to the door as my uber hooted outside. I closed the door behind me and got in the car and he drove off. I held my mouth and cried. I didn't even know why i was crying , but i just cried.

PEARL

I walked in the house and he was sitting in the dinner area drinking whiskey, he was drunk. I placed my bags on the couch and sat down. I was just 3 foot away from him.

Me: My love.

He threw the whiskey glass at me , it hit me on my chest leaving a bruised and a very sore pain, i got up and cried.

John: You can't even carry a baby but you have the nerve to go around carrying gossip about me ! How dare you Pearl .

Me: John , you are drunk , we will talk about this when you sober.

John: (angry) No ! You will sit your burden ass down or i will make you sit.

Me: Okay , easy , I'm seating.

He walked to me and kneeled down before me , with his hands placed on my knees. John has never been physical with me , he would push me down but that was okay, i was in his way and he needed to pass or i made him angry .

John: Why did i even marry you?

Me: (crying) baby don't say that , you married me cause you love me .

John: Oh shut up ! (Imitating her voice) You married me cause you love me , What the hell do you know about love !

Me: Everything baby , i want us to be happy , i want to be happy with you.

John: Boohoo ! You want to be happy with me while you go around spreading lies that are tarnish my reputation woman! I even have that rich lover boy of yours disrespecting me ! He disrespected me ! He had the nerve to look me in my eyes and tell me I'm not man enough to get you pregnant!

Me: I know and I'm sorry. I'm so sorry.

John: You being sorry won't change the disrespect i endured today. You fail as a wife .

He walked out the dining area , i ran after him up the stairs and held his arm , he slapped me across the face and pushed me , i fell rolling down the stair and i hit my head on the last stare . I laid in pain on the floor infront of the stair case.

Me: (groaning in pain) Joo-hn , i can't feel my legs. (Crying) I can't feel my legs.

John: you lucky you still breathing this whore ! Blaming me for

your infertility while you know you fucking that boy in that office everyday !

Me: Johnny please help me , call an ambulance please, i can't feel my legs (panicking , he walked up to the room and slammed the door closed) John please , i can't feel my legs.

I laid down on the floor , i couldn't feel my lower body from my waist down , i felt nothing. And my husband who promised to love and protect me , is the one hating and harming me. I tried dragging my body but i barely moved an inch , i am paralyzed, my lower body is dead.

ROSE

As i predicted she walked in slightly closing the door thinking i was asleep already , i watched her act like a criminal wearing same white dress she spotted in by those paparazzi trolls , i got up , as soon as she turned her face i gave her a hot slap across the face . She held on her cheek.

Me: And don't you dare act surprised Amara!

Amara: that was so unnecessary!

Me: It was since you want to gallavant the streets like a whore !

Amara: i am not a whore !

Me: you are ! What are you even wearing! What is this nonsense!



I held the dress ripping it apart, she cried, screaming.

Amara: No ! Please don't , Rose stop it !

Lucy walked to us trying to break me up . The more she held me i ripped the dress just unholding her with cloths of the dress. The dress was a wreck she was a mess.

Me: From now on you are not going to work with that man anymore!

Amara: (crying) That is not your choice to make for me !

Me: I am right now ! So you going to choose me or that man ! What is going to be?

Amara:Why you doing this? Nothing is happening between me and Alpha ! I swear .

Me: I don't care ! We are going back to our old life , you will be sweeping the Salon and we will all laugh together like the olden days ! I don't want you ever next to that company or anything that has a capital A in it ! Am i clear!?

She held her ripped dress and ran to her room , she slammed the door before her.

Lucy: Rose you so hard on her , She's a grown woman.

Me: A grown woman that is making a terrible mistake i will not let her make that mistake !

I sat down catching my breath .

Me: You will thank me one day for doing this ! Man bring nothing but pain and sorrow ! When that man hurts you , where will you cry to? Me ! I will be comforting you! But here i am protecting you , and you just defend him , you know what Amara ! I am sick and tired of you and those crocodile tears , if you think his such an angel then go live with him ! Move in with him so you can fuck in peace without the devil that is me ! Bloody bastard! I have been with man ! I know every slick move and you only dated once in your life but you already have so much to say about men ! Don't piss me off ! If you can't control your throbbing clit go cut it off so it doesn't bother you anymore!

.❤️

10

[TWO WEEKS LATER ]

AMARA

It's been a two weeks now and i haven't set foot in Alpha advertisement company. I haven't seen Alpha for a full week , My sister made me choose and i had to choose her , she's my family , my only living and breathing bloodline , i couldn't choose my job over family . I woke up kicking off my blankets and went to shower, i wore an oversized hoody since people

have noticed it was me the girl in the white dress a few have but i know news spread like wildfire here , i had to hide myself i can't have paparazzi following me around , i inserted my earphones listening to music as i swept the hair off the floor. I even went to the extent of mopping the floor and kneeled applying polish , i wanted to be kept busy cause when i just seat around doing nothing , i miss my work, i miss being bossed around by Alpha , i miss him , his voice , his smell, his touch. Lucy tapped me as i was crying scrubbing the floor. I removed my earphones still looking down .

Me: what?

Lucy: Rose is not here , she went to buy us food.

Me: Okay Lucy.

Lucy: You know that the floor is clean enough right.

Me: I don't care.

I kept scrubbing the floor, she held my hand and helped me up. I wiped my eyes with my sleeve.

Lucy: Talk to me?

Me: I miss my work, i was doing so fine Lucy .

Lucy: i know you were.

Me: I wasn't sleeping with you , you believe me right?

Lucy: Even if you were sleeping with Alpha that was going to be your business and his , you are a full grown woman now, If You will keep on doing this, you will miss out on a good time , let's say you did pursue whatever was blooming between you and Alpha and it happens to be lust , if you were happy with him for that short period of time then nothing else should matter.

Me: But that nothing else matters , that's my sister.

Lucy: When it comes to that person , i just lose my mind .

Me: Me you both.

We both laughed, Rose walked in with the takeaways, we quickly stopped laughing.

Rose: What's funny?

Lucy: Some facebook post.

Rose: May i see.

Lucy: so let's see what we eating.

She looked at me suspiciously, i took my plate and stuffed myself with food.

PEARL

My Mother had to come and take care of me , i have spent full two weeks in hospital with the doctors telling me when i fell off the stairs i broke my spine with caused damage to my spinal

cord due to that damage i was paralyzed, they had no hope that i will walk ever again . I had almost 4 doctors check me up just for solutions. But they all came back with the same response. I haven't seen John since the incident , My mom said he packed his bags and left the house. He better run with what he did to me he better run faster than his legs could carry him.

Gloria: Pearl , are you going to tell me what happened?

Me: Ma i already told you, i fell accidentally .

Gloria: Are you sure?

Me: Yes Ma , are you thinking maybe it was a perpetrated act?

Gloria: The doctors said it looked like you were pushed with the amount of damaged done to your spine.

Me: No Ma they wrong, i want to rest.

Gloria: You tend to forget that I'm your Mother Pearl , i know when you are being dishonest.

Me: Close the door behind you please.

Gloria: Pearl !

Me: (yelling) Ma No ! Please .

Gloria: Don't you ever yell at me ! I'm here trying to figure out what happen and you here yelling at me ! You are wheelchair bound and you still have the nerve to protect that monster !

She grabbed her bag and walked out the room , i covered my head with the blanket and cried . My mom has never liked John she felt he didn't love me but was after what i can offer , Yes I have the highest salary in our home but i felt that was reason enough that he loves me , Mean how many men could marry a woman that gets paid more than them? Men like power, they believe in superiority and John found that as a joke , he made it clear we were a team it doesn't matter who gets paid the most , but now after the incident i was beginning to agree with my mom , John was really after my money .

## ALPHA

Amara has really disappointed me. I never thought just because i kissed her , she'll even drop work it was a mere kiss for goddamn it's not like we had sex , very unprofessional how she handled this situation, we could've talked things out and set boundaries that weren't meant to be crossed but she chose to just drop work . Unfortunately due to the circumstances i had no choice but to employ Diana as my personal assistance. She knew me better as was jobless so she is the perfect candidate. With the Reporters harassing me asking me about the woman i was with 2 weeks ago a woman that suddenly disappeared but i got a request from a late night tv show with Angela to clear the air about the woman i was seen with . I sat down with Diana as we made a few touch ups before i go present the huge ad i

have been working on for sleepless nights.

Me: bring those files.

She got up and took the bulk of files handing them to me , i took the files with our hands touching , i looked at her as she still held on the files.

Me: Will you give me the damn files?

Diana: Sorry , i just thought...

Me: Your thoughts don't matter here ! Give me the damn files .

She gave me the files , i clicked my tougue in fume.

Diana: Is there anything you need?

Me: No .. here take these 4 files and summaries them all in a paper that will be easier for the client's to understand.

Diana: All four?

Me: Is there a problem?

Diana: No just that...

Me: Confidence ! The first law of any business is for the employees to have confidence! No confidence! No business ! No job ! Go summaries those files . Get out ! Now ! And while you still at that serve me coffee , black with no sugar and clear my dairy. And again Diana, don't let anyone in my office appointment or not , i don't want to see anyone .

Diana: Noted .

Me: Noted?

Diana: Understood.. Sir.

Me: Now get out.

She walked to the door struggling to open the door , she dropped the files on the floor they made a bang disrupting me , i looked at her . All she knows is opening her legs she can't even do a simple job like holding 4 files and balancing them on her arm . I looked at her annoyed. She collected the files and walked out closing the door.

Me: Damn amateur!

DAINA

I sat down on the desk and took a book , trying to summarise the 4 files in one paper , this was hard . Being a PA is hard it isn't as what it seems in movies where the PA's dress pretty and just carry a note pad and a pen just taking notes . I felt like I'm HR . I held the pen summarizing the notes .

ROSE

Amara is actually doing fine without that job she is back to normal to the Ammie i know. And i am very proud of her . I walked to the couch and sat next to her , she got up .



Me: Ammie can we talk ?

Amara: If this is about Alpha I'm not interested.

Me: It's not about him , it's about us.

Amara:What about us?

Me: Our relationship, i don't like how we going on i feel like we drifted away from each other.

Amara: Yes we did , the day you decided to be my mother and not my sister!

Me: Amara i was trying to ..

Amara: Protect me ? From what? From my job ? Or are you jealous Rose ? Are you Jealous that Alpha will fall inlove with me and i will fall inlove with him and leave you? Are you that Jealous of your own sister to the extent you force me to stay away from my future?

Me: That is not true !

Amara : (yelling) What is true then!

Me: I don't want you to get hurt!

Amara: Since when have you predicted the future? You don't even know Alpha but you have already charged and jailed him!

Me: I am your sister, when you hurt i do too what is hard to understand here?

Amara: know what it doesn't matter anymore, i chose you so deal with how things are between us !

She got up furious and walked to the counter collecting money and piece of paper walking out the salon. I held my tears back .

Me: big girls don't cry.

I wiped the eye bags that were filling up with tears and took a deep breath.

To be continued.

12

AMARA

I woke up and walked to the kitchen , the minute my eyes laid on Rose , i turn walking back to my room

Rose: Ammie.

I turned and gave her a non nonsense taking look.

Rose: You have every right to be angry at me.

Me: Damn right i do !

Rose: Come seat please sweetheart i want to talk to you.

I walked over and sat down . She offered me a cup of coffee but that cup wasn't going to soften me up just yet , i was still angry at her.

Me: What is it Rose.

Rose: I want to say I'm sorry , for everything that includes hitting you and insulting you i shouldn't have done that and i feel bad about that.

Me: you should feel bad ! I had my life all figured out and now back to square one because of you.

Rose: (crying) I'm sorry Amara

I got up and walked to her hugging her from behind, she held on my hands and kissed them, i wiped her tears.

Me: I forgive you Rose, but please you have to trust me , i will never let a man play with me . Alpha wasn't going to play with me cause we nothing to each other , i was his employee and he was my boss.

Rose: I know, i just felt the urge to protect you against him.

Me: Alpha is not that much of a threat to me he might look hardcore but his totally a sweet ....teddy bear like a softy .

Rose: A teddy bear? Really is that how you will describe him?

Me: I was going to say sweet but teddy bear hit my mind first.

Rose: Now can we have our mornings like how we used too?  
Laughing and having hot coffee?

Me: I will make us a cup then when I'm done I'll go get ready , i

have an interview.

Rose: Fingers crossed.

Me: And this time i hope i will go to work in peace .

Rose: but you don't have too go for an interview you can go back to Alpha maybe he will understand.

Me: It's Alpha we talking about here , he will first bite my head off then maybe give me my job back which is impossible.

Rose: These no faulty in trying .

Me: I will go there maybe when I'm done with my interview.

I made the coffee and we sat down chatting, she kept holding my hand against her cheek , i onced enjoyed it when i was young but now it was awkward when she does it. I looked at her as she played with my fingers.

Rose: what's wrong?

Me: Why do you like placing my hand on your cheek or kiss them ?

Rose: I'm your sister I'm showing affection.

I sipped on my mug and laughed.

Me: Your affection is getting weird now since I'm a grown woman.

Rose: You will always remain my little Ammie.

Me: Okay if you say so, let me go get ready.

I got up and walked to my room getting ready for my interview . I did some touch ups tieing my hair upright. I walked out the room , Rose was washing the dishes.

Me: And?

Rose: You look amazing.

Me: Don't say it because you my sister .

Rose: i mean it you look gorgeous they would be fools no hiring you.

Me: thank you Rose for everything, if it weren't for you i wouldn't be the woman i am today.

Rose: You don't need too I'm your big Sis , i did what i was supposed too.

Me: Let me go secure that job .

Rose: You do that please .

I walked out the house and requested a uber , i got in the car and sat down rehearsing my introduction. I can be very nervous when being interviewed and find myself tumbling on my words. I got off the car and walked in the company, the boss interviewed me asking for references and i couldn't give him

Alpha's number what if he jinx's this for me , i gave him My sister's and Lucy's they will just pretend they were my ex bosses.

CEO: We will contact you.

Me: Thank you sir.

CEO: Call the next person.

I took my bag and walked out . I swallowed my pride and really went to Alpha advertisement company. As i walked in the stuff looked at me , some whispering "it's her , oh my word it's true" i got on the elevator, I was confused what was going on. As the Elevator doors opened up , Diana was on my seat at the reception, wow that was fast. I walked over the table.

Me: Hi , is Alpha in?

Diana: No.

Me: Ain't you going to call?

Diana: No ! His not here Mem now go.

I walked over this office, she ran after me , i swunged the door open and really he was in the office, he raised up his head and looked at me.

Me: Alpha can i talk to you for a minute.

Alpha: Diana did i say i don't want no one to disturb me.

Diana: I told her you didn't want to see anyone but she thinks she's made it in life because you just held her hand , she walked in forcefully.

Me: Alpha please , i want to talk to you.

Diana: Mem please leave .

Alpha: Call security.

He looked at his laptop resuming with work. I walked over to his desk.

Me: Please i want to talk to you , Alpha look at me ! Please.

He bluntly pretended like i wasn't even in the room.

Diana : The she is , get her out.

Me: Alpha .

They grabbed me dragging me out his office and he said nothing, he didn't even look at me.

Me: Okay ! Let me go i will walk out on my own.

Diana stood at the reception holding on her waist smiling.

Diana: And may this be the last time you come here!

I looked at her and got in the elevator the minute the doors closed i broke down in tears. He let them dragged me out , Alpha hates me. I wiped my chin that was flooding in tears , i

walked out the building and a whole ground of reports ran to me with camera's flashing my eyes . Some crowding me with questions.

Reporter 1: What kind of relationship do you share with Mr Smith?

Reporter 2: Were you a one night stand? How did you meet him?

Reporter: Why are you crying is it because thee Alpha broke up with you after your relation was exposed in the night show?

Reporter 3 : How long have you been together?

Reporter 4: Answer us .

I got dizzy from the shots taken , i could barely move or see what where i was going they crowded me from all sides , showering me with questions i even didn't know how to answer. I took my phone out and requested a near by uber the minute it arrived i got in the car .And he droved off. I held my forehead taking deep breaths. Just inhaling and exhaling the stress and fear i had inbetween those cruel people.

DIANA

I made the call informing the press she was here i had to do it , the people deserved answers. He was at the window looking down at the pack of people as they spread away.



Alpha: This is all your doing isn't it?

Me: Excuse me?

Alpha: I wont repeat myself.

Me: Wait Alpha are you accusing me of calling the press on Amara? Why would i do that ? What will i gain from doing that?

He walked to the table and looked at me , i began shaking.

Alpha: Who is making a fool out of who here?

Me: I am not making a fool out of you Alpha , i swear , i would never do such a thing to you.

Alpha: You even have the nerve to lie in my face Diana.

I swallowed a lump and looked at him . He walked to me his jaw muscles move , he tried cooling his temper but i saw right through him he was fuming.

Me: I'm sorry okay it was me , i sent the picture to Angela and i called the press , I'm sorry.

Alpha: Kneel.

Me: What!

Alpha: i won't repeat myself.

I descended to the floor and kneeled. He unzipped his pants and took out his crotch.

Alpha: You know what to do.

I didn't know if sucking his dick was punishment or was it pleasure but either way i was going to swallowing that cock. I licked my lips holding that dick with both my hands getting a tight grip on it , i twirled my tongue on the head , i let the tongue be the guide as my mouth wrapped around it. I stroked on it sloshing it deep in mouth and gagged i did this process for almost 15 minutes just stroking him in my throat . He groaned and held my head stroking himself , i felt it stretch my mouth opening as he stroked in deep in my throat, i held on his legs , closing my eyes as a tear escaped my eye i had swallowed the whole dick with just my chin pressed on his balls , i gagged on it with all the breakfast i had going up my throat . He still was inside my mouth deep in my throat without a warning he cummed in my throat .i pushed him off and landed on the floor coughing , i held on my throat that had hot semen descending down slowly , crying , he tucked his dick in and fastened his belt.

Me: (crying) Are you crazy (gags)

I gagged threatening to vomit.

Alpha: If you dare vomit on my floor ! You will clean this whole building, Get out , and if you dare cross me again i will have you swallowing the balls too bitch.

I got up and helped my mouth running to the bathroom , i kneeled on the floor infront of the toilet vomiting.

PEARL

I was discharged to go home today. I wanted to begin Physiotherapy but how with my legs dead , i could barely stand what was walking? So Physio was out of question , i was wheelchair bound. Ma pushed my wheelchair.

Me:Ma i can pushed myself.

Gloria: Pearl please let me help you?

Me: (shouting) Ma i said i can push myself ! I have hands for heaven sake ! (crying) Please !

Gloria: I'm sorry Pearl ! I'm sorry for being your mom ! I'm sorry for wanting to help my baby ! I'm sorry.

Me: I didn't mean it that way.

Gloria: In what ever way you meant it I'm sorry.

Me: Ma , I'm sorry okay.

Gloria: I know this is hard for you baby , but pushing me away won't make it easy for you , I'm here as your mother, i love you and i will do whatever it takes for you to get back on your feet , okay.

I nodded my head , she leaned and gave me a hug kissing my

forehead.

Gloria: I love you and i care about you.

We got in the house and she helped me sit on the couch while she prepared a salad for me , i was sitting in the exact place were he threw the glass at me. I relived that moment and held on my chest , holding the necklace he bought me on our first date. I cried questioning myself what went wrong? Did we have to end up here? What did i do that was so wrong that god had to not give me children? I am not a bad person , i did no one damage to the extent i had to be punish in this way.

To be continued.

13

ROSE

She walked in the salon crying , i dropped the comb on the floor. And walked to her , she tossed herself in my arms.

Me: What's wrong?

Amara: He hates me.

Me: Who? Alpha.

Amara: (nodding) Yes he hates me. He didn't even look at me Rose.

Me: Okay let's seat you down and you calm down and tell me

what happen.

She sat down and wiped her tears calming herself down.

Amara: I did exactly as you told me , he called security to escort me , i didn't even have a chance to speak with him , he did even look at me or say a word , he hates.

Me: He doesn't hate you , he is just angry at you and wants to hurt you the way you hurt him when you disappeared, Men do that when they love a woman , when you hurt them they use every opportunity to get you back.

Amara: He doesn't love me Rose. Why would he love him ? I'm just a usual girl whose parents dumped her , He was right, i am a fool , I'm foolish.

Me: You are not a fool ! Never ever will you be , you are the most beautiful girl i know and Alpha will be a fool to not see that. Don't you ever shed a tear ever again okay.

Amara: I'm fine now , i just needed to cry it out , I'll go wash my face.

She got up and walked to the bathroom. I took my phone and bag and requested a uber , i had to deal with guy , i will not have my daughter crying everytime she's with him . I could see Amara is falling for this guy .

ALPHA

I was buried in my work trying to keep my mind busy cause the minute i stop working she slips in my mind. My phone kept buzzing non stop. I heard very loud chant outside.

Diana: Mem you can't go in there !

Woman: If you dare walk to me you will know why Roses have torns ! I dare you

The door slammed open as a woman walked in , she looked at me with her bag on the shoulder. She banged it on the table.

Me: what the hell is going on here ? Who are you. Diana!

Diana: Alpha i don't know her.

Me: Close the door .

She closed the door , the woman looked at me with a frowned on her face , I noticed she looked like Amara .

Me: You must be Amara's sister.

Woman: I'm Rose if you wondering.

Me: Nice to know you Rose and what do i owe the pleasure to be come seen by such a woman.

Rose: This is not a social visit.

Me: Oh i didn't know you had a business to advertise? But i doubt you will afford my services.

Rose: Listen here you stupid fool , i am sick to the absolute tired of you always treating Amara like shit ! Can't you see you hurting her?

Me: Mem , Amara dropped her work and disappear, i will not have such in my business , i am running a business here not a charity case.

Rose: I am not here because of that lover boy ! You kissed her and made her feel like you wanted her and now you playing with her ? Do you even love her?

Me: We kissed each other and it was a mistake these things happen so let her deal with it like a grown woman.

Rose: Say it ! That you don't love !

She slammed her hand on the table, i looked at her with anger , i hate being disrespected.

Me: Get out.

She laughed and took her bag.

Rose: I have no problem with you falling for Amara but what I'm not going to deal with is you always making her cry , you will have me personally to deal with , and i will break you, i have been through so much you don't want to mess with me , so you better man up !

She clicked her tongue and walked out. I looked at her and

chuckled. Looks like Amara is born in a family of strong woman , if that's her sister imagine their mother. I called Diana.

Me: Do i have a meeting today?

Diana: No .

Me: Good bring me Amara's file from HR , I'm going home. Call me if there is any emergencies.

Diana: Will do.

Me: Today was just very entertaining.

She walked in and handed me the file , I took my laptop bag and walked out the office. I walked outside the building the reporters were still camping outside.

Reporter 1: Alpha are you and Amara in a relationship?

Me: No comment.

Reporter 2 : the sooner you guys confirm your relation the better .

Me: For who? Cause even if there was something going on it will be between me and her you guys don't have nothing to do with that, it will be our relationship not the whole worlds.

I walked away from the crowd as the security brought me my car. I took out a piece of paper with her number from my pocket and saved her number on my phone. I got home and



weren't to bed , i felt like sleeping today i was tired , i took my phone and laid on my back stalking her insta profile it weren't hard to find since people were tagging me and her on the photo's we took . I changed my clothes and took the file driving to the address written.

AMARA

I got into my comfortable clothes browsing through my phone , I was the most talked about on social media right now . The hot topic. People were even on my profile just viewing me it's crazy how i moved from just 400 followers to thousands. I was blowing up but known as Alpha's Luna, the pictures of the photo shoot were tagged on my profile. The were people that love me and the were the trolls that called me names golddigger was the common one the were some that compared me with Diana. They don't even know me but they already posting about me like they grew up with me. I received a DM from Alpha. My heart almost skipped.

Alpha: can i call you.

I had to make it hard for him , after getting me dragged out his office he has the nerve to ask to call me.

Me: No !

Alpha: i don't beg so don't make me too lady.

I seened his text. I felt like i was in control now. I tapped on the

screen blocking him. If he really wants to talk to me he will have prove to me how much he wants to talk to me. I paced in the living as my phone buzzed i looked at it he hasn't texted me nor tried calling me . I gave up and poured myself a glass of juice. A hard bang came through at the door . I wonder what Rose has done cause that knock came to fight. I walked to the door and opened it .

Me: You !

Alpha: Were you expecting someone?

Me: You have a nerve showing your ...ugly face here !

Alpha: Come on Amara , you know I'm not ugly.

Me: You are get out of here before i call security!

I said fuming , just words escaping my mouth , i was even lying because the weren't security in this building but seeing him made me nervous, he made me nervous just uncontrollable breaths leaving my chest rising up to the hoodie i was wearing.

Alpha: You not going to invite me in?

Me: So you can do what?

Alpha : Your sister was in my office a few hours ago.

I held my chin up and looked at him.

Me: So?

Alpha: (smiles) You look so cute when pretending.

My heart smiled , i wanted to blush but i couldn't give him the satisfaction that he broke through in easily.

Me: And what is that meant to do make me smile?

Alpha: I don't know even if it's meant to make you giggle then that would make me happy too.

Me : Laugh? My word , i will not laugh with you.

A guy that lived across the hallway in the room passed by he is a boy (Enzo) that has been trying his luck on me for a few months now but i never gave him the chance to. I pushed Alpha aside and grabbed Enzo's arm . Enzo looked at me .

Me: Hey baby , i thought you would come in, or you still going to your room.

Enzo: (confused) Uhh ..Yes ..My..love.

Me: I missed you so much.

I grabbed his cheeks and kissed him and pulled back, i gave him a baby kiss again.

Enzo: I'll go bath and I'll come over.

Me: Ofcause daddy !

He turned , i slapped Enzo's ass and winked at him. He looked at and smiled walking to his room. Alpha looked at me and

laughed.

Alpha: Was that meant to make me jealous what was that?  
who is that?

Me: My boyfriend (smiling) his name is Enzo his such a  
sweetheart , never hurts me or make me cry , he is everything i  
want in a man or even better everything i would ask for.

Alpha: (nodding) Okay i hear you.

I nodded my head continuously, he walked to me i backed up  
me against the hallway wall , he leaned on to me with his  
breath evaporating on my neck.

Alpha: Does he make you feel the way you feeling right now?

I looked sideways breathing through my mouth.

Me: He does.

Alpha: By doing all that , you not hurting me but yourself , be  
angry with me but don't let the anger make you that bitter  
Amara , you don't know that guy , you just did it out of spite for  
what i did and i understand and i am ... i am sorry.

I felt his lips against my ear as he wanted what he was saying to  
sink in my ear , he held my waist , squeezing. I felt the sky open  
up , i felt holy , reborn. Oh god what is he doing to me? Why do  
i feel this way? He gave me life.

Me: Alpha stop it.

Alpha: I'm not done talking , i will stop when you have heard everything i have to say .

I closed my eyes , i was burning up , i was doing fine with my life normal and now he just handed me these emotions so much of them everytime he touches me they just set alight like dynamites.

Me: i heard you, step away from me.

Alpha: make me!

Me: Alpha please don't do this.

Alpha: Why?

Me: I don't want you this closer to me.

Alpha: Why not? Is it because you love me ?do you love me Amara?

Me: Why would i love you , Alpha ? You are a very bad guy , you hurt people's feelings , i saw how you treated Diana and she loves you but still you treated her like trash , i don't want that.

Alpha: What i asked you got nothing to do with Diana , I'm asking you. Do you love me?

Me: This is not your Suburban house where you do whatever you like .

Alpha: I don't care where i am ! But you will hear what i have to say , i asked you a question, Do you love me?

Rose and Lucy appeared in the hallway walking to us, Lucy held her mouth shocked.

Me: Please stop it, my sister is coming.

Lucy: Oh my word ! Oh my word ! Alpha, oh my word ! Rose pinch me .

Rose: It's him you not dreaming.

He backed away from me , i brushed the back of my neck awkwardly tilting my head sideways. I felt embarrassed that my sister saw me in that position with a man , i respected Rose so much.

Me: Rose you back, Alpha was just leaving.

Alpha: No i wasn't.

Me: Yes you were.

Alpha: Okay if you say so , I'll go . Rose nice seeing you again you too lady , greet your boyfriend for me will you Amara.

Me: I will.

He walked away from us leaving the building.

Rose: That's so rude you should've walked him out.

Me: No , He will be okay , he came here uninvited he will walked out like an uninvited person.

Lucy: Gosh! Did you hear him talk (Imitating his voice) nice seeing you Rose and you lady . Yho ! Lord have mercy on my soul. That is what we call man enough. That's a Man ! Not these animations we live with here.

Rose: I will walk in and prepare supper.

Lucy: Girl you better tell me every single detail , you don't have to start from the beginning just tell me how did you end up backed on the wall. I even feel like licking this wall.

Me: Geez Lucy ! Eww .

I walked in the flat and sat down , Rose was packing the few products she bought for dinner, Lucy sat down and looked at me. I buried my head in my phone.

DIANA

I walked in my flat and took off my heels, my feet were burning. I sat down having a glass of water. My phone rang , i looked at the private number wondering who it was.

Me: Hello.

Angela: it's me

Me: What do you want ? How did you get my number?

Angela: My show is being sued for R 2 million by Alpha because of broadcasting pictures that weren't supposed to be seen by the public.

Me: Oh wow really , that's a shame sorry.

Angela: And we are suing you ? You will hear from our lawyers.

Me: What !

Angela: Yes ! You a fucken fraud!

Me: You can't do that cause it was a agreed transaction.

Angela: That got us in trouble so prepare your lawyer or my money.

She dropped the call , i placed the glass of water on the table. No this can't be happening to me , i got punished by Alpha and where will i get the money to pay them back , i have already bought a clothes with that 10k. I placed my phone on the couch i grabbed my wig off my head and threw it across the room screaming in anger !

To be continued.

14

AMARA

I couldn't stop smiling in my room just biting on my thumb , i held my teddy bear squeezing it in my arms. Rose walked in the



room, i stopped smiling and looked at her.

Rose: Enzo is outside.

Me: what !

Rose: Enzo is outside and what's to see you.

Me: Arrgh ! I shouldn't have kissed him .

Rose: You kissed Enzo ? What for now?

Me: I was trying to make Alpha jealous so i kissed him , now Enzo is taking things serious .

Rose: You kissed a guy that was crushing you for a whole year what did you expect? He even bought a rose.

Me: No-o oh my god i feel so bad !

Rose: Yes , and you have to go tell him what's going on.

I got off the bed and walked to him , he was sitting on the couch he got up handing me the flower.

Me: Ohh for me?

Enzo: (smiling) Yes , i didn't know which flowers you like so i took this one since people say roses set the mood.

Me: Mood?

Enzo: Yes love mood.

Me: Oh , i thought you were talking about something else .

Enzo: So i was wondering if.. i..i..i could take you out for movies tomorrow.

I looked at him , He looked cute and shy with the glasses on just could barely maintain eye contact with me.

Me: Ofcause, why not.

Enzo: Really? You will go out with me?

Me: Yes but just as a friend taking a friend out.

Enzo: Fine by me as long i will be with you, uhm i will leave now... goodnight uhmm. Don't let the bed bugs bite.

Me: (awkward laugh) Yes don't let the bed bugs bite.

I walked to the door and open it up for him. He walked out walking to his flat room, he kept looking back as i forced a smile on my face waving. I closed the door. And Rose was looking at me.

Me: Please don't judge me !

Rose: I wasn't.

Me: You look like you were.

Rose: I'm just think how will a sweetie pie like Enzo compete with a Alpha .

Me: Enzo is taking me out for movies and these nothing going on between me and Alpha , nothing is conformed yet.

I place the rose on my nose inhaling the accent .

Rose: You go girl.

Me: I even got a Rose , for the first time in my life.

I took a cup and opened up water , i placed the rose in taking it to my room.

ENZO (The admirer)

I walked to my flat and closed the door behind me. My flat mate looked at me . I smiled and walked to my room , i laid on my back and looked at the cut and pasted collection of photo's of me and her on the wall. I had been secretly stalking her on all her social media accounts just stealing photos of her , i had a album of her photo's in my phone , she even is the screen saver on my phone , i had a crushed on her for a year now , and that crush developed to love my roommate keeps telling me it's not love , I'm just obsessed with Amara but i wasn't she loves me and when she kissed me today , she proved it that she loved me too , maybe she stalkers me too on social media or maybe she has a poster too of us in her room. Or even more better she dreams abouts me. I felt my heart beat for her , calling her name, even my heart agrees with me . My Alarm went off for me to drink my Bipolar pills , I took my pills that were

assembled in a box like container with the day i should drink the pills at. I took out the pills and looked at Amara's face. I walked to the toilet emptying my pills in , i flushed them down.

Me: I'm doing this for Amara , i am not sick , Amara loves me , the only thing i will be sick from is her love.

I walked to my room and locked the door, i clicked on her photo and laid my phone on the second pillow on my bed and i nicley covered it without covering the face , i slept next to my phone.

Me: I can't wait to be by your side tomorrow , goodnight , i love you.

ALPHA.

I showered and had a video call with my mom (Nandi) , My mom is the sweetest in my life even though she didn't raise me like other mothers would raise their children, She thought if i had everything i wanted she is giving me happiness but i wanted my mom , i would watch children get dropped off school by their mothers getting hugs and kisses while i got a car bought for me and a driver deployed to drive me to school and get me. Now look how i turned out , i turn to a beast. Can't even tell Amara how i feel about her because I'm scared of being rejected of how i am. I told my Mother about her. I took

out the blender making myself an egg and banana smoothie.

Nandi: I saw the picture that is circulating of her and you and i thought it was Photoshoped , even your dad refuses to believe that was you.

Me: It is me . Ma i just can't tell her how i feel.

Nandi: Why? You love her right?

Me: it will make me look weak , i don't want that , that's not me .

Nandi: Then what you going to do?

Me: I'll make her say it first.

Nandi: how? You will torture the young lady to professing her love to you?

Me: Yes , i will tease the words out her mouth , i will invite her for dinner tomorrow hire a chef to come cook for us and have a place decorated in a love in the air style.

Nandi: How about you just let whatever that is happening happen.

Me: No ! I'm going to make the happening happen.

Nandi: These no use changing your mind isn't it?

Me: Yes.

Nandi: Thought so ! I know you when your mind is made up its made up no use changing.

Me: How is dad? Where is he?

Nandi: His in a supper meeting with a client he just signed up.

Me: Weren't you supposed to be on vacation?

Nandi: That's what i thought but your father is recruiting new clients. Bloody workaholic spoiling my vacation.

Me: (laughs) I gues i know who i take after .

Nandi: We will be coming back next month , and maybe i will get the chance to meet the lovey young lady that has you head over hills.

Me: Ma! I'm not head over hills for her yet and it's too early for you to know her.

Nandi: if you say so.

Me: I am saying so , I'll go sleep now i have a long day tomorrow.

Nandi: Be gentle on girl.

Me: Ma !

Nandi: What you a grown man now Alpha and i know you have sexual relations so be gentle women like it that on their first night they get it gentle .

Me: Okay i hanging up , i will not be getting sexual lessons from my Mother.

Nandi: Goodnight i love you .

Me: I love you even more.

She blew a kiss , i smiled hanging up. I walked up to my room and laid down.

PREAL

I froze all my bank accounts after that bastard stole from me , how dare he ? I called a private investigator and gave him John's numbers and full name and sent him a photo of him. I want every single cent he took from my account. My mom walked in the room .

Gloria: I'm just here to check on you?

Me: John did this.

Gloria: What?

Me: He pushed me down the stares.

Gloria: That son of a gun !

Me: He did this to me , Ma , he never loved me , he took my account.

Gloria: Oh no ! He is not going to get away with him , first thing tomorrow we going to the police station.

Me: Yes .we are.

Gloria: I knew there was something about the man ! I knew!  
Coming here and pretending like he is a knight in a shining  
armor while he was just a wolf in sheep clothing , i will be  
damned ! He chose to mess with the wrong family.

I looked at my Mom , she was fuming , infuriated, angry ,  
boiling just biting on her lip . She walked to me and helped me  
lay down. She tucked me in. I can't believe as old as i was i was  
getting tucked in , i felt useless , i felt like drinking poison and  
just die. I don't deserve this!

To be continued

15

ALPHA

I went to work early today , as soon i got in the office . Diana  
walked in.

Me: Do you know any struggling person that wedding planning  
or event organizer?

Diana: What is that for?

Me: What did you say?

Diana: yes i do i will give you her numbers, may i speak with  
you please.



Me: Make it snappy.

Diana: Angela is suing me.

Me: So?

Diana: so? Please help me you know i don't have the money they requested.

Me: How much?

Diana: She sued me for R100k.

Me: That's a reasonable amount.

Diana: you only saying that because R100k is a small amount for you Alpha.

Me: Sell your clothes you got clothes that could add up to that amount.

Diana: Alpha you owe me that much ! I have been with you doing nothing but loving you and satisfying you and all you did was abuse me and hurt me. You owe me this much.

Me: You should've said that you were a prostitute so i paid you every time i had sex with you, anyway how much do i owe you?

Diana: i didn't mean it like that I'm just desperate for money.

I sat down and took out my phone.

Me: Account number?

She wrote it down on a paper , i sent her 200k.

Diana: You sent me 200k.

Me: Yes i did the extra hundred is for sucking my dick , i don't want you thinking i owe you any more, debt settled?

Diana: Thank you.

Me: And clear your table , Amara will be coming back.

Diana: But ...

Me: You fired!

Diana: Okay.

Me: You will receive a salary for the months you worked , i don't want Loanshark Diana threatening me for my money.

She walked out the office sobbing. I took my phone and called Amara , she let it ring for seconds , i chuckled, how she likes playing hard with me .

Me: Am i talking to Amara?

Amara: She?

Me: Hey there.

Amara: Alpha make it snappy I'm busy.

Me: With what?

Amara: With things.

Me: I will send a car to come pick you up .

Amara: What for?

Me: We having dinner together.

Amara: Are you asking or telling me?

Me: Informing you.

Amara: I have plans already.

Me: Cancel those plans you having dinner with me.

Amara: Excuse me?

Me: The car will come pick you up at 8.

Amara: Alpha , i have already mad...

Me: i don't care ! Whoever had plans with you can wait.

Amara: You so stubborn.

I hung up the phone.

ROSE

She hung up the phone and looked at me.

Me: What's wrong?

Lucy: What did he say?

Amara: He demanded to have dinner with me.

Lucy: Really?

Amara: Yes he brutally told me to cancel wherever i was going out with and a car will pick me up.

Me: Poor Enzo.

Lucy: Sies poor Enzo for what? That nerd boy should stay in his lane ! This right here is Alpha's !

I looked at her , she swallowed a lump .

Me:This is nothing of Alpha's, Amara will decide who she wants to go out with let it be nerd boy or Alpha it doesn't matter.

Lucy: You better go to dinner and eat on my behalf, you watch movies every day on tv so these nothing special.

Me: Lucy!

Lucy: What ! Nothing is wrong in giving her advice.

Amara: I know where i will be going and i were i won't be going.

Lucy: (whispering) Dinner.

Me: If i get my hands on you Lucy?

Lucy: Easy , I'm just pulling your leg.

Amara: I should go home now and prepare for my night .

Me: someone is excited.

Amara: i am very excited.

Me: You better be home before 12

Lucy: Just leave the girl before 12 what ! Fairy godmother.  
Sleep over baby girl.

Amara walked out the salon . I looked at Lucy.

Lucy: Soften up geez.

PEARL

My mom and i did go to the police station and opened up a case against John , I even called my lawyer filing for divorce. I wanted to cut all ties with John . After opening up the case Ma helped me go pop in at the office. The stuff was really welcoming they gave me hugs and endless advices, i just wanted to cry but i had to collect myself , i couldn't break down now. I pushed myself into Alpha's office, he walked to me helping me get in.

Alpha: Hey.

Me: Hey.

Alpha: So how have you been holding up?

Me: good so far , it's not over night that a person accepts to be wheelchair bound.

Alpha: I see so any treatment you have thought about?

Me: The is non Alpha I'm going to die on this wheelchair.

Alpha: The are options but maybe it's because you haven't seen or heard about them.

Me: My spinal cord has dead nerves Alpha what option can you give me then Doctor Alpha?

Alpha: You need like like cell repair, read about it somewhere but only doctors in Cuba can do Spinal cord repair.

Me: Really ?

Alpha: Yes abosoluty check out the process and undergo the procedure.

Me: Even if i do check out the procedure where will i get money for Cuba ?

Alpha: You have been working for me for 4 years Pearl you can't tell me you don't have money stashed somewhere.

Me: My husband withdrew that money , I'm dry with me not working.

Alpha: that will be hard.

Me: Yeah i know so i might as well make this wheelchair my bestfriend. (Laughs)

Alpha: You don't have too.

Me: What do you mean?

Alpha: i will pay for everything, your plane ticket, first class, accommodation and your hospital bills for a private surgery.

Me: (crying) Really? For me?

Alpha: Yes ,you family.

Me: Please come, i want to hug you.

Alpha: Oh no ...I'm good you can shake my hand.

Me: Please for me.

Alpha: You women can really be annoying.

He walked to me and i gave him a hug , sniffing his cologne that smelt like everything is going to be okay, his hug was warm , i felt at home, with his bulky arms holding me . I didn't want to let go. He pulled back i held on right.

Alpha:Pearl.

Me: Alpha.

Alpha: You can let go now.

Me: Oh sorry.

I let him go , he walked over to his desk , i low-key smiled. As he sat uncomfortably on his chair.

Alpha: I'll work now.

Me: I'll leave you to it, thank you again.

Alpha: Yeah , yeah pleasure.

I rolled my wheelchair out the door , getting goosebumps.

AMARA

I wore a dress and a coat on and walked out the house, Rose knew i had a date with Alpha and he didn't even ask me he was commanding me to come so i had to drop Enzo even though i felt sad for him , he was really looking forward to taking me out for movies. He requested a uber for me and i went over to his house , it was dark outside so was the house, i began thinking maybe he wasn't home and this was one of his stunts to get me back for kissing Enzo but i walked to the door still curious what is happening, He opened the door for me, in a black suit with no shirt on just his bulked abs and small waist that was perfectly in it's place that can put Man in modelling agencies to shame . He smiled.

Alpha: I thought you had movies with your boyfriend?

Me: I did but you didn't give me a choice either.

Alpha: i actually did , i didn't get you myself , so you had a choice.

Me: oh i could go home right now then.

Alpha: You already here.



Me: Why are the lights off?

Alpha: i didn't pay for electricity i have gone broke.

Me: (laughs) okay.

He held my hand guiding me in the house. There was a path of candles set for me to walk in leading to another room, i looked at him. Biting my thumb just blushing my ass off.

Alpha: Are you fine? Oh should i carry you to the destination?

Me: No I'm okay, just that i don't know what to say.

Alpha: You don't need to say a thing, may you lead the way.

I walked across the candle lit path to the table that was set for us , i looked at the roses scattered on the floor , i turned and looked at him surprised , He took off my jacket and pulled the chair for me , i sat down.

Me: Why you doing this?

Alpha: What?

Me: Please don't play with me.

Alpha: It's an apology .

Me: Don't lie to me.

Alpha: can we eat?

Me: okay.

I began eating from the plate , the food is Divine out of this world even how it's dressed in the plate it's said it been made by a professional. We ate the food and had drinks , he actually served me wine i didn't drink but it's a first time for everything right?. He sipped from his whiskey glass , looking at me.

Alpha: How can one ever get enough of you?

Me: Huh?

Alpha: Can i kiss you ? I want to kiss you.

I blinked to his question unable to answer. I just licked my lips , he pulled his chair closer to mine and held my chin up . His lips met mine . He left me breathless and with a hysterical heart , i tried to take even breaths , hoping to calm my frantic heart that was beating to escape my ribcage and the blood rushing in my viens warming me up very quickly. I closed my eyes and held his cheeks embracing his soft smooth lips. He got off the chair and kneeled before me kissing me. God this felt right, this felt so right i wanted to him to strip me off so badly , i want to surrender myself to him , i want to be in the palms of his mercy. I moaned in his mouth dropping heavy sighs , i pushed him away .

Me: Ohh my word , i have to get home, i have to leave.

Alpha: Why did i do something wrong?

Me: No , you are amazing , i love you..i mean i love this night.

Alpha: I love you too.

Me: What!

Alpha: I love you too.

He picked me up from the chair. Carrying me upstairs. He placed me on my feet on the floor kissing me. Butterflies filled up my tummy, i felt all sort of emotions, i was super horny and i felt swept off my feet. He kissed my neck unzipping my dress , it dropped on the floor leaving me on my panties laying me down gently on the bed . He kneeled on the floor and took off my panties pulling me to the edge of the bed, my legs placed on his big bulky shoulders, his warm wet tougue licked my clit, i grabbed the sheet widely opening my mouth. I have never been muffed in my life this was new to me , how he sucked on me was already enough to give me a orgasm, it was breathtaking, i didn't know whether to hold the sheets or his head so i grabbed both. I held on his head digging my hand in his hair. I felt like i was informing him to suck every juices i had just playing with my clit with his tougue. He inserted his tougue in my vagina hole. I grabbed arm that was placed on my chest laying me down on the bed.

Me: Oh my word...mhhh!

I bite on my lower lip . He got up unzipping his pants , he took them off and got on the bed , i couldn't see how big it was

cause the lights weren't on just candle light in the room , he got inbetween my legs as i crawled up the bed to the bed broad, he kissed me brushing his crotch against me.

Alpha: relax okay, i won't hurt you , i wouldn't dare.

I bit my lower lips , he smiled and kissed lips , he pressed in slowly stroking the head in. I grabbed on his neck holding him tight , i closed my thighs in on his waist.

Me: (moaning) aah , Alpha..oh my god .

Alpha: ssshhh, relax your legs and breath , okay.

I nodded my head , i didn't know if i had tightened up cause it's been a long time since i had sex or maybe his too big for me, after my last break up with my ex boyfriend i never had sexual relations with any man neither was i interested in man it took me a whole year to get over that bastard , i thought that guy was my ride or die i even allowed him to be my first but he broke my heart and left me stranded. He stroked me one more time going in fully. I light scream escaped my mouth , i sucked on his neck easing the pain. He placed a pillow under me and stroked me , every stroke to a toll on me , as he filled me up.

Alpha: Like that?talk to me so i can please you the way you like.

Me: A little faster.

I gasped for breaths as he increased his pace going deep into

me.

Alpha: Like that?

Me: Ohhh word yes just like that.

He stroke me down the bed , just lifting my thighs on his waist as my legs spread for him. The flexibility of his waist just playing circles in me , he held on me tight hugged my body against his with his lips on my neck . The weren't even moans escaping my mouth , i just laid on the bed holding on him tight gasping for air taking that cock. I wrapped my legs around him feeling a bad orgasm coming , my whole body trembled under his as i raised my hips. He held on me tight whispering in my ear.

Alpha: Good girl.

Me: (humping) Oh my god...oh lord!

i grabbed on him and on the sheets not knowing what to holf or what to let go, i trembled on the bed with my whole body shaking.

Alpha: Relax , Amara looked at me.

Me: No ..No ..i want to pass urine.

Alpha: Pee on the bed.

Me: No , Alpha please.

He held on stroke me more , i let the squirt out it splash on him

just warm liquid splashing on our skin. Tears escaped my eyes. I laid on the bed i could feel my heart beat in vagina after releasing so much, i was weak with my legs shaking , he held on me tight and groaned.

Alpha: Aah fuck (breathing heavy) You such an amateur.  
(laughs and imitates her voice) I want to pass urine , come on baby pass urine in such a amazing moment.

I buried myself in his chest giggling he held me tight wrapping his arms around me.

Me: I feel , i feel amazing.

I was trembling cold, he pulled the sheet covering my body. I looked at him and smiled.

Alpha: What?what's wrong?

Me: (smiling) When you said you love me ? Did you mean it?

Alpha: would i say it if i didn't?

Me: No cause not you the type of people that would never even mention love.

Alpha: (chuckles) what's that supposed to mean? People like me love too , we just love the right ones.

Me: And how do you know you have the right one?

Alpha: I didn't know but my heart knew , and when the heart

knows , it knows , these no explaining it , you just trust it. And i love you Mrs Alpha Smith.

Me: Hey now easy , ain't you rushing things?

Alpha: You want us to take things slow? I mean , i love you and you love me so what we waiting for?

Me: No ! I don't want that i want us to get to know each other first more in a deeper level.

Alpha: I already know you in a deeper level very deep level if you asked me.

Me: Oh my goodness Alpha stop it !

Alpha : (smiles) I'm sorry then.

Me: Can i sleep here with you forever ?

Alpha: Uhm No i have a company to run , you sleep i will find you here everytime i come back from work.

Me: Oh my god Alpha ! Can you be romantic for atleast two times in your life?

Alpha: I am very romantic if you ask me?

Me: Just candle light dinner and you already romantic?

Alpha: I'll prove you wrong .

Me: I'm looking forward to that.

Alpha: Can i have my long intimate kiss now?

I pulled him closer and we kissed, i couldn't have asked for any one better companion than Alpha , he completed me and even if we do last i will be happy i had my special moments with him , i looked at him as i laid ontop of his body , he was fast asleep looking up like a dead man. My dead man. I placed legs on his sides collecting him in between my thighs, i kissed his lips as he was asleep. I laid on his chest listening to his heart beat.

To be continued.

16

ROSE

I don't want to say waking up without Amara in her room didnt scare me , but she is a grown woman and she had the right to sleep over at a guys house when she wanted to , i had my coffee and washed the dishes as i should i then went to work. Lucy has opened the salon already just washing the combs and preparing for the day ahead. I washed my hands setting up my working station.

Lucy: So how was Amara when she got home?

Me: She didn't

Lucy: My god , she got laid.

Me: Maybe not.



Lucy: But we both know she got laid.

Me: Lucy can you stop it.

Lucy: You will have to stop this thing of yours even mothers that their children adress them as " mom" knows when a girl child gets laid at 19 or better yet these children are already having sex at a young age , obviously she will come back and want to tell you what happened are you going to turn her down?

Me: If i have too then yes , i will talk to her and let her know what happens in the bedroom stays in the bedroom. Plus Amara is not that type of girls that would quickly sleep with a guy , she respects herself.

Lucy: What are you trying to say ? Cause i am one of the girls that sleeps with guys on the first day .

Me: I'm trying to say nothing , let's get to work clients will arrive in a few minutes.

Lucy: I think you too need to go get laid I'm getting sick of your attitude.

Me: I have had that in my thoughts too .

Lucy: then what's stopping you?

Me: I'm not dating anyone?

Lucy:How about i set you up in blind dates?

Me : Absolutely not !

Lucy: Come on just 2 or 3 guys and you choose you favourite guy?

Me: No thank you especially if it will be arranged by you , I would rather die single.

Lucy: Fine your loss.

I not even imagine the guys she will bring for me , knowing Lucy she will bring me her type of men.

ALPHA

I woke up feeling all the heavy weight on me. Amara was sleeping on top of me , how can one sleep so comfortably ontop of someone. i got her off gently and laid her on the bed covering her naked body i got in my shorts and I picked up the clothes that were on the floor and placed the bed. My Dad (Steve) called, wow looks like i will have a great day today.

Steve: Alpha.

Me: Dad.

Steve: I heard from you mother that you are dating.

Me: Oh she told you?

Steve: She did and i wanted to speak with you about that.

Me: About me dating?

Steve: Yes, dating is not good for business my boy ! Where is the girl working? Is she from a family we know?

Me: She's my PA and No you won't know her family

Steve: She's not your match , you can't be dating a regular girl!

Me: What's wrong with dating a regular girl Pops?

Steve: My son is not going to Associate himself with a regular girl, i don't mind you can fuck around with her all you like but when i get there i want that trash taken out .

Me: Pops don't i have a say ?

Steve: Unfortunately you don't! You My son! You carrying my surname you can't be going around giving it to every slut that makes you cum , fix your attitude! I didn't raise you like this Alpha ! You meant to be strong ! That's why i gave you the name Alpha ! Be the damn Alpha that you are and stop being soft since when has pussy softened you up !

Me: (chuckles) how you raised me ? Cheap coming from you .

Steve: And what is that supposed to mean?

Me: You never raised me Pops .

Steve: Alpha !

Me: I'm done talking to you okay !

Steve: If you dare drop this call the will be hell to pay!

Me: (shouting) You know you don't scare me Steve so fuck off !

Steve: Alpha !

I dropped the call and threw my phone against the mirror it broke through and the mirror shattered to the floor, Amara got up. She covered her breast with the sheet looking at me , frightened. I looked at her calming myself down. She was scared. I walked over and sat next to her.

Me: Amara , don't be scared , you got nothing to be afraid of okay, I'm sorry for scaring you.

Amara: What's going on?

Me: It's my father , argh don't mind him. Are you hungry let's go downstairs.

I got her a tracksuit to wear. She got up and wore the tracksuit, her eyes were still tense , just scared of me , i held her hand and she moved her hand away from me.

Amara: Can you make me understand why your father got you this angry?

Me: It's nothing you should concern yourself about i will handle Pops, let's get you some food.

We walked downstairs and i made her coffee .

Me: Milk ?

Amara: Yes and two spoons of sugar.

Me: You like your coffee sweet and i like mine bitter.

I handed her the mug , she held it with her small hands having a sip.

Amara: You should have a sip on my coffee and i will have a sip on yours.

We exchanged our mugs and i sipped on her coffee, sweet coffee wasn't bad

Amara: So why do you like coffee with no sugar anyways? Is it some sort like a trend for you rich arrogant men?

Me: I was taught at a young that a man doesn't sweeten his coffee or you will be soft.

Amara: what crazy person would teach you that?

Me: My dad.

Amara: oppss I'm sorry , i didn't mean to say his crazy.

Me: He actually is insane if you ask me , i wouldn't be surprised if his on a plane back now.

Amara: A plane?

Me: He and Mom went on vacation.

Amara: That's awesome , how i would like to travel some day.

She smiled drinking from her cup , i held her hand and kissed it.

Me: If i told you to go get your visa and let's go to Paris would you come with me?

Amara: I wouldn't.

Me: Why? You just said you would love to travel? I got money a lot of it .

Amara: You got the money and i don't , i don't want our relationship to be like that , i also want money so when we travel the world together i will have something to offer.

Me: Wow you are amazing , i know a lot of women would've wanted to leave now and you here declining a trip to Paris.

Amara: I am not other women , you should know that.

Me: Are you sure you want to do this? You want to be with me?

Amara: If i didn't i would've go watch a movie. I want us.

Me:just that i want you to be sure that you want this relationship , and you will be able to bare with me .

Amara: If you saying bare with you , you mean loving you with all your flaws? All the ego , arrogance and mood changes all the damn time?

Me: Yes , you will be my sweet and I'll be your bitter.

Amara: Are we getting breakfast or not ?I'm starving .

Me: I smashed my phone so you can order anything you want on your phone I'll pay. In the meantime I'll go shower.

Amara: You going to work?

Me: No , I'll work from here , i want to spend time with you.

I got up and kissed her lips , walking upstairs. I walked to the bathroom and looked myself in the mirror, am i smiling ? what is this that i was feeling am i happy? But why do i feel like this and feel like I'm weak ? Does love really make a man weak? Does it make a man feel vulnerable. I love how I'm feeling right now but i didn't want to lose myself in this whole happiness then find out later it was not meant to last , i want to feel like this forever. I walked in the shower .

[ HAWAII AIRPORT]

STEVE

I walked in the airport with people pulling our staircases, i can't be on vacation while my son's life is falling apart , i approached the line looking at how far i was i couldn't take it. I held my wife's hand and we walked to the ticket sales table.

Seller: Excuse me sir the is a line , please go back and wait for your turn.

i looked at mute, he placed a pistol on the table.

Me: So what is it going to be?

Seller: (smiles) How may i help you Sir?

Me: A want a private jet that will leave here and reach SA in 2 hours.

Seller: That's impossible sir atleast 4 hours.

Me: Do you know what can happen in 4 hours a lot? You can find the paramedics picking your brains on this desk and you meeting your maker ! That's going to happen in 4 hours and i will be in a private jet in 2 hours.

She patted on the computer i handed her my card and she gave me VIP passes .

Me: (fakes a smile) You are a very beautiful young lady greet your family for me will you.

She nodded her head in fear. I held Nandi's hand as we passed through to our booked private jet, we got in and strapped ourselves in.

Nandi: You know Steve this is so unnecessary.

Me: It's because you a woman you won't understand.

Nandi: Alpha has fallen inlove so what? He can't fall inlove now? You tend to forget his human, his not a robot!



Me: That is my only son !

Nandi: His mine too !

Me: No one asked you that.

She frowned showing she was pissed at me. But i didn't care. I took out my phone and called the Mayor.

Me: You failed me!

Mayor: My daughter and i tried by all means to meet him so i introduce her to him but your son will forever be your son .

Me: I will introduce her to him when i get back in 2 hours , clear you schedule.

Mayor: Will do.

Me: Fucken Amateur.

I dropped the call and looked at Nandi.

Nandi: You are just poking him ain't you? And the beast you are poking out of Alpha will unleash you will say people bewitched you. Cause i don't know what you want from him , his already successful, got a reigning business as you wanted, his everything you wanted him to be now you want to choose who he can and not fall inlove with , you playing with fire here , You wil say i didn't warn you.

Really the plane took , 4 hours to reach the soil , We got off and

walked to the cars that were waiting for us in the plane section.

Me: Mute take me to Alpha's company i know i will find him there.

He nodded his head and drove over , i got off the car and walked in straight to his office . He wasn't in for work. I went down stairs and order Mute to drive to his house.

AMARA

He sat on the kitchen counter busy on his laptop. I was eating fries , i looked at him as he buried his head in the laptop , i took a fry and tossed it at him. He looked at me.

Alpha: Babe what's wrong? What did i do?

Me: You not paying attention to me.

Alpha: I'm working Amara.

Me: you said you were taking a day off to be with me but actually NO you wanted a day at home to stare at your laptop. Don't you get tired of working?

Alpha: No .

Me: Boring !

I tossed another fry at him , he picked it up from the table and placed it in his mouth.

Alpha: Okay I'm putting my laptop away .

Me: Give it to me I'll put it away for you?

Alpha: No , i will put it away , what if you forget it's location?

Me: I won't.

Alpha: No ! No ! Stay away from my laptop.

He placed it ontop of the table and walked over to me. He picked me up from the chair and placed me on the counter table.

Alpha: You got my attention as you wanted , you so possessive.

Me: Thank you for giving me attention.

I held his cheeks and kissed him , he pulled me to the edge of the table , unzipping the jacket and sucked my tits. A hard bang disturbed us as we were getting pretty heated up , i looked at him.

Alpha: expecting someone?

Me: Who will i expect in a house that's not mine?

Alpha: Oh sorry i forgot our relationship is still new , i zipped up the jacket, He walked to the door barefoot and top-less. He swunged the door open and a loud sound of a slap was released , i got off the table and looked at him as he was still looking sideways clearly he was the one that got the slap. He smiled and laughed.

Alpha: Pops welcome ,Amara come meet Steve.

I froze as he said Pop's, oh my word his father is here. I begin panicking wearing these baggy clothes barefooted.

Steve: You even walking around half naked !

He walked in the house and looked at me , i looked down playing with fingers.I felt a really intense stare at me as i still kept my head down

Nandi: This is her?

Alpha: Ma !

She walked to me and raised up my chin using her hand. She smiled , i smiled too seeing her face warm up to me.

Nandi: Isn't she so adorable?

Alpha: I know that's why i chose her to be my companion isn't it sweetheart.

Me: Ye---

Steve: Shut up ! Who gave you the right to talk while we talking ?

Alpha: I will not have you speak to her in that manner !

Steve: I will speak to her the way i want to ! She is a nobody to me !

Alpha: Yes she is a nobody to you but she's everything to me !  
You will adress her like you talking to your daughter, with  
respect , you bow to her.

Steve: (laughs) Who the hell do you think you talking to boy !

Alpha: Who am i looking at ? Who the fuck am i looking at ? get  
the fuck out of my house!

Nandi: Alpha! Don't you talk to your father like that.

Alpha: Or what? He won't shit ! What you going to do?

Steve: If you don't get your act right Alpha ! I will have to  
eliminate a few nonsense that soften you up ! This things you sat  
we should worship is here for our money! She doesn't love you!  
Mute !

A man walked over to me and placed a gun on the side of my  
head , i freezed.

Alpha: She doesn't know anything! I swear ! I told her nothing,  
Pops please she innocent she knows nothing.

Me: (shaking) Please ! Please , oh my god

Alpha: Mute back away from her! Pops please !

Steve: you know the rules Alpha and you broke them , when  
you fall inlove! you get distracted! And when you distracted!  
The business fails ! And when it fails you get us killed!

Alpha: She knows nothing, i swear ! I just wanted a taste of a normal life .

Steve: The is no normal life for a Smith !

Alpha: Then take your name ! Take everything , take the business, Just leave her alone , this is between us not her , let her go.

Mute set the chambers letting down the safety pin , i thought it was the end of me , With Alpha's mom begging her husband and me handing out my hand to Alpha crying, i have never been this scared my whole life , i didn't understand what was going on .His father just smiled watching Alpha suffer and fume , it's like he enjoyed watching his son be the kind of a person of that is feared whenever he is a room . Being the dark , loner, with a stinking attitude and just didn't give a damn about anyone but just himself. He walked to me and held my hand

Steve: Look how she has turned you to a softy over night. You a damn disgrace in my family , and you little Slut you will never be Mrs Smith, my surname will not be carried by a nobody like you ! Alpha is living a life you can't handle , save yourself and stay away from him. you are not included in this life , i have been naturing him since birth to take over this businesses and think you can come from wherever hole you mice came from and come between me and my son ? You got another thing coming . Stay away from my son! I don't repeat myself,

cause the minute i repeat myself you inviting death, Nandi let's go !

He walked to the door and Alpha's mom followed behind him , Mute took the gun off my head and walked out the door closing it , I walked to Alpha and held on him tight.

Me: (crying) I did nothing wrong.

Alpha: I know, I'm sorry.

Me: What is going on? If i will be in your life you need to tell me what's going on?

Alpha: I can't.

Me: Why?

Alpha : It it put you in more harm ways , if Steve finds out you know he will kill you.

Me: Tell me.!

Alpha: No! I would rather have to deal with you not being in my life than tell you what's going on, You too innocent for this

Me: I want to know.

Alpha: Don't worry about him , he knows you know nothing so you not a threat to him. It's okay you safe.

Me: Take me home

Alpha: I'll get my car keys.

He walked upstairs to get his car keys then he took me home.

ENZO

I paced up and down the flat angry ! My room mate locked himself in his room , cause i could harm him when I'm angry .I'm Bipolar and i have sever mood changes, i could be happy for a few seconds and just be angry the next and when i am infuriated a lot of people could go harmed , if the something that triggers to the point of being angry or hurts me i act very brutally towards that person and now i was very angry ! I walked to the wall smashing my head on the wall.

Me: (repeatedly) She promised ! She lied to me ! (Mood change to happy) No she didn't lie that man made her lie , i saw how close he was to her , h...he took away my Amara (angry) how dare he !

I took the knife out the drawer and walked to Amara's flat , i knocked with the knife ! Just banging on the door.

Me: Answer me ! (Crying) but i love you , can't you see i love you. (Laughs) i would kill for you

i held the blade part of the knife , squeezing my blade in my hand , as it cut through blood escaping from my hand. I held the knife tight.



Amara: Enzo are you okay?oh my word you bleeding.

I looked up at her she was with the man. I took the knife and got up. Walking straight to him , he looked at me like i was crazy.

Me: I am not crazy !

Amara: We didn't say were , calm down , give me the knife  
Okay, you not crazy.

I looked at her beautiful face handing the knife to her .

Me: I'm not crazy.

Amara: No you not.

I lifted up my hand and touched her skin , she let me hold her cheek as my hand left a blood trail on her face.

Alpha: This is weird.

I looked at her face that was smeared with blood, i quickly took off my t-shirt wiping her face.

Me: (singing) Beautiful mistake , i have inside my head she's naked in my bed and then we lay away making beautiful mistakes, Lalala , in my head . Lalala in my bed.

Alpha: Amara..

Amara: Alpha it's okay , I'm fine he won't hurt me.

Alpha: I am not leaving you with this weird guy.

Amara: Let's go inside inside and clean his wound up.

She unlocked the door and walked me in to the sink at the bathroom , the blood washed away as my eyes were fixated on her face , she looked at me and smiled we walked out the bathroom . She took a bandaged and wrapped my cut palm , i looked at her and closed my eyes leaning for a kiss.

Alpha: Hey ! Hey ! What the hell is that for !

He walked towards me and i took the knife pointing it to him.

Me: (angry) She's mine ! Mine , she's mine ! Stay away ! You mine right? You mine !

Alpha: This is crazy! You guys live with lunatics here! What nonsense is this !

I walked to him carrying the knife threatening to stab him , Amara stood in front of him protecting him.

Me: I won't hurt Amara , i won't hurt you. I'm a monster. I'm sorry.

I ran out the flat to my room , i sat down on my bed rocking myself to calm down. I had elapsed i haven't been drinking my pills and if i go days without drinking them i will be out of control.

To be continued

Every beauty has her own beast

tSegt2ptember203et6 12du2 ·

16

ROSE

I don't want to say waking up without Amara in her room didn't scare me , but she is a grown woman and she had the right to sleep over at a guys house when she wanted to , i had my coffee and washed the dishes as i should i then went to work. Lucy has opened the salon already just washing the combs and preparing for the day ahead. I washed my hands setting up my working station.

Lucy: So how was Amara when she got home?

Me: She didn't

Lucy: My god , she got laid.

Me: Maybe not.

Lucy: But we both know she got laid.

Me: Lucy can you stop it.

Lucy: You will have to stop this thing of yours even mothers

that their children adress them as " mom" knows when a girl child gets laid at 19 or better yet these children are already having sex at a young age , obviously she will come back and want to tell you what happened are you going to turn her down?

Me: If i have too then yes , i will talk to her and let her know what happens in the bedroom stays in the bedroom. Plus Amara is not that type of girls that would quickly sleep with a guy , she respects herself.

Lucy: What are you trying to say ? Cause i am one of the girls that sleeps with guys on the first day .

Me: I'm trying to say nothing , let's get to work clients will arrive in a few minutes.

Lucy: I think you too need to go get laid I'm getting sick of your attitude.

Me: I have had that in my thoughts too .

Lucy: then what's stopping you?

Me: I'm not dating anyone?

Lucy:How about i set you up in blind dates?

Me : Absolutely not !

Lucy: Come on just 2 or 3 guys and you choose you favourite

guy?

Me: No thank you especially if it will be arranged by you , I would rather die single.

Lucy: Fine your loss.

I not even imagine the guys she will bring for me , knowing Lucy she will bring me her type of men.

ALPHA

I woke up feeling all the heavy weight on me. Amara was sleeping on top of me , how can one sleep so comfortably ontop of someone. i got her off gently and laid her on the bed covering her naked body i got in my shorts and I picked up the clothes that were on the floor and placed the bed. My Dad (Steve) called, wow looks like i will have a great day today.

Steve: Alpha.

Me: Dad.

Steve: I heard from you mother that you are dating.

Me: Oh she told you?

Steve: She did and i wanted to speak with you about that.

Me: About me dating?

Steve: Yes, dating is not good for business my boy ! Where is the girl working? Is she from a family we know?

Me: She's my PA and No you won't know her family

Steve: She's not your match , you can't be dating a regular girl!

Me: What's wrong with dating a regular girl Pops?

Steve: My son is not going to Associate himself with a regular girl, i don't mind you can fuck around with her all you like but when i get there i want that trash taken out .

Me: Pops don't i have a say ?

Steve: Unfortunately you don't! You My son! You carrying my surname you can't be going around giving it to every slut that makes you cum , fix your attitude! I didn't raise you like this Alpha ! You meant to be strong ! That's why i gave you the name Alpha ! Be the damn Alpha that you are and stop being soft since when has pussy softened you up !

Me: (chuckles) how you raised me ? Cheap coming from you .

Steve: And what is that supposed to mean?

Me: You never raised me Pops .

Steve: Alpha !

Me: I'm done talking to you okay !

Steve: If you dare drop this call the will be hell to pay!

Me: (shouting) You know you don't scare me Steve so fuck off !

Steve: Alpha !

I dropped the call and threw my phone against the mirror it broke through and the mirror shattered to the floor, Amara got up. She covered her breast with the sheet looking at me , frightened. I looked at her calming myself down. She was scared. I walked over and sat next to her.

Me: Amara , don't be scared , you got nothing to be afraid of okay, I'm sorry for scaring you.

Amara: What's going on?

Me: It's my father , argh don't mind him. Are you hungry let's go downstairs.

I got her a tracksuit to wear. She got up and wore the tracksuit, her eyes were still tense , just scared of me , i held her hand and she moved her hand away from me.

Amara: Can you make me understand why your father got you this angry?

Me: It's nothing you should concern yourself about i will handle Pops, let's get you some food.

We walked downstairs and i made her coffee .

Me: Milk ?

Amara: Yes and two spoons of sugar.

Me: You like your coffee sweet and i like mine bitter.

I handed her the mug , she held it with her small hands having a sip.

Amara: You should have a sip on my coffee and i will have a sip on yours.

We exchanged our mugs and i sipped on her coffee, sweet coffee wasn't bad

Amara: So why do you like coffee with no sugar anyways? Is it some sort like a trend for you rich arrogant men?

Me: I was taught at a young that a man doesn't sweeten his coffee or you will be soft.

Amara: what crazy person would teach you that?

Me: My dad.

Amara: oppss I'm sorry , i didn't mean to say his crazy.

Me: He actually is insane if you ask me , i wouldn't be surprised if his on a plane back now.

Amara: A plane?

Me: He and Mom went on vacation.

Amara: That's awesome , how i would like to travel some day.

She smiled drinking from her cup , i held her hand and kissed it.



Me: If i told you to go get your visa and let's go to Paris would you come with me?

Amara: I wouldn't.

Me: Why? You just said you would love to travel? I got money a lot of it .

Amara: You got the money and i don't , i don't want our relationship to be like that , i also want money so when we travel the world together i will have something to offer.

Me: Wow you are amazing , i know a lot of women would've wanted to leave now and you here declining a trip to Paris.

Amara: I am not other women , you should know that.

Me: Are you sure you want to do this? You want to be with me?

Amara: If i didn't i would've go watch a movie. I want us.

Me:just that i want you to be sure that you want this relationship , and you will be able to bare with me .

Amara: If you saying bare with you , you mean loving you with all your flaws? All the ego , arrogance and mood changes all the damn time?

Me: Yes , you will be my sweet and I'll be your bitter.

Amara: Are we getting breakfast or not ?I'm starving .

Me: I smashed my phone so you can order anything you want

on your phone I'll pay. In the meantime I'll go shower.

Amara: You going to work?

Me: No , I'll work from here , i want to spend time with you.

I got up and kissed her lips , walking upstairs. I walked to the bathroom and looked myself in the mirror, am i smiling ? what is this that i was feeling am i happy? But why do i feel like this and feel like I'm weak ? Does love really make a man weak? Does it make a man feel vulnerable. I love how I'm feeling right now but i didn't want to lose myself in this whole happiness then find out later it was not meant to last , i want to feel like this forever. I walked in the shower .

[ HAWAII AIRPORT]

STEVE

I walked in the airport with people pulling our staircases, i can't be on vacation while my son's life is falling apart , i approached the line looking at how far i was i couldn't take it. I held my wife's hand and we walked to the ticket sales table.

Seller: Excuse me sir the is a line , please go back and wait for your turn.

i looked at mute, he placed a pistol on the table.

Me: So what is it going to be?

Seller: (smiles) How may i help you Sir?

Me: A want a private jet that will leave here and reach SA in 2 hours.

Seller: That's impossible sir atleast 4 hours.

Me: Do you know what can happen in 4 hours a lot? You can find the paramedics picking your brains on this desk and you meeting your maker ! That's going to happen in 4 hours and i will be in a private jet in 2 hours.

She patted on the computer i handed her my card and she gave me VIP passes .

Me: (fakes a smile) You are a very beautiful young lady greet your family for me will you.

She nodded her head in fear. I held Nandi's hand as we passed through to our booked private jet, we got in and strapped ourselves in.

Nandi: You know Steve this is so unnecessary.

Me: It's because you a woman you won't understand.

Nandi: Alpha has fallen inlove so what? He can't fall inlove now? You tend to forget his human, his not a robot!

Me: That is my only son !

Nandi: His mine too !

Me: No one asked you that.

She frowned showing she was pissed at me. But i didn't care. I took out my phone and called the Mayor.

Me: You failed me!

Mayor: My daughter and i tried by all means to meet him so i introduce her to him but your son will forever be your son .

Me: I will introduce her to him when i get back in 2 hours , clear you schedule.

Mayor: Will do.

Me: Fucken Amateur.

I dropped the call and looked at Nandi.

Nandi: You are just poking him ain't you? And the beast you are poking out of Alpha will unleash you will say people bewitched you. Cause i don't know what you want from him , his already successful, got a reigning business as you wanted, his everything you wanted him to be now you want to choose who he can and not fall inlove with , you playing with fire here , You wil say i didn't warn you.

Really the plane took , 4 hours to reach the soil , We got off and walked to the cars that were waiting for us in the plane section.

Me: Mute take me to Alpha's company i know i will find him

there.

He nodded his head and drove over , i got off the car and walked in straight to his office . He wasn't in for work. I went down stairs and order Mute to drive to his house.

AMARA

He sat on the kitchen counter busy on his laptop. I was eating fries , i looked at him as he buried his head in the laptop , i took a fry and tossed it at him. He looked at me.

Alpha: Babe what's wrong? What did i do?

Me: You not paying attention to me.

Alpha: I'm working Amara.

Me: you said you were taking a day off to be with me but actually NO you wanted a day at home to stare at your laptop. Don't you get tired of working?

Alpha: No .

Me: Boring !

I tossed another fry at him , he picked it up from the table and placed it in his mouth.

Alpha: Okay I'm putting my laptop away .

Me: Give it to me I'll put it away for you?

Alpha: No , i will put it away , what if you forget it's location?

Me: I won't.

Alpha: No ! No ! Stay away from my laptop.

He placed it ontop of the table and walked over to me. He picked me up from the chair and placed me on the counter table.

Alpha: You got my attention as you wanted , you so possessive.

Me: Thank you for giving me attention.

I held his cheeks and kissed him , he pulled me to the edge of the table , unzipping the jacket and sucked my tits. A hard bang disturbed us as we were getting pretty heated up , i looked at him.

Alpha: expecting someone?

Me: Who will i expect in a house that's not mine?

Alpha: Oh sorry i forgot our relationship is still new , i zipped up the jacket, He walked to the door barefoot and top-less. He swung the door open and a loud sound of a slap was released , i got off the table and looked at him as he was still looking sideways clearly he was the one that got the slap. He smiled and laughed.

Alpha: Pops welcome ,Amara come meet Steve.

I froze as he said Pop's, oh my word his father is here. I begin panicking wearing these baggy clothes barefooted.

Steve: You even walking around half naked !

He walked in the house and looked at me , i looked down playing with fingers.I felt a really intense stare at me as i still kept my head down

Nandi: This is her?

Alpha: Ma !

She walked to me and raised up my chin using her hand. She smiled , i smiled too seeing her face warm up to me.

Nandi: Isn't she so adorable?

Alpha: I know that's why i chose her to be my companion isn't it sweetheart.

Me: Ye---

Steve: Shut up ! Who gave you the right to talk while we talking ?

Alpha: I will not have you speak to her in that manner !

Steve: I will speak to her the way i want to ! She is a nobody to me !

Alpha: Yes she is a nobody to you but she's everything to me ! You will adress her like you talking to your daughter, with

respect , you bow to her.

Steve: (laughs) Who the hell do you think you talking to boy !

Alpha: Who am i looking at ? Who the fuck am i looking at ? get the fuck out of my house!

Nandi: Alpha! Don't you talk to your father like that.

Alpha: Or what? He won't shit ! What you going to do?

Steve: If you don't get your act right Alpha ! I will have to elimiate a few nonsense that soften you up ! This things you sat we should worship is here for our money! She doesn't love you! Mute !

A man walked over to me and placed a gun on the side of my head , i freezed.

Alpha: She doesn't know anything! I swear ! I told her nothing, Pops please she innocent she knows nothing.

Me: (shaking) Please ! Please , oh my god

Alpha: Mute back away from her! Pops please !

Steve: you know the rules Alpha and you broke them , when you fall inlove! you get distracted! And when you distracted! The business fails ! And when it fails you get us killed!

Alpha: She knows nothing, i swear ! I just wanted a taste of a normal life .



Steve: There is no normal life for a Smith !

Alpha: Then take your name ! Take everything , take the business, Just leave her alone , this is between us not her , let her go.

Mute set the chambers letting down the safety pin , i thought it was the end of me , With Alpha's mom begging her husband and me handing out my hand to Alpha crying, i have never been this scared my whole life , i didn't understand what was going on .His father just smiled watching Alpha suffer and fume , it's like he enjoyed watching his son be the kind of a person of that is feared whenever he is a room . Being the dark , loner, with a stinking attitude and just didn't give a damn about anyone but just himself. He walked to me and held my hand

Steve: Look how she has turned you to a softy over night. You a damn disgrace in my family , and you little Slut you will never be Mrs Smith, my surname will not be carried by a nobody like you ! Alpha is living a life you can't handle , save yourself and stay away from him. you are not included in this life , i have been nurturing him since birth to take over this businesses and think you can come from wherever hole you mice came from and come between me and my son ? You got another thing coming . Stay away from my son! I don't repeat myself, cause the minute i repeat myself you inviting death, Nandi let's go !

He walked to the door and Alpha's mom followed behind him , Mute took the gun off my head and walked out the door closing it , I walked to Alpha and held on him tight.

Me: (crying) I did nothing wrong.

Alpha: I know, I'm sorry.

Me: What is going on? If i will be in your life you need to tell me what's going on?

Alpha: I can't.

Me: Why?

Alpha : It it put you in more harm ways , if Steve finds out you know he will kill you.

Me: Tell me.!

Alpha: No! I would rather have to deal with you not being in my life than tell you what's going on, You too innocent for this

Me: I want to know.

Alpha: Don't worry about him , he knows you know nothing so you not a threat to him. It's okay you safe.

Me: Take me home

Alpha: I'll get my car keys.

He walked upstairs to get his car keys then he took me home.

ENZO

I paced up and down the flat angry ! My room mate locked himself in his room , cause i could harm him when I'm angry .I'm Bipolar and i have sever mood changes, i could be happy for a few seconds and just be angry the next and when i am infuriated a lot of people could go harmed , if the something that triggers to the point of being angry or hurts me i act very brutally towards that person and now i was very angry ! I walked to the wall smashing my head on the wall.

Me: (repeatedly) She promised ! She lied to me ! (Mood change to happy) No she didn't lie that man made her lie , i saw how close he was to her , h...he took away my Amara (angry) how dare he !

I took the knife out the drawer and walked to Amara's flat , i knocked with the knife ! Just banging on the door.

Me: Answer me ! (Crying) but i love you , can't you see i love you. (Laughs) i would kill for you

i held the blade part of the knife , squeezing my blade in my hand , as it cut through blood escaping from my hand. I held the knife tight.

Amara: Enzo are you okay?oh my word you bleeding.

I looked up at her she was with the man. I took the knife and got up. Walking straight to him , he looked at me like i was

crazy.

Me: I am not crazy !

Amara: We didn't say were , calm down , give me the knife  
Okay, you not crazy.

I looked at her beautiful face handing the knife to her .

Me: I'm not crazy.

Amara: No you not.

I lifted up my hand and touched her skin , she let me hold her  
cheek as my hand left a blood trail on her face.

Alpha: This is weird.

I looked at her face that was smeared with blood, i quickly took  
off my t-shirt wiping her face.

Me: (singing) Beautiful mistake , i have inside my head she's  
naked in my bed and then we lay away making beautiful  
mistakes, Lalala , in my head . Lalala in my bed.

Alpha: Amara..

Amara: Alpha it's okay , I'm fine he won't hurt me.

Alpha: I am not leaving you with this weird guy.

Amara: Let's go inside inside and clean his wound up.

She unlocked the door and walked me in to the sink at the

bathroom , the blood washed away as my eyes were fixated on her face , she looked at me and smiled we walked out the bathroom . She took a bandaged and wrapped my cut palm , i looked at her and closed my eyes leaning for a kiss.

Alpha: Hey ! Hey ! What the hell is that for !

He walked towards me and i took the knife pointing it to him.

Me: (angry) She's mine ! Mine , she's mine ! Stay away ! You mine right? You mine !

Alpha: This is crazy! You guys live with lunatics here! What nonsense is this !

I walked to him carrying the knife threatening to stab him , Amara stood in front of him protecting him.

Me: I won't hurt Amara , i won't hurt you. I'm a monster. I'm sorry.

I ran out the flat to my room , i sat down on my bed rocking myself to calm down. I had elapsed i haven't been drinking my pills and if i go days without drinking them i will be out of control.

To be continued

18

AMARA

I received a call from a private number.

Me: Amara hello?

Caller: How much?

Me: Excuse me who is this?

Steve: How much will it cost for you to stay away from my son?

Me: Sir i just wanted to say , I really love your son.

Steve: You stupid or dum? I asked you how much ! name your price.

Me: I don't have a price , i am not selling myself that short, i love Alpha and if you feel like I'm not right for him that's on you , I'm not going anyway.

Steve : (laughs) She's not innocent after all. My offer still stands. Name your price , any amount.

He hung up his call, i looked at my call log . Rose was out for a while with her out i knew she would be back in 2 hours or so , i had a bath and walked out with a towel wrapped around my body , I opened up the door and Enzo was standing in front of the door looking at me , I jumped up holding on my chest frightened.

Me: Oh my god Enzo you scared me.

Enzo: I'm sorry i didn't mean to , i came to ask what happened

we were meant to go for movie's but you didn't show .

I held the towel tight against my body . He looked at me.

Me: How did you get in i thought i locked the door.

Enzo : You didn't , what happened?

Me: Enzo, can i be decent first then we'll seat down and talk.

Enzo: No ,(angry) I want now ! Answer me !

Me: (heart racing) Enzo please calm down , i wanted to say I'm sorry for kissing you ! I should've have done that it was wrong of me to use you to get to Alpha , i love him his my boyfriend.

Enzo: Boyfriend? I am your boyfriend!

Me: No you not.

He grabbed my arm aggressively.

Enzo: (angry) I am your boyfriend , you love me ! You kissed me !

Me: Enzo you hurting me , people kiss each and every day it doesn't necessarily to be label a thing.

Enzo: so you saying it's normal to just kiss people, i love you , You are my life ! I have a photos of you , i made a chart of you and i , we have babies together two beautiful girls that look like you you are my wife ! Look.

He took out his phone shaking showing me photos of him and i , cut and pasted photos of my head and his on a pregnant lady with him holding the baby bump. I looked at him as he smiled with his hands trembling .

Enzo: See , i love you , Amara I'm inlove with you. Everytime i see your face my heart smiles for you .

He took my hand and placed it on his on his left side .

Enzo: Do you hear that ! My heart calls for you , every beat is for you , i love you Amara , you belong to me.

Me: Enzo , you need help , you are not okay , this image you have in your mind of me and you , it's not going to happen. I'm inlove with someone else.

Enzo: (shouts) No ! So you telling me you don't love me ! You kissed me to spite another man ! You used me !

He grabbed me and threw me on the floor , He climbed ontop of me holding on my neck , he pressed on my neck strangling me . He was so big on me , i tried pushing him off but it felt like i was pushing a wall he didn't move a inch. The more i fought him , he tightened the grip on my neck , i closed my eyes fighting, just tears calling out for help. He closed my mouth i bite his hand ! He screamed.

Enzo: What the fuck bitch !



He slapped me on the face repeatedly making 2 claps to my face, with his belt hitting my thighs.

Me: (crying) okay listen to me ! when you love someone you don't hurt them and you hurting me.

I had to improvise and let him hear what he wants to hear that was telling him . I saw his face lighten up and his smile changed to a frown , he looked possessed.

Enzo: You must think I'm stupid ! You must think i am a fool like all of them !

Me: No ! You not a fool you. I would never make you a fool.

He let go of my neck and got up , he paced towards the door stretching his head . He looked at me and walked to me kneeling before me.

Enzo: Look what you made me do to you ! You made me hurt you.

He held on my sore face wiping my tears away slowly humming a song . I felt like i was in a horror scene , I'm just thankful he didn't think of raping me or even harming me . He kept humming wiping my face , what was i going to say to Rose , to Alpha ? If he had raped me and beaten me to a pulp . What will i say if they saw me with a bruised face.

Me: Enzo , you can go now , i will forget this happened, it's not

your fault.

Enzo: You forgive me right? You don't hate me ?

Me: No i don't.

He smiled, kissing my cheeks, forehead and nose. He got up and walked out the flat . I got up and and ran to the door locking it. I sanked down to the floor on the door and cried.

Me: Oh thank god I'm still alive (crying) . I'm still alive.

I held myself just touching my body to confirm I'm still alive. It was more than enough that he let me live , after what i did to him , Enzo needs help and I'm willing to help him.

ALPHA

I went to the office to get a few files from my office, without a PA i had to go an extra mile to finding my things on the messy table. I collected the files and turned walking to the door , Megan the Mayor's daughter was standing blocking the door. She had a tight small dress with long legs showing.

Megan: You a hard man to reach Mr Smith

Me: Set an appointment with my PA if you want to see me, don't just rock up here whenever you feel like this is not your father's mayoral office, am i clear!

I walked to the door , she placed her hand on my chest

stopping me from walking out . I looked at her hand and looked at her.

Megan: (smiles) Is this you playing hard to get or you playing bad? Cause i can play bad too , very bad.

Me: is that you trying to be flirty?

Megan: You meant to take me out Alpha , our parents think it's a great idea that you and i hook up , mean I'm strong independent, you stronger your own boss, i don't see a problem in me and you trying things out.

Me: Move !

Megan: Make me.

Me: Megan move ! I would hate to break you see how thin you are , you will break.

Megan : (awkward laugh) well this thin lady could offer you a lot.

Me: (laughing) You a bluff!

She placed her plams on my chest with her nails stretching through my chest . I grabbed her wrists and wrenched it away from my chest.

Me: Don't you ever touch me ! Whatever my dad promised you , it won't happen , now if you'd excuse me i have to go .

Megan : We can make this work.

I pulled her aside and walked out the office to the elevator , i looked at her .

Me: Another thing , i like my woman with meat on her bones.

The Elevator doors closed . I took my phone and called Amara she didn't pick up my calls , that was weird cause i thought we were past the stage of trying to fight our emotions. I'll called her again maybe she in the shower.

STEVE

Megan walked in my study infuriated. I looked at her getting out of my desk.

Me: What's wrong beautiful?

Megan: He insulted me ! He called me thin how dare he !

Me: What did you do to get insulted?

Megan: I flirted as you told me to.

Me: Maybe he was busy or in a rush with something try again.

Megan: He doesn't want me !

Me: It doesn't matter what he wants you will be his wife .

Megan: But how? Even if he gets married to me which will not happen , he won't even touch me.

Me: We don't know that , Alpha is a man and every man has his weakest point

Megan: that's your job to find out his weakest point and use it to make him marry me and i am a very beautiful lady as you see the are man in line dying to have my attention. I will not run behind your ungrateful son .

Me: Come on Megan.

I walked to her and held her waist. She placed her hand on my shoulder. I leaned and kissed her sitting her on the table she lifted up her short dress as i held on my pants taking off my button. We heard the door latch click , we quickly fixed ourselves , Nandi walked in.

Nandi: Oh i didn't notice you had company, hello Megan sweetheart.

Megan: Mrs Smith .

Me: Megan was just leaving.

Nandi : Oh no please don't go , i made my famous stew.

Megan: Ah that's sweet but i really have to leave , My mom will strangling me if i came home full.

Nandi: Oh i understand.

Me: I will walk Megan out.

Megan and i left the room, i walked her out to her car.

Megan : Why you still with that old hag?

Me: Mind your language! That's my wife .

Megan: Sorry , so when are meeting with no disturbance.

Me: I will call you when i need you .

I closed the door and she drove away.

ROSE

I walked in the house , Amara was sitting on the couch . I looked at her.

Me: So you were really waiting for me to come back and cook?

Amara: I'm sorry , I'm just not okay.

Me: What did Alpha do now?

Amara: It's not him , he did nothing wrong.

Me: Then what's wrong?

Amara: It's Enzo , i don't think his fine this is more than depression.

Me: Did he bother you again?

Amara: No , nevermind.

Me: Amara talk to me what's wrong?

Amara: It's nothing I'm probably over reacting.

Me: If these somthing that's bothering you , you know you can talk to me right.

Amara: I do know that.

Me: Coffee?

Amara: Black with no sugar.

Me: You like it bitter now? Did Alpha put you put to this

Amara: No, i just want to try out coffee without sugar.

Me: If you say so

I made her the cup of coffee , we sat on the couch , she laid her head on my chest watching a movie , i brushed her from her forehead to her hair.

Me: (whispering) my baby girl.

Amara: Huh?

Me: No I'm not saying anything.

Amara: oh thought you said something.

She diverted her attention to the tv.

To be continued.

## ALPHA

I found myself in a bar drinking. I'm not a drunkard never tolerated that kind of nonsense but tonight , i was in the VIP section alone drinking whiskey myself wet , my head was spinning with the chanting and girls dancing , the Club was packed. A group of women were dancing nearby , they were young and fit , there was a guy with them , but clearly he was gay because of how he moved, he just outdanced them all .They all danced with their eyes closed , holding a show for everyone to see . All men in the club were stealing glances of them but no one brave enough to approached them . This one girl left her dancing crew walking towards me , the bouncer blocked her way .

Me: It's okay bring her in.

She sat besides me , tucking her weave behind her.

Chloe: I'm Chloe.

She handed me her hand to kiss , i looked at her .

Chloe: I saw you were bored so i thought maybe you need company.

I looked at her chubby exposed thighs.

Me: What kind of company are you bring yourself with?

She held my hand , inserting it in between her thighs as she



spread them slightly i felt her coochie over the panty .

Chloe: what kind of company are you lacking?

I pulled my hand out her warm thighs.

Me: Drink?

Chloe: Bubbly.

Me: Bubbly you will have.

A waiter served her a bottle of bubbly as she asked. She drank up her glass.

Chloe: So what's bothering you?

Me: Why would there be something bothering me ?

Chloe: You don't look like the type of guys i would find in Clubs , you probably have your own set up bar at your house.

Me: I'm not a drinker so i don't have a bar.

Chloe: oh , do you a bed though?

Me: (chuckles) I do , wanna lay on it?

She bite her lower lip flirty .

Chloe: Be careful , i might take you up on your offer and i might be too much to handle.

I looked at her and laughed.

Me: Really now? you so sure of yourself, i like that.

She got closer to me , pulling me by my hoodie , her lips met mine , with her tongue twirling on my lips. She kissed on my lips hungrily just sucking and pulling.

Chloe: I just might be your whore .

Me: Why do you want to just be my whore?

Chloe: love is a losing game , so fuck love.

I sipped on my whiskey glass.

Me: I second that

Chloe: I can't wait to do you dirty , cause you can fuck on me and i bet you want to cum on me.

I took my glass from the table , as i looked in it i saw an image of Amara , i blinked and looked again it was the usually drink. What the fuck ? Am i drunk already . I looked at the girl.

Chloe: Are you okay?

Me: Yeah , i have to go.

Chloe: We already leaving?

Me: I'm leaving but not with you. I'm not in the mood for sex find some other man.

I got up and went to settle my bill , i walked out the club to my

car , i got in and drove home , on the way i met patrolling cops.  
They stopped me . Checked my licence .

Officer: You look drunk Sir , please blow.

Me: Is the going to be a problem Mr Office.

Officer: If you drunk yes.

I took the breathalyzer and blow , he looked at me.

Me: Can i go now?

Officer: Sir please exit the vehicle.

Me: I don't have time for that nonsense ! Can i got.

He held the gun on his hip as the other office open the door  
car.

Officer: Exit the car please Sir this is a last warning.

I got out , he held my shoulder pinning me on my car , i  
pushed him away , he dropped on the floor .

Me: (shouting) Don't touch! No one touches !

Officer 2: Sir calm down ! We just doing our jobs , we need to  
take you in.

Me: I dare you to touch me.

Officer: Sir we don't want to fight you.

Me: Come fight me !

They both came at me holding me against the car, i pushed them away just throwing punches , they fought back hitting me two. After a lot of struggling they laid me on the road one had his knee on my back he apply cuffs on my hands.

Officer: Sir we taking you , you under arrest for assaulting police officers.

Me: You don't know who you fucking with !

Officer: Sir we don't care even if you Barack Obama's Son ! You are under arrest.

They took me to be back of the van , just tossing me inside. They drove away.

[THE FOLLOWING DAY]

DIANA

A photo of Alpha with a girl in a club was trending, they took a shot of his hand in the girl's thighs. He was slammed online people saying the girl is 18 and he is in his 30's . He was the hot topic. My friend spent the night over at my flat . Some calling him a rapist.

Me: karma is dealing with him ! No one dumps me the way he did and gets away with it.

Friend: But Friend people say he left the club without the girl.

Me: Doesn't change the fact he fingered her.

Friend: We don't know the fact that he fingered the girl.

Me: I have been with that man ! Shared a bed with him i know Alpha and he'd never hold a girl that way unless the is something his doing , why are you defending him?

Friend: I'm not.

Me: You are a rape apologist!

Friend: I am not !

Me: You are ! You should be supporting a sister bur you here defending Alpha? what do you want him?

Friend: Did you seriously ask me that?

Me: Yes i did ! Do you want him?

Friend: Why would i want a guy that you still mopping for ?

Me: I am not mopping for Alpha !

Friend: okay

Me: yes i am not.

I sipped on my coffee , paging my phone.

STEVE

We got a call at 3am the station commander informing us about Alpha and his arrest . I quickly got up and and wore my clothes and went to get him , we made a deal with the station commander if i gave him money for a cold drink he will let Alpha go with any charges. I got to the police station and collected him , he had a few burises on his face. We got in the car and i drove him home , he didn't say anything to me. Just seat there like he didn't even exist in the car.

Me: are you just going to sit there after the disgrace you did, look at you ! You even rank alcohol , you pig!

He ignored me , Just gazing the road. I took my hand off the staring wheel and shoved him.

Me: hey Man! I'm talking to you answer me when I'm talking to you !

Alpha: And say what answer the rubbish you just told me.

Me: Don't you dare !

Alpha: Drop me here !

Me: Alpha ! Why are you acting like this? What's wrong with you ?

Alpha: Stop the damn car !

Me: I will not ! We will walk about your actions when we get home and the will be a serious punishment for you ! I have

never spent a night in jail so did my forefathers! You are the first !

Alpha: So what ? You always nagging me like a baby mama that doesn't receive child support, what the fuck? Just leave me alone please.

I parked the car at the house, he walked out slamming my car door. I shook my head.

Me : You feed him, take care of him, nature him, he falls in love and they break his heart and serves you a plate of kak !

I locked the car and walked in the house.

Nandi: what happened to him , his bruised?

Me: He tried fighting the cops and they beat him up .

Nandi: How dare they touch my child.

Me: He deserved it ! His been nothing but an ungrateful asshole !

Nandi: His just dealing with hurt.

Me: He got a funny way of dealing with it, where is he now?

Nandi: In the shower.

I walked into the room and took a chair sitting next to shower.

Me : I told you so !

Alpha: Geez Pop's really?

Me: (yelling) Boy's ain't allowed to catch no feelings ! Boy's ain't allowed to cry ! You ain't allowed to be vulnerable! Don't show you weakness! I have survived on these rules all my life look at me i have never had a broken heart !

He walked out the shower wrapping a towel on his waist.

Alpha: I heard you.

I walked to him and held his cheeks .

Me: Toughen the fuck up you bastard! You are going to go into that room get ready and go to work and pretend like she never happened , Am i clear !

Alpha: Okay.

Me: Megan and her father are coming over for dinner , don't mess things up .

Alpha: Noted .

Me: That's my boy, welcome back .

He stared at me and walked out the bathroom. I walked out his room giving him space.

Nandi: Is he okay?

Me: i had a man to man chat with him , his fine.



Nandi: Man to man chat?

Me: Yes trust me Nandi, that's my son , i know him like i know the back of my hand. Where's breakfast I'm hungry.

Nandi: I'll set the table right now.

AMARA

I got a call from the company i went to interview in and i got the job . I will be starting on monday as the receptionist looks like the only job i get is being a receptionist. I swept the floor like i used to.

Lucy: have you seen a photo that is trending of Alpha and a girl?

Rose: he has moved on already?

Lucy: He literally was fingering the girl in the club but what i see is that the girl is holding his hand means it was voluntarily.

Me: It doesn't matter if the girl wanted it Alpha should've never did that.

Lucy: His a man Amara what did you expect he would do lock himself in a room and cry?Man do those things when they hurt they sleep with other girls.

Me: I see nothing right in what he did ! If you going to defending him then don't talk to me.

Lucy: I don't even understand why you even broke , because of

a silly argument you already packing your bags and leaving? Girl when you first saw Alpha did you think his Mr nice guy? Did he look like a man that will give you unicorns and rainbows? No ! You chose your trash now bag it ! Stop sulking here and go get your man cause these absolutely no problem that can't be fixed ! You both approached this situation in a very childish manner. Everyone has secrets that they don't want people to know that's part of life !

Me: You just saying that because you weren't there atleast he should've found a way to let me down nicely just tell me I'm forward.

Lucy: Has Alpha let any nicely before?

Me: Lucy can we please just stop talking about him.

Lucy: Fine, but I'm glad you see now , he is the same man that Yelled at you to get out of his office on your first day at that company, he is still the same man that kissed you , the same man that invited you for dinner , still the man you love . flaws and all , monster or beast his your man! Amara be his beauty since his the beast , In the end every beast has it's beauty.

Me: This is reality not some fairytale , we talking about my feelings here , my heart.

Lucy: What if his your soulmate? You have to try atleast for the second time.

I sat down on the couch and cried.

Me : Why you making it sound like it's my fault! I did nothing wrong.

Lucy: both of you are accountable , you should've gave each other space to breath not yell at each other , in a relationship the must be one that will have to humble themself.

Me: Save you advice, i don't care !

Lucy: Don't say i didn't try when one day you wake up and it's too late same goes to him.

Rose: Lucy has a point, but in the end this is between you and him.

I wiped my tears and looking at the photo of him and the girl , my heart shattered into pieces, couldn't you have least waited a day? Couldn't he have locked himself in his room and cried. Did he even love me ?or he just wanted to sleep with me and i gave him the perfect opportunity to break up with me. But i still love him and i will be waiting for him.

ALPHA

I couldn't focus at work , it was even hard transitioning the money in accounts and breaking it into smaller portions. I got up from the chair pacing around the office just looking at the cars of reporters outside. I can't believe the is actually a person

that took a photo of me while i had my hand in her thighs, what sort of animals are people? That girl better not spread lies about me , i will sue her for deformation of character. I won't have 18 year olds dancing on my head. The scandal with the girl wasn't worrying me that much, but my current problem with Amara , i treated her bad , i chased her out when i should've held her and reassured her she was safe and no one will ever raise a gun at her while I'm still alive, i got anger issues it hard controlling my temper , when I'm pissed , I'm pissed and i say things that hurt people's feelings unprovoked and i did the same thing with the only girl i truly love . I sat on chair laying back brushing my thumb on my lip. Should i go and apologize?or maybe should i wait for her to reach out to me? Shs probably hates me . I would hate me too just thinking of her seeing the photo circulating on social media with my hand ..argg just think about her reaction sends chills down my spine. I hope she finds it in her heart to forgive me. Megan walked in the office , i placed my fingers on laptop tapping.

Megan: hi hubby.

Me: Megan , what are you doing here?I'm busy come some other time.

Megan: I see you trending on social media and that's not a good image for you Alpha.

Me: It will die down.

Megan: so you won't release a statement or anything?

Me: No .

Megan: Alpha you need to tackle this before it gets out of control.

Me: Why should i worry about lifeless creatures on social media , i got business to handle.

Megan: Alpha how about you let me help you on this clear you name?.

Me: Why do you care? Why you helping me?

Megan: Because i know you wouldn't sleep with a teenage Alpha , you would never do that . It's not you.

Me: i didn't even notice she was a teenage. If you have said what you came to say close the door behind you.

She held my hand , i looked at her.

Megan: I will help you get through this okay.

I pulled my hand away .

Me: close the door behind you.

Megan: I will see you at dinner.

I bite my teeth as she walked .

ALPHA

I felt a wet tongue licking my hand. I woke up . It was Max waking me up , i looked at the time .

Me: Shit! I'm late .

I placed the hand on my face and the dog saliva smeared on me. I puked.

Me: Geez ! Max for godsake .

He barked loudly in the house.

Me: Shut up !

I took his bowl and poured his dog food and water , he feed himself. I jogged up the stairs and took a quick shower and got dressed. Tied my tie as i got in the car driving away to the clients company. I don't usually do this sort of a thing but i had to source this client so i can inject more money into the company. I walked in the office's. I looked across the room and saw a familia face . I looked at the short dress and the heels . What the hell was Amara doing here dressed like that . I watched the guys look at her as she passed right passed them . Anger that built up , i felt like beating the crap out of those damn womanizers. I walked over to her and grabbed her arm. She looked at me flinching.

Amara: Ouch ,You hurting me , let me go !

Me: What the hell are you doing here?

Amara: I'm at work , what are you doing here?

Me: Dressed like this?

Amara: Don't you dare ! You have no right to question my dressing style we no longer together.

Me: Who said we no longer together? Woman don't play with me !

I took off my jacket covering her thighs .

Amara: What are you doing , are you mad ! Alpha stop it !

She pushed me off her .

Me: Don't tell me to stop it while men are looking at you with lusting eyes.

Amara: So if they do ? It's non of your business so stop being forward and poking your nose where it doesn't belong , those words ring a bell?

Me: Amara I'm sorry for pushing you away baby , you my woman do you want me to be automatically feel okay when men look at you?

Amara: Your woman? Which woman? The one you chased out your life?

Me: Baby

Amara: Don't you dare baby me , Stay away from me !

Me: Okay i won't call you baby but i will not stay away from you.

Amara: Why using me for your sexual gains cause i know damn well you don't love me ! The minute i walked out the room you went and sticked your hand in another girl !

Me: I didn't sleep with her.

Amara: I'm the fool here lie to me !

Me: I'm not lying to you , i would never do that to you , i love you and i didn't sleep with that girl .

Amara: Why didn't you then ?

Me: I couldn't sleep with her cause she's not you , i can't even flirt with a girl Amara without you circling my mind ! You gave me all these fucked up feelings to deal with and you left me , you walked out of me ! Do know i can't even go to bed without thinking, dreaming about you that's how fucked you left my life , you turned my life upside down and you have the nerve to stand there and tell me to stay away from you while my life is falling apart because of you . I never promised you a easy perfect relationship but i can promise to love you and stick around this time , so yeah go ahead drive me insane but i still can't change all these emotions of loving you and wanting you .



I felt these emotions building up , i covered my eyes , i couldn't let myself cry i kept chanting repeatedly in my mind " boys ain't allowed to cry" , i couldn't hold myself tears just streamed down , i walked out the building to the parking lot , she walked behind.

Amara: (calling) Alpha , where you going , we still talking?

Me: I have never failed anything in my life , but i feel like a failure , i shouldn't have let you walk out that door , I'm sorry forgive me please cause i don't want to spend another sleepless night bashing myself for what is happening between us.

Amara: Give me one reason , why i should take you back?

Me: You love me as much as i love you , I will try to control my anger , my mouth and i won't ever let you go . I love you and i don't want to be without you , you all i need you the best thing that has ever entered my life , you showed me love and how it's supposed to feel.

I held her hand and pulled her closer , she flew colliding on my chest , i held her neck pulling her closer for a kiss , she placed her hand on my face.

Amara: I think we should take things slow this time , we quickly rushed into a relationship the last time maybe start off as friends this time.

I looked at her and laughed, i just opened up my heart to this

woman and she's friendzoning me . I know she didn't mean it , maybe she thinks i will break her heart yet again.

Me: Will you kiss me now and tell me after that you still want to be friends?

Amara: I have to go back to work , i appreciate you finally telling me what i was longing to hear but i have to go back to work it's my first day so i have to make a good impression.

Me: You know where to find me .

I got into my car and drove off , i felt lighter, a huge bulky load just removed from my shoulders as i poured out my heart to her , i had deep breaths wiping my eyes, i walked in to the CEO's office, i presented him the ad and he was happy about it.

Me: I will let my lawyers draw up the contract.

Thomas: Please do.

Me: So is Amara your PA?

Thomas: Yes she is , one sexy lady isn't she?

I chuckled playfully , i faked a laughed and frowned.

Me: Fire her .

Thomas: Excuse me?

Me : How much name your price?

He cleared his throat leaning on the table.

Thomas: So you want me to let go of that chick I'm afraid that won't be possible go get your own PA to fuck on ? What you also want her? Mean she's hot who wouldn't want to hit that ain't it the luckiest?

I chew my teeth with my jaws muscles strengthening up , oh i was mad ! I was really losing my temper , I grabbed him by his trachea , his whole upper body leaned on the table with his pot-belly laid on the table his hands balancing on the table.

Me: You pig !

Thomas: (shaking) Hey man what's going on here, easy , easy.

Me: I will ask you nicely again , how much will it cost for you to fire her?

Thomas: Any amount you can offer infact don't pay me , i will fire her just me doing a generous ordeal for a brother.

Me: You are a smart man my brother.

I slapped his cheek gently continuously , pushed him by his neck he fell on the chair leaning back holding on his neck.

Me: In a hour i will call you then call her you will fire her for taking personal calls during working hours . it was a pleasure doing business with you Mr Thomas, i wish us a prosperous partnership don't you my brother ?

He nodded his head continuously. I smiled packing up my laptop. I walked out the office and looked at Amara.

Me: bye Amara.

Amara: Bye Alpha.

I walked out smiling. Atleast she won't be in environment any more , imagine having to deal with my lady having to be stared and craved by dogs . I prefer her coming to work for me so she's with me , away from lusting men , i want to be the only person that looks at her with lusting eyes.

PEARL

The surgery was a success, i haven't yet got on my feet , i laid on the bed on my stomach. The doctor walked in. He place a feather under my feet , it felt tickilsh tears streamed down my cheeks .

Doctor: how does it feel.

Me: tickilsh, i can feel my toes move.

Doctor: Then the operation was a success , congratulations.

Me: Thank you so much.

Doctor: I was just doing my job and all the credit goes to you , this is all you for your courage and you being strong .

Me: Thank you .

Doctor: You will have to rest more often and don't strain your body too much you can begin physio therapy in 2 weeks and i guarantee you in a month you will be on your feet.

Me: My word i don't even know what to say.

Doctor: It was a pleasure meeting you.

Me: thank you.

He shook my hand and walked out the room , i took my phone and video called Alpha . He picked it up , i smiled seeing his face.

Me: hey .

Alpha: Hey I'm driving.

Me: Oh sorry, i just wanted to say , thank you again and the surgery was success.

Alpha: That's good .

Me: (crying) I'm so happy , i felt my toes move.

Alpha: We'll that's impressive don't cry , you did good.

Me: It's not sad tears I'm happy .

Alpha: I know congratulations you don't deserve whatever happened to you and i hope you will take this as a new beginning and restart your life.

Me: Definitely, thank you for giving me my legs back.

Alpha: No harm done, bye.

He hung up , that was sweet of him , he was actually warm to me , he changed , i like this new him.

MEGAN

I'm Megan a 32 year old woman , i work with my father the Mayor as his secretary. I deal with his finances. I have travelled the world , a very classy woman. I am single in the mean time hopefully just messing around with Steve. We have been at our affair for over a year now , yes his older than me and his my father's friend our affair started of as a mistake and since we liked it , it was hard to stop . We were in a hotel room had a few rounds , i was ontop as he groaned under me.

Steve: (groaning) Aahh , faster .

I banged on him , slapping my ass on his abdomen. He held on my waist giving me composure. I cummed and climbed off him. He got up and walked to the shower.

Me: Steve can i ask something.

Steve: Go ahead.

Me: Do i really have to marry your son?

Steve: Yes you have too.

Me: But if you want to have a relationship with my father , why don't you just make me your second wife ?

Steve: Are you mad?

Me: I'm sleeping with you Steve now you want me to sleep with your son.

Steve: It's not like he'll know , sleeping with me got nothing to do with the plans i have for you and Alpha.

Me: You will just making me look cheap and a slut ! Getting fucked by both father and son?

Steve: Take it like you getting a double bonus, mean i will never wife you but my son will, you will inherit his name , do you know Alpha is the most wanted man in the county? Girls would kill to have his attention let alone marry him , you are very fortunate that he even looks at you or speaks with you be grateful.

Me: Be grateful?

Steve: you heard me ! I'm going to my wife.

He fasten his belt and took his car keys walking out the room. I can't believe this .

AMARA

I worked on my bosses files. I walked in his office and placed

the files on table and walked to the door.

Thomas: Amara.

I turned and looked at him.

Me: yes sir.

Thomas: can you reach down to that lower drawer and check for the finance file.

Me: okay sir.

I was wearing a dress that was half way from my knees a tight dress. I walked to the cupboard and lowered my dress pulling it down. I kneeled and looked for the file , i got up and handed him the file. He looked disappointed.

Me: here is your file sir.

Thomas: (annoyed) thank you.

I placed the file on the table and walked out . I looked at my phone as it rang it was Alpha. I picked it up.

Me: Miss me already?

Alpha: Look how fast you picked up the call were you waiting for me best friend.

He called me best friend.

Me:You so full of yourself.



Alpha: dinner tonight? I'll cook

Me: You can cook?

Alpha: No but I'll try.

Me: (laughs) you want me to die from food poison now? You just decided to cook for me unprovoked.

Alpha: I'm righting my wrongs.

Me : I would like we take things slow.

Alpha: We are cause that's what you want for a change I'm doing what you want or dinner is a bit hush ? Or you scared I'll carry you to my bed like the first time and you won't want us to be " Friends" no more? don't worry i won't do anything that will trigger sexual tension between us.

Mr Thomas walked out his office he looked at me i giggled. I slowly placed the phone down . He approached the table livd.

Thomas : Are you having personal calls during working hours?

Me: I'm sorry sir i was jus....

Thomas: (yells) You were just what ! I will not have you take personal calls during working hours! Follow me !

He led the way , i walked behind him walking in he closed the door , i stood in the middle room as he circled around me.

Me: Sir I'm sorry , it was a emergency call.

Thomas: Emergency call that made you giggle?

He walked to his table and took out a paper from his drawer , he signed it and handed me the piece of paper.

Me: What is this Sir?

Thomas: We letting you go.

Me: But sir i just started.

Thomas: i know, but i can't have incompatible people in my company! I'm running a media house here and you are not serious about your work clear your table and escort my company.

Me: But..but i need this job.

Thomas: Trust me , you don't.

I took the paper and walked out the office, i didn't understand i thought i got a job and all of a sudden i get fired, i have been here in like what 5 hours and they already letting me go. I packed my bag leaving the building.

To be continued.

24

ALPHA

I woke up early and had a jog , i haven't been fit these past few days , i was lacking on myself , physically and emotionally i had

to take back my life. I had my black coffee as i usually did before this love scandal seating with Max on the couch. I brushed his soft fair. Nothing i hate like inconsistency, i hate how Amara's attitude and how she does things I'm stating to question the level of loyalty and maturity in her . I won't say I've fully given up on us but this constant cycle of breaking up and making up got me really tired , cause genuinely feel like it's a waste of my time and it's taking me to the point where i feel it's better i go back to my old alone self thats the only way i can protect myself . I no longer have time and patience for her inconsistency , for a heart that changes so suddenly, for a girl who says everything right untill things go wrong. I walked upstairs and got dressed . I drove to my parents house. They were having breakfast with the maid serving them.

Nandi: Baby morning, come take a seat.

Me: Morning Ma , Pop's can i talk to you in private.

Steve: No , I'm eating.

Me: Are you really? Oh my god this was about me marrying that girl.

Steve: I'm done eating let me just wipe my mouth.

Ma looked at me, she was disappointed in me and probably surprised.

Nandi: How did your dinner with Amara go?

Steve: He had dinner with Amara?

Nandi: Yes .

Me: Unfortunately she didn't show up .

Nandi: She didn't? There must be a good reason.

Me: Pop's can we talk.

Nandi: Alpha , please don't take decisions with a heavy heart you might regret it for the rest of your life.

Me: I don't have a heavy heart .

Pop's wiped his hands getting up.

Nandi: Steve please , Alpha is not in his right senses .

Steve: He's my son , he's always in his right senses.

We walked out to the study. He sat on the table, rolling up his sleeves.

Me: Enlighten me on this marriage thing.

Steve: I thought you heard me the first time.

Me: I'll just leave since you don't want to talk.

Steve: Sit down.

I sat on the chair he locked the door.

Me: Be clear then.

Steve: The Mayor and i set up an agreement, you marry his daughter and she becomes part of the family we have connections in the mayor's office we will use the girl to influence her Dad to sell sell us land that has a bank on it.

Me: Why do we have to buy the whole bank?

Steve: We will put the land and the property on it under your mother and the girl . The main purpose to buy the whole back is cleaning the money with no one questioning us . It will be our property and we will be able to track each and every cent that comes in. The sweetness of this deal you marrying in immunity for us.

Me: It's a solid plan.

Steve: I always have solid plans my boy if i haven't you wouldn't be who you are right now , i made you boy !

Me : hold up old man , it was your job as my parent i don't own you anything. Set up the engagement party.

Steve: I will call the Mayor, i knew you'd come around, i told you love isn't something solid it's just a mere feeling you can push aside. Feelings are tammed my boy . Think with your mind not heart .

He pointed at my chest as he said that.

Me: I need to go to work then set whatever that needs to be

done.

I walked out the study , i meet my mom at the door , she held my arm.

Nandi: What are you doing ?

Me: what i should've done a long while ago.

Nandi: This is not what you want Alpha , don't let him use you like this.

Me: No one is using me , I'm doing this for us.

Nandi: You don't want this , you love Amara and she hurt and now you doing this out of spite

Me : Ma Geez , you know nothing about me and Amara ! You never did so don't act like you know.

Nandi: fine , but after you have sold your soul to the devil don't you dare come running back to me . For once in your life try not to become a man of success instead rather be a man of value and integrity.

I walked out the house driving to work.

MEGAN

I bought lunch for Alpha and also set up an interview for him to clear up his name on the matter of that girl Chloe. I want this proposal to actually work i have to put in the work and show

him I'm a keeper. I walked in the office. He looked at me.

Alpha: God you couldn't even give me a breather. You just had to show your face here .

Me: come on Alpha you not that mean.

Alpha: what do you want.

Me: I want nothing i just brought my fiancee food ? And guess what?

Alpha: What?

Me: I set up an interview for you.

Alpha: I never said i wanted an interview, who sent you to do that.

Me: So you havent been on your socials?

Alpha: If it's about that girl , i don't have time for that , it happened so what people will forget it and focus on trashing someone else that's the internet life.

Me: It's better safe than sorry though , we getting married so i don't want girls popping up from wherever hole they were coming to our home and saying they pregnant.

Alpha: (laughs) We not even engaged yet. Plus i don't go around sleeping with girls.

Me: Never know when it comes to men , here eat .

Alpha: I'm not hungry.

Me: Okay then if you not hungry. I looked at the reception don't you have a receptionist?

Alpha: No , close the door behind you.

Me: I'm not going anywhere atleast not yet , don't worry about that okay , i will organise one for you.

Alpha: Okay.

Me: So when are you popping the question?

Alpha: Do you mind I'm working here .

Me: Alpha i just want to know so you don't find me unprepared .

Alpha:Then you go buy whatever ring you want and set the venue i will just propose.

Me: Okay fine it's that's how you want to do it.

I walked to him and turned the chair kneeling before him. He rolled his eyes irritated by me , i looked at him.

Me: Please look at me.

Alpha : Megan stop this okay , don't push it.

I placed my finger on his lower lip . Before he could even stop me , i kissed him . I held on his chin and kissed him giving him



no chance to push me off or neither extract himself from my lips. He held my neck and pulled me off his lips , i bite on his lip pulling it with me, i let go biting on mine.

Me: I will leave now baby dearest . I will call you for a the interview and maybe i will have the ring with me , got to keep it on go can't let you slip.

I walked out the room closing the door.

AMARA

I went to visit Enzo. I was told he regained consciousness and he had a sever concussion and he needed to be taken in a mental institution he is a danger to himself. I sat besides his bed and looked at him. I wondered to myself how can such a handsome and innocent guy like Enzo find himself with mental problems instead the are men like Alpha ruining peoples lives and they are perfectly sane. He opened up his eyes and looked at me.

Enzo: Amara , i didn't expect you would be here after what i did to you.

Me: I'm here anyways , i couldn't let you be alone after you cut your wrist. I want to get you help.

Enzo: (crying) I'm bipolar Amara , i can't keep up with myself , i have these voices in my head just demons talking and communicating with each other in my head , sometimes i lose

myself i just feel like the third person in my own body. I'm a emotional wreck and the only thing that kept me sane was you. And i guess i was wrong to expect you to want me and feel the way i do for you.

Me: I forgive you and i understand it wasn't you that brunt me but it was the anger in you , i also played my part in this. And i was wrong to do you how i did you , i shouldn't have so i am at fault.

Enzo: Also apologize to your boyfriend for me , i pointed him with a knife and that should've scared him.

Me: Alpha will be okay, his a big boy .

Enzo: Guess so but on the real I'm sorry Amara , i hurt you so much bro. I got you emotional scars that can't heal. (Crying)  
And i hope you forgive me and my soul.

Me: It's fine , it's okay, my hand will heal in no time , instead of you beating yourself about me focus on bettering your mental health and when you better , i will take you out for movies.

He looked at me and smiled. I held his hand that had bandages.

Enzo: But what about your boyfriend?

Me: That is a complicated situation.

Enzo: What happened?

Me: I don't want to talk about it.

Enzo: Okay sorry.

I sat awkwardly and smiled . I really don't know what was going on between me and Alpha to be honest . I was just as unsure , i didn't even know if i loved him or i didn't anymore. I just i will give myself time tk figure things out , figure myself emotionally and mentally than we can pick up where we left off .

STEVE

I laid on the bed as the maid brought me headache pills , i looked at her butt as she placed the pills on the table. My wife walked in.

Me: Thank you my daughter you can go.

Nandi: Are you seriously going to let Alpha make the worst mistake of his life ?

Me: What are you talking about?

Nandi: Him marrying Megan that's not what he wants.

Me: I didn't force him to agree.

Nandi: (yelling) But you pushed him , you left him no choice and i won't be surprised if you not behind Amara not showing up for dinner !

I got up and gave her a hot slap !

Me: Don't you dare yell at me again , who the hell do you think you are ! I am your husband you don't get to question me !

Nandi: So not only did you tarnish his innocent soul you don't want him to happy , you want him to live a cruel, unhappy and be a cheater like you !

Me: I feel you getting to big for those boots ! Since you not happily married to me DIVORCE me Nandi ! Set yourself free and stop nagging me , draw up divorce papers !

Nandi: Go rot in hell !

Me: I will and you coming with me as my wife.

She walked to the bathroom slamming the door behind her , i heard her scream and in a few minutes she sobbed crying .

ALPHA

I finished up some bank paperwork and placed the files aside , i got up from chair and walked to the window, i looked down as usual just watching the cars pass by on the busy street. I heard chanting and laughing at reception. The door swung open.

Megan: Yes please walk in , you can put the ring cases over there.

Me: What the hell ? What's going on here?

Megan: ring selection?

Me: ring selection? What the hell

Megan: Since you too busy to go to the jewelry store with me i and this lovey lady brought it to you.

I suddenly had a headache it hit just on one side of my head , beating like a drum , i sat down holding on my forehead. They place the rings before me .

Me: Why am i the one choosing the ring? Am i the one that's going to wear the engagement ring.

Megan: You didn't have to be that harsh. Uhmm sweetie please take the rings back.

The lady packed the rings and walked out the office. She turned the key on the door , she walked back to me .

Me: Why are you still in my office Megan?

Megan: What does it look like.

She kicked the chair aside and held me by my tie bravely flipping her legs open and pulled me closer .She held my shirt ripping it open the buttons fell on the floor.

Me: Megan what are you doing ?

Megan: Do whatever you want with me.

She pleaded placing wet kisses on my neck with her hands touching my abs . Her hands moved touching my crotch ontop

of the pants . I was a little horny with hot blood running through my viens and my muscle was rising for a little while it was taking it's time to have a strong erection. She grinded herself towards me stroking her coochie on my pants.

Me: Leave!

I clutched her hands off my body . Megan was gorgeous but she wasn't Amara . Whom i desired with all my being .Sure it felt good having her rub heself against me . But i wasn't lusting her . If this was months back , i would've played along , bent her over the desk and filled her up severely.

Megan: Alpha please ..i want to please you , just let me try .

Me: (angry) The only thing i want you to do is to get the hell out of here , Megan , if you have self respect you will get off my desk close your legs and walk out that . We are nothing but a contract marriage, it's fake not real , no emotions no sex involved . I'm really trying to contain my anger but don't push me.

Megan: Is there someone else? Are you inlove?

Me: Get out , leave my office, i won't have a loose wife ! You better get your act right if you want me to still continue this nonsense of a marriage.

She got off the table , lowering her dress walking to the door.

Me: Megan!

Megan: Yes Alpha .

Me: May this be the last time you barge into my office without my permission , we clear?

Megan: Okay , what about the interview?

Me: I'll meet you downstairs.

She unlocked the door and walked out. I took off my torn shirt and wore my blazer i took my car keys and laptop . This woman is going to drive me crazy . I met her downstairs and we used my car going to the interview she organized without my consent. She took out a ring and wore it . I looked at her.

Megan: I had already chosen the ring.

Me: Then what was the girl doing in my office.

Megan: This is a stunt ring not an engagement ring Alpha.

We walked into the shooting building. I was really surprised that we are going to be hosted by Angela , this girl just has luck on hosting me on these shows. We sat down , Megan and i on the same comfy sofa with Angela on the other side of the small table.

Angela: We are joined today by Alpha and Megan , as we all know Mr Smith hasn't been part- timing trending first the girl in

the white dress and now the supposed 18 year old at a club ,  
What is going on Alpha please enlighten us.

Me: Well i can't say nothing much just being me , just to make things clear to those that said I'm a rapist whatever ugly names you were calling me , i didn't know the girl was 18 and i didn't force her to do anything that lead to me touching her panties, i didn't even touch the real deal folks .

Megan: Exactly and My fiance did nothing wrong to that girl and what was a ...

I looked at her .

Angela: Pardon me to disrupt you , your fiance? You engaged?

Megan: (giggles) Not to brag but sorry ladies i got the ring.

She showed her ring to the camera, i laid back on the couch.  
Sinking down.

Angela: Goodness gracious, congratulations another fine man cuffed for life .

Megan : Hands off his mine.

She held my cheek , i faked a smile.

Angela: I'm so happy for you guys and i hope i will get that marriage invitation , won't i Alpha?

Me: That will be all to my lovely wife to be.



I placed my hand on her thigh and squeezed, she looked at me .

Megan: We'll see about that.

AMARA

I was waken up by Rose and Lucy . I wiped my mouth and got up the couch.

Me: (yawning) Guys you already back , i must've dosed off.

Lucy: You busy sleeping while Alpha is getting engaged.

Me: Huh?

Lucy: (playing dum) huh? You stupid girl !

Me: Alpha is what?

Rose: His engaged , he and some girl announced it a while ago.

Me: No ! He wouldn't do that .

Rose: (chuckles) Why wouldn't he ? You changed the poor man and made him fall inlove with you and you again broke his heart, you closed the door on his face Amara , you pushed him away .

Me: But ..but i wasn't sending him to go get engaged , i was hurt and stressed about Enzo and i needed time .

Rose: Stress and hurt by Enzo? Really now? Wow that's all you going to say , you took out your frustrations on him while he

was reaching out to you these no explaining what you did and now his engaged now deal with it.

Me: (crying) He can't! No he can't ! Lucy please show me where was the interview.

I got from the couch as Lucy pressed on the phone and clicked on the video, oh my word it's true, he is engaged. But his gesture didn't show he is happy or excited about this engagement. Jealousy and anger filled me up , my chest rising and falling as i tried to contain my raging anger. How dare he?! How could he?! Means all we shared was lies , and pretence ... everything was just a big fat lie . How could he sleep with me while he knew he had already selected the woman he wanted to spend the rest of his life with .. was i just a game to him?He thought he could just do whatever else he wanted. I took my phone and dialled his number . He let the phone ring for a while which got me really mad ! I was losing my mind. He picked up the phone.

Alpha: Amara.

Me: (angry) Don't you dare Amara me you piece of shit !

Alpha: careful with the nasty language it's not you.

Me: (crying) I thought..i thought you love me...why? Why did you tell me you loved me while you didn't.

Alpha: I'm sorry then.

Me: No you not sorry , i need answers don't tell me you sorry !

Alpha: how about you come over , I'll answer all your questions.

He hung up the call. I looked at the call log and placed the phone on my ear.

Me : Alpha ! Hello!

I tossed the phone on couch and cried. Lucy gave me a hug.

Lucy: What did he say?

Me: I don't understand what's going on? I don't know what's going.

Lucy: What did he say?

Me: He said i should come over so he tells me what's going on.

Lucy: Then what are you waiting for go get answers.

Me: I should go now?

Lucy: Yes go . I will request for you right now , go wash you face.

Me: Okay.

I wiped the my nose with the back of my wrist, i walked to the bathroom and quckily washed my face. I took my bag .

Rose: It's true what they say , you never acknowledge what you have till you lose it .

Lucy: Rose stop rubbing it in.

Rose: And while you still at getting your answers remember his not yours , his someone elses husband to be.

I looked at her with tears filling up my eyes.

Lucy: Don't mind her but though she's right you there for answers we don't want you trending on social media being called a homewrecker .

Me: I won't do anything stupid.

I got into the car and drove off. I kept looking at the video on YouTube and just shouting in the inside , Oh my word his engaged. I walked out the car looking at his light up home , i walked to the door , taking deep breaths wiping my eyes.

Me: No i can't do this.

I walked away from the door way.

Alpha: You don't want your answers no more?

I looked at him , he was standing at the door with shorts on his dog approached the door and sat next to him. I pushed my chest out acting brave.I walked to the door and slapped him. He looked at with his head titled slightly.

Me: You son of bitc...

Alpha: You just had to call me a son of Bitch ?

Me: You deserved that !

Alpha : I know you still remember , you were the one that pushed me away from you , you let me go this time.

Me: but i never said go get engaged!

Alpha: Are you jealous? Does seeing me with another woman hurt you?

Me: So this is just a game to you Alpha?

Alpha: You had two choices in your life Amara.

Me: And what are they?

Alpha: to be mine again and not give me problems or having me to run after you all the damn time .

Me: The other.

Alpha: or you make me yours and you chose to push me away , you chose to fuck up again i don't know what i did or maybe you were feeding on what i did first or maybe you wanted to hurt me and you did.

Me: (crying) but why did you get engaged? Don't you love me no more?

Alpha: That doesn't matter no more.

Me: Stop lying ! Say it tell me you don't love me , tell me you don't feel the same way about me anymore.

I walked inside the house storming to the dinning area, he walked in behind me.

Alpha: I answered all your questions Amara , i am unfortunately getting married to Megan , atleast she knows what she wants.

Me: And what is that supposed to mean?

Alpha: You exactly what i mean Amara don't act dum.

I got up from the couch and paced in the sitting area , i was shattered, broke hearted. I sat down on the table and looked down covering my eyes , i cried hard. He kneeled down before me patting my back.

Me: (crying) No , don't touch me , while you getting married and it's not me you marrying.

Alpha: You don't want me to get married?

I nodded my head , he laughed with a smile on his face . He held my cheeks with both his hands. i felt electrified. I could feel my cheeks turn purple from blushing as i tried to fight the shame and helplessness i felt under his paws , but i wanted him , was i wrong for wanting what was mine? Alpha was mine . I leaned and kissed him. He didn't push me off no try to stop me . He wanted me too as much as i wanted him . He kissed me fearful and fiercely , i wrapped my arms on his neck gulping on his lips. I laid my hands on his naked chest ceasing the warmth of his body , he undress me leaving me naked on the dinning

mat . I closed my eyes holding on his neck kissing him .

Alpha: (commanding) Open your eyes.

His hand rubbing on my nipple while the other remain in between my legs.I gasped as his finger slid in me , he played with my clit precisely drawing tiny circles around my womanhood. He looked in my eyes as i grabbed on his arm , i could feel the pressure building up inside me as his fingers went faster . This was such torturous...a heavenly feeling torture. My word i closed my eyes i couldn't .

Alpha: Look at me Amara , i want you to keep your eyes on mine. Focus on only me.

I slightly opened my eyes , clinging on my lip .

Me: (moaning) Mhhh ...oh my .

Alpha: Do you love me?

Me: Stop it.

As if to prove he had the upper hand on me, he left my clit as i was about to release , i got really frustrated with the feeling that was building up flew out the window. I looked at him as he gave me baby kisses, i laid on my back yawning over him , like he was salvation.

Me: Please , please don't do this to me , please give it me .

I begged him in a shaky desperate voice . I could no longer think straight , my body became more and more demanding for him .I needed some loving and i needed it now , i wanted to feel him fill me up . He smiled thrusting his finger in me with his hand grabbing on my breast , he licked on my abdomen leaving a wet trail. The feeling of his tongue against my body , his breath beaming me up. My breath becoming rough and wild as i hold on his shoulder . He pulled down his shorts , for the first time i looked down on it . i could see his powerful strong thighs and his rock hard member , oh my word it's big can't believe i handled that big the last time ? God i need praising. I pulled down the pillow from the couch and adjusted my hips placing the pillow underneath me. He slid another finger in tapping on my g-spot hooking in my insides. I released a light scream , heavily breathing . I was panting losing myself in his merciful fingers i craved closing my eyes and just not see him but feel the pleasure . I was prepared to do anything for him , i was prepared to be really good. I was dripping wet he pounded his fingers hard in me. The pressure was to much , i couldn't take it . It was driving me wilder and wilder with every second that passed , i legs trembled on his waist.

Me: Ohhh my word Aaaaalpha, I'm cumming.

Just as when i was about to explode , he took out his fingers , i brushed my inner thighs relaxing my legs , he placed his wet



fingers in his mouth sucking on them , i looked at him. He brushed those same fingers on my lips and kissed me . Suddenly he rammed his cock inside me , my mouth widen with tears filling up my eyes. He kept ramming me up faster and harder going in deep , it felt new , bigger than before. Have my muscles contracted already? It was just a while ago we had sex but i felt like it was the first time even now. He went on like a wild animal in heat just gunning on wrapping my coochie apart feasting on my nipples and on my neck. I was dripping. My genital muscles contract as i raised my arms wrapping myself against his bulky body , it was my insides were relaxing for every stroke and contract when he sloshed out then in pumping the shit out of me.

Me: (screaming) ohh my looord ! I'm cumming. Hold me ! Hold me ! (Releasing) Maaaa!

I screamed , arching my back as it lifted off the mat , he wrapped his arms on my arched waist . Biting on my earlope. He held my butt pulling me up to him my legs spreaded up to him. He claimed my lips felt a burst inside me along with a hot , gushy out from my core , with his mouth wildy opened, he groaned and released a sigh with his mouth releasing heavy breaths . I was panting hard as i dropped my body on the mat . He did not pull out yet he still occupied himself inside me as i catch my breath with my legs wobbly with my coochie having a

heartbeat of its own , i felt widely opened. He pulled the couch fleece , Max walked into the living room laying next to my naked body that was covered in a blanket. It was like he knew we were done and now it was time for him to join us. I brushed his fur, Alpha held my hand away from the dog.

Alpha: He better go get his own girl , you mine.

As he said I'm his , i didn't want to burst his bubble and tell him about the proposal he probably is going through the most just thinking about spending the rest of his life with that woman, but people forever is not guaranteed maybe he will divorce her in no time? Or maybe i had to look deep in our relationship, was this a sign? I wonder to myself if he was sleeping with this woman too , was he actually giving it to me like he does to her. I swallowed a lump and called out to him with my dry voice.

Me: Alpha.

Alpha: mhh.

He wrapped his arms around me and kissed my shoulder.

Me: You love me right , I'm not just a girl you enjoy having sex with.

Alpha: What's with the questions are you doubting me Amara.

Me: I just want to know that's all , i want know you'd remember me in your marriage ? And that your heart will bleed knowing

you sleeping next to woman that is not me and that you will remember on the moments just before you sleep.

Alpha: Know my mother is against this marriage. She keeps reminding me that my heart is with you.

Me: Is this is love?

Alpha: Whatever it is i hope it's genuine and we share it mutually. Cause it's not a dream and we not crazy.

I looked at him and kissed him , Max barked , he got up and cuddled between us laying ontop of me , He was big , i moved providing space for him.

Me: Look whose jealous?

Alpha: Max ! No , Go !

He licked his face as Alpha wiped the salvia off , i bursted out in laughter. He curled inbetween us making himself comfy , content with his position as a physical barrier a living and breathing block barrier. Alpha reached out to my hand .

Alpha: Even if i won't be with you physically, mentally and emotionally i will be with you. Anytime you need me , i will be there for you just shout .

I looked at him and tears streamed down crossing horizontally down my eyes.

PEARL

I was excited tomorrow i can finally go home , so i can heal back home , nothing i wanted bad like gping home , i missed the air everything, the was truly no place like home. Ma was sitting on the chair reading a book.

Me: can wait to go home.

Gloria: Mhhh.

Me: Ma are you angry at me?

Gloria: I suggest you stay here and heal these nothing you rushing home for.

Me: Ma i have to go back to work, Alpha can't handle such a company alone.

Gloria: Has he ever called you and told you his struggling?

Me: No .

Gloria: Point exactly his not struggling with anything, you just in a hurry to get kill cause he will kill you this time around.

Me: Ma !

Gloria: Don't you Ma me ! He failed the first time now he has come back to finish you off and you welcomed him with opened arms , shame on you Pearl ! I did not raise you to be beaten up by the same man twice and tell you this if you take

him back don't ever call me . I'm writing you off my life ! I didn't send you to University for you to still be a fool .

I looked at her how can my mom say this to me , she will literally let a man come between her daughter and she ? Really ? Wow .

Me: You should've said i was becoming a burden to you Ma.

Gloria: You think i would carry you for 9 months , and travel with you half way across the world so you can be helped and walked happily ever after to the man that took your ability to walk ? I don't even know who is laying on that bed cause you not my daughter! You will have to brighten up my girl ! Once bitten and twice wiser but to you it's once bitten a hundred times dummer !

Me: Ma why you so mean !

Gloria: If it's the sex that's making you this stupid my girl , his not the only one the are a lot of men out there that can make a woman reach climax. So stop signing your death certificate! Let that man go Pearl ! Let him go ! rha sies !

She got up from the chair just waving her hands showing frustration and she walked out the room . Tears fall from my eyes . Was i really dum?

[ 2 weeks later ]

AMARA

I woke up and still felt tired , i was warned out. I placed my feet on the mat holding my head with my unburnt hand. I wore my slippers and walked to the kitchen, Rose was making breakfast. i looked at her as raising my nostrils.

Rose: What's wrong?

Me: That smell!

I said continuously puking, i held my mouth and ran to the bathroom. i vomited just feeling a burning sensation on my chest. I got up and brushed my mouth looking at myself mirror image , God i look ugly as hell. What's going on with me? I walked out the bathroom.

Rose: What's wrong?

Me: I don't know i think I'm coming down to a fever or something.

Rose: oh eggs?

Me: Yes please

She handed me my plate of breakfast. I took the fork eating , but chewing on the eggs made me puke , they suddenly tasted bad . I puked again running to the toilet but this time nothing

came out. I sat down on the toilet floor and cried, i felt the burning sensation that wanted me to vomit but nothing is coming out this felt like torture. I wiped my eyes and walked to the kitchen.

Rose: You should go see the clinic and deal this , i won't have you ran to the toilet every 2 min

Me: I think it's a stomach bug it will go away.

Rose: You can never be sure.

I made myself a cereal while she eat her greasy breakfast, Rose never says know to greasy food. A knock came through i looked at Rose .

Rose: Expecting someone?

Me: No , I'll go check.

I walked to the door and opened it up , it was Alpha's mother, i was surprised seeing her here mean what was she doing in our dirty streets.

Nandi: Amara how you doing sweetie?

Me: Please Ma come in.

She walked in , dressed really to impresse she looks phenomenal. She looked around the house and i tied my gown up and Rose covered her thighs.

Me: Ma , that is Rose my sister, Rose this is Alpha's Mom.

Rose: Nice to meet you Ma.

Nandi: Nice to meet you too sweetheart, sorry i caught you girls at such a time but i just couldn't wait.

Me: Oh no the is really no problem, we just surprised on how you found this place.

Nandi: i got one of my boys to get me your address i hope you don't mind.

I held on my mouth and on my chest i swallowed up the fluids that tried to escape my mouth , they both looked at me.

Me: I'm sorry about that .

Nandi : It's really okay sweetie , anyways I'm here to invite you.

Me: Oh .

Nandi: Yes you both , you and Rose.

She reached out to her bag and took out two golden invitation passes. She handed them to me looking at my eyes.

Me: Thank you Ma.

Nandi: Pleasure, don't drink to much coffee okay.

Me:Oh okay.

Nandi: I will leave now , i will be very , very happy if you



showed up.

Me: then we will Ma , rest assured.

I walked her out the door down the corridor. She kept looking at me gazing on my tummy. I crossed my arms.

Nandi: I didn't think you would give up just like that?

Me: I didn't.

Nandi: But here you are letting Alpha marry Megan.

Me: If that's what he wants then i will support him.

Nandi: mhh smart girl , sticks with her man . Can i give you a hug?

Me: Okay.

She walked closer to me and hugged me.

Nandi: Be strong okay .

Me: Thank you Ma.

She walked to the car that was parked and got in. She drove off . Okay that was weird. I walked in the building to my room .

Rose: and then?

Me: I'm speechless just like you , what did she want?

Rose: I really don't know too but atleast she came bearing gifts .

Me: i don't even feel like going.

Rose: You should , you promised.

Me: I will then but it will be really weird , having to be in the same room as the woman that is going to marry my man.

Rose: You still calling him your man?

Me: Fine then .

I took the bowl and sat down .

ALPHA

I was in the office with Pearl having a meeting i was rather feeling not okay today . My stomach wasn't at peace with me, i kept having cramps.

Me: So when you look at the graphics there it's the number of people that are engaging on the advert.

She nodded her head and looked at me , as i kept changing my seating positions.

Pearl: Are you okay?

Me: Actually No , i have like this bad stomach bug , my stomach ache.

Pearl: maybe you ate?

Me: That's the thing i only had coffee this morning.

Pearl: Then must be because you hungry?

Me: I'm not hungry , lets get back to work .. as i was saying...

My phone rang i looked at the call , it was Megan . I just looked at it

Pearl: Are you not going to pick it up?

Me: As i was saying . The advert is doing pretty well and we meet to recruit like 3 more client's.

Pearl: I feel like we will drown Alpha , we already sinking in too much work with the ones we have.

Me: I want every client sourced. We will manage , or is your job getting to hard to handle cause i can hire someone that won't feel like they drowning.

Pearl: It's fine then i will see where i can source clients.

My phone kept ringing, she looked at me.

Pearl: She won't stop calling till you pick up.

I picked up the call and placed the phone on my ear.

Megan: Babe , i have been trying to call you for over an hour.

Me: What do you want?

Megan: have you weren't for suit fitting to the suit shop i sent you?

Me: I have a lot of suits i will wear one from my wodrope.

Megan: Alpha can once in our proposal just do what i ask of you please my love.

Me: As i said i got a lot of suits , I'm in a meeting.

I hung up the call .

Pearl: Already got you cooked up i see.

Me: She panicking like it's D-day while it's just an engagement party.

A message pop up on screen i looked at my phone it was Amara.

[TEXTS]

Amara: ( not feeling well today , woke up and I'm throwing up )

Me: ( have you gone to the doctor yet baby)

Amara: ( i think it's a minor stomach bug I'll just drink water)

Me: ( i could send a car that will take you to the private hospital babe just so you sure what's going on?)

Amara: ( No , I'm fine sorry for disturbing you have a good day.)

Me: (you will never disturbed me , I'm always free for you.)

I placed the phone on the table smiling.

Pearl: You haven't even gotten married and you already cheating?

Me: What do you mean I'm cheating? So i can't smile at a joke now ?

Pearl: You are cheating.

Me: Argh ! Pearl let's get back to work.

I looked at my phone waiting for a message to beep. But she didn't reply. I was getting kind of worried especially since she doesn't want to go to the doctor but i will take her word when she says it's just a stomach bug . I placed my phone on silent , i know Megan won't quit calling me.

NANDI

I looked at Megan as she paced around the house setting up decoration. She was already taking over my house making Dorothy run after her like a lap dog.

Me: Dorothy lets go you going to make me tea.

Dorothy: Mem I'm helping Megan with...

Me: Does Megan pay your salary?

Dorothy : No Mem.

Me: Then follow me before i got crazy .

She followed me to the kitchen and make me a cup of tea

Me: have yourself a glass of juice and come seat besides me.

Dorothy: Okay mem.

She did my as i said and sat down.

Me: I invited Amara .

Dorothy: But Mem why?

Me: She has to be here , i want Alpha to see his making a mistake by marrying this girl , i have no problem with Megan but she's not right for my son. And i think she's pregnant.

Dorothy: She told you that?

Me: I saw her , she was having morning sicknesses. Puking and throwing up.

Dorothy: It could be anything Mem.

Me : I am a mother i saw her , her eyes were watery with red veins and not you mention her throwing up , she's pregnant and i need to find out if it's true or not.

Dorothy: and if she is pregnant?

Me: Then she will have to come claim her place.

Dorothy: Yho that will be hard cause the will be two woman fighting over a man.

Me: Amara has self respect she won't fight and she has an

advantage. She is loved as for Miss Fancy dresses not frankly.

She walked in the kitchen.

Megan : Dorothy i need you outside the garden and you here drinking juice ! What nonsense is this?

Me: Dorothy is not you event organizer Megan ! If you needed extra hands you should've called your friends, I'm busy with Dorothy.

She walked out the kitchen, i could see she was pissed , i looked at her clicking my tougue.

ROSE

We got dressed just fitting our old dresses as the theme is black and white. Amara was sitting on the couch warned out .

Me: Are you sure you will be able to go to the engagement party?

Amara: yes i will be fine.

Me: okay then go get ready so i do your make up.

Amara: I will go take a shower.

She got up and walked to her room , i looked at her . What was going on with her? Was it just a stomach bug? Or was it something bigger than a stomach bug. Lord i pray she's not pregnant . I also had a bath and we prepared for the

engagement party , she tied her hair upfront as always and wore a white max dress , it look beautiful on her a little similar to the one i wore that day . She wore her white takkies underneath the dress as i wore a tight dress. We had a cup of coffee before leaving.

ALPHA

I got to my parents house and i was just welcomed by balloons, i felt this was a bit extra. I got out the car being approached by people congratulating me. I fake a smile here and there as the camera's took photos of us , she even went far to inviting the press . God what the fuck is this? A bloody engagement party or a fucken circus. I walked in the house and the garden was set up okay, with an altar like set up theme with flowers , roses black and white roses . She walked behind me and held me from behind wrapping her arms on my waist.

Megan : So what do you think?

I walked away from her without saying a word , i walked into my room and closed the door , a suit was layed out on the bed for me . I took off my clothes and the door slid open , Ma walked in.

Me: Geez Ma , people knock before coming in people's rooms thats called being a normal person.

Nandi: knock in my son's room , in my house? I actually know



everything in your body Alpha , i gave birth to you.

Me: But still it doesn't make it right , what's wrong?

Nandi: Have you check up on Amara?

Me: Why you asking?

Nandi: I'm just asking.

Me: I talked with her through text today and she said she wasn't okay , had a stomach bug or something.

Nandi: Stomach bug ? Oh i see has she gone to the hospital?

Me: I wanted to take her and she said she will be okay.

Nandi: I hear you .

Me: Why the sudden interest in Amara?

Nandi: No I'm just asking how she is , i pictured her as my daughter in law very beautiful and humble girl.

Megan walked in the room, Ma got up from the bed.

Megan: Oh I'll come back later.

Nandi: No don't worry Megan I'm done talking to Alpha join your fiance.

Megan: Thank you Mom.

She faked a smiled and walked out . I wore the suit applying the

belt.

Me: So?

Megan: how is the suit.

Me: it fits so it's good.

Megan: I was worried it wouldn't fit .

I walked to the mirror fixing the bow tie she got up and held my hand offering to help.

Me: No , I'm fine , i got this, go get dressed so we get this engagement party over and done with.

Megan: Yeah i should.

She walked out the room . I applied my cologne and brushed my hair cut.

Me: Get this shit over and done with.

I walked out the room and locked it , i approached the guys that were invited over and shook their hands introducing themselves to me. It felt good having to be around other man and just laugh as they told me mini scaring marriage problems.

Guy 1 : Your whole life you will live to impress her. She will be the centre of your universe. And till you guys have babies be the baby

Me: Oh No i don't want to have babies.

Guy 2: Why not? It's part of the marriage contract.

Me: Just not yet , I'm still busy with my business and i haven't reached my goal.

Guy 1: You already successful.

Me: Not to the level i want.

I looked across the room as Rose and Amara walked in. I looked at Amara as she blissfully blinked . Ma walked to her smiling and gave her a big tight hug , holding her hands and looking at her , i never knew she is invited.

Me: excuse me gents.

They nodded their heads carrying on with the conversation , i walked to the 3 ladies. My eyes were feeding on Amara locked to her . I gave Rose a hug and looked at her , i pulled her closer and whispered in her ear.

Me: You insanely beautiful.

Amara: You looking handsome yourself.

The hired waiters walked around with glasses of wine . Rose had a glass so did Amara , my Mom took the glass off her hands.

Nandi: you don't look like a drinker.

Amara: We'll I'm not but occasionally i do drink.

Nandi: You don't need to come girls i will poured you juice.

She held Amara's hand taking her to the kitchen. I looked at her as she walked with my mom , i noticed she was wearing tekkies. I wasn't surprised , i chuckled shaking my head. Pop's walked to me holding a whiskey glass.

Steve: beautiful set up isn't it.

Me: Yeah it's cool.

Steve: The Mayor wants to talk to you.

Me: about what now?

Steve: Father - son in law talk.

Me: I'm not interested not tonight let's just enjoy party will we?

Steve: Fine.

Ma was taking long bring Amara back what was going on in the kitchen? They finally walked out laughing, it was really good watching my mom laugh endlessly with Amara and Rose ofcause. Music began playing as the curtains were closed up and colourful lights sent alight they room became lovey dovey viby . Megan walked in , looking like a bride already, with a vail on and a white dress. We all looked at her as she walked towards me. People began clapping hands. She held my hand , placing it on her waist as i lifted it on her back , we began dancing on floor .

Megan: You handsome.

Me: Thank you.

Her palms rested on my neck . Just us taking steps across the room as people joined in . My mom with My dad and Amara with some other Man. As the song switched beats we floated on the floor switching partners i landed with my mom while my dad with Megan.

Me: so since when have you and Amara developed a relationship?

Nandi: if you weren't secretive about your relationship with her i would've told you.

Me: Ma please i don't want you guys near her.

Nandi: i won't do anything to her i actually adore the young lady.

Me: and what about your daughter in law ?

Nandi: i have nothing to say, here she comes.

I switched to Amara , laying my hand gently on her waist . She looked at me as her watery eyes lighten up to me.

Me: How you feeling how?

Amara: I'm okay just a headache from the spinning.

Me: You sure ?you actually losing balance.

Amara: yes .

She was shaking on my hand , just her feet wobbly weak . I walked her out the dance floor and sat her on the chair.

Nandi: Let's take her to my room.

Me: What's wrong with her , Ma ? Let's take her to the hospital we don't know what's wrong with if it's something serious?

Amara: I'm just hot , i need fresh air that's all.

Me: Amara you not well.

Amara: I'm fine i just need air.

We took her outside to the pool and she laid down on the pool chair, inhaling the fresh breeze , she really is hot , i felt her forehead.

Me: Are you fine now?

Amara: I think it's just a fever , i will go home , i shouldn't have come here while i wasn't well , I'm sorry for spoiling your night.

Megan: (calling out) Alpha ! Baby , what are you dong here ?

Me: Megan get inside and keep the guest entertained.

Nandi: Here's some water Amara.

Megan: What's wrong with her?

Nandi: she's has a bad fever.

Megan: Then she should go home what if the fever is contiguous

Me: I will drive her home.

Megan: why do you even care , let a driver do it or request for her , i don't even remind me inviting her ? She's a stranger let's go inside and do our speeches the people are waiting.

I looked at Amara that was clearly not well , Megan held my hand. And pulled me inside . We walked in and the people were looking at us , she held my hand and began dropping her engagement speech welcoming everyone. I couldn't keep my mind off Amara , i looked through the door hoping she will walk in smiling.

Megan: Thank you for coming , my husband and i are truly grateful and words can't explain how i feel , I'm just filled with joy and glitters my stomach just filled with butterflies. My love , my Alpha the strongest man alive , i just wanted to say thank you for choosing me to be your wife . All of the girls in world but you chose to be in this space with me. I am truly blessed beyond expectations. I love you and I'm willing to struggle, fight, make up or even better carry your children. And i hope you find it in your heart to see me as your forever.

She placed her hand on my cheek with the diamond ring blinging on my cheek. Why did it feel like i was committing a

sin? It felt so wrong , i faked a smile as the media took pictures.

Guy : Speech! From the groom !

Me: Oh no , i have nothing to say.

The whole room chanted " speech " continuously pleading i say something but i had nothing to say , what was i going to say? I looked around the room and raised up my whiskey glass.

Me: I'll just make a toast I'm not good at these speeches things, (raises up glass)I heard Marriage is like being sentenced to prison and what i like about prison, when you on good behaviour you get parole, to marriage.

Crowd: To marriage.

She looked at me, i drank from my whiskey glass and placed it on the table.

Megan: Prison?parole ? Really now.

Me: I announced i wasn't good in these things and they still made me do it. Excuse me.

Megan: Alpha (frustrated) you can't keep avoiding me , we should be together side by side. (Whispering) Alpha !

I walked to Ma , she was with guest.

Me: May i speak to you.

Nandi: Yes .



Me: Where is she ? Is she okay?

Nandi: I sent her home , she will be okay.

Me: Okay thank you Ma.

Rose was left in the party this meant Amara is alone.

Every beauty has her own beast

tScepttegog6so2mber 12ifd06 .

25

[ 2 weeks later ]

AMARA

I woke up and still felt tired , i was warned out. I placed my feet on the mat holding my head with my unburnt hand. I wore my slippers and walked to the kitchen, Rose was making breakfast. i looked at her as raising my nostrils.

Rose: What's wrong?

Me: That smell!

I said continuously puking, i held my mouth and ran to the bathroom. i vomited just feeling a burning sensation on my chest. I got up and brushed my mouth looking at myself mirror image , God i look ugly as hell. What's going on with me?

I walked out the bathroom.

Rose: What's wrong?

Me: I don't know i think I'm coming down to a fever or something.

Rose: oh eggs?

Me: Yes please

She handed me my plate of breakfast. I took the fork eating , but chewing on the eggs made me puke , they suddenly tasted bad . I puked again running to the toilet but this time nothing came out. I sat down on the toilet floor and cried, i felt the burning sensation that wanted me to vomit but nothing is coming out this felt like torture. I wiped my eyes and walked to the kitchen.

Rose: You should go see the clinic and deal this , i won't have you ran to the toilet every 2 min

Me: I think it's a stomach bug it will go away.

Rose: You can never be sure.

I made myself a cereal while she eat her greasy breakfast, Rose never says know to greasy food. A knock came through i looked at Rose .

Rose: Expecting someone?

Me: No , I'll go check.

I walked to the door and opened it up , it was Alpha's mother, i was surprised seeing her here mean what was she doing in our dirty streets.

Nandi: Amara how you doing sweetie?

Me: Please Ma come in.

She walked in , dressed really to impress she looks phenomenal. She looked around the house and i tied my gown up and Rose covered her thighs.

Me: Ma , that is Rose my sister, Rose this is Alpha's Mom.

Rose: Nice to meet you Ma.

Nandi: Nice to meet you too sweetheart, sorry i caught you girls at such a time but i just couldn't wait.

Me: Oh no the is really no problem, we just surprised on how you found this place.

Nandi: i got one of my boys to get me your address i hope you don't mind.

I held on my mouth and on my chest i swallowed up the fluids that tried to escape my mouth , they both looked at me.

Me: I'm sorry about that .

Nandi : It's really okay sweetie , anyways I'm here to invite you.

Me: Oh .

Nandi: Yes you both , you and Rose.

She reached out to her bag and took out two golden invitation passes. She handed them to me looking at my eyes.

Me: Thank you Ma.

Nandi: Pleasure, don't drink to much coffee okay.

Me:Oh okay.

Nandi: I will leave now , i will be very , very happy if you showed up.

Me: then we will Ma , rest assured.

I walked her out the door down the corridor. She kept looking at me gazing on my tummy. I crossed my arms.

Nandi: I didn't think you would give up just like that?

Me: I didn't.

Nandi: But here you are letting Alpha marry Megan.

Me: If that's what he wants then i will support him.

Nandi: mhh smart girl , sticks with her man . Can i give you a hug?

Me: Okay.

She walked closer to me and hugged me.

Nandi: Be strong okay .

Me: Thank you Ma.

She walked to the car that was parked and got in. She drove off . Okay that was weird. I walked in the building to my room .

Rose: and then?

Me: I'm speechless just like you , what did she want?

Rose: I really don't know too but atleast she came bearing gifts .

Me: i don't even feel like going.

Rose: You should , you promised.

Me: I will then but it will be really weird , having to be in the same room as the woman that is going to marry my man.

Rose: You still calling him your man?

Me: Fine then .

I took the bowl and sat down .

ALPHA

I was in the office with Pearl having a meeting i was rather feeling not okay today . My stomach wasn't at peace with me, i kept having cramps.

Me: So when you look at the graphics there it's the number of people that are engaging on the advert.

She nodded her head and looked at me , as i kept changing my seating positions.

Pearl: Are you okay?

Me: Actually No , i have like this bad stomach bug , my stomach ache.

Pearl: maybe you ate?

Me: That's the thing i only had coffee this morning.

Pearl: Then must be because you hungry?

Me: I'm not hungry , lets get back to work .. as i was saying...

My phone rang i looked at the call , it was Megan . I just looked at it

Pearl: Are you not going to pick it up?

Me: As i was saying . The advert is doing pretty well and we meet to recruit like 3 more client's.

Pearl: I feel like we will drown Alpha , we already sinking in too much work with the ones we have.

Me: I want every client sourced. We will manage , or is your job getting to hard to handle cause i can hire someone that won't feel like they drowning.

Pearl: It's fine then i will see where i can source clients.

My phone kept ringing, she looked at me.

Pearl: She won't stop calling till you pick up.

I picked up the call and placed the phone on my ear.

Megan: Babe , i have been trying to call you for over an hour.

Me: What do you want?

Megan: have you weren't for suit fitting to the suit shop i sent you?

Me: I have a lot of suits i will wear one from my wodrope.

Megan: Alpha can once in our proposal just do what i ask of you please my love.

Me: As i said i got a lot of suits , I'm in a meeting.

I hung up the call .

Pearl: Already got you cooked up i see.

Me: She panicking like it's D-day while it's just an engagement party.

A message pop up on screen i looked at my phone it was Amara.

[TEXTS]

Amara: ( not feeling well today , woke up and I'm throwing up )

Me: ( have you gone to the doctor yet baby)

Amara: ( i think it's a minor stomach bug I'll just drink water)

Me: ( i could send a car that will take you to the private hospital babe just so you sure what's going on?)

Amara: ( No , I'm fine sorry for disturbing you have a good day.)

Me: (you will never disturbed me , I'm always free for you.)

I placed the phone on the table smiling.

Pearl: You haven't even gotten married and you already cheating?

Me: What do you mean I'm cheating? So i can't smile at a joke now ?

Pearl: You are cheating.

Me: Argh ! Pearl let's get back to work.

I looked at my phone waiting for a message to beep. But she didn't reply. I was getting kind of worried especially since she doesn't want to go to the doctor but i will take her word when she says it's just a stomach bug . I placed my phone on silent , i know Megan won't quit calling me.

NANDI



I looked at Megan as she paced around the house setting up decoration. She was already taking over my house making Dorothy run after her like a lap dog.

Me: Dorothy lets go you going to make me tea.

Dorothy: Mem I'm helping Megan with...

Me: Does Megan pay your salary?

Dorothy : No Mem.

Me: Then follow me before i got crazy .

She followed me to the kitchen and make me a cup of tea

Me: have yourself a glass of juice and come seat besides me.

Dorothy: Okay mem.

She did my as i said and sat down.

Me: I invited Amara .

Dorothy: But Mem why?

Me: She has to be here , i want Alpha to see his making a mistake by marrying this girl , i have no problem with Megan but she's not right for my son. And i think she's pregnant.

Dorothy: She told you that?

Me: I saw her , she was having morning sicknesses. Puking and throwing up.

Dorothy: It could be anything Mem.

Me : I am a mother i saw her , her eyes were watery with red veins and not you mention her throwing up , she's pregnant and i need to find out if it's true or not.

Dorothy: and if she is pregnant?

Me: Then she will have to come claim her place.

Dorothy: Yho that will be hard cause the will be two woman fighting over a man.

Me: Amara has self respect she won't fight and she has an advantage. She is loved as for Miss Fancy dresses not frankly.

She walked in the kitchen.

Megan : Dorothy i need you outside the garden and you here drinking juice ! What nonsense is this?

Me: Dorothy is not you event organizer Megan ! If you needed extra hands you should've called your friends, I'm busy with Dorothy.

She walked out the kitchen, i could see she was pissed , i looked at her clicking my tougue.

ROSE

We got dressed just fitting our old dresses as the theme is black and white. Amara was sitting on the couch warned out .

Me: Are you sure you will be able to go to the engagement party?

Amara: yes i will be fine.

Me: okay then go get ready so i do your make up.

Amara: I will go take a shower.

She got up and walked to her room , i looked at her . What was going on with her? Was it just a stomach bug? Or was it something bigger than a stomach bug. Lord i pray she's not pregnant . I also had a bath and we prepared for the engagement party , she tied her hair upfront as always and wore a white max dress , it look beautiful on her a little similar to the one i wore that day . She wore her white takkies underneath the dress as i wore a tight dress. We had a cup of coffee before leaving.

ALPHA

I got to my parents house and i was just welcomed by balloons, i felt this was a bit extra. I got out the car being approached by people congratulating me. I fake a smile here and there as the camera's took photos of us , she even went far to inviting the press . God what the fuck is this? A bloody engagement party or a fucken circus. I walked in the house and the garden was set up okay, with an altar like set up theme with flowers , roses black and white roses . She walked behind me and held me

from behind wrapping her arms on my waist.

Megan : So what do you think?

I walked away from her without saying a word , i walked into my room and closed the door , a suit was layed out on the bed for me . I took off my clothes and the door slid open , Ma walked in.

Me: Geez Ma , people knock before coming in people's rooms thats called being a normal person.

Nandi: knock in my son's room , in my house? I actually know everything in your body Alpha , i gave birth to you.

Me: But still it doesn't make it right , what's wrong?

Nandi: Have you check up on Amara?

Me: Why you asking?

Nandi: I'm just asking.

Me: I talked with her through text today and she said she wasn't okay , had a stomach bug or something.

Nandi: Stomach bug ? Oh i see has she gone to the hospital?

Me: I wanted to take her and she said she will be okay.

Nandi: I hear you .

Me: Why the sudden interest in Amara?

Nandi: No I'm just asking how she is , i pictured her as my daughter in law very beautiful and humble girl.

Megan walked in the room, Ma got up from the bed.

Megan: Oh I'll come back later.

Nandi: No don't worry Megan I'm done talking to Alpha join your fiance.

Megan: Thank you Mom.

She faked a smiled and walked out . I wore the suit applying the belt.

Me: So?

Megan: how is the suit.

Me: it fits so it's good.

Megan: I was worried it wouldn't fit .

I walked to the mirror fixing the bow tie she got up and held my hand offering to help.

Me: No , I'm fine , i got this, go get dressed so we get this engagement party over and done with.

Megan: Yeah i should.

She walked out the room . I applied my cologne and brushed my hair cut.

Me: Get this shit over and done with.

I walked out the room and locked it , i approached the guys that were invited over and shook their hands introducing themselves to me. It felt good having to be around other man and just laugh as they told me mini scaring marriage problems.

Guy 1 : Your whole life you will live to impress her. She will be the centre of your universe. And till you guys have babies be the baby

Me: Oh No i don't want to have babies.

Guy 2: Why not? It's part of the marriage contract.

Me: Just not yet , I'm still busy with my business and i haven't reached my goal.

Guy 1: You already successful.

Me: Not to the level i want.

I looked across the room as Rose and Amara walked in. I looked at Amara as she blissfully blinked . Ma walked to her smiling and gave her a big tight hug , holding her hands and looking at her , i never knew she is invited.

Me: excuse me gents.

They nodded their heads carrying on with the conversation , i walked to the 3 ladies. My eyes were feeding on Amara

locked to her . I gave Rose a hug and looked at her , i pulled her closer and whispered in her ear.

Me: You insanely beautiful.

Amara: You looking handsome yourself.

The hired waiters walked around with glasses of wine . Rose had a glass so did Amara , my Mom took the glass off her hands.

Nandi: you don't look like a drinker.

Amara: We'll I'm not but occasionally i do drink.

Nandi: You don't need to come girls i will poured you juice.

She held Amara's hand taking her to the kitchen. I looked at her as she walked with my mom , i noticed she was wearing tekkies. I wasn't surprised , i chuckled shaking my head. Pop's walked to me holding a whiskey glass.

Steve: beautiful set up isn't it.

Me: Yeah it's cool.

Steve: The Mayor wants to talk to you.

Me: about what now?

Steve: Father - son in law talk.

Me: I'm not interested not tonight let's just enjoy party will we?

Steve: Fine.

Ma was taking long bring Amara back what was going on in the kitchen? They finally walked out laughing, it was really good watching my mom laugh endlessly with Amara and Rose ofcause. Music began playing as the curtains were closed up and colourful lights sent a light they room became lovey dovey viby . Megan walked in , looking like a bride already, with a veil on and a white dress. We all looked at her as she walked towards me. People began clapping hands. She held my hand , placing it on her waist as i lifted it on her back , we began dancing on floor .

Megan: You handsome.

Me: Thank you.

Her palms rested on my neck . Just us taking steps across the room as people joined in . My mom with My dad and Amara with some other Man. As the song switched beats we floated on the floor switching partners i landed with my mom while my dad with Megan.

Me: so since when have you and Amara developed a relationship?

Nandi: if you weren't secretive about your relationship with her i would've told you.

Me: Ma please i don't want you guys near her.



Nandi: i won't do anything to her i actually adore the young lady.

Me: and what about your daughter in law ?

Nandi: i have nothing to say, here she comes.

I switched to Amara , laying my hand gently on her waist . She looked at me as her watery eyes lighten up to me.

Me: How you feeling how?

Amara: I'm okay just a headache from the spinning.

Me: You sure ?you actually losing balance.

Amara: yes .

She was shaking on my hand , just her feet wobbly weak . I walked her out the dance floor and sat her on the chair.

Nandi: Let's take her to my room.

Me: What's wrong with her , Ma ? Let's take her to the hospital we don't know what's wrong with if it's something serious?

Amara: I'm just hot , i need fresh air that's all.

Me: Amara you not well.

Amara: I'm fine i just need air.

We took her outside to the pool and she laid down on the pool chair, inhaling the fresh breeze , she really is hot , i felt her

forehead.

Me: Are you fine now?

Amara: I think it's just a fever , i will go home , i shouldn't have come here while i wasn't well , I'm sorry for spoiling your night.

Megan: (calling out) Alpha ! Baby , what are you doing here ?

Me: Megan get inside and keep the guest entertained.

Nandi: Here's some water Amara.

Megan: What's wrong with her?

Nandi: she's has a bad fever.

Megan: Then she should go home what if the fever is contiguous

Me: I will drive her home.

Megan: why do you even care , let a driver do it or request for her , i don't even remind me inviting her ? She's a stranger let's go inside and do our speeches the people are waiting.

I looked at Amara that was clearly not well , Megan held my hand. And pulled me inside . We walked in and the people were looking at us , she held my hand and began dropping her engagement speech welcoming everyone. I couldn't keep my mind off Amara , i looked through the door hoping she will walk in smiling.

Megan: Thank you for coming , my husband and i are truly grateful and words can't explain how i feel , I'm just filled with joy and glitters my stomach just filled with butterflies. My love , my Alpha the strongest man alive , i just wanted to say thank you for choosing me to be your wife . All of the girls in world but you chose to be in this space with me. I am truly blessed beyond expectations. I love you and I'm willing to struggle, fight, make up or even better carry your children. And i hope you find it in your heart to see me as your forever.

She placed her hand on my cheek with the diamond ring blinging on my cheek. Why did it feel like i was committing a sin? It felt so wrong , i faked a smile as the media took pictures.

Guy : Speech! From the groom !

Me: Oh no , i have nothing to say.

The whole room chanted " speech " continuously pleading i say something but i had nothing to say , what was i going to say? I looked around the room and raised up my whiskey glass.

Me: I'll just make a toast I'm not good at these speeches things, (raises up glass)I heard Marriage is like being sentenced to prison and what i like about prison, when you on good behaviour you get parole, to marriage.

Crowd: To marriage.

She looked at me, i drank from my whiskey glass and placed it

on the table.

Megan: Prison?parole ? Really now.

Me: I announced i wasn't good in these things and they still made me do it. Excuse me.

Megan: Alpha (frustrated) you can't keep avoiding me , we should be together side by side. (Whispering) Alpha !

I walked to Ma , she was with guest.

Me: May i speak to you.

Nandi: Yes .

Me: Where is she ? Is she okay?

Nandi: I sent her home , she will be okay.

Me: Okay thank you Ma.

Rose was left in the party this meant Amara is alone.

27

NANDI

I called Dorothy's phone for a over an hour , i was worried this is unlike her not coming to work. We sat on the table having breakfast, it was still me and Megan , Alpha and Steve haven't came for breakfast.

Me: Hand me the fruit salad .

She handed me the bowl in a very dull mood , Steve sat besides me .

Steve: Isn't Alpha up yet ?

Megan : he didn't sleep at home.

Steve: What ! And you let him walk out the door ?

Megan: What was i supposed to do cuff him to the bed so he doesn't leave?

I looked at Steve waiting for him to give her a hot slap for the nonsense she just said , he just had a cup of coffee and ate his breakfast, i looked at him.

Me: So where did he say he was going ?

Megan: He just walked out.

Steve: he will be back , he probably went to the office or to sleep at his house , Alpha doesn't like spending a night here.

I chuckled, they both looked at me.

Me: Don't mind me please , I'm just laughing with the voices in my head.

Steve : Voices in your head? You will go crazy and i won't have a crazy wife.

Me: Then being crazy would be the best thing that has ever happened to me. Anyways where is Dorothy?has anyone seen

her she didn't show up for work today.

Steve: Maybe she quit and didn't tell you.

Me: Dorothy would never quit she loves her job.

Steve: Well she did then , where is she now? Means she didn't love her job after all.

I was really worried about her.

AMARA

I woke up laying on the couch alone , i got up and looked around.

Me: Alpha, Alpha ! Where are you ?

I sat down disappointed, i can't believe he left without saying goodbye , i got up and drank water. He walked in and placed a brown mini bag on the table.

Alpha: Morning sleepy head.

Me: Where did you go?

Alpha: To get these.

He took out 5 different pregnancy tests and displayed them on the table.

Me: You didn't have to i would've gotten them myself.

Alpha: I want to know Amara if you pregnant or not.

Me: Really you want to know ? So you can do what Alpha ? So you now know if you want to be with me or marry Megan?

Alpha: I won't fight with you just take the test and go do whatever you women do.

I grabbed the test and walked to the toilet , i did the process and sat on the toilet seat holding the test i was shaking , frightened of being pregnant for a man that is practically getting married just thinking if people get to know this they will know that i had sex with him while he announced on tv that he was getting married, he walked in and kneeled before me .

Me: we just have to wait for 15 minutes.

Alpha: Relax why you shaking.

Me: Don't tell me to relax ,what if i am pregnant? What's going to happen?

Alpha: We will figure things out.

I looked at the two lines on the pregnancy test and i broke down and cried. He looked at me taking the test off my hands.

Me: I'm pregnant.

He hugged my waist holding the tummy . I didn't plan for this to happen , i didn't want this . A baby is not what i need right now.

Alpha: I will have to discuss this with my parents.

Me: No ! Please don't, i don't want no one to know.

Alpha: But why Amara , we pregnant my parents need to know about this . I can't marry Megan while you pregnant with my baby.

Me: Your father doesn't like me , he won't accept me or this baby .

Alpha: why do you care about how he feels about you?  
Whatever he feels shouldn't bother you Amara.

He looked at me smiling as i panicked in the toilet.

Me: What if you tell him and he kills me ? He wants you to marry Megan not me , you heard him he said it himself i will never be Mrs Smith . And you why you smiling?

Alpha: I could never be any happier.

Me: What are we going to do?

Alpha: I should be asking you what you want to do cause i know what i am going to do . I want to be in this baby's life . I want to be there in every milestone.

Me: What about Megan?

Alpha: What about her ? I'm calling the wedding off .

Me: Please don't take any rash decisions , we need time to think about this whole situation if we want this child .



Alpha: We do want this child , don't we Amara?

Me: I...i.i don't plan this baby. A baby is a huge responsibility, how will i raise a baby when i don't have a job ? This baby is a mistake.

Alpha : Don't you fuck with me Amara ! This baby is not a mistake! It's ours and i swear to god if you try anything funny with this pregnancy , Amara i dare you !

Me: Please hear me out .

Alpha: (angry ) I am not hearing anything out .

Me: Fine get out !

Alpha: Excuse me ?

Me: Get out ! I need space ...

Alpha: I AM NOT GOING ANYWHERE! May i clearly tell you i have rights to this child , hence the baby you carrying is equally mine as he/she is yours! I am not leaving here you a wreck you might terminate this pregnancy Amara i am not stupid !

Me: As long as it's still in my body! Your rights are invalid , i already stoop low in having sexual relations with you while i knew you were getting engaged ! Now look where it led us with a positive pregnancy test !

Alpha: Then what do you want me to say ? To apologize for getting you pregnant? Is that what you want. I'm sorry then forgive me for getting you pregnant it wasn't my intention to put in you !

We heard the door slid open, Rose looked at us.

Rose: Alpha ? You here.

I slid the pregnancy test behind me. She looked at me .

Alpha: Can you talk some sense into your sister please! Before i lose my temper !

Rose: What's going on ?

Alpha: She's pregnant.

Rose : What ! Amara warned you !

Me: I wasn't supposed to fall pregnant i didn't plan this.

Alpha walked out and Rose embraced me .

Rose : It's okay, we'll figure something out , don't cry , these things happen and all you have to do is do what is best for you and the baby that is growing in you. To hell with what Alpha wants when it comes to this pregnancy you have the last say.

Alpha: What ! What do you mean to hell with me?! I ask you to talk sense into her and you poisoning her against me !

Rose: Alpha Smith ! Get out .

Alpha: How dare you call me by my full name?

He launched towards her , i step between them , he looked down at me gawking at me

Me: Alpha please leave , we are all overwhelmed about this pregnancy and it also came least expected at a very bad timing we need to calm down and give each other space to think about this thing and how we will move forward from it .

Alpha: This thing ? You going to call our baby a thing?

Me: You heard me wrong , i didn't mean it that way.

Alpha: While you still at thinking about " this thing" remember i want this baby , it's mine !

He walked out the flat slamming the door behind him. I took deep breaths holding my tummy, can't believe I'm actually carrying a human in me . I'm going to be a mother. Smiled through my tears .

PREAL

I got up from the bed and place my feet on the floor, i used the bed as my guide and got up holding on the wall trying to walk , it was hard . The simple thing such as walking that people took for granted every day was what i was hungry and longing for. I wanted to get up my feet so bad , i was pushing myself to walk even in pain. My knee caps were weak , i was losing

balance, i tilted over falling, John caught me in time before i fell on the floor.

John: Easy don't push yourself too hard.

Me: I just ... i just want to get up

John: I know, and i feel so much guilty now just watching you struggle to not do the basic things.

Me: I will be okay, i will go to work.

John: Yeah , can you please lend me 10 k ? Money has been tight from my side i don't know what's going on even my boss has been promising me to give me my salary but still nothing. I hate depending on you financially.

Me: Oh .

I took out my wallet and took out my credit card , i handed it to him.

John: Pin?

Me: 1918.

John: Thank you , you the best.

He kissed my cheek and walked out . I rolled my wheelchair to the mirror applying make up.

MEGAN

Alpha walked in the house, he already was dressed in his most fine suit. I walked to him , he quickly met his mom and they walked to the kitchen. I walked to the kitchen door as he talked with her .

Alpha: She's pregnant Ma , Amara is pregnant.

Nandi: Your father doesn't have to find out about this not even wind it , we have to keep the pregnancy a secret.

Alpha: We can't keep the baby a secret forever, the stomach? plus I am not scared of him ! I have seen his worst ! What he is not going to do is fuck up my baby's life ! Not on my watch.

Nandi: Don't be too loud what if someone hears you.

The leaned on the door and it pushed open. They looked at me.

Me: I just came for warm milk since Dorothy decided not to pop in for work.

Alpha: Dorothy didn't come for work that's weird.

Nandi: Yes , she didn't that's the same thing i was thinking maybe something happened to her. This is unlike her.

Alpha: Good thing you hear , i want to talk to you .

Me: Oh about?

Alpha: Privately let's go to my room , i came to pick up my stuff anyways.

We walked to the bedroom, he took out a small bag and packed his clothes that were in a wodrope , just a pair of jeans and t-shirts , i sat down besides the bag .

Me: You wanted to talk?

Alpha: The wedding is off .

My mouth dropped open.

Me: What ! No !

Alpha: Change of plans.

Me: You can't! You won't! You need me !

Alpha: i actually don't. I don't need no one rather than myself.

Me: Why? I don't understand what happened? What changed?

Alpha: I'm expecting a baby.

Me: What! with who?Alpha don't do this to me please ! The whole world knows about our engagement, what am i going to say?

Alpha: Set another interview with Angela and we set the record straight.

I got up from the bed livid.

Me: (screams ) NO ! NO ! we are not doing that do you hear me ! We will walk down the aisle! It's too late to back away now

Alpha ! I will be humiliated to the core! A night after my engagement party and the wedding is called off ? This is complete madness !

He just stood the calm and collected , he actually liked seeing me freak out , he looked at me not giving a flying hell .

Me : Are just going to stand there !

Alpha: What do you want me to say? I said everything i had to say and these no changing what i said , like it all not the marriage is off. You published the engagement yourself now bare the consequences.

Me: (crying) You are a monster ! You are sick!

I walked to him and just flapped my hands on his face and chest hitting him he held my wrist together. As i fought to break out of his hand his dark black eyes pierced in my watery eyes.

Alpha: be teachable Megan ! Learn from your mistakes you placed yourself in this mess by not keeping our engagement private till you knew it was permanent . This is nothing personal Megan you will get through this.

Me: (demanding) Who is she?!

He tossed me side my body hit the bed and took the bag , i got up and held on the bag pulling him in the room.

Alpha: What are you doing?

Me: I demand to know who is she ! Tell me !

Alpha: She is non of your business!

Me: I deserve to know! You owe me that much! The shame i will be carrying! Humiliation and gossip about me ! I have every damn right to know who she is ! Who is destroying my future!

Alpha: you can keep the bag.

He let the bag go and walked out , leaving me distraught , just the thought of having to face the press with this, i will be the talk of the town . I will be humiliated. No ! Steve has to do something about this he has too! I walked out the room to the study i pushed the door open meeting the empty office. I took my phone and called him.

Me: Answer your damn phone , you bastard !

Steve: Speak to me.

Me: We have to talk , your son is calling off the wedding.

Steve: What ! Where did you hear this from?

Me: He just told ! He said something about pregnancy i don't know but you need to talk to him Steve this wedding has to go on !

Steve: I will be back so we talk about this I'm in a meeting.

He hung up . I paced in the bedroom in anger ! I can't afford to



be humiliated like this , i have a image to protect .

ROSE

She was laying on the couch fast asleep. It's quite weird knowing she is pregnant , not just pregnant as my sister bur as my little girl, just knowing she is actually going to go through the pain of child birth and all was at the back of my mind , we had a real issue on our hands , she is pregnant but Alpha is getting married.

Me: Amara.

Amara: Mhh.

Me: We need to talk.

Amara: About?

Me:The pregnancy.

Amara: No offense Rose but i have nothing to talk about , the pregnancy is mine and Alpha's we have to worry about it you don't have to stress yourself.

Me: You my sister i have to stress about you .

Amara: i am fine , i promise .

Me: Are you keeping the baby?

Amara: I want to , mean this is my first pregnancy, i want this baby.

Me: So you having this while he is getting married, do you understand the difficult position you putting yourself in? The pain , broken heart and feelings that will be tempered with , pregnancy is going to take a hard toll on you Amara the sleepless nights, sore feet , minor headaches and back pains you don't need the stress.

Amara: You look like you know a lot about being pregnant.

Me: And what is that supposed to mean?

Amara: nothing, just that you know so much about pregnancy while you haven't even being pregnant.

Me: I am trying to enlighten you here !

Amara : i didn't ask to be enlightened. I know what's going on and I'm going to handle whatever obstacle that hits me along the way plus Alpha wants to be part of the baby's life i won't be alone Rose.

Me : This Alpha guy is something else ! He doesn't just sleeps with you, he gets you pregnant knowing just right his going to get married now you stuck here ! You not even a month pregnant but you already a single mom.

Amara: I am not a single mom.

Me: Quite frankly you are ! You carrying someone else's husband's baby.

Amara: Rose i know i messed up so please don't brush it in . I know i made a mistake but it's here and it's not going anywhere we just have to learn to live with this pregnancy and find a way to approach this situation in a decent matter without hurting anyone.

I laughed , she seriously doesn't get it , this pregnancy will bring nothing but problems , she will have to deal with Megan who is practically Alpha's so to be wife that is the mayor's daughter. Oh my god ! What has Amara mixed herself into did she really had to go for such an influential guy that knew people from high places? Couldn't she have dated a usually guy with a simple life like us.

28

ALPHA

I meet up with the woman that was going to be my PA , she is pretty more like a classy lady and i was shocked that she would actually be such a woman that would actually want to be a PA , she walked in my office and stood before the table with her hands on the chair.

Ipek: Mr Smith.

I looked up to her , annoyed , i wasn't really feeling in the mood to speak to anyone.

Me: And you are?

Ipek: Ipek Kimberly, your new personal assistance.

Me: take a seat

Ipek: Thank you , i was hoping you get me up to date with..

Me: References?

Ipek: I'll write a list.

Me: A list?

Ipek: I have been a PA for 6 years now i come in quite handy in a lot of things.

Me: I see , qualifications?

Ipek: High school graduate and i have completed a 3 month Secretary course.

Me: Not much to work with and i don't any other candidates so you hired.

Ipek: Thank you, You won't regret hiring me i swear.

Me: Mhh , come back tomorrow to start work.

Ipek: I will.

She got up lowering her dress and modelled out the office .

Me: Close the door.

She shut the door closed on her way out. I took my phone and

called Amara.

Me: hey , may i take you out for lunch?

Amara: Why ?

Me: To apologize for my behaviour earlier i was out of hand and I'm sorry.

Amara: you should be apologizing to Rose not me you were very rude to her and you wanted to assault her.

Me: I wasn't going to assault her i wouldn't dare lay my hand on a woman.

Amara: If you say so.

Me: I broke off the engagement.

Amara: You did.

Me: Yes , i did and i know how Pop's will react to it and it won't be good.

Amara: what are you going to tell him?

Me: The truth my father is a man that believes in family and that a man should always put his family first. You and the baby you carrying are my family and I'm putting you first , so about lunch?

Amara: Ofcause you can take me out.

Me: It's a date.

Amara: Okay Mr Smith.

I hung up , and now just thinking about this baby's arrival sent goosebumps throughout my body. Who would've thought i had it in me to actually have a baby. Couldn't help but think if i am going to be a good father ? That's the question i had for myself. But i still have like 9 months to answer that question.

STEVE

I got home and walked in the study with Mute and Megan she told me what she heard in the kitchen and told me Alpha did confirm infact that he got a girl pregnant.

Me: The question is who is the girl?

Megan: He didn't say.

Me: And you did ask him? How stupid could you be?

Megan: I asked him and he refused giving me a name.

Me: Mute , can you see we have a problem on our hands.

Megan: Oh hell no Steve! Everytime you call this Mute guy people disappear! Take Dorothy for an example where is she? We can't go after a pregnant lady that's a sin.

Me: You think i am the person i am today for playing by the books? I have done a lot of despicable things .

Megan: And what is that supposed to mean?

Me: get out ! This is men matters women belong in the kitchen, let me handle this, the marriage will go on !

She walked out the study leaving me with Mute.

Mute: So big Pop's what do you have on your mind?

Me: Find the pregnant girl.

Mute: Do you have any idea who it is?

Me: no but Alpha will lead us to her , i want you to locate men to watch his every move.

Mute : we talking about Alpha here , he will know his being followed.

Me: Then try some other means so he doesn't know his followed.

Mute: How about i handle it myself?

Me: NO ! we can't give him what he wants if he sees you he will know I'm behind this , we will hire people so he doesn't know who is following him.

Mute: And the girl when we got her what's going to happen to her?

Me: We kill her and everything close to her , cat , dog , cockroach, fly anything that moves and breaths next to her we

murdering it ! I have put in so much in this union! I won't have a mice from where ever she came from come destroy my plans for Alpha and Megan.

Mute : But before we take actions we have to know for sure if we got the right person and that she is really pregnant with Alpha's kid or maybe the boy is getting cold feet and he is bringing up invalid facts to delay the wedding?

Me: He talks with facts not assumptions if he says he got a girl pregnant he has . His my son Mute.

Mute: I understand sir. I will get on the men right away.

Me : Yes please , the sooner we get rid of this problem the better.

He walked out.

ROSE

Me: Where you going?

Amara: Lunch date with Alpha.

Me: Oh , i see.

Amara : okay bye then.

Me: before you go can i give you a hug.

Amara: O-okay.



I walked to her and gave her a tight hug , i just wanted to embrace her. She pulled away and gave me a kiss on the cheek. She walked out the house. I closed the door behind her .I shut and cried , i was alone i didn't have to pretend i was strong anymore . Sliding down the door , i curled myself into a ball and sobbed for a good 10 minutes . It's been a while since i allowed myself to break down like this . I couldn't stop a painful memory , i tried to surpass all these years from playing in my head . Of the time i was sexually abused by someone that was meant to be my protector. I saw myself laying on the bed helplessly crying out to him as he invaded my little body , i could smell the cigarettes on his t-shirt. I could feel the pain as he thrusts into my small thighs holding me down to the bed , i was a small girl , i was defenceless , i relived everything begging him to stop hurting me and telling him it was painful he was hurting me , but my cry fell on deaf ears . I felt my abdomen experience the sharp shooting pain i felt after he was done with me , after he was done satisfying the evil beast in him. Watched him fasten his belt and told me if i told my mother about this god will punish me , i will go to hell, god doesn't like children that disobeyed their parents forcing me to take a bath and change my clothes before Mom came back from work. I kept asking myself as years go by , did i call this onto myself? Did i provoke my own father to rape me? Did i show to much skin that aroused him to the level of being sexual with me? Or

just maybe I'm cursed , maybe i was cursed in my mother's womb to endure every pain i felt throughout these years raising Amara?And look how she turned out , she's pregnant for a goddamn engaged man.

AMARA

He picked me up at the door and we drove to the restaurant we will be having lunch in . He sat unsettled in the car kept looking at the mirror .

Me: Alpha are you fine?

Alpha: Yes I'm fine why won't i be?

Me: Just that we have been going in circles is the restaurant that far?

Alpha: We will get there.

He looked at the mirror, i looked back awkwardly to the car that was driving behind us. He pressed on the brakes the car instantly stopped, my whole body swung forward, he place his arm on my chest stopping me from hitting the dashboard. My heart skipped beating off my chest in fright.

Me: Alpha what's going on !

Alpha: I think this car following us.

The car passed right next to his as the guy looked at me

through the window.

Me: And so ? That means kill us ?

He gazed through the window on the passages seat , his eyes following the car.

Alpha: We can go now, I'm sorry Mami.

He drove back to the restaurant and we walked in , he pulled the chair for me and we ordered. He looked at me as i looked at his even more dark gorgeous skin.

Me: You so handsome.

Alpha: You look beautiful yourself.

I flashed out a smile as the waiter approached us with our orders. She gently placed the food and drinks on the table.

Waiter: Enjoy.

Me: Thank you.

I kept stealing glances of him as i eat up the salad in front of me. I crossed my legs with the skirt of my dress inching slightly upwards. I wondered was i that good looking that in a room filled with woman he locked his eyes on me.

Alpha: Shall we toast?

Me: uhm..okay.

He raised up his whiskey glass as i was instead to have freshly blended fruit juice.

Alpha: To the future we will be building together.

Me: To the future i guess.

We drank from our glasses .

Alpha: I want our baby to look like you ,unapologetically beautiful.

Me: And i wanted our baby to look like you arrogantly handsome.

Alpha: (laughs) i am not arrogant, guess it's in my blood and i didn't even notice no more , but babe i want him/her to be like you not me , we are north and south , fire and ice we are different.

He set down his glass on the table and rose from his seat , seating besides me. He unbuttoned the cuffs off his elegant shirt and rolled it up his arm. He held my hand slowly approaching it to his mouth and kissed it . He moved his other arm underneath the table and placed it on my thigh. His hand rested on my thigh and i shifted slightly , taking his hand. It was hot, not warm. As if he was laying out in the sun on some blazing hot day in summer . I felt as if i could feel the rush of his blood through his veins . I placed my hand on his rubbing softly and he was wrong about one thing, i wasn't ice or if i was

, i was melting down rapidly . I leaned lost in his eyes as our lips touched , i lingered to him as if i was falling off the chair while seating . I pulled back as reality set we were public what are people going to say , hearing the camera's click at us , i quickly regained myself from him clumsily knocking off the juice it spilled on his pants right on his lap to his crotch , he pushed back the chair getting up .

Me: Oh my word I'm sorry , silly me !

Alpha: No it's okay.

I got up picking up the napkin from the table.

Me: Please let me dry you off.

Alpha:stay ! No , I'll clean myself off don't worry.

Me: No please seat.

He sat down, the moment i brushed the napkin on his crotch , he sank back against the chair , i gently brushed off drying the wet pants , i felt it harden underneath my touch , a mountain rose in no minute . I swept around it , my touch was as light as a wisp of air. I could hear his breath coming hard and quick.

Alpha: See what you have done , I'm horny.

I looked at him as i felt the expression on my face , the mouth drop everything.

Me: I can see that.

Alpha: So what are we going to do about this? I'm boiling up , i need a cure.

I could sense my body go hot for him , pleased with him , wanting him. He paid the bill and we walked out the restaurant. I felt robbed cause i didn't eat up i was still hungry. We got in the car at the back seat, can't believe we doing this in the car. He laid me on the backseat and kissed me unbuttoning his shirt , it wasn't comfortable but i had to bare with him i couldn't expect to be laid down properly and comfortably on a car. He slid down my panty and dugged in licking me. I closed my eyes and moved with the delicate tougue in me.

Me: (moaning) Ohh my god! Alphaahhh...Ohh my word.

He dripped me up with saliva and unzipped his pants setting the crotch free it bounced out as if it was waiting for this for far long. Gently he filled me up banging me in the car.

Me: (heavy breath) Ohhmy word i can't believe I'm doing this .

Alpha: Believe it , you having sex in the car .

He stroked me deep , i held on his body tight. As a strong wave of ecstasy rocked my whole body , my eyes snapped open. Automatically looking into his eyes , he laid his forehead on mine giving me everything, his body, soul as we mated , he was devoted to my fulfillment. I cummed and he cummed after me.

God the car windows were covered in steam. He got off me and i sat up lowering my dress.

Alpha: I want to marry you.

Me: What?

Alpha: Will you marry me?

Me: Alpha , i..i.i don't know what to say.

Alpha: Say yes , marry me , be my wife , let's raise our baby in a loving home, together.

I looked at him , i didn't know what to say , i was ... speechless. Yes i love him but marriage that was totally jumping the line , we went from a newly couple, to parents now we were facing being husband and wife. Are we rushing things? Or should i just go with the flow and enjoy whatever life threw at us.

To be continued.

29

NANDI

Steve was in a bad mood today , he barely maintained one position, he will dance around the seating room just travelling all the couches. Mute walked in and nodded , he got up and walked to him , they whispered for about 13 minutes sharp , my eye kept looting at them stealing glances, how i would love

to be a fly on the wall and hear what the whispering is about. He walked in the dinner area and sat down, laying back on the sofa.

Me: What was that about?

Steve: Private matter that doesn't concern you.

Me: (nods her head) mhhh.

Steve: Change the channel.

I tossed the remote to him and got up . Mute approached the door , i followed him out.

Me: Mute! (Whispering) Muteyy!

Mute: Mem.

He stood like a military style with his arms on his side and body on straight posture.

Me: Mute.

Mute: Mem.

Me: You know i have known you all my life? You like a son to me.

Mute: Correct.

Me: As your mother , i want to know what you and Steve were talking about?



Mute: I'm afraid that's impossible, forgive me.

Me: Are you denying me information?

Mute: I'm sorry but i can't.

Mute has been working for Steve for far to long his loyalty towards him is stronger than a concrete wall , he can die for Steve. I also were just trying my luck.

Me: You can't or you won't.

Mute: Both, i will not , if you want information, with all due respect Ma , go question your husband . Excuse me please i got errands to do.

He continue walking down the door to the car , he got in and drove away. I wonder what is going on here? And i have to get to the bottom of it.

MEGAN

I laid on my father's chest crying.

Me: Papa , he doesn't want to marry me anymore.

Mayor: Don't worry i will talk to Steve he will do something.

Me: (crying) He won't listen to him ! Alpha has a mind of his own no one breaks through to him !

Mayor: Steve is his father he will! He has too .

Me: Papa i don't want want to get married to that man anymore his a self centred bastard ! The devil himself! He never touched me or anything, he showed me he didn't want me ! I don't want to go ahead with this union ! It's over!

I got up from the couch and ran to my room . I don't even know what i was expecting? I expected too much off Alpha instead of seeing him as the monster he was . How did i expected hate turned to love from a person like him , his a cold hearted criminal/scumbag/ bastard . I hate him and his family ! I laid on my bed helplessly crying .

ALPHA

She looked at me , frozen. She didn't know what to say while i was longing for approval. I was longing for her to say Yes she will be mine.

Me: Amara .

Amara: Can i think about it? Marriage is no child's play and i don't want to rash decisions that might change my life forever.

Me: When you have thought about it how will i know.

Amara: You will know.

I was a little disappointed and angry , i hate procrastination, she could've said she yes or no and not saying she will think about it mean what is there to think about , i love her and she loves me

too and we have a baby on the way that's reasonable enough for her to marry me , my phone rang i reached out to my blazer and took it out.

Me: Mute

Mute: Where are you now?

Me: I'm everywhere what's wrong?

Mute : We need you at the warehouse these a problem in the money.

Me: What do you mean these a problem?

Mute: It's not adding up and we need your assistance with the mules, your dad's orders he said you will handle the job, we should wait for you.

Me: Send me your location i will come to you.

I looked at Amara and hung up.

Amara: What's wrong ? You look tense.

Me: I'm taking you home.

Amara: What ? Already?

Me: Yes, i have a important meeting to attend to .

I got out the car and she got in the passages seat . I drove her to her flat. I didn't understand what went wrong in the

transactions and it's probably the mules they are the one's that cash up and the bank never pays in half's. I stopped the car .

Amara: So..

Me: (interrupting) I'll call you .

Amara: I love you.

Me: Me too.

She got out the car . And i drove off to my house , I changed my clothes and took my gun out my safe . Loading the bullets in , i placed it in my hip and drove to the pinned location. The warehouse was about an hour away from my house . I walked in and the briefcases of money stashed on a table.

Mute: Thank you for getting here as soon as possible.

Me: You said the money is what?

Mute: Short?

Me: How much?

Mute: 3 million.

Me: Where are the mules.

Mute: Room.

We walked to the room and got in , they were kneeling on the floor , bleeding clearly they all got a very good hiding , that's

how we work if one person makes a mistake the whole team suffers the consequences. I took my gun out setting the chambers the room got tense. There were about 9 international mules. And 15 local the money that got stolen was from the international plot.

Me: If you work local , GET THE FUCK OUT !

They got up from the floor and rushed out , each one of them pressuring the door to get out. I looked at the 9 mules as they pleaded each on saying they did nothing and they swear on their mothers/grandfather/grandmothers grave , i was getting pissed , Mute walked to one kicking him in his ribs. He groaned in pain.

Mute: FUCK OFF !

Mule 1: Please i swear i didn't take no money i brought my whole pack , i know the rules to not opening the packages !

They all begged me , i kneeled in front of mules.

Me: Who stole the money?

They all kept quiet , i chuckled , stretching the gun against my forehead.

Me: Okay one last time , i am not a man of chances , I'm giving the person one last time to come forward , who stole the money.!

The room just got more tense with scared vibes circulating on the air , they were shaking in fear, others peeped on themselves because of being scared.

Me: I'm going to count to 5 for the person that stole the money to come forward? If not everyone dies you a family ain't you? And family dies where one member dies !

Mule 2 : Guys please i have children at home, please whoever stole the money come forward please ! I'm begging you.

I pointed the gun on the mule's head , he cried begging me .

Me: He lives or he dies it is in your hands whoever took the money !

I took off the safety pin , pressing my finger in the trigger, one guy from behind jumped up.

Mule 8 : It was me please , i know where the money is .

Me: Where is the money?

Mule 8 : Please don't kill me , please.

Me: DAMN IT ! I dont like repeating myself! Where is the damn money.

Mule 8 : At my house in the room , i swear i didn't mean to steal ! I didn't and i promise i will never make that mistake ever again

Me: hell yeah you won't!

I moved the gun from the guy and pointed it to him releasing bullets to in him , i shot him till he laid flat on the floor , blood filled up the floor.

Me: May this be a lesson to those that want to walk in that man's shoes , you will end up in a casket , Mute go get the money, you guys are free to go.

Mute: I will send my guys in now.

They walked out the room i was left alone with the dead body.

Me: Mute , burn the body .

Mute: As usual.

I walked to the car and drove away. I got to the house and had a long shower with my clothes on , the blood spats on the clothes washed away descending in the drain.

STEVE

I walked in the study hiring two hitman for the job.

Me: I want you guys to kill everything in that house , breathing or not !kill it let it be a fly on the wall kill it !

Hitman: It will cost you.

Me: Don't worry about the money , worry about the job.

Hitman: then consider it done we are attacking tonight.

Me: the sooner the better.

I hung up as i had an incoming call , i answered Alpha's call.

Me: And the money?

Alpha: A few loose ends but i tied them up.

Me: That's how you do it , and the body?

Alpha: Mute is on it , I'm so tired i feel like sleeping.

Me: Eat sleeping pills about 4 or 3 then you will sleep.

Alpha: No I'll be okay , sleeping pills will dose me off i don't want that.

Me: If you say so , you know you my son right?

Alpha: Everyone knows I'm your son?

Me: I know and everything i do , i do it for you and my family, I'm a family man and my family always! And i mean it always comes first.

Alpha: What is this about?

Me: I just wanted to tell you that , i love you son.

He hung up his phone , i did love my son but i love my money more and no one plays with my money , This Amara girl has to meet her maker , I'm sorry Alpha but i did this for the greater



good , he will thank me .

30

NANDI

I had dinner with Steve it was quite nice having dinner with my husband alone and no Megan. We eat up the food as i looked at him chewing down his meat , i sipped on the glass of wine.

Me: Isn't it nice having our house back to ourselves?

He chewed on his food nodding.

Me: As the wedding is called off, i think we should a prepare like uhmm a dinner for Alpha and Amara.

Steve: Alpha and who?

Me: Amara.

Steve: You must be mad ! I will not be dinning with a gold digger in my house ! Don't you ever mention that name in my house ever again! Now can i have a normal dinner meal with my wife?

Me: Why you angry? What has that poor girl done you? Why do you despise her so much!

He got up from the table and threw his eating utensils .

Steve: I have lost my god damn appetite!

Me: You just have to accept you are not god ! You can't keep pulling Alpha like a puppet! His a living and breathing human being ! He has feelings , emotions. He is real Steve! And he loves Amara like it or not you can't change that , he isn't you ! A cheating bastard !

Steve: How dare you adress me in that manner Nandi! I have done everything for this family! Everything! And the least you can do is appreciate what i do for you guys , but look at you casting a stone at me ! You just as bad as i am and i am no cheater !

Me: So i am imagining the strays that stink all over you !

Steve: You probably are you psychopath and the wedding is going on ! Come floods , hurricane, tropical cyclone! Alpha and Megan are getting married ! Mark my words

He walked out the dinning area slamming the door in his study, something was wrong here. Steve never lashes out like this unless his nervous about something or is about to do something wrong and he knows he is wrong . I drank up the glass of wine and had another glass.

AMARA

We decided to have a movie night with Lucy , she slept over , we all were in our pyjamas as they drank champagne and i had juice , pregnancy was beginning to get on my last nerve.

Lucy: Life is really looking up for us ladies.

Me: And what is that supposed to mean?

Lucy: We will be marrying our very own lovely Amara to the richest man in the city.

Me: Yes I'm pregnant but this baby isn't a ring.

Rose: (smiles) I raised you well.

Me: You clearly did.

I bite my lip and looked at them as i had slow flash backs of the sex in the car.

Rose: Out with it.

Me: What?

Rose: These something you dying to tell us , we listening.

Me: I know this might really sound naive and i should be focusing on getting a job and other stuff but i have been considering this.

Lucy: Okay what is it ?

Me: Alpha asked me to marry him.

Lucy : Oh my word! I'm so happy for you !

I looked at Rose as a smile washed off her face.

Rose: Don't you think you moving way too fast you just dated for like two minutes? Broke up and hooked up which lead to a pregnancy now marriage? Ain't you guys on fast lane and if the marriage fails you will kill yourselves for the " till death do us apart " part?

Me: Ouch , that hurts , for once in your life can you please be happy for me ! Just be happy and support me ? Mean cruising me and disagreeing with me will only drift a wedge between us so please , i love you i don't want to fight with you.

Rose : Fine . ( smiles) congratulations.

Me : Before you both congratulate me i haven't said yes , i told him i will think about it.

Lucy: Why would you say that?

Me: We had just had sex and i wasn't thinking straight, i was still overwhelmed.

Lucy: My word , you two had sexual relations in his car , girl ain't you living in a movie , we only see that shit on tv.

Rose: Girls i think I'm going to bed , I'm not myself, i don't feel well.

Me: What's wrong should i make you lemon water.

Rose: No please, seat down and you enjoy yourselves.

I got up from the couch and walked to her holding her tight, she held on me too .

Me: i love you so much Rosie.

Rose: I love you too sweetheart, goodnight

Me: Goodnight.

She walked into her room , i walked back and sat down with Lucy. We watched the movie and got sleepy

Me : Look at the time.

Lucy: My eyes are already giving up on me.

Me: Where are you going to sleep?

Lucy: With Rose in her room.

Me: Okay goodnight i love you.

Lucy: I love you too baby mama.

We shared a hug laughing, she walked to Rose room and i walked to mine , laying on the bed i wrapped my hands on my abdomen , it still felt like a dream having to know i was carrying a foetus that will practically change to a human in no time , 8 months to go. I pulled the blanket covering my body.

MEGAN

I met up with Ipek we sat down and had wine.

Me: How you settling in for work?

Ipek: Good, his tough but nothing i can't handle.

Me: And what is that supposed to mean?

Ipek: I meant his attitude it's nothing i can't handle.

Me: Oh okay.

Ipek: So tell me how do you even manage that guy, he had a stinking attitude .

Me: That's the thing you don't manage it you just take the shots as fired.

Ipek: but his probably soft towards you mean you guys are marrying each other.

Me: Mhh Yeah he is .

I sipped on my wine, she looked at me.

Ipek: How i would kill to go to France.

Me: Me too and have wine and food.

She raised up her glass.

Ipek: Let's propose a toast.

Me: Okay?

Ipek:Vive La France!

Me: Vive La France.

We drank down the whole bottle and ordered another. Just drinking ourselves to happiness. Drinking gave me closure about my fallen engagement and it helped me forget about the rejection i faced in Alpha's hand he made me feel small , he made insecure about myself, i kept wondering if maybe i was too thin , were the bones on my body that out ? Was i that slender that he didn't even get turned on when i touched him ? Is he that cold towards me. I drank the wine down pushing my weave on my shoulder. What has this man done to me ! I quickly gathered myself together pushing a smile.

ALPHA

It was getting late and dark, after having a long hot shower i went downstairs and blended myself a smoothie haven't been eating much these days just drinking smoothies. I got into bed and closed my eyes. I woke up in my car and looked around , the car was packed outside Amara's flat , i didn't understand what was i doing here at the middle of the night , the streets were clear just fresh air brushing itself against my naked chest. I wrapped my hands on my arms warming myself up as the chilly wind was getting to much for me to handle. I got out the car my feet landed on the cold concrete road. I had to go in maybe Amara and Rose will offer me shelter for tonight or i will die in the cold , i walked in the flat approaching the door that

was slightly opened, I pushed it gently opening it widely ,Rose was laying on the floor covered in blood. I didn't understand. She was laying in a pool of blood . I ran to her .

Me: Rose ! Where is Amara!

She just laid flat on her back no response.

Me: Rose ! Where is the mother of my child !

I got up rushing into the room , i stood at the door watching Amara covered in blood too. I reached to her touching her bloody body , my hands were covered in blood , i looked at my hands and cried

Me: (crying) No ! No !

I cried so hard with my eyes popped out my eye socket looking at the hands filled with blood her body moved away from me. The whole room adjusted away from me just stretching away from me. I reached out running to her but i couldn't reach out to her , she was far apart from me , probably dead the blood on the bed was too much just descending to the ground in litres.

Me: Amara ! Please , please .

I kneeled on the floor and cried so hard just screaming , my phone rang next to me, i jumped up the bed and got up , looking at my hands , my palms were sweaty. I wiped the sweat off my face and answered the call.



Me: (breathing heavy) Hello.

Amara: Are you okay?

Me: Are you okay? Are you fine? Is Rose okay?

Amara: Yeah we fine we just done eating dinner , we going to bed.

Me: Okay make sure the doors are locked and windows are closed.

Amara: Uhm.. I'm sure we do know that we should check those.

Me: i love you so much.

Amara: I love you too .

Me: I mean it.

Amara: I mean it too, goodnight.

Me: goodnight.

She hung up , i laid on the bed and closed my eyes. For a moment just as i was about to dream , my phone rang off the table. I reached out annoyed !

Me: Hello.

Caller: Alpha Smith?

Me: Speaking?

Caller: The mother of your child is in danger , you have half an hour to reach her .

Me: Who the hell is this !

Caller: You don't need to know , the life of the woman that is carrying your child is in your hands.

Me: (shouting) Who is this !

I got off the bed slamming my hand on the wall.

Me: who is this !

He hung up the phone , i couldn't even recognize the voice of the caller because it was altered to sound like a robots voice, i looked at the private number calling Amara . She didn't pick up , i tried calling her 5 times till i lost patience, i wore my tracksuit and shoes walking down the stairs.

Me: my gun ! Gun!gun!

I walked back up and collected my gun , loading bullets in. I got in the car and speeded off to Amara . On the way i kept trying her on the phone it kept ringing but no answer.

Me: Oh god please keep her safe , i know I'm a sinner but please not for me but for her , she did nothing wrong.

I parked the car and walked in the building holding the gun. I held the door knob twisting the door was closed , i knocked

repeatedly , it was unlocked and opened up. The minute i saw her face , i grabbed her and held her tight.

Amara: What are you doing here .

Me: You weren't picking up my calls.

Amara: For godsake it's midnight didn't you think i would be asleep?

Me: I'm sorry , i just got worried. Can i come in.

I slowly and gently without her noticing i held my gun behind me.

Amara: you already here so get in.

I walked in closing the door behind me , she walked to the kitchen to switching on the lights. I heard footsteps walking towards the door. I quietly listened as the man outside the door tried opening up the door. I walked to Amara and held her finger in the switch. She opened her mouth, i closed it with my hand.

Me: (whispering) Shhh , where is Rose?

Amara: (whispering) what's going on? She's in her room with Lucy.

Me: Who is Lucy?

Amara: A friend, What's going on .

I held her waist sinking down with her to the floor hiding behind the kitchen counter that was in the center of the room . The door slid open making a squeak , the wooden floor alerted us of the movement of boots launching in the house . There were two of them i observed their steps as the guns clicked pulling the safety pin . Amara was trembling in fear. Breathing in my hand as her breath evaporated on my palm that was covering her mouth. Her chest rising and falling rapidly. The man walked towards the room leaving the door opened behind them , i was gunning to get her out the door before they enter the rooms they come back for Rose and the friend but it will be too late these men looked like hitman they knew what they came here to do but with Amara completely helpless and scared depending on me it is going to be difficult coming back , i had to prioritise on getting her out safely , the rest will follow. I peeked over the counter to see where they were , they had walked into the rooms, i got Amara up and a gun went off , releasing about 5 shots per second the girls screamed and it was silent. Amara blinked as tears build up in her eyes , i grabbed her mouth and she silently screamed in my hand crying. Her teeth chattering and lips shaking. I whispered in her ear.

Me: sssshhh , don't worry , it's okay

She shook her head, heavy breathing. I got her up and walked

her out the door. We ran down the hallway to the front door  
to the car . I unlocked the car and got in she stopped and  
looked at me .

Me: Get in the car !

She shook her head .

Me: Amara ! Get in the car !

She looked at me and looked at the door to the building , her  
eyes filled in fear and hurt.

Me: Don't you dare ! Get the car.

I got out the car she ran towards the door , i grabbed her lifting  
her off the floor. She fought me off crying and kicking.

Amara: (screaming) ROSE! NO ! ROSE!

Me: Please Stop it , We need to go.

Amara: No ! We have to help them , they might be injured. We  
have to.

Me: They gone. She's gone.

Amara: Don't say that , she's not gone .

Me: She is , I'm sorry , please my love we have to go.

I picked her up and tossed her in the car and drove off. I locked  
the doors as the car speeding off cutting air. I took my phone

out and called Mute to call an ambulance , i gave all him the building address and Amara told me the flat's number. I drove her to my house , she sat down on the couch as i handed her a glass of water. She held the glass in her hands shaking the water spilling on her pyjamas.

Amara: What in the living hell just happened? What is going on? Who are those men ! Rose?wha-What happened! ( shaking) M..m..my sister ! We have to go back ! Rose she needs me.

She got up from the couch pacing wiping her tears.

Me: We can't go back , i called an ambulance.

Amara: (screaming) No ! An ambulance is not enough ! We don't even know if she's still alive or dead oh god ! It's you isn't it ? You know those people! Those people came to hurt me isn't it ? They came to kill me? Why you quiet! ANSWER ME !

Me: I'm confused too , i don't know what's going on.

Amara: Don't you dare tell me you confused! My sister is probably laying in pain in that flat! For god knows what reason those man came to do that for ! We did nothing wrong to anyone.

She sat down on the couch crying , i walked to her and placed my hand on her shoulder, She pushed me off angry .

Amara : She's my only family , she is my life and now it's all gone.(crying) She's probably fighting for her life , my life is falling apart because of you!

I got a phone call from Mute.

Me: Talk to me.

Mute: No survivors.

My heart ached as i looked at her , her eyes yawning at me .

Me: You sure ?

Mute: Accurately.

Me : bye

Amara : Who was that ?was it the hospital? Is she okay?

Me: She's gone.

Amara: No ! You lying.

Me: There were no survivors Amara they both gone , I'm sorry.

Amara: You sorry ! You bastard! YOU MONSTER!

She threw the glass of water at me as i dodged it . I have never seen her react this way, and i understood she was shocked , she was traumatised. After hearing the gun shots that apparently killed her sister , if i were her i would react in the same way. She launched to me just slapping me around and hitting me , i

just stood there and took the beatings like a man.

Amara: What have you got to say for yourself Alpha !

Congratulations you son of a bitch You ruined my life , You did it ! You and your father killed my sister! You murdered my sister! I hope this helps you sleep at night. All this luxuries , status and money came from innocent blood being spilled, you can take your name ! I don't need it ! I'm better off struggling for something to eat than live luxuries on innocent blood. You all cruel you monster's i wish i never met you , i hate you ! I hate you !

Me: It's not my fault, my family had nothing to do with this please trust me.

Amara: Trust you? Trust a murderer! Trust my sister's killer .

Me: I did not kill your sister! It's not my fault!

Amara: When is it ever going to be your fault! When?

Me: When i am at fault i will take the blame but now you just blaming me for something i know nothing of Amara .

Amara: So if you knew nothing about the attack what were you doing at the flat at that time? Cause the silly excuse of me not answering your calls is bull !

Me: Well the bull is actually the reason , you carrying my baby why wouldn't i panick when you not answering my calls?



Amara: I don't tolerate lies , i am a nice person but not stupid !

I sat down on the couch , my head was blown away , i don't know what is going , i feel helpless , a damn failure selfish, i should've tried something to save the girls , instead of standing at the door i should've handled this whole situation like a man maybe Rose will still be alive, i would've saved her. I looked at her.

Me: Don't confuse my silence with submission because I'm saving you from something you won't be able to handle .  
Observe your pain , listen to your pain or it will ruin you badly.  
You pregnant and you shouldn't be working yourself like this , death is death it comes when least expected but that doesn't mean we should drag on what happened we should be sitting and having tea while you tell me about your life and hers , do you think Rose would want to being violent towards me and accusing me for something i know nothing about ? I love you so much Amara but the are certain things i won't deal with and one of them is you throwing tantrums at me , throwing a glass at me won't bring her back , neither will insulting me. Now go get a shower and go to bed .

Amara: (crying) If your family is behind Rose's attack, i will make sure this baby i am carrying never sees the light of day ! I will murder it ! I will not carry a baby for a ruthless and evil man

like you , i will not carry this baby for your family ! She was right about you i shouldn't have associated myself with you! I wish you i never let you steal my heart ! I wish i never let you in my life.

I looked at her tearful eyes and laughed , i had no better way to deal with what she just said than to laugh , she is ripping my heart apart and she didn't even notice she was terrorising my feelings. I swallowed a lump of saliva with tears forming in my eyes. I exhaled wiping my eyes.

Me: All the stuff you heard about me is a lie , I am more worst than they portray me and i don't care if people talk shit about me , i was raised to flush shit down the toilet and not play with it , i have been fighting for survival since i was a child , pain gave me strength to fight pain! You can't break what has already been broken Amara. If you want to terminate the pregnancy then fine i won't stop you ! But kill me first.

I took the gun out my hip and set the chambers removing the trigger and held her hands on the gun placing it on my torso. She held on the gun shaking could barely keep it up , i held the head of the gun on my chest .

Amara: What you doing !

Me: Shoot me !

Amara: NO ! Please stop it !

Me: i said shoot me ! Pull the trigger! I'm the MONSTER AIN'T I !  
Free yourself from me ! Kill me !

Amara: (crying) No ! Please .

Me: Trust me , i would have never came into your life if you feel better without me . If living without me and my dark aura around you is what you want then that's what i want too , if me dying will bring back joy into your life then i will die cause nothing in this world means so much to me than seeing you smile . Now end you misery Amara McKenzie , kill me and my evil seed that is growing in you , remove evil from your life cut it off with the roots.

She tossed the gun on the floor and walked up the stairs to the rooms. I wiped my watery eyes and face picking up the gun , i secured the pin and walked upstairs. It was already morning atleast a 2 hour sleep would do , i walked in the room , she was laying on the bed crying , i got in next to her , she shifted away from me created space between us , i guess she needs the spce , i took my pillow and a blanket and went to sleep on the couch.

STEVE

I got out the bed and walked to the bathroom , i placed the phone in my ear whispering.

Me: Yes.

Hitman: It's done , she's dead and her sister.

Me: Are you sure? I don't want sloppy work where the dead wake up.

Hitman: Would you survive 2 gunshots in the head and 2 in the torso?

I smiled .

Me: Good work , you will receive your money .

Hitman: We trust you Mr Smith.

Me: Pleasure doing business with you boys.

I hung up and danced a little spinning in the toilet and collected myself , i flushed the toilet and walked out playing around with my pants.

Nandi: And where have you been.

Me: I didn't know i had to sign a petition or inform you so i can get approval go to the toilet.

Nandi: I was just asking since you usually disappear and go meet whoever you sleep with.

Me: Why are you so fixated on me sleeping with people, know what come here.

Nandi: What are you doing , Steve we are old for this.

I got ontop of her , she laughed.

Me: I am very young , remember how i would ride you when we were still fresh .

Nandi: ( flirty) Oh i do daddy , you were a stallion .

Me: I still am , want me to prove it?

Nandi : Yes.

I leaned at her kissing her , going in between her thighs.

To be continued.

31

AMARA

I woke up and took a shower , i wrapped a towel over my body passing by a mirror, i stopped for a second and looked at my face , my eye's were swollen from all the cry , my skin pale . I covered my face with my hands and cried. I didn't understand anything what was going on ? Why this had to happen, why Rose had to die ! She left me , all alone , with no one , i don't even know who my mother is or where i came from ,I'm just a lost seed . I held my stomach looking at the mirror as i looked how far was the baby bump it hasn't yet shown up , i was still flat. I shared some unkind words to Alpha but I'm not sorry! I am not , he killed my sister they murdered her cold blooded. He walked in the bathroom buttoning up his shirt. I looked at him as he stole glancing of me.

Me: So life goes on as usually to you ? You going to work?

He looked at me and kept quiet , brushing his hair. I shook my head and laughed clapping my hands in disbelief.

Me: Fine if you won't answer me guess it's guilty conscious ! It's eating you up isn't it ? You can't kill two innocent women and expect to live happily! May they visit you every night and terrorise you ! (Screams) You don't deserve peace Alpha ! Not after what you have done ! It's true monsters are real and they live in people! And you are the Alpha of them ! Top gang monster the damn CEO !

Alpha: Amara please, not this early I'm begging you. Clean clothes are on the bed.

I walked to the room and looked at the tracksuit that was on bed. I took it and tossed it on the floor wearing my pyjamas. I sat on the bed. He walked out the bathroom and looked at me.

Me: You done?

Alpha: I thought i told you the was clothes on the bed.

Me: Take me home.

Alpha: Which home?

Me: So you don't know where my home is now ? I said take me home !

Alpha: You can't go in there , it's a crime scene . Plus you don't know if those men will come and finish you off! You are safe with me .

Me: I would rather get shot to death than be stuck in this house for a second!

He grinned his teeth with his jaw muscles moving, i glanced at him as he tried containing his anger but he was going to blow up.

Alpha: Amara can you please wear the tracksuit.

Me: I will not ! I would rather walk on the streets naked ! I don't want to be here anymore! I hate you this place everything that has you in it ! I hate it ! I want to go home. I don't want to live with a murderer!

He launched towards me and grabbed my arm aggressively.

Alpha: I will not have you disrespect and call me names ! Did you see me murder your sister? Why would i murder your sister Amara! Common sense and stop thinking with your damn feelings ! If i wanted to kill your sister i would look her in the eyes and pull the trigger infront of you ! I am not afriad, i have many killed before , i don't send men to kill defenceless women , i do my dirt myself!

Me: Are you listening to yourself? You just implicated yourself agreeing that you are a murderer.

Alpha: Yes i am a murderer , i won't disagree with that and I'm not going to hide it but i would never harm your family , i swear on the life of our unborn baby.

Me: If swearing makes you feel better for what you done then fine.

He took his watch and walked down out the room , i got on the bed and placed a pillow in between my thighs crying into it , i felt like screaming, i felt like dying. I had no reason to live anymore, i was alone all. I got out the bed and went downstairs. Alpha was with her mom in the kitchen gossiping. I hide myself from them listening.

Nandi: Is she okay? How is she handle this.

Alpha: She's blaming me for everything, i did nothing Ma why would i kill her sister.

Nandi: It's hurt , she's not herself.

Alpha: I understand that but I'm human too , these a limit on things i can take , i have a feelings , she can't just accusing me of such and expect me to roll over and take everything.

Nandi : Bare with her , she's just hurting.

Me: I don't think i have the patiences to bare with her any longer she even said she wants to terminate the pregna...

Nandi: No ! I don't even want to hear that don't say that she



can't she won't.!

Alpha: And Ma please don't tell Dad about Amara being here.

Nandi: You think your dad is behind the attack?

Alpha: At this point i am approaching this matter from all sides, i can't trust no one besides you.

Nandi: Fine i won't say a thing but i don't think Steve is behind this , i haven't seen any funny behavior.

Alpha: You have been married to dad for years and you still blind to his actions?

I walked in the door , walking to the sink. She launched to me and give me a hug.

Nandi: sweetheart I'm very sorry for your loss

Me: Thank you.

Alpha: I'm off to work , please look after her Ma , she's not in her right senses , i have installed CCTV cameras throughout the house and the are men i hired for you safety.

Nandi: You are safe here with us.

Me: I don't want to stay here , stay here and do what? I'm going home to begin my sister's burial.

Alpha: I'll hire someone for that and i will cover all the expenses, Rose is going to have a decent burial.

Me: I don't want your money! I will bury my sister myself!

I placed the glass on the kitchen counter and walked upstairs.

STEVE

Me: Megan.

Megan: Steve.

Me: Can we talk?

Megan: No i want nothing to do with you or your son I'm done !

Me: Baby listen to me, the girl is off the way and she's not going to bother you or Alpha for the rest of your lives.

Megan: What did you do?

Me: I had a problem and i dismissed the problem after all every problem had a solution.

Megan : I hope this solution won't come back and bite you.

Me: I have things under control just begin preparing for the wedding.

Megan: I have to be sure first that everything is legit, i can't prepare for a wedding while Alpha will call it off the next year .

Me: He won't call it off trust me.

Megan: You keep saying i should trust you while you fail to prove your trust. Trust is earned not handed to Steve! I have

been far long patience to this while ordeal and i just want this terrible thing to end , I'm sick to the utmost exhausted of all the lies , manipulation it's best we let Alpha be and just end this union.

Me: (angry) Stop blabbing nonsense and get the marriage arrange ! Have i ever disappointed you before? That girl was a minor problem and now she's out the way your knees are filling up with water ! Woman up Megan ! For how long are you going to be daddy's little girl? I am offering you a once in a lifetime opportunity to be part of my family and you disappointing me !

Megan : Steve i didn't mean it that way.

Me: Whatever way you meant it you are marrying Alpha with consent or not !

I hung up the call and had a glass of whiskey . This girl better not be getting wobbly knees now ! Her father made a commitment to me and he is going to honour up to it , alive or dead.

IPEK

He walked in his office in a very dull mood that's when i realised my day will be mad crazy i looked up saying a silent prayer.

Me: Lord please give me strength for everything I'm going to endure today.

I'm Ipek Kimberly been a personal assistant for powerful man for quite a long time now , when Megan approached me about being Alpha's assistant i was excited about the job no words could explain how excited i was , just being in the same room as Alpha freaked you out but still made you feel super lucky , mean who wouldn't want to be in a room with him maybe his money would rub off to me , we never know. I took my iPad and walked in . He took off his blazer fixating it nicley on the chair and unbuttoned his sleeves folding the sleeves nicely on his wrist. I looked at him taking a deep breath.

Alpha: Yes?

Me: You have a meeting scheduled for 3 o clock but the rest of the morning you a free man.

Alpha: okay.

Me: Alright.

He sat down beginning his work. He eyed me clinching his finely shaped jaws , licking his lower lip.

Alpha: What are you still doing here?

Me: I ..i uhm i love your suit it suites you.

Alpha: I wouldn't have woren if it didn't.

Me: Oh sorry, i will go back to work.

I walked to the door.

Alpha: Who gave you permission to leave?

Me: I'm sorry i didn't know i needed permission.

Alpha: You can go.

He rubbed the back of his neck , flinching, i turned and looked at him.

Me : Rough night?

Alpha: More like uncomfortable night.

I place the Ipad on the table and walked behind him placing my hands on his big broad shoulders , God i cummed filling my panties with body fluids.

Me: May i?

Alpha: Go ahead i need it anyway.

I place my hands on his shoulders massaging his tighten up muscles , he relaxed his head laying back on the chair.

Me: Am i doing okay?

Alpha: Far from okay , you actually are good at this .

Me: Thank you.

I smiled a little with my hands working him , he groaned tilting his head sideways .

Alpha : That's enough thank you , after a night on the couch my body was really strained.

Me: Fight with your lady.

Alpha: fight ? That's a understatement.

Me: I'm sorry you have to go through all that , i wish i could help.

Alpha: You want to help?

Me: Yes i would do anything.

He got up from the chair and held my waist pulling me closer to him. My heart skipped a beat in excitement. He immediately kissed my lips , i unbuttoned his shirt laying my hands on his skin , we shared hot , rough and rugged kisses both thrown at each other with no mercy . His hands moved from my waist to my bum grabbing my ass tightly, he rolled my dress up to my abdomen as , he looked at me admiring my body with his hands rubbing my skin softly. He kissed my ear down to the back of my neck whispering in my ear.

Alpha: this stays between us won't it.

Me: Yes .

Alpha: Hands up.

I gladly obliged raising my hands up on his shoulders . I was

soaking wet , i sat down on the table as my hard breasts were massaged , he parted my legs entering in between my thighs. I heard the zip as the belt head hit my thighs. My thong was set aside his crotch rubbed against my wet coochie i held on him with my legs on his waist.

Me: (moaning) Fuck me please !

I needed someone as dominant as him and i was willing to be submissive to him , in work and when he needed someone to have a talk to. And without restraint , he entered me . I bite my lips enjoying the sensation of his strong strokes.

Me: ( moaning) Ahhh ...Alpha..fuck !

He thrusts in and out of me while massaging my clit . His body was raging with too much fire and lust or should i say his problems made him fuck good but to hell with Megan , her man is the kind of meal i want to have a spoon in. He pumped me in harder , i laid on the edge of table gasping for air. Quickly getting me down and pinning me on the table hitting it from behind filling me up rapidly and savagely. He grabbed my hair rolling it on his hand as my head tilted back . Pumping the living hell out of me . I reached down to my clit rubbing it rapidly easing the itch.

Me: Ohhh my word ! I'm cumming ! Ahh I'm cumming ! Harder please ! Please.

He thrust in me harder and faster significantly deeper as i massaged my clit , i felt it coming , felt the orgasm coming strongly.

Me: Alpha I'm cumming.

Alpha: Cum for me !

He made a few intrusions in me my body trembled , he spanked my bum cheeks as i opened up my legs to him more and laid on the desk . My legs were giving up on me , he held a grip on my hips and thrust in one more time i lost it and let the fluids out my legs shook rapidly.

Me: Ohhh my word! Oh god .

He pulled out and left my still hanging on the table. I still felt him inside. I was satisfied beyond expectations, tummy full. I collected myself lowering my dress as he also fixed himself.

Alpha: Close the door behind you.

Me: Just like that?

Alpha: What do you want me to say tell you i love you. You can leave now Ipek.

I walked out closing the door behind me , What a way to begin work. I sat down on the chair as my coochie burned. I wanted to reach down and finger myself but i had to work , i was lusting for more, he had me wanting more.



NANDI

Amara was restless, she would pace the whole house looking for god knows what.

Me: Are you hungry i can prepare a snack for you.

Amara: No I'm good.

Me: Amara you need to eat , punishing yourself won't change reality let us help you.

Amara: (yelling) I don't need your help why can't you get that , i don't need your support, your money ,food , protection .

Me: Fine what do you need then , what do you want ?

Amara: Rose McKenzie! I want my sister! I need Rose ! Can you give me that? Can you bring her back to me !

Me: I'm afraid not. I understand you hurting but pushing away people that care about you won't help , you carrying a baby in you Amara , this baby needs you! She/he needs you to survive not for it but for you too , you need to fight the pain , you are no longer a little girl now the little girl inside you must go you are a woman now . Feel the pain , cry , break things but don't let the pain break you ! You are much stronger than you know.

Amara: (crying) She was the only family i had , i just can't come to terms with what happened to her. I'm broken Ma I'm hopeless.

I embraced her laying her head on my chest.

Me: You have every right to be , you are not alone anymore you have me , Alpha and the little baby in you , we will love you unconditionally with no limit. I swear on my life we didn't do this but trust me Alpha will find out and they will pay dearly.

She glanced at me as i wiped her tears away.

Amara: I wish i knew i was seeing her for the last time that night, i would've stopped her from sleeping early , i would've held her long in my arms and kissed her a thousands time. I would've lingered a little more memorizing the little memories we shared .

Me: We all lose people we love dearly and it hurts i know but don't lose yourself in the process.

She nodded her head and smiled.

Amara: Thank you.

Me: I'm always here for you , you the apple of my son's eyes , he loves you so much Amara , you changed my little boy and helped him open up to love and I love you for that. Now should i make you food.

Amara: Yes please I'm starving.

I got up and walked to the kitchen.

ALPHA

Mute walked in the office and sat down. He looked at me as he fixated his leather jacket.

Mute: You got some hot shit sitting pretty at reception, if i knew you were living this life i would've studied hard in school.

Me: Your loss , i didn't call you here to discuss my employees, it's about Roses death.

Mute: Rose ?

Me:Amara's sister.

Mute: What about those girls? Bro i told you those girls are dead they didn't stand a chance to survive that attack.

Me: I need to find the person that placed the target on their back , who would kill innocent girls that bother no one .

Mute : You should know no one is innocent probably one of the girls pissed a very dangerous man without noticing and they got themselves killed .

Me: Then we will work together to find that very dangerous man.

He moved on the chair uncomfortably.

Mute: You know I'm working for you Pop's and not you.

Me: I didn't ask for any clearances on who you working for right

now I'm assigning you to a job and you will do it .

Mute: And if i don't?

Me: (smiling) I'll pay for all your funeral arrangements don't stress.

Mute: Okay what do you want me to do then?

Me: I want you to be my eyes and ears everywhere those men are out there and everyone makes mistakes.

Mute: I feel like we chasing after ghosts here Alpha why don't you just let laying dogs lay.

Me: I'm provoking the dogs ! They must wake the fuck up ! Plus i have a call from an anonymous tip off that persona should know those men.

He changed his seating position clearing his throat.

Mute: Why don't you just give me the number and i will handle the rest.

Me: No i will handle this myself.

Mute: I can't help you if you don't trust me Alpha.

Me: You got some shit wrong there ! You will help me and yes i don't trust you and my father.

Mute: You think your dad is behind the attack?

Me: What better explanation? He never liked Amara .

Mute: But that doesn't mean he will go to the extent of killing the girls.

Me: Why are you defending him?

Mute: I'm not defending him.

Me: Looks like you are and listen here Mute if i get to bottom of this and you knew and he knew, you both dead.

Mute: Bro i had nothing to do with that incident.

Me : I also pray you not.

Mute: Let me go get to work .

Me: Good , bye.

He got up and walked out the room, i opened up my laptop viewing the money , Pearl walked in limping to the chair it was good seeing her get her momentum back, she had crunches on . She sat down and handed me a file.

Pearl: You handling in the office these days , these an important issue i have to discuss with you.

Me: I'm listening.

Pearl: I was looking at the companies account and i noticed somethings weren't adding up.

Me: What things?

I looked at her suspiciously raising my brows. She took the printed file showing me the highlighted money coming in the company.

Pearl: Look at this 5 million , 400k and 2 million really in just month's time ? I think we should involve the police in this these money laundering scheme happening right under our noses and we don't know about it.

Me: Pearl don't stress yourself i will look into it

Pearl: Please do we can't let this sort of nonsense happen here.

She got up walking to door , she closed the door , i took my phone and called Mute.

Me: I have a job for you.

Mute: I'm listening.

Me: Pearl , she suspect the company and we can't afford that.

Mute: I know what to do , i will get the machine and get to work.

Me: Mute.

Mute: Yes

Me: Make it less painful she must not suffer.

Mute: As you please.

I hung up the call and walked to the window, God did she had to poke her nose in a business that doesn't concern her , look now ! May her soul rest in eternal peace, it was either her or me. I sat down on finished up some paperwork and collected a few files to finish back home , i want to be close to Amara , i feel much more better when I'm around her even though she pushes me away but i wanted to be there for her in everyway even if it means i have to do it from a distance. I drove to the house and walked in , the house was very quiet and i didn't like that , i looked around calling out to my Mother and Amara but my voice echoed in the house , i walked out to the security guy.

Me: Where did they go?

Guy: They just drove out.

I slapped him right across the face, he held his cheek.

Me: You let them go ! You bloody fool !

Guy: Sir they just walked out.

Me: Are you listening to yourself? Are you mad. Come here !

He walked closer and i gave him another slap.

Me: What kind of nonsense are you telling me if you something happens to her? I will kill you that's a promise.

I walked in the house and tried calling my mother but her phone wasn't going through, damn it i formed a fist launching it on the wall , my knuckles bled. I was furious, i was angry and scared.

MEGAN

I sat down on the couch having a glass of wine. My dad sat down next to me .

Mayor: wine this early sweetheart?

Me:I need this wine.

Mayor: What's stressing you ?

Me: Isn't it Steve .

Mayor: What did he want?

Me: He told me to carry on with the wedding preparations.

Mayor: So do that.

Me: Dad I'm sick and tired of those people i just reached a point where i don't want nothing that will link me to the Smith's.

Mayor: I know it's hard my baby but hang in there if Steve says prepare for the wedding do just that.

Me: And if Alpha cancels on me again ? Dad i can't offered another embarrassment ! Why are we even sucking up to them , they need us we don't need them.



Mayor: We actually do , the Smith's are very powerful, they have money they can buy anything. We are just a mayoral family .

Me: We are as powerful as they are.

Mayor: No we not , the position i am in is not guaranteed, the Mayoral chair is a chair you are borrowed and when the times comes you will have to give it back and guess what ? After all the hard work i have done i will be forgotten and i will be treated like any other usually person.

Me: I just hate being treated the way Alpha is treating me , he makes me feel like I'm non human like I'm just a useless person.

Mayor: Hang in there sweetheart till you tie the knot after that don't even beg to him , cause right now if you disobey Steve we will have him as an enemy and that will cause trouble for us.

Me: Fine daddy I'm giving Alpha one last chance, he messes up I'm gone.

Mayor: One tiney chance princess.

Me: (smiles) Yes .

Mayor: Let me go to a meeting , back to back meetings today.

Me: Bye.

He kissed me on the cheek and walked out. O drank the wine

and took my phone checking for venues and wedding dresses.

AMARA

Nandi and i drove to the hospital. She had me have a full body check up but mostly she wanted to check up on the baby , i laid down on the bed as she did a scan we saw the baby , Nandi held my hand tightly as the doctor let us hear the strong heartbeat , just hearing it beat my heart sank to my gut all the things i said to Alpha about terminate the pregnancy and calling my baby the seed of evil flooded my head . What kind of a nother am i? It's only been a month and i have already been a bad mom. Nandi made a audio for Alpha and took a few pictures, we walked out as i was handed a pack of vitamins. We walked out to the exit when a women grabbed my arm , she looked at me and smiled.

Lady: Baby ,oh god thank.

She held me , pulling me into her arms. I was really confused. She held my cheeks and kissed me.

Me: Uhm sorry Ma you confusing me with someone else.

Lady: No ! I'm not, you my daughter, you my baby girl that ran away from home , you my baby. I found you , I'm so sorry for everything, i should've believed you.

Me: Mem , I'm sorry .

I pulled away from her , the vitamins fell on the floor. She looked at me and placed her hand on my tummy, i pushed her away from me

Lady: You are pregnant again , where is your first born ?

Me: Ma can we go.

Nandi: Yes please this is getting awkward.

She walked to Ma'Nandi and looked at her.

Lady: You took her didn't you? You raised my baby? You stole her?

Nandi: I don't know what you talking about , Amara is not my child she is the mother of my grand child.

Lady: Amara? You changed your name? She is not Amara that's not her name!

I picked up the pills and quickly walking to the door , We got in the car and drove off. I was still shooked by that lady not knowing what's wrong with her.

Me: That lady really scared me .

Nandi: I think she's mentally disturbed.

Me: I want to go see Rose's body. I want to plan her funeral as soon as possible , do you maybe know where her body is?

Nandi: No but i will have people to look for the morgue then i

will take you tomorrow for now you need to rest.

We drove to the house and walked in , Alpha looked at us infuriated i looked at his bleeding knuckles.

Nandi: What happened? You bleeding.

Alpha: Where were you with her?

Me: Ma and i wen....

Alpha: (shouting) Shut up Amara I'm talking to my mother! Ma didn't i say stay with her here in the house ? Didn't i make it clear i don't want her seen out ? What if something happened to her will you listen to me then? How could you be this stupid!

I looked at him , what kind of nonsense is this?

Me: You will not talk to her like that !

Nandi: Amara please it's fine.

Alpha: If those men come back and hunt her down what do you think will happen? I hate sloppy behaviour! I'm trying to protect her here and are exposing her to danger !

Nandi: I'm sorry Alpha , i didn't think me taking Amara out will cause you so much anger.

Alpha: That's the thing you don't think ! Geez so now i must think for me, you and Amara ! For godsake i am trying here and i need you guys to bare with me ! Listen to me when I'm talking

and obey me ! I am protecting you here !

He walked out the stairs, Nandi broke down and cried i walked to her and held her.

Me: Ma it's okay , sorry.

Nandi: I messed up again as we were just making progress , i lost him again.

Me: Ma you did nothing wrong here ! Alpha is wrong for yelling at you . I will go talk to him.

She walked to the dining room and sat down as i went upstairs to confront Alpha. He standing across the room facing the window looking outside, i walked to him and hug him . He pushed me off and sat down tapping on his laptop.

Me: That was no way to talk to your mother.

Alpha: She's my mother not yours ! Stop poking your nose in my family matters.

Me: Alpha she's crying .

Alpha: So? Just because she's crying the world should stop?  
(Shouting) She knows i hate it when i give people orders and they don't obey ! I don't tolerate disobedience!

Me: Talk to me why are you angry? Please.

Alpha: Can't you see I'm working , I'm busy , get out Amara.

I took out the scan photo and placed it on the screen of the laptop. His eyes locked on the photo.

Me: I'm going to leave you to work as you asked but i just wanted to say , you never acknowledge what you have till you lose it , your mom is the sweetest ever and you treating her like trash , i grew up and i didn't know what my mother looked like , i grew up in a orphanage fighting over a slice of bread and you have it all , a loving mother that would give up her life for you , the love she shows towards you. You lack nothing, i would give anything to see my mother and rest in her arms and just cry asking her why she left me , why she gave up her baby girl . She left us at the door in a orphanage, she handed her children to strangers to raise and you here playing with your mothers heart and you don't even notice you hurting her.(crying) She took me to the hospital for a check up on your baby ! Did you think that maybe if those men found me they would've killed the both of us? She was loving enough to ask to get you a audio of your baby's heartbeat. She didn't owe you a thing but she still did guess mother's love runs deep but no you didn't thank her , you thanked her with a plate of bullshit cause that's what you good at ! At making people feel bad ! You are not a good person we know that Alpha , but you shouldn't be reminding us every damn time that you don't give a damn about our feelings. Now you can go back to work , Go lose yourself in the darkness.

I walked out the room closing the door behind me.

To be continued.

32

PEARL

I reached home and walked in lighting up the house John wasn't home .I placed my bag on the sofa and rested my back. I got up and went to drink my pills, i place the glass of water on the kitchen counter. I looked up and a guy was standing across the room, he had black clothes and a balaclava, i looked and him and just knew i was dead meat. He walked to the counter and knocked the gun on the table.

Mute: Knock, knock.

I looked at him backing up to the kitchen cupboard.

Mute: Ain't you going to ask who it is?

Me: (sobbing) Please don't kill me.

Mute: Wrong answer.

He lifted the gun up and pointed it to me , i backed up to the cupboard and cried closing my eyes , i raised up my hands.

Me: ( crying) Please don't kill me , take everything you want , rape me i don't mind ! Just don't kill me please.

Mute: let's play a game shall we?

Me: (nodding) Okay , okay.

Mute: It goes like this, knock, knock.

Me: (crying) Wh...who i...is it ?

Mute: Death !

Me: who do you want , John is not here?

Mute: I came for you , ready or not here i come.

Me: No pleaseeee!

He pulled the trigger releasing bullets in my torso i fell on the floor gasping for air as blood filled up my mouth just choking me i couldn't feel my body with my lungs giving up on me and my heart racing , he walked over my body that was obviously dying and looked at me , my eyes met his , his dark black eyes was the last image i was going to see alive. All i could think about was my mom i was leaving my mom without making peace with her , i was dying while i broke my mothers heart. He pointed the gun in my head , i looked at him , he took a shot , the minute the bullet entered my head i felt like my head was split apart. I gasped one more time and my heart stopped beating

ALPHA

I locked myself in listening to the audio for almost an hour now. I kept crying as i listened. I phone call interrupted me , i wiped my tear clearing my throat.



Me: Mute.

Mute: It's done.

Me: Cover her body with a white sheet and call a police using her phone.

Mute: Okay

I dropped the call and look at the baby scan. I place it in my laptop and walked downstairs Ma was cooking in the kitchen Amara was helping her out. I looked at them as they smiled tasting the food in the boiling pots. I cleared my throat loudly they looked at me.

Me: Before Amara comes at me and tells me to go crawl back to my darkness i wanted to say something.

Amara: (smiling) i wasn't going to say anything.

Me: I just wanted to say that my actions were uncalled for , i was rude and that was just despicable for me to talk to you Ma in that manner , I'm sorry.

Nandi: It's okay i forgave you , you know i would never stay angry at you Alpha , I'm your mom . And i understand you were worried about Amara , i should've been responsible and informed you we were going out.

Me: I'm glad we both acknowledge our wrongs and i would like to put all this behind us.

Nandi: I would like that too.

Me: Amara can we talk.

Amara: okay.

We stepped out the kitchen to the seating room . I held her waist pulling her closer to me and kissed her , her lips melted on mine. I looked at her gorgeous set of brown eyes , clinching on her waist.

Me: I listened to the heartbeat.

Amara: And?

Me: Incredible it calmed me down . It's the most special gift anyone would've given me ,Do you think I'll be a good father? I'm scared of the thought of being someone's father while I'm a wreck myself . Is she /he going to turn out like me?

Amara: You over thinking this whole pregnancy we still have time to figure things out, and i will stand with you , if our child turns out to be good or bad it doesn't matter we will love our baby unconditionally.

I held her hand and kissed it .

Me: I will find the people that took Rose's life , i won't rest till i do so.

Amara: Alpha i think you should let the police handle Roses

matter , i don't want you going around and putting your life in danger.

Me:(laughs) In danger me? I am danger Amara !

Amara: But still if you find these men what are you going to do to them?

Me: I will kill them

Amara: Why do you take killing someone like it's a joke?

Me: It's no joke.

Amara: Then why do you make it sound so easy.

Me: i didn't say killing someone is easy .

Amara: Promise me you won't hurt anyone from now on .

Me: Only if you promise you won't ever threaten me about abortion and you will not ever be angry or tell e ou hate me.

Amara: Okay i won't, only if you will let the police do their work .

Me: Fine.

I kissed her one more time , Ma was ready to go .

Nandi: I am ready to go home.

Me: I will go with you.

Nandi: Why ? I have my own car I'll drive myself.

Me: I want to have a chat with Father.

Nandi : Oh okay.

Ma had a hug with Amara and we walked out , i strictly informed the gaurds to not let anyone in the house besides me , they nodded their heads. I drove behind Ma and we reached the family house .

Nandi: I hope you not here to cause trouble.

Me : Why will i be cause trouble?

Nandi: I don't know cause you and your father have minds of your own that are totally different from ours.

We walked in the house , Father looked at Ma.

Steve: Where were you?

Nandi: At Alpha's.

Steve: Doing what there?

Me: She came to check up on Amara .

He looked at me with his eyes widely opened , i knew the was something he knew , why was he shocked that , i regret saying that but if i want to find out if my dad is behind the attack i had to take the risk of letting him know Amara was still alive.

Steve: She's still alive? I thought she was shot to death with the other girl.

Me: You thought wrong Father? Why are you shocked?

Steve: I'm not shocked I'm actually fine just that i didn't know she was alive.

Me: Oh , or maybe you are disappointed.

Steve: About?

Me: Maybe you sent those men.

Steve: Come on Alpha why will i send men to gun down defenceless women! You know that is pathetic i have done a lot of miserable things in my life but killing innocent girls is not in my to do list i am way more busy with important stuff , running after mices isn't on my diary.

I looked at him nodding my head , Steve was very manipulative he could make you believe a lie and tell you straight faced without blinking i was pushed in a corner were i don't even know if he was lying or was he being truthful.

Me: Oh really then you will be fine with Mute helping me find the killers won't you?

Steve: ofcause he can help , so who are they? Do you maybe have something tangible?

Me: It doesn't matter who they are , what matters is the plan i have and what i am going to do to those bastards when i get my hands on them.

Steve: I see , you very determined with finding these guys.

Me: I'm finding the guys that did the work and they will lead me to the person that ordered the work to be done.

Steve: So you think these someone behind this attack?

Me: Yes someone powerful, with money order the hit .

Steve: Are you accusing me of something Alpha?

Me: Why do you feel accused did you do it?

Steve: No .

Me: Are you sure?

Steve: Accurately.

Me: Okay Pop's , i will leave you with you lovely wife and go back to the mother of my child , she has been a very bad girl these days , she has a target on her back but this time she has me to protect her , anyone that wants to kill Amara must go through me first.

Steve: You have been heard Alpha.

Me: I hope so cause when the nice guy loses his patience the devil shivers .

Steve: While you still at that nonsense remember blood is thicker than water.

Me: And you remember blood is nothing without loyalty and respect ! I don't respect those that don't respect me and the things dearly to me , never play in another man's property. I will tell you again Dad stay away from Amara. The next time i won't be this friendly.

His cheeks turned pink as he was boling up. I kissed my mother cheek and walked out the house. I received a call from Ipek.

Me: yes.

Ipek: you left a file on the table i think mistakenly.

Me: I'll attend to it in tomorrow.

Ipek: You can't have to fax the file right now of the presentation we already behind schedule.

Me: i said i will attend to it tomorrow.

I dropped the call .

IPEK

I took the file and went to Alpha's house , bringing the file over wont get me fired cause I'm doing him a favour . The gaurds in the house didn't want to let me in , they had to call inside first . It looked like a damn high facilitator prison with the guards

circulating the house.

Gaurd : You can go in.

Me: Thank you .

I walked to the door and pulled my dress a little above my thighs and smiled , the door was opened up a young lady. I looked at her as she looked like a hobo .

Me: Hey sweety is Alpha here?

Amara: Uhm No , how may i help you? Please come in.

I walked in the house and looked at her from top to bottom. This must be his little sister, though i never heard of him having a little sister .

Me : i came to drop this file off , please okay he needs to take a look at it.

Amara: I will hand it over to him.

Me: Are you the maid?

Amara: ( fakes a laugh) No , I'm not.

Me: Oh just how you dressed carelessly and cute but not nice.

She looked down at her clothes .

Amara: Get out.

Me: Excuse me ?



Amara: Get out! I will not have you look down on me leave ,  
Alpha will get the file.

Me: Excuse me , i work for Mr Alpha , where is Megan?

Amara: Megan is not here ! Whatever Megan told you she lied  
the wedding is over! They are not going to get married! I will  
not have you come into my house and disrespect me okay get  
out.

I looked at her with pity how i wanted to wiped her off her high  
chair and tell her clearly how i got leaned on the table . She  
looked already depressed i didn't want to be the death of her .

Me: fine i will leave .

I walked to the door and Alpha walked in he looked at me .

Alpha: You don't listen don't you Ipek?

Me: Alpha those files needed your signature

Alpha: (yelling) that means come to my house? Where is the  
file .

Me: (obedient) I gave it to the lady behind you.

Alpha: She is Amara.

Me: what?

Alpha: Are you stupid? Her name is Amara.

Me: Okay next time I'll remember that.

Alpha: Now leave my house and don't ever rock up in my house without my consent , this is not a public mall.

Me: Noted.

He pointed at the door and i walked out , what a ungrateful person , i took my precious time and did a nice deed for him by bringing in a file and this is the thanks i get. I got into my car and drove away but in my joy ride to here atleast i got myself a scoop about the fake marriage Megan is screaming about Angela has to know about this . I got into my car and drove off.

AMARA

He closed the door behind him and looked at me. I felt a little jealous about the girl , if that was his PA i wonder what they were doing in the office together? Was he kissing her like he did with me , mean that girl looks insanely beautiful and here i am pregnant and distraught . My whole body is going to change adapting to pregnancy.

Me: here is your file.

Alpha: Thank you.

Me: So that's your PA , i see.

Alpha: Yeah , Megan got her for me .

Me: (nodding ) Mhhh.

Alpha: I'll go take a shower then we have dinner .

Me: I had already eaten .

Alpha: Without me ?

Me: I didn't know i had to wait for you.

Alpha: Now you know, i spoke with my father about you.

Me: You did what? Are you trying to get me killed?

Alpha: I want him to try.

Me: You seriously used me for bait to come at your father?

Alpha: As long as you here he knows he won't touch you cause you protected but if you roam around the streets going for hospital check up i know nothing of you will die !

I blunted in disbelief, what did he think this was a game?

Me: I might as well commit suicide cause I'm a dead woman walking !

Alpha: I'm going to shower.

I grabbed his arm as he looked at me.

Me: No you are not ! How could you make such a big decision without talking to me Alpha ? This is my life we talking about here .

Alpha: You need to chill young lady, I have not yet pinned my dad to the attack , I'm still digging

Me: obviously! He won't just say out of nowhere " yes son i did it , i killed those girls" . Oh my word I'm going to die ! Oh god you sold my soul to the devil. What do you mean you still digging? You promised to let the police handle this.

Alpha: I thought you knew me My love, i love handling this on my own, i always to.

He walked up the stairs taking one step at the time calm and collected as i panicked, we didn't know who sent those men and i prayed to god it's not his father the last time i came to face that man i had a gun held against my head.

Me: Alpha don't you dare walk away from me.

Alpha: Follow me then.

I felt so helpless now , i looked around the house windows feeling like a sniper was pointed at me with a man laid on his stomach somewhere ready to pull the trigger and end my life . Was i getting paranoid ? I ran up the stairs and inserted my hand in his arm , he looked at me and smiled

Alpha: I'm just going to get used to you being close to me , we taking a shower together? Or how about i rather cuff you to me ?

Me: You think this is a joke?

Alpha: Babe cool off , as i said no one will harm you while you here .

Me: I swisher

We walked to the room as he went to the bathroom room , i climbed on the bed and sobbed with my hands tightly gripping on the pillow burying my head in the pillow . I cried for a while , i felt a someone laying besides me and he pulled me closer to him hanging on me tightly.

Alpha: What's wrong sweetheart.

Me:(crying) Everything is wrong , Rose's death is wrong , i am wrong , i am not okay. I feel responsible guilty for their murders . I feel like i am their killer, i pulled the trigger. I just want to see her , i don't even know where her body is and I'm here with you laying in bed.

Alpha: I know where her body is .

Me: And you never thought of letting me know?

Alpha: You hate me remember you even accused me of being behind your sister's deatg if i told you i know for a fact you'd give me a mouthful of insults.

Me: I did not insult you , maybe a little.

Alpha: I'll take you to see her tomorrow and you have to start preparing for funeral or hire someone to do the job for you , I'll cover everything , if you want me too.

Me: Will i be strong enough to bury her?

Alpha: I'll hold your hand through it all and these no other woman strong enough to bare this than you .

I looked at him and kissed him , he kissed back , i held the waist of his sweatpants threatening to take the pants off, he held my hand tightly removing it from his pants. I looked at him , he has never turned down having sex with me , what was the matter.

Alpha: You are mourning.

Me: (disappointed) Oh okay.

We laid down on the bed .

STEVE

Fuck! Fuck ! Fuck ! I paced around in my study angry , Mute was sitting on the opposite direction looking down.

Me: And you didn't bother telling me she is still alive! Boy look at me when I'm talking to you.!

He lifted his head gently meeting my eyes.

Mute: Sir i didn't know too , i thought the hit men did the job

nicely unfortunately there was a third person in the house.

Me: Unfortunately? Unfortunately! I don't want to hear unfortunately ! You will get me the girl !

Mute: The girl is protected sir , if we launch in Alpha's house we will be surrendering ourselves to death , his personally protecting the girl.

Me: I don't care ! Alpha is not god ! He will make a mistake! He will mess up and leave the girl in the house alone .

Mute: even if he does , the house has security now , tight security.

Me: Then we'll buy someone in the inside ! We will have to find the weakest link in the chain , when you hit the weakest link in a tight chain the chain opens up and we launch in full force , this time i will personally handle that rat .

We heard the van break outside the door , i walked out and looked it was Nandi . I looked at her.

Nandi: My god it was you .

Me: Baby listen to me.

Nandi: No Steve ! you killed innocent girls .

Me: Nandi i did what i was supposed to do !

Nandi: This is absolutely nothing you will do , I'm calling Alpha

right now and telling him about your evil plans !

Me: You will not do that !

Nandi: Watch me !

She stormed to the bedroom .

Mute: Sir ?

Me: I'll handle this

I walked to the kitchen and took out a bottle of cleaning detergents quickly mixing them in a cup and poured them over a cloth , i walked to the bathroom as she tapped the phone .

Me : Nandi stop this.

Nandi: No ! You are evil she's carrying my grandchild i will not let you harm her do you hear me ! I will expose you ! You piece of shit !

She tapped on the phone shaking, i walked to her placing the detox cloth over her nose . She flapped her hands around holding my hands and she inhaled the chemicals. She softened up as they knocked her out. She fell on the floor unconscious , I placed my hand on her throat, she still has a pulse , i exhaled feeling the pulse on my finger , she's still alive . I carried her on the bed and took off her clothes and dressed her in a nightwear , i laid her nicely placing a blanket over her. I walked out the room to Mute that was panicking , he looked at me



with his eyes widely opened in shock.

Mute: Sir ?

Me : Come on man ! Do you think I'm that heartless? I didn't kill my wife , i knocked her out she will wake up tomorrow

Mute: (relieved) That's better knowing she's alive

Me: You can leave.

He got up and walked out the room , i walked to my liquor table and poured myself a glass taking a shot , my eyes were stinging , my chest starting to become heavy . I knew what i was thinking is wrong and it could put a toll on Nandi's body but i still had too. I sat down and tapped on my laptop searching " pills that causes hallucinations for mentally disturbed patients ".

ALPHA

I woke up as the morning sun was slightly peaking in the curtains right into my eyes , looked besides me stretching my hand on Amara's bedside touching the empty space my heart stopped seeing the empty bedside . I got up from the bed.

Me: (calling out) Amara!

Amara: I'm in the bathroom what's wrong?

Me: (exhales) Nothing

She walked out the bathroom with a towel over her body , i got up from the bed and held her kissing her forehead.

Me: You up early.

Amara: You taking me Rose right get dressed.

Me: It's still early.

Amara: Get dressed, I'll be done in 30 minutes.

She walked back into the bathroom i took my phone and called the undertaker of the mortuary letting him know we will be coming in today , we both got ready for going to the mortuary. It took us about half an hour to reach the morgue. I smelt just dead as we approached the door that had coffins placed on the sides . She held my hand and we walked in meeting the undertaker that ran the mortuary during the day.

Undertaker: Morning , follow me this side please.

Me: Damn it's cold in here.

Amara: Have you ever been in a mortuary before?

Me: What will i be doing in the mortuary first of all? I don't visit places like these it's not like people visit mortuaries for fun.

We walked in deep in the building , entering a room Rose's body was laying in the center of the room covered in a white sheet. She held her mouth crying.

Me: Are you sure you want to do this?

Amara: (nodding) It's now or never.

The undertaker walked to the body and held the sheet revealing Rose's badly shot face. Amara screamed crying, she cried loud filling the whole room as her cry echoed in the empty room as she walked closer to the body that was stitched up. God her forehead was badly hit about 3 bullets I'm not surprised she's dead. She held the paled face and cried.

Amara: (crying) Did you have to leave me all alone Rosie? But it's okay I'm strong, I survived once I will do it again.

She cried out holding the deceased. I looked away it wasn't nice watching her hold the body like that, my skin crawled the smell of this place was just unbearable I took out my handkerchief and placed it against my nose. She cried for a full hour, I looked at my watch.

Me: Amara we should leave now.

Amara: Just a moment please.

Me: You had already cried enough.

Amara: I need a moment please.

Me: I'll wait outside.

I walked out the room to the hallway.

Undertaker: She was badly injured

Me: I see that.

Undertaker: So when are you collecting the body cause sir we can't keep it any longer here we need space.

Me: We on the funeral agreements as we speak.

Amara walked out the room wiping her eyes.

Amara: We can leave.

Me: Okay lets go.

We walked out the building to have breakfast in the nearest restaurant.

NANDI

I woke up and my head was heavy, i held my forehead. Steve walked in holding a glass of water and pills.

Me: My head , what happened?

Steve: You came home very tired last night so you quickly went to bed , have these headache pills

I took the pills from his palms and had a sip of water downing them in my throat.

Me:I am hungry, is breakfast ready?

Steve: I'll get the maids to make you something.

Me: Thank you baby.

My head felt like it was going to split in half. I got up the bed and walked to the bathroom looking my in the mirror. I almost couldn't recognize myself . My sight was blurry. I walked to the bedroom and laid on the bed. Steve walked in carrying a tray of food. He placed it on my side table.

Me: Thank you.

Steve: Enjoy sweetheart. I also brought you more headache pills , I'll keep the bottle here.

Me: Thank you ain't you loving.

Steve: You are my wife, i love you. Give me a kiss.

I kissed him and smiled, his kind gesture reminded me when we were still younger before everything before Alpha , we travelled the world unstoppable just enjoying ourselves. And he was totally charming, caring and loving not forgetting being romantic , I had the meal as he fed me . After i was done he persisted i had the headache pills , i drank them and laid down , he covered my body and kissed my forehead.

Steve: I love you okay.

Me: I love you too.

I closed my eyes.

To be continued

'33

MEGAN

I went to Alpha's house, i needed to talk to him. I got out the car and approached the house , the were gaurds all over the house , they didn't want to let me in so they called in the house . After a few minutes of waiting i was let in . Alpha opened the door for me.

Alpha: You still have the energy to show up in my presences.

Me: shouldn't i come see my husband to be.

Alpha: I thought i told you I called of the wedding.

Me: Yes you did but your father told me we still getting married.

Alpha: Then my father lied to you , I'm not getting married not anytime soon to you.

Me: What the hell is going on with you.

Alpha : Nothing is going on with me , why can't you get this through your thick skull i don't want to marry you , I love Amara.

Me: Who the hell is Amara !

Amara: I am.

She walked down the stairs , i looked at her , what kind of nonsense was this.

Me: What nonsense is that ! What is that?

Amara: I'm the mother of his unborn child.

Me: So you are the one in the way .

Amara: I am not in the way of nothing .

Me: You broke my home !

Amara: Megan please , Alpha loves me , he wants a home with me not you !

Me: Is it because you pregnant? I can fall pregnant too I'm a woman just like you!

Amara: But you not me , Megan you will find someone that will love you unconditionally.

Me: Uhhh.. i want Alpha! I want him and you missy are going to pay for taking him away from me. You are going to pay dearly, for advice walk away while you still have your soul intact with your body , walk away .

Amara: I can't his all i have .

Me: You can and you will mark my words , i have to related this nonsense for far too long when i come back to collect what's mine you will feel like you dying!

Alpha: Megan leave.

Me: I will leave and will come back and when i do , you'll both feel like you burning in hell !

I placed my bag on my shoulder and walked out , they don't know who they messing with , i have tolerated this nonsense far too long. As for Amara she won't live to see her baby grow ! I got in the car and laid my head on the steering wheel crying , i smiled and looked at the house. My destiny is in that house, if blood has to be spilled let it be !

STEVE

I sat in my office waiting for the meds to kick in. The doctor i bought them from said it will take about a few hours and she will begin having illusion . They were schizophrenia pills . I got up from my desk and walked to the room , she was sitting on the bed talking to the corner of the wall , pointing.

Nandi: Dorothy fold the clothes and place them on the table at the corner please.

Me: Baby .

Nandi: (smiling) Hey sweetie are you already back from work , Dorothy will make you a cup of coffee. Black and bitter just like you like it.

Me: Baby Dorothy is not here.



Nandi: (pointing) But she's in the room. Look at her , she's over there.

Me: Baby these no Dorothy here you seeing things.

Nandi: Sshhhh , Alpha is crying.

She got up from the bed and walked out the room to Alpha's room when he was a little boy , it still was decorated in Batman bedcovers , in the inside i was smiling my pants off , even if she could talk and say I'm behind Rose's death who will believe a woman that's mentally disturbed.

Me: Nandi , you are not okay , let me call a doctor cause you seeing things.

Nandi: Alpha where are you? (Giggles) Oh i know you playing hide and seek ? You naughty boy . Ready or not here i come?

Me: (smirkes) Nandi ! Stop it ! Stop this!

I walked to her and held her hand , she became aggressive, slamming her hand away from me . I looked at her as she stared at me .

Nandi: We need to save her Steve!

Me: Who are you talking about.

Nandi: His only a little baby.

Me: who are you talking about!

Nandi: His my grandbaby .

She grabbed my shirt shaking my upper body aggressively.

Me: Nandi stop this!

Nandi: His innocent! His just a little baby ! We need to save him , he needs us . (Calling out) Alpha ! I'm coming to get you . Are you ....under the bed ? (Looks under the bed) ohhh i know are you ? In the closet! (Opens the closet) where could he be?

I walked out the room and closed the door , i took my phone and called Alpha.

Me: Your mother is insane.

Alpha: What are you talking about?

Me : She is out of control, she is playing in your room .

Alpha: Playing in my room ? Father what are you talking about?

Me: I'm afriad your mother has lost her mind.

Alpha: You are making no sense here ! I'm coming over.

Me: You don't have too i have things under control

Alpha: She's my mother, i am coming over this is mad crazy this can't be going on !

Me: okay I'll lock her up in the room.

I hung up and peeked in , she was holding fixing the bed singing

. It was heart breaking seeing my wife like this but i had to do what was right for the family. I hope she forgives me , she giggled looking at the pillows slowly and steady patting the fabric straight. She kept smiling at the covers. I called a mental asylum and made arrangements for her to be taken to a mental health asylum

GRACE [Rose's Mom]

Oh lord I can't believe I saw her , I saw my Rose , i saw my little girl. I held on my mouth and cried as Sydney walked in my room .Jaden is my Stepson , he is a doctor the only family i have left . After Rose ran away from home her father got really ill he suffered a stroke that affected his brain , he would hallucinate in the house asking for forgiveness to Rose for what he did to her , everytime he screamed in tears asking for forgiveness i would break down , i failed her as a mother, i failed to protect my baby girl from the wrath of evil , she was only 11 , she did nothing wrong and i failed to trust her , believe her.

Jaden : Here are your pills young lady.

He smiled handing me the pills . What would i be without Jaden? I meet this young man when he was only 15 he reminded me much of Rose , his mother passed away when she was giving birth to him , his father raised him all by himself until he meet me at first it was hard for him to adapt to my marriage with his father but he opened up to me and i tried by all means

to be the mother i wish i was to Rose. Seeing her at the hospital changed everything, She looked slightly different but her eyes , i remember those brown eyes that lite up the room when she walked in the room , long eyelashes fluttering against her big brown eyes.

Me: I saw her Jaden , i saw my little girl.

Jaden: You sure ? Did you talk to her?

Me: (sobbing) She didn't recognize me . She bluntly denied me

Jaden: Maybe it was someone else mommy.

Me: No it's her , it's Rose and she is pregnant (smiles) .

Jaden: Lay down please.

Me: I want to make things right with her Jaden , i want to find her.

Jaden: I will see what i can do so i am not promising anything.

Me: I know, she looks so beautiful , angelic.

Jaden: Why do i feel like you over complimenting her? But fare well Ma the more you talk about her is the more i get impatient and want to see this angel on earth.

Me: Are you going to work tonight?

Jaden: Yes but i promise i will be back on my lunch time to check up on you okay.

Me: I will be okay just focus on work.

I was suffering from a blood clotting disease , i didn't know much about the illness but as Jaden said i had to keep drinking my pills and drinking water. And i will live long. I wanted to see Rose again , Maybe catch lunch with her and just chat but her life . I wanted to hear all the struggles she went through and just hold my grandbabies if she has children, i had always imagined her in a happy home with a husband and a children. After everything she went through she deserved it all , the happiness and peace of mind.

AMARA

I prepared for Rose's burial i wanted something small and intimate since we had no family we know off. My mother was dead to me the minute she left me at that orphanage door . I bought her a white casket and a dozen of roses to place ontop of her coffin. Alpha also organized a bunch of doves to release as a sign of a new start and celebrate the great life she and i shared.

Alpha: I need to go check up on Ma.

Me: What's wrong? Is she okay?

Alpha: I don't know , I'm going to check.

Me: Okay , I'll just put on some shoes and we'll go.

Alpha: (commanding) No ! Stay.

I looked at him who the hell does he think his talking to , Max ?

Me: "No ! Stay" I'm your dog now?

Alpha: I don't want you anywhere near my father so stay.

Me: You should've said so instead of telling me to stay like I'm sort of your dog.

He took his car keys and walked out the room , i got up going to window looking down at his car that was driving out the gate . I held my small baby bump brushing it in circles.

Me: It's just you and me little stranger , are you hungry? Cause i am .

I walked down the stairs to make food.

ALPHA

I walked in the house calling my mother out ,father took me to the room she was in .

Me: Ma .

Nandi : (smiles) found you , you have been hiding since , such a good hider ain't you.

Me: What is she talking about? I'm calling a doctor.

Steve: I have already did his coming right over to examine her.

Me: Call him and tell him to hurry .

I sat next to her holding her hand , she held my hand against her cheek, nuzzling herself and brushing my hand . Then she looks at me and smiles , poking my nose, i was emotionally seeing her in that position, she acted like a little child, my mother has lost her adult memory and dropped the bar to a little child.

Nandi: ain't you a big boy ?Yes you are . Mommy's big boy , Mommy's king and Alpha. How was school? Did they bully you again?

Me: That was long ago , I'm a man now.

Steve: She thinks you still a child.

Me: Did you give her any pills?

Steve: No i didn't , i don't remember giving her pills.

I got up from the bed walked to the window.

Me: then how in the hell will someone just change and be like this over night! Ma was okay wasn't she ?

He kept quiet looking down, i walked to him and grabbed him by his clothes, tears filling up my eye sockets, gazed into his .

Me: She was okay wasn't she !

Steve: Son calm down i know it's hard seeing your mother like

this.

Me : You are not answering my question!

Steve: She was okay ! She was fine Alpha!

Me: Then what went wrong? What is wrong with her?

Steve: The psychologist is here.

He walked out the room and in a few minutes he walked in with the psychologist , the guy placed his bag on the table and looked at her , checking her.

Doctor: Has she been violent?

Steve: Uhm yes , she took a knife and chased me the whole house with , i had to ran for my life frightened. But i managed to get hold of the knife.

He wrote down on his small notepad . As Pop's scratched the back of his head barely maintain eye contact with me or Ma , i was completely lost , my mind couldn't even think straight, i was confused psychologically.

Doctor: We taking her in for check up.

Me: What check up?

Doctor: Please move aside , apply the jacket on her.

Two men walked to her applying the jacket that strapped her from moving, Ma was a fighter instead of fighting the men , She



just laughed as if they were tickling her .

Me: My mom is not mad , she is not even aggressive you don't have to apply this jacket on her.

Doctor: Excuse us Sir it's our job we are following protocol.

Me: You call strapping down and innocent lady doing your job ? And you Steve are you just going to stand there!

Steve: Alpha let them do their jobs , these people are professionals they know what they doing.

Me: What did i expect from you ? Arrgh !

We walked her out as she was placed at the back seat, i held her hand and kissed it.

Nandi: Save him , his only innocent , his a innocent little boy .

Me: Save who?

Steve: Alpha you wasting the Doctors time.

Me: (yelling) A minute !

Doctor: Move away from the car please.

He held my hand , i pushed him off .

Me: If you touch me ever again I'll beat the fuck out of you !

I was angry , I didn't understand what was going on here , why would Ma suddenly be mentally disturbed what triggered

the trauma so much that she just lost her mumbles was it because of me when i called her stupid for taking Amara out without my consent but i apologized but with her going to get examined we will get the answers.

Me: I'm following them.

Steve: No You are not ! You have caused enough damage go home ! I'll keep you updated.

Me: Father i want to be there for her.

Steve: i am her husband i love her , i will be there for her go to your pregnant lady at home

He got in the car and drove off, i was left pacing in the driveway ! Why did this have to happen now geez ! I got in the car and drove home , Amara was setting the table , she placed the cutlery on the table.

Amara: How is Ma?

I looked at her and walked up the stairs.

Amara: Alpha , please talk to me , what's wrong with Ma?

Me: I'm seriously not in the mood to talk right now.

I walked in the bedroom tossing my keys on the bed.

Amara: Baby what's wrong?

Me: (yelling) Everything!

She shrug her shoulders in fear stepping back.

Amara: I'm sorry.

Me: What for?

Amara: For everything you going through I'm sorry , i wish i could help you make things better.

Me: You actually can.

I launched to her as she backed up to the wall. I placed my hand blocking her way out , she looked at me . Agitated to the core, i held her neck and kissed her .It's been a while since i mated with her , i unzipped the jersey she was wearing, pulling down her pants, she cooped herself against the wall , as i bite her neck sucking on her neck. She placed her plams on my chest pushing me away.

Amara: Alpha please , stop it.

Me: Are you denying me Amara?

Amara: Can we go downstairs and eat then talk about what's bothering you like normal people sex won't make things any easy.

Me: I want sex! I want it , i want to talk while I'm deep in you Amara.

I held her bra ripping it off her body , she covered her breast. I

looked at her breasts cooping it in my palm squeezing and caressing them

Amara: Please don't do that my breast hurt please.

I leaned to her chest and sucked on the pointed out nipple , she screamed. Anger was steaming out my veins my blood running hot , i felt pure bitterness and hurt . I dragged her pantie down and slid a finger into her coochie , she held on my arm clinging on . I pushed my finger in deep into her , i added a second finger pushing it into her vaginal walls. She gasped.

Amara: (moaning) Aaah!

I drew out my finger tossing her on the bed , i laid ontop of her lowering my under clothes and plugged into her , she grabbed my arm tightly as i thrust in and out groaning intop of her as i comfortably , wet and blissfully occupied myself in her . She laid down on her back gasping for air . I beated on her like a drum groaning in anger. Unleashing everything onto her . I wrapped my hand on her neck lifting her legs on my shoulders completely exposing every angel of her coochie to her , i launched in deep , she held on her abdomen flinching in pain with her eyes closed. I laid ontop of her bending her legs.

Amara: Ohhh my word ! Oh my word ! ( maons) Please you hurting me.

I held on her neck tightly kissing her cheek making love to her.

Tears escaped her eyes as i launched in deep in her woman tunnels . She dropped her legs from my shoulder .

Me: Amara ! Don't loosen your legs! You legs must stay out where i placed them am i clear !

She licked her dry lips , as i looked in her brown watery eyes . She nodded her head. I placed her legs on her my shoulders and thrust in deeper , i laid on her maintaining the deepness , the warmth heated my dick up . I held her hips pulling her down as she coochie swallowed my dick leaving the balls outside , her legs slid off my shoulder as she escaped me , moving up the bed.

Me: (chuckles) Why you so disobedient?

Amara: NO ! please ! Please !

Me: Do you want me to show you how bad i can be ? Do you want me to show you my worst?

She shook her head , I crawled to her and held her hands against the bed sheet and kissed her dry lips penetrating in , her coochie felt even more sweeter now that she's pregnant , if i knew a pregnant woman had such blissful pussy i would have a lot of children scattered around the country. I fucked her till she lost her voice and couldn't moan to my stroke , i pulled out gasping for air and released on the sheet. I tossed my body besides her as she curled herself on the bed , next to me , i

looked up at the grey painted ceiling

Me: Please don't hate me.

Amara: (sobbing) You will never do that to me ever again, maybe i am not what you looking for , you want someone that obeys your every command and i can't live a life where I'm detected my whole life , i can't even go out without being scared I'm frightening of you leaving me here alone , but you still do anyways.

I got up from the bed and walked to the shower. I opened up the tap and had a steamy shower , i closed my eyes letting the wash away all the exhaustion, the wrath and bitterness.

GLORIA

Pearl's Dad and i went to the mortuary and saw the body of our daughter, she was shot repeatedly without mercy . We had the body transfer documents signed and i went to her house finding John in the house , i walked to the kitchen drawer and took out a knife launching to him.

Me: You killed my baby didn't you !.

Dad: Gloria! Please My wife this is not you.

Me: You killed my daughter didn't you!

John : No Ma it wasn't me , i swear , i loved Pearl i would never

Me: You loved her ! Do you even know the meaning of love ?  
Do you know what love is ?

John: Ma please !

Me: When you look at me you see your mother?

John: I'm sorry

Me: You listening here you woman beater bastard! You will not receive a cent from my child's money ! What kind of a man is a gold digger ! You played with a wrong woman's child ! You will not kill my child and enjoy her hard earned money not on my watch !

John: It's fine you can keep the money just don't kill me please.

Me: You are still here !

John : (defending himself) Sorry Ma please.

I tossed the knife on the floor and gave him a hot slap , he got up from the couch i held on his t-shirt as he ran out the door it ripped.

Me: I dare you to set foot in this house ! You will wish your mother closed her slutty legs ! You son of a bitch ! You killed my baby !

Dad: My wife please calm down.

Me: He killed my baby.

Dad: It's okay the police are handling this if it's him he will rot in jail.

Me: It is him ! I am sure it's him ! If i ever lay my eyes on that boy , his meeting his ancestors i swear !

I sat on the couch and cried , My husband pat my back comforting me , i laid my head on his chest and cried repeatedly telling him "John killed my baby"

34

AMARA

I woke up from the bed and sat up the sun peeked in the window curtains that were widely opened up , i got up dragging my warned out body to seat up straight leaning on the headboard. The burning sensation in between my thighs, my coochie felt swollen, burger like big. He walked out the bathroom fixing his tie that was nicely done. He walked to me and kissed my lips.

Alpha: (kissing) mmhhh , (pulls back) morning sweet lips.

Me: Morning .

I meet a gaze of his black , those eyes were so powerful they made my body weak. His lips slightly parted falling into the most perfect smile. Havent seen that in a long while now. I narrowed my eyes and his smile turned to a grin . He leaned



again blessing me with another kiss guess it's guilt was beating him for what he did last night.

Alpha: Are you fine?

Me: Where ? my coochie it's burning Sir .

Alpha: Let me see , I'll kiss the burn away.

I looked at him and laughed.

Me: You are impossible you know that

Alpha: I'm sorry i got carried away .

Me: Why are you doing this?cause you don't have too.

Alpha : This is the right thing to do when I'm wrong to apologize. I guess I'm being a gentleman.

Me: (chuckles) Gentleman ,you? Okay.

Alpha: I am sometimes and you know it , I'm not that bad. You should go shower , i have gotten everything needed for Rose's send off, even a dress for you .

Me: You got me a dress?

Alpha: Yes and you will love it.

He got up from the bed and walked out the room. I walked to the bathroom and had a bath , the hot water stung but i sucked it in like the big girl i am , i lotioned my body and got dressed,

he even brought me a dress , i got into it looking myself at the mirror, he walked in and looked at me.

Alpha: Words can't explain how gorgeous you look. Here come let me help you.

He walked behind me zipping up my dress with his lips on my shoulder leaving a wet kiss.

Me: Thank you.

Alpha : One more thing is missing.

He walked to the drawer and took out two gift packages. He opened up one and took out a necklace laying it on my chest. I held the necklace and looking at the glittering stone.

Me: Oh my word Alpha , it's beautiful.

Alpha: I bought it specially this morning for you.

Me: How did you ? How much does it cost ?

Alpha: A few couple of hundred thousands but thats not the big deal. Come here sweetheart.

He held my hand and walked me to the center of the bedroom and took a small box and slowly went on one knee. I covered my mouth in disbelief.

Me:Please don't, I'm supposed to bury my sister today not get engaged .

Alpha: Amara McKenzie..

Me: Alpha please don't.

Alpha: (aggressive tone) Don't interrupt me when I'm talking !

I kept quiet and looked at the small box in his hand , he opened it up then and came eye to eye with the diamond ring. Tears escaped my eyes as i tried to collect myself , i played with my fingers rubbing my hands together.

Alpha: Amara McKenzie , will you marry me ?

I looked at him sniffing.

Me: Why? Why should i marry you.

Alpha:Because i want to spend every second of the rest of my miserable life with you , you don't have to say yes right away cause the last time i asked you , you said you'll think about it and i wasn't happy about the i almost lashed out on you so what do you say ? I know I'm complicated sometimes you feel like I'm too much to handle but trust me you doing just fine.

I laughed through the tears , pushing a smile too. I nodded my head continuously.

Me: Yes , yes , i will marry you.

He got up inserting the ring in my finger and held my cheeks kissing me , i wrapped my arms around him , he got me off the

floor hungrily feasting on my lips . He held on my head tight against his chest hugging me as i looked at the ring over his shoulder. He has asked me once to marry him but he had no ring then , now it feels even more special cause he has a ring this time.

Alpha: So Mrs Me , are you ready to go lay Rose in her finally resting place?

Me: Could've never been ready.

He held my hand and we walked out the house and drove to the grave yard , a Pastor was hired , So it was just me , him , Pastor and a the guys that had the shovels , roses and doves. The pastor began the ceremony , we prayed and Rose's coffin sank to the ground, We took the bunch of Roses scattering them ontop of her coffin.

Me: (sobbing) Till we meet again my bestfriend , my sister. I love you watch over me will you .

Alpha held me tight , the boy's buried her covering her coffin, the doves were set free to fly . Watching the birds fly in the sky felt like a huge bulk of hurt has been removed from my chest, my sister is at peace and i had to find my peace too , to look forward to the future now , a future i will be building with the only man i love and our baby.

Alpha: The boys will finish off here okay baby , i will take you

home .

Me: Okay.

I looked at the grave blowing a kiss and turned my back walking to the car . He drove me home .

Alpha: I won't be long at the office okay , I'll just pop in .

Me: Okay .

He kissed my cheek and walked out , i locked the door and looked around the house.

NANDI

The locked me up in a room , the wall's were white in colour the was a little window very up high. I got up and walked to the door banging my hand against the steel door.

Me: ( yelling) Please ! The must be a mistake ! I am not crazy !

Guard: You not the first to say that !

Tears streamed down my eyes , why was Steve doing this, his meant to be my protector, my husband but he got me locked up in a mental asylum because he didn't want to get exposed for the evil he did. I screamed so hard , grabbing my head , my whole body was shaking.

Me: Oh lord please ! Please ! Help me out of here ! Protect Amara please! Protect her for me.

I walked to the door and banged on the door.

Me: I have the right to a phone call !

Graud: Jesus ! Where do you think this is ? Jail? Vacation? Since when has a mentally disturbed person have a right to a phone call . We dealing with a real psychopath here , she even thinks she's in prison.

Me: please I'm not mad !

I held my head tight gripping onto it. I placed my hand on my ears crying.

Me: I'm not mad ! I'm not crazy !

The door opened up , the doctor looked at me with a grin holding a needle , the room was so small only a bed and toilet were present nothing more.

Doctor: Hold her down.

The big two nurses held me down , as i fought kicking, crying and screaming.

Me: No please ! Please ! Steve why ! Why .

They held me down exposing my arm to him , he tied me up tightly with a elastic band slapping my arm , my vein appeared, he stick the needle in putting what ever medicine he was depositing in my system, i felt drowsy.

Doctor: (singing) hush big girl , you will wake up and remember no more.

Me: ( drowsy) Sss...Steve.

I dosed off with my entire system shutting down.

STEVE

I got a call from Dr Martin from the mental asylum. I answered the call.

Me: How is she?

Martin: Just gave her a shot of Zolpidem , she asleep.

Me: Don't harm my wife or give anything that will lead to serious complications do you hear me ?

Martin: I hear you .

Me: Give her the syringe to sleep only okay. Now i need you to prescribe me a letter to the pharmacist i need a drug that can completely wipe out someone memory that he doesn't remember a thing.

Martin: You are looking for Benzodiazepines or Blebbistatin drug ? Thess are very dangerous drug sir.

Me: Okay tell me more about them

Martin: Well they both erase memory complety that's a advantage the disadvantages is that if it is taken in more than

prescribe the person might suffer brain damage or even better die.

Me: Get me the strongest.

Martin: May i ask why?

Me: When you buy something from the shop do they ask you what are you going to do with it? Don't be stupid! Just get me the drug !

Martin: It's a banned drug so i will have to pull some strings.

Me: do whatever you want money is not a problem to me.

Martin: I'm on it .

Me: remember i don't want my wife harmed in there !

Martin: Your wife is in good hands.

Mute walked in the door and sat down.i looked at him hanging up the phone.

Mute: Big B.

Me: Talk Mute what's wrong ?

Mute: I don't want it to be like I'm sticking my nose in business that doesn't concern me but Pop's don't you think you taking it too far? Sending Ma to an mental institution? No that's too much.



Me: Unfortunately Mute you are sticking your nose in my business ! Do i pay you to come give me advices here?

Mute: No sir.

Me: what do i pay you for?

Mute: To handle the cash transaction.

Me: Then stay in cash transactions boy ! Don't make me mad !

Mute: I'm sorry i didn't mean to impose you sir but no Sir this is too ..

Me: Get out you stupid fool! What is too much ? Mute i will kill you !

Mute: I'm sorry Pop's you won't hear me say a thing from now on.Me: you better! I need you to get me a list of these things and i will have the number of the doctor in a hour.

He took the list and looked at me

Mute: What are these?

Me: you will get them in the black market, i need them ready and find a doctor too , we have 8 months left and that is a short period of time.

Mute: i will go get to the list then find you a doctor.

He got up and walked out , i took my phone and dialled Megan's number.

Megan: And ?

Me: As you asked, i hoped this plan of yours succeeds my wife can't stay any longer in that place.

Megan: As long you play your part and i play mine.

I looked at the whiskey glass on mine hand and smiled.

JADEN

Ma was weak today, i tried feeding her some soup but she refused to eat, she can be really difficulty when she has her moods.

Me: Ma I'm begging just one spoon.

Grace: I don't feel good today.

Me: I can see that Young lady.

Grace : I think it's my time already.

Me: No ! Don't say that ! You can't.

When she said that i felt like my world was crumbling down all over again, i lost my father before and it took me straight down to the road to hell , i couldn't deal with the hurt she held me through , she can't do that , she can't say that.

Me: Ma please you not dying you just have a bad day everyone has a bad day.

Grace: tell me when are you getting married?

Me: Ma (blushing) I haven't met the right one.

Grace: The is never the right one my dear , just the one that is prepared to act right.

Me: That's exactly what i meant.

Grace: Ain't you going to be late for work?

Me: No i woke up early just to cook pumpkin soup for you and you don't want it. I even added my special ingredient a little bit of margarine.

Grace: okay i will just have a spoon.

Me: Spoon it is then.

I took the bowl and gave her a spoon she eventually opened up and ate the whole bowl of soup. I took out wipes and wiped her mouth.

Grace: You tend to forget i can do everything for myself.

Me: No Ma , remain in bed please.

Grace: But i have to clean around the house and cook for you

Me: Don't cook , don't clean Doctors orders.

Grace: Fine.

Me: I love you take care of yourself.

Grace i will.

I walked to my car and got in driving to work , I'm Jaden Drew , a medical doctor at the private hospital , In my early 30s , I am a orphan boy that was fortunate enough to have such a good hearted Step-mom when Mam'Grace married my dad i didn't like her i felt like she was coming to separate me and my father. My father was the only biological parent i knew . My mother it is said she died giving birth to me . I have lived with self hate for years blaming myself for the death of my mother, but then god sent an angel through my father so she came and rescued me from the wrath of evil, i thank everything i am to her . I walked into the hospital and had about my work.

IPEK

I was at the cafeteria when Alpha passed by , i saw him from a distance . I took the black coffee and walked to the office meeting him halfway , i bumped into him slipping the coffee all over his shirt. I held on his muscular chest for a second , inhaling the cologne. I looked at him.He snapped his fingers in my face.

Alpha: Are you mad !

Me: I am so sorry Sir Smith , i woke up very clumsy today!

Alpha: Geez ! I hate sloppy behaviour! There is no place for clumsy people in this company .

He took off his blazer tossing it on the table as he rolled up his sleeve just above his elbow showing his strong vined arms . And those long fingers on those clean hands, he unbutton his shirt. As i jinxed into his body.

Alpha: What the hell is wrong with you ! Earth to Ipek.

Me: Yes you said you wanted which files?

Alpha: I did not talk about files ! Take this shirt and throw it out.

I took the shirt from his hand , oh like hell i will , i will sleep wearing this shirt.

Me: Is the anything you need?

Alpha: No.

Me: New shirt maybe i can quickly go buy you something to wear.

Alpha: No ! I'm fine .

Me: Okay sir. Nice body.

Alpha: (frowning) Excuse me ?

Me: Nothing.

Alpha: Thought so just because i had sex with you doesn't mean disrespect me and adress me in that manner we had causal sex nothing special so don't think you are special cause you not.

What was that meant to do make me cry? Feel sad.

Me: Okay .

Alpha: Okay what?

Me: Alpha .

Alpha: I'm Alpha to you now?

Me: Mr Smith.

Alpha: Better , now get lost.

I walked out the office, what did i expect opening up my legs to that man a ring? Stupid me for letting him even go that far with me ! I walked to my desk inserting the shirt in my bag .

35

[ 8 MONTHS LATER]

NANDI

It's feels like a whole year in this hell hole , i was a mess probably close to losing my mind but thinking about Alpha and Amara i had to survive through the day in and day out injections and torture, having to be locked up with mentally disturbed people was no ones cup of tea , especially if you are mental well having to face the weird things they do , them just giggling out of nowhere or talking to themselves will drive you to the edge of being crazy yourself, the only thing that kept me

sane was not thinking about my current situation but thinking about imagining how my life would be out of this place, zooming into a imaginary world saved me a lot . We as patients were taken to a room to co-exist. I sat down on the desk quiet staring at the white wall as the other patients played games. One of the patients approached me , she sat down next to me leaning at my face carrying a doll , i backed away from her leaning back on the chair. She lifted her hands to my face and held my face, brushing my skin.

Patient: Your skin is so soft , feels like my baby's.

Me: Thank you.

Patient: Do you want to hold her?

I looked at the doll that was awkwardly laying on her arm . She handed her to me as i took her and held her against my chest , this woman was really crazy , i had to go easy on her fragile mind or she will get violent.

Me: Like this.

Patient: Pat her back , she likes you , she doesn't like people. She's a very troublesome baby.

Me: What is her name?

Patient: Melokuhle , her name is Melokuhle.

Me: She's beautiful, she looks like you. I have a son too.

Patient: Really , what's his name , does he have soft skin too ?

Me: His name is Alpha and yes he has soft skin atleast that's what I'm holding on to .

A tear dropped from my eye , she wiped away my tears from my cheeks. Looking at my eyes.

Patient: Don't be scared okay, you can baby sit Melokuhle for today , she will make you happy.

Me: Oh no please , Melo needs her mother she's still a baby she needs you.

Patient: No keep her please.

I looked at the doll and forced a smile. She smiled too and holding my curved smile. Her hands kept running on my mouth . The gaurd walked in.

Gaurd: Hey love birds ! Nandi Smith you have a visitor.

I got up , handing her the doll.

Patient: You will come back right.

Me: Yes , I'm not going anywhere anytime soon.

She took the baby and i walked out , he took me to a room , Steve was sitting across the table with his hand on the table. I felt rage building up in me , hot tears streamed down my cheek. He got up .



Steve : My love .

Me: Don't you dare.

Steve: Nandi listen to me.

Me: No ! Steve! What did i do to you to deserve this kind of treatment!

Steve: This is not personal

Me: Are you even listening to yourself not personal? You stole 8 months of my life locked me in here knowing quite well I am mentally stable !

Steve: I did it for the greater good of your family. Need this this as a family and every each one of has to sacrifice themselves for family some time my love.

Me: Don't you dare ! Don't you dare tell me about a sacrifices! A sacrifice i was forced to make to cover up your evil doings ! I curse the day i meet you Steve ! You don't deserve to be my husband! You don't deserve to have a family ! You are wicked and evil.

Steve: Nandi , i love you.

Me: Even if you do ! No one in their right sense of mind would do this to the person they love! No i refuse to believe you love me ! I refuse. What have you done to my grand child Steve?

Steve: I did nothing to baby not yet. Just hang in there will you .

Me: Hang in there? Hang in where? In a mental asylum?

Steve : Your survived Nandi , you the strongest woman i know .  
Please forgive me Nandi.

I got up from chair and looked at him.

Me: I'll forgive you but i will never forget what you did to me !

Steve: Nandi.

Me: May my god have mercy on your soul tainted soul , I'm  
handing you to him . Gaurd take me to my room please.

The gaurd opened up the gates taking me to my room.

MEGAN

I met up with Diana as we sat down in a restaurant.

Diana: What is this about?

Me: I need a favour.

Diana: I'm listening.

Me: I want you to seduce Alpha.

Diana: Are you crazy ! Alpha is engaged and is soon to have a  
baby what is wrong with you! You have to let go of this crazy  
attachment you have with that man. I have been there i know  
it's hard getting over him but you will have too for your good.

I inserted my hand in my bag and took out an envelope filled with money. I placed it on the table as her eyes drooled over it.

Me: You are a very expensive woman ain't you Diana?

Diana: And what has that got to do with me seducing Alpha?

Me: I'm not saying sleep with him just get caught getting down with him.

Diana: You have been with Alpha isn't it? You must know what sort of nonsense he is.

Me: These 50k in the packet. It's all yours, Take it.

She took the envelope and opened it up looking inside.

Diana: When must i do the job?

Me : I will give you further instructions for now i want you to stay low.

Diana: May i know why you doing this?

Me: It's non of your business , waiter.

I clicked my fingers and the waiter approached the table.

Me: Get a bottle of your finest wine please, expensive and pretty just like this woman. Put in on my tab.

I took my bag and placed my jacket on my arm walking out. I called Steve.

Me: How did your visit go?

Steve: We destroyed my wife.

Me: Arrgh stop being a softy , she will come around.

Steve: I hope all this is not going to go in vien.

Me: This is no time to get wobbly knees Steve, we have waited 8 months for this. One mistake and we both dead ! Alpha will kill us if we make a mistake. Our lives , money , reputation is running on this , we are doing this Steve.

Steve: Since when have you become this deceiving and ruthless.

Me: Since you guys decided to make a fool out of me ! Since i lost to a stupid orphan ! I never lose , i always get what i want.

Steve: Talking about the orphan I'm going to check on her right now.

Me: hold the stomach for me will you.

He hung up the call as i got into my car and wore my sunglasses.

ALPHA

It has been a challenging and fun time of my life . These past few months took me to another level of happiness i didn't even

know existed with a little sadness mixed cause i tried to get to visit my Mom at the mental asylum but they refused me each and every time i tried they would say , she is not allowed to see anyone because she stab a patient with a scissor she is dangerous and under supervisor , it was scary to believe the monster my mom suddenly turned to. Amara and i were still engaged , she wanted to give birth first before we tied the knot and became husband and wife, we had our worst times when we fell off and hurt each other but the best part was reaching out and making things right. Sleeping besides her phenomenal body , rub her feet and stay awake to comfort her every now and then when she just wakes up and breaks down with no reasons. I sat on the bed tapping on my laptop , the company has massively grown over the months we had more clients signed in making us the biggest Advertising agency in the country right now , i was competing with no one but myself right now but not being over carried away because one silly mistake could send me to jail for years , i had to be more cautions now that I had a litte person coming into my life. Amara screamed in the bathroom.

Alpha: Amara! What's wrong.

I got up from the bed rushing into the toilet, she was standing naked in the center of the bathroom. Holding the big belly that looked like it was about to exlpode any minute.

Amara: Come feel , come.

I walked to her as she held my hand , placing it on the tummy, hearing those tiney kicks against my palm filled my heart with warmth. I kneel kissing the baby bump.

Me: Any day from now .

I got up and walked out the room sitting on the edge of the bed.

Amara: What's wrong?

Me: Do you think I'm ready for this , ready to be a father?

Amara: No , i don't.

Me: you see exactly, what if i don't do it right? What if i fail our baby.

Amara: I'm not ready to be a mom too , but we'll just figure it out.

Me: (scoffing) We won't be able to raise a baby by just figuring it out Amara , we talking about a living breathing person here .

Amara: I know but we got this right ? You have me and i have you.

Me: We'll be okay , plus we having this baby , we'll take everything as it comes , these no pamphlets for this parenting shit anyways.

She got into her her pyjamas.

Amara: I'll go make us something to eat.

Me: I'm not hungry.

She walked out the room . The door bell went off downstairs, i took my gun and stuck it in my hip approaching the stairs.

Me: Amara , I'll get it don't worry.

Amara: Okay .

She got about making food in the kitchen , i approached the door . To my shock it was Pop's he has never visited my house ever since the case of him holding a gun against Amara's head.

Me: Pop's.

Steve: Won't you let the old man in?

Me: Okay , come in.

He walked in looking at Amara .

Steve: Hello my daughter.

Amara: Hello.

Steve: How are you holding up , how is our little Smith doing?

Me: Wait..what is going on with you?

Steve: what do you mean?

Me: You are kind to Amara.

Steve: Yes why wouldn't i be kind , she's carrying my grand child.

Me: Pop's , be straight with me , What do you want?

Steve: Nothing. I just want to right my wrongs as we are being blessed with a new member , i want the newest addition to come into a family filled with love and support , you get me ?

I looked at him suspiciously as he walked into the kitchen , Amara was still uncomfortably around him but she tries hiding it behind a smile.

Amara: Coffee or tea?

Steve: Coffee please.

Amara: Strong with no sugar?

Steve: (fakes a laugh) How did you know?

Amara: Guess the leaf doesn't fall far from the tree.

Steve: Indeed, indeed it doesn't.

I looked at him, what was all this about cause the bullshit of righting his wrong is total bull , i know him . He will never be kind to a person he hates unless these something he wants , his more of the people that are best described as keep your friends close but your enemies closer. But the question remained what



did he want from Amara? He drank from the mug smiling at Amara.

Steve: So when should we get ready for the newborn.

Amara: Well on the...

Me: (interrupting) You will hear from us.

Steve: (nodding) So the gender? Boy or girl?

Me: We want it to be a surprise.

Steve: Fair enough, I'm gunning for a boy, we could use another man dominance in the family that will lead honorably and honour our family name.

Me: This is my baby , the only thing it will honour is it's father's name. My baby is no pawn to any of your schemes , you took my life , I'll be damned if you repeat the same with my baby.

Steve: Easy there Papa bear , I'm here with pure intentions after all blood is thicker than water.

Me: I hope so , for your sake.

He got up from the chair and approached Amara stretching out his hand to the stomach.

Steve: May i ?

Amara: Ofcause.

I rolled my eyes, as he pat the stomach, Amara flinched.

Steve: Goodness that was a strong kick. We got ourselves a fighter here.

Amara: (smiling) Much stronger kick than the ones i usually experience.

Me: It's probably the baby senses all the bad vibes and evil spirits you carry around.

Steve: Then maybe the baby senses your bitterness too , how will you be able to raise a baby with a bitter heart loosen up and learn to forgive and forget the past. Grow up. Amara (smiles) Good job baby girl . Wish you a safe delivery.

Amara: Thank you Sir.

Steve: I will leave now , oh and before i forget , Mom sends her regards.

Me: You went to see her ? How is she?

Steve: Not well , the woman i was looking at in that room is not my wife.

Amara: Is she that unwell?

He sat down on the chair and exhaled crying , i got annoyed even more watching him pretend, Amara walked to him and pat his back.

Steve: (sobbing) That woman is not my wife, i cried looking into her eyes and told her to set my wife free whatever spirit that has taken over my wife body should set my lovely wife free, she was raging in anger and jumped at me hungry for my blood, i almost lost my life in there.

Amara: I have been praying for her , she will get well.

He wiped his crocodile tears and sniffed.

Steve: I have been praying too.

Me:(chuckles) Really? What did you pray about? I doubt your prayers even left the room .

Amara: Alpha, his trying.

Me: Father , thank you for your visit .

Steve: I will leave.

He got up and kissed Amara's hand. Walking out the house.

Amara: His trying , that poor man is dealing with a lot the least you can do is support him .

Me: Support Steve Smith? (Laughs) How more naive can you be Amara.

I walked up the stairs, couldn't stop laughing at her . The thing about Amara she trust way to easy which makes her vulnerable to hurt and betrayal. As she sees the bright side in everyone, i

had to see the dark side .As her husband and lover it was my duty to protect her. You can't force an angel of light to be an angel of darkness.

GRACE

Jaden walked in the house , smiling i looked at him.

Jaden: Ma , Ma come see.

Me: What is wrong?

Jaden: I found her .

Me: Who?

Jaden: Rose.

Me: Where is she?

He handed me photo's of Rose and a grave.

Jaden: My private investigator said , Rose past away a months ago , she was shot dead in her flat with her sister.

Me: What are you talking about Jaden ? I saw her , i saw Rose . She was pregnant and she was with a lady , i saw her she's not dead , no i refuse to believe you.

Jaden: Have i ever lied to you before , Rose McKenzie died 8 months ago , look here is her tombstone.

Me: No ! Rose doesn't have a sister !

Jaden: Maybe it's her step sister?

I sat down on the couch and held my mouth crying.

Me: Oh my god, she's gone and i never had the chance to ask for forgiveness.

Jaden: I'm sorry Ma.

Me: (crying) I deserve this , this is me paying for my sin. I failed to believe my 11 year old daughter that was crying for my help and protection, i was stupid enough to believe a man over my daughter and now i lost her forever this time around.

Jaden: I'm sorry Ma.

Me: No don't be sorry , i deserve this. The least i could do now is go visit her grave that's the only hope i have . Atleast you found her for me . Thank you Jaden , thank you for keeping your promise and finding my daughter.

Jaden: It's okay .

Me: Tomorrow will you take me to see her?

Jaden: Ofcourse anytime you ready to go i will take you.

Me: I need some air.

I got up from the couch and walked outside , i can't believe she's gone. Why did she leave so soon? Couldn't she had survived for a while . I wiped my tears and sat down on the

chair.

AMARA

I sat on the bed browsing through my phone , i was unsettled today after Alpha's dad touched the baby bump , the baby kept kicking . And Alpha wasn't home. He had to pop in the office as always. My back was hurting, felt like my spine was taking strain. I massaged my tummy relaxing my contractions. It was too early for me to give birth . The doctor estimated about in a days time not now. I walked to the bathroom and opened up the bathtub with warm water and got in relaxing inside it felt much better , the warm water held relaxe my muscles as my body prepared me for birth , i was so scared or having a C-section and even more scared of natural birth . It's hard going through all this alone maybe if Rose was here with me , she would seat next to the bathtub with me and massage my waist while i tell her about all my day , Lucy will be here and she would drool over how lucky i am for having Alpha and criticize every wrong thing i do and knock me back to my senses in every fallout i make . I missed my girls so much , i closed my eyes and cried.

36

MEGAN

I met up with Steve as we had a glass of whiskey.

Me: And ?

Steve: She's bloated maybe close to giving birth.

Me: Gender?

Steve: Alpha was defensive do i didn't get the gender.

Me: let her enjoy carrying my baby for me. (laughs) god can't wait to see the look in her eyes when i take my baby priceless.

Steve : You have grown to a little villan.

Me: Learned from the best. Toast.

Steve : Okay what are we toasting to?

Me: To family.

Steve: To family.

Our glasses clicked , i sipped from the glass smiling. He looked at me and leaned for a kiss , i backed away from him.

Me: And what do you think you doing?

Steve: Don't act like you don't know.

Me: I am your daughter in law it's about damn time you knock that into your head Mister.

Steve: A little sex won't hurt.

Me: No means no , geez get your head in the game and stop

leading with you penis.

I got up from the chair placing the glass down.

Steve: Where you going?

Me: I have work to do

I got up from the chair and took my jacket and hand bag walking out the house. You give a old man a taste of new meat now he wants it countless times , i rolled my eyes annoyed and got into my car, i had to prepare myself too for surgery. Couldn't she speed up her birth time for godsake I'm dying of suspense.

ALPHA

I got really busy when i got to the office, some space and peace of mind is what i needed we sat down with Ipek as we had a mini meeting discussing my schedule now that I'm going to be a dad . With Pearl gone , i was forced to hire someone else and the guy was good in his work . He was young and fit for the job the passion and gratitude showed in his work .

Me : I want you to cancel all the small contracts , give them to Zack he will handle them .

Ipek: Okay , anything else?

Me: I will need you to represent me in most meetings .



Ipek : Looks like being a dad got you on your toes.

Me: excuse me?

Ipek: I will represent you in meetings Mr Smith and I'll give you notes and records of every important meeting.

Me: Don't make decisions without informing me.

Ipek: Yes sir .

Diana: Knock knock, may i come in.

I looked at her , from her legs meeting her face.

Me: Here comes trouble. Come in Diana. Ipek you can leave.

Ipek: Okay .

She got up and packed her things walking out the door.

Diana: My goodness long time nor seen.

Me: I can see my R200k is still treating you well.

Diana: Come on Alpha don't be so uptight , i thought having a baby will soften you up a little.

Me: You thought wrong , why are you here ? I don't have money I'm broke.

Diana: I didn't come for your money , i was just check-in on a old friend.

Me: Very well then , get out . Plus who told you i needed checking in ? Is this a public hospital?

Diana: No it's not .

Me: Good , i told you once to stop walking in and out here as you please , you and i cut all ties that connected us so i don't know why you here , but for your information you not getting anything.

Diana: I will go then , bye it was a pleasuring seeing you.

Me: You don't have to thank you. Close the door behind you. I received a call from one of the gaurds in the house informing me that Amara wasn't well , she was groaning in pain .

Me: Go in and check on her.

Gaurd: Sir you sure .

Me: Are you stupid! I said go in and check what's going on with her then call me , it's probably contractions nothing serious she gets those every once in a while.

Gaurd: Okay boss man i will go in now.

Me: Report back when you done.

AMARA

I didn't know what was happening to me , were these just minor contractions. But as seconds passed the pain became

unbearable. I sat up on the couch as the door slid open.

Me: Alpha , oh thank god .

Gaurd : Sorry Mem it's me , i came to check up on you. Bosses orders

Me: Where is he?

Gaurd: His still out.

Me: Call your boss and tell him my water just broke.

Gaurd: But Mem you don't look like a woman that's going into labour.

Me: Are you me? Have you ever been pregnant?

Gaurd: No mem.

Me: Don't ask me nonsense and do as you told.

Gaurd: Yes Mem.

He took his phone and called whispering in his phone. He then dropped the call and talking again on the phone.

Me: Who are you calling?

Gaurd: Mr Alpha.

Me: You made two calls.

Gaurd: He didn't pick up the first call.

I got up from the couch , i had cramps for an hour top as they began become even more sore . My water broke filling up the mat , the mat quckily suck the water in , i was left with my soaking wet pyjamas . He looked at me as i slowly sat down on the couch. I felt nothing after my water broke.

Gaurd: Mem are you fine.

Me: I'm okay .

He took his phone out and called Alpha informing him i was in labour , he dropped the call walking closer to me.

Me: Don't crowd me , i need space.

Gaurd: Should i call an ambulance?. Sir is on his way.

Me: No I'm fine get out.

Gaurd: But Mem you are in labour.

Me: (yelling) i said get out.

I held on my tummy as i flinched. He walked out the door panicking , i held on my waist breathing in and out getting up the couch.

Me: Oh god please No , I'm not ready for this.

I walked up the stairs and collected the baby's bag from the wodrope , i had bought a few baby clothes for this day . Just neutral colours because i wanted the baby's gender to be a

surprise, the excitement i had but still at the same time fear found a way to push in. I sat on the bed having a urge to push but all i could do was breathe and relaxe my body. I kept moaning to the pain breathing. My back felt like the were needles being stabbed in , crying and relaxing myself.

Me: My word , what is taking him so long.

I took my phone and called him , he picked up.

Alpha: I'm on my way. How are you now?

Me: little pain but I'm handling it well.

Alpha: Keep talking to me sweetheart.

Me: What should i say.

Alpha: Are you alone?is someone there with you?

Me: I'm alone.

Alpha: What the fuck! Where are the boys?

Me: I asked him to leave.

My body was burning up pretty quickly as the contractions increased in minutes , they pulled so long for about 4 to 7 seconds just taking a minute apart. I took off my pants and panties reaching down to my coochie. A sharp pain hit my womb instantly as i reached down to my coochie my hand pulled out a blood brownish tinged mucus discharge. I looked

at my hand and cried more screaming. Alpha walked in the room.

Me: I need the hospital , i think the baby is coming.

Alpha: Okay let's go .

He helped me up and walked me downstairs every step was unbearable, feeling like my feet had nails poking under. We got to the car and drove off to the hospital.

STEVE

I got a call from the inside gaurd that Amara's water broke , damn that was fast . I took out the syringe with the needle pulling out the drug. I called Megan.

Megan: I thought i told you i am not having sex with you.

Me: Calm down i don't want sex .

Megan: Then what.

Me: Amara's water broke , i just got a call.

Megan: What? I hope you not playing with me.

Me: Why would i ?

Megan: Okay fine are you man in stand by at the hospital?

Me: Mute is covering that.

Megan: And the delivery room is it set?

Me: Already did that, just get yourself ready for your surgery.

Megan: I wasn't even ready for this , i will begin packing.

Me: Remember your part of the deal.

Megan: Yes i do.

Me: Then let's get this over and done with.

I hung up and called Mute to get the guys in the hospital.

Mute: Now?

Me: Yes now!

Mute: I will let the guys know then.

Me: And the doctor?

Mute: I'm going to get him right now.

Me: I want this job done clean no one has to suspect anything.

Mute : No one will.

I called Alpha , his voice sounded as if he was panicking.

Me: Are you okay? You sound unsettled.

Alpha: I'm taking Amara to the hospital .

Me: Oh , what's wrong with her? Is she fine?

Alpha: We think she's giving birth Pop's.

I heard Amara cry in the background it was really happening.

Me: I will meet you at the hospital okay , it's going to be okay son.

He hung up the call , now i had a perfect chance to give him this dose. I walked out the house and drove to the hospital.

ALPHA

She was rushed in as soon as i arrived.

Doctor : How long has she been having contractions?

Me: I don't know .

Doctor : Take her to the labour ward and check how far the baby is and dilation.

Nurse: Okay doc.

They pushed the stretcher down the hallway as i held her , they opened the door and rolled her to the door. doctor bluntly denied me to get in , Amara held tightly on my hand refusing to let go.

Doctor: Sir we can't let you in .

Me: What ! I'm the father of the baby , she needs me.

Doctor: Sir we are doing our jobs for the sake of your baby and the mother please remain outside the room



Me: No i want to remain in the room with her. Okay give me a reason why i shouldn't be in when she's in labour.

Doctor: Hospital polices

Me: What kind of sick policy that forbid the father to be present when the mother is in labour?

Doctor: Our policy. Please remain outside .

Amara: (crying) Alpha don't leave me please I'm scared.

Me: Amara you need to be strong okay.

Amara: No please , the doctor can make exceptions. I need you in with me.

Doctor: I'm afriad that's not possible , we need to get you in Mem right now .

I let go of her hand she kept grabbing onto my fingers refusing to let go. Her lips were dry pale as she murmured with a cry .

Amara: Don't let go please.

Me: What are you waiting for get her in.

The nurses pushed her in , i turned my back on her , i didn't understand this policy and didn't want to dwell on it , i was scared for her . I hope she doesn't hate me for letting her hand go. I paced in the hallway as Pop's approached me .

Steve: Where is she ?

Me: Inside.

Steve: Come here.

I looked at him as he offered me a hug , i just walked into his arms.

Me: I'm so scared for her.

Steve: She will be okay trust me.

I felt a needle poke instantly at the back of my neck , he held me tight stabbing the needle in as my body got numb , i got drowsy instantly, i couldn't feel my body.

Steve: Sssshhh you'll be okay. Shhhh.

My eyes slightly closed and it was lights out for me.

AMARA

I was terribly in pain. I couldn't believe Alpha let me go. He should've fought to be in here with me. The nurses walked out the room leaving me alone so did the doctor. I didn't understand if they were getting ready to assist me or what but i was all alone in pain shivering cold. I held on the bed grabbing tight the handle and pushed screaming. He walked in with two men.

Me: Doctor please I'm in pain.

Doctor: Get her out before someone sees her.

Me: What's going on?

The man wrapped my mouth with duck tape and tied my hands covering me with a blanket I didn't understand what's going on , was this part of the labour procedures. They placed me in a wheelchair and drove me out the hospital to the parking lot . The process was so fast they drove out with me. The baby was descending to my cervix , i pushed in frustration. They drove for about an hour atleast to me it felt like an hour. Dealing with the labour pains . The car stopped and they got me on a scratcher, i thought to myself why was i in a stretcher again , i just wanted this baby out of me as soon as possible i couldn't bare this any longer. They drove me to a room and took off the blanket me , i looked at the scenario set up as they laid me on the operation table and tied my wrist on the steel bed tightly with a rope. I looked at the surgery knives that were placed nicely next to the doctor walked in the room peeking down at me .

Doctor: Hello .

Me: Please help me.

Doctor: You here to have surgery.

He stripped me down , and placed his stethoscope on my tummy , this was not the hospital, i had been kidnapped.

Me: What's going on here?

Doctor: Can you can deep breaths for me.

Me: (breathing) Please call Alpha for me.

They separated my legs he slid in his finger in my coochie, god i flinched biting my lower lip aggressively, i was massively in pain. He took out his hand and a cold instrument poked in my body. The sharp pain hit me deep. I held on the steel tightly and cried. He kept talking and a female voice responded.

Doctor: It's tired we will have to operate on her.

Woman: I don't care even if you cut her open just get my baby out.

Me: Please someone answer me what's going on here , where am i ? Where is Alpha?

Megan: Can you shut up will you !

Me: Megan , what are you doing here !

Megan: To collect what's mine.

Me: What are talking about.

The doctor rubbed a cold liquid on my abdomen and injected me . I felt a slight pain as he cut me open. I clinched on my lower lip screaming but nothing came from my mouth that was widely opened , my voice just vanished nothing came out . I bite on my dry lips till they bled. The doctor performed the

surgery as i laid helplessly on the bed. I was wide awake could hear everything and move my eyes but didn't feel anything from my abdomen to my legs , my hands moved fine.

Megan: Why isn't he crying?

Doctor: let me do my job please , his tired he has been fighting to get out for long .

I heard tiney hits on the baby and the baby busted out crying. I smiled hearing him cry it was a relief knowing he is alive , i was going to meet the little person i have been sheltering in my body for months . Megan held my baby against her chest smiling, she paced around the room with him calming him .

Me: please give him to me. Please.

Megan: No ! His mine.

Me: No his my baby , i carried him , please Megan give me my baby.

Megan: I told you to walk away didn't i ? And you didn't listening.

The doctor got up after stitching me , i was weak , all i did was lay down and just cry as Megan bonded with my newborn baby.

Me: I just want to hold him.

Doctor: My work is done here , my money?

Megan: No one will know about this.

Doctor: About what?

Megan: Good .

Doctor: You should leave with the baby , it's cold in here , as for the biological mother she lost a lot of blood . She will need to go to the hospital.

Megan: Let her die here , i don't care , i got what i came here for , i got myself a little boy.

She held the baby and handed him a brown envelope, he walked out the room as i looked at his bloody gloves and attire. Megan looked at the baby covering him.

Me: Megan please , I'm begging you , let me have my baby.

Megan: What baby? His no longer yours get that into your thick skull, his mine , his Junior.

She kissed him , covering him up , i looked at her fall inlove with my baby.

Me: Megan please , his all i have.

Megan: This is my son. I gave birth to him.

Me: Everyone knows you were not pregnant.

Megan: Then how do you explain this?

She lifted up her t-shirt showing me an small incision on her abdomen.

Me: (crying) Please , give me my baby , you can have Alpha , his yours.

Megan: Oh now you want to hand him over?i don't want him alone , i want everything, i want his son and him.

She picked up her bag and the two men walked in.

Man1: What should we do with her?

Megan: kill her obviously i don't want this coming back to bite me. I'm leaving now so see how you get rid of her , i have to be in the labour ward before Alpha wakes up.

She walked out the room as the men approached me .

Me: No don't go ! Don't leave with my son , let me have my baby Megan please don't go, don't leave me here

I have never felt this helpless in my life , i couldn't move an inch i tried shaking my wrist on the steel to break free but i was hurting myself more , i couldn't reach my son , i watch her walk away with my newborn baby, i watched her walk away with my son. I heard him cry from a distance, i laid on steel bed naked shivering in pain and cold , with wet hair clunged on my face, lips broken and bleeding , i was miserable , they untied me from the bed and wrapped me with a blanket carrying my

sore body to the car , they stuffed me in the boot and drove off . The car stopped and they got me out the tossed me out leaving me at the side of the road far from house to bleed and shiver to death. I was ready to die , i was in massive amount of pain i had no hope i will survive. I laid on the ditch could barely keep my eyes open the pains were eating me up , my body tired . I couldn't handle the pain anymore.

ALPHA

I woke up and looked around , i held my forehead as i had a massive headache. I got up from the chair and looked at the bed a woman was laying on the bed with a baby bed besides her. She looked at me and smiled.

Megan: Hey .

Me: Hey , what's going on?

Megan: I gave birth , it's a boy.

Me: (confused) You gave birth? I don't understand what's going on here?

Megan: I just gave birth to your son and you asking me what's going on ?

Me: Okay , okay sorry. Just that i don't remember a thing , i don't remember you or the pregnancy.

Megan: (sobbing) Are you denying me ?



Me: No I'm not it's just strange how i suddenly feel like an empty memory card. Can i see him.

Megan: His your son so do whatever you want.

She turned her back on me , i walked to her bed and held her hand that had a ring on it.

Me: Please don't get angry at me.

Megan: But you saying you don't remember your fiancée and our baby.

Me: I didn't say that baby , I'm sorry my love.

I walked to the baby bed and looked at the little boy , he was sleep . My heart melted seeing that little cute face. I held his tiney fingers .

Me: We did good , his perfect.

I picked him up and held him in my arms. I couldn't stop crying. Megan cried too. God i walked to her and gave her a kiss.

Megan: I'm so tired , giving birth is no child's play.

Me: You can sleep I'll take care of the baby. Megan.

Megan: Mhh.

Me: thank you for giving me a gift of life , thank you for making me a father of such a handsome young man . I love you so much.

Megan: (smiling) I love you too.

She closed her eyes as i sat down with the baby and held him , no words could explain how i was feeling, he felt like everything is going to be okay. I kissed his forehead laying him on my chest.

Me: My boy.

To be continued.

37

GRACE

Jaden drove me to Roses grave . We got off the car and walked to the grave yard. I looked at the grave that had swallowed up my daughter.

Me: Rosie , it's me , your mother , even though i don't deserve to be called a mother for what i did but it's me my baby , the woman who turned your life upside me the one that turned her back on you , I came to apologize for everything i was wrong , after so many years we meet again but i can't hold you , i won't be able to see those gorgeous brown eyes ever again . Rest easy my love , i hope you forgive me . I will always love you.

I placed a bouquet of flowers on the grave .

Jaden :Are you done Ma.

Me: I think so .

We walked back to the car . And drove off , i looked at the side of the road as we drove , the car passed by some sort of animal laying on the ditch , i let him pass by and held his hand on the steering wheel.

Me: Can you reverse the car , i think i saw a body.

Jaden : (Laughs) Come on now Ma , you having illusions.

He turned and drove back parking the car on the side of the road. I got off and approached the spot and really i saw a naked young woman. Jaden walked to me and the body.

Jaden : Jesus christ ! Is she dead?

Me: You are the doctor check her.

He kneeled down and placed his hand on his neck , the girl was laying on her stomach.

Jaden: She still has a pulse.

Me: Oh thank god.

He rotated her body laying her on her back , i looked at her. He took off his jacket and wrapped her lower body.

Jaden: God she had a incision wonder what organ they took from her.

Me: It's her !

Jaden: Who?

Me: The girl ! The one i saw at the hospital and thought it is Rose it's her.

Her stomach was a little bloated with her legs and thighs covered in blood. Her skin was pale and ice cold she looked quite dead for someone that still had a pulse. Jaden carried her to the car and laid her in the backseat , we quickly rushed her to the hospital. Where she was assisted by Jaden he made sure she received everything she needed . She laid on the bed as i looked at her , she looked just like Rose she laid silently for 4 hours getting her strength back from all the drips that were inserted in her body . She moved twitching her eyes i looked her lashes that blinked as she flinched. Her eyes slightly opened up and she looked at me . I saw Rose in her , Oh my word this is my grandchild , Amara is Roses daughter . She held her stomach and tears filled up her beautiful eyes

Me: Hey sweetie , don't cry you are safe.

Amara: (crying) My baby boy.

She sat up from the bed , ripping the drips off her veins , i walked to her stopping her from taking the veins . Jaden walked in and he held her down.

Me: Jaden stop her.

Jaden : Amara ! Amara .

She pushed him off as Jaden tried holding her down. She kept fighting and crying screaming for her son.

Amara: (crying) please let me go get my baby , i just want my son.

Jaden called in a nurse and they gave her a shot to calm her down.

She slowly dozed off . I held her hand and wiped her tears away.

Jaden: She's one strong lady i didn't expect that kind of strength from her. She laid outside for long.

Me: Remember i told you Rose was rape by her father

Jaden: Yes.

Me: I think Amara is the product.

Jaden: My goodness do you think she knows?

Me: I don't know but I'd like we handle her gently. She's my granddaughter.

The nurse walked in with Amara's test results.

Jaden: It's true the incision was a C-section she indeed was pregnant but where is the baby?

Me: I think she knows cause she woke up and screamed for her baby , she wanted her baby Jaden.

Jaden : But don't you think the father of the baby will be looking for her?

Me: He will be , i hope he does.

I sat down besides her bed and held her hand. I might've not found Rose, i found her daughter.

MEGAN

I was discharged by the paid doctor he made me a birth certificate for Junior that had both me and him as his parents , Alpha didn't remember a thing about Amara who was probably dead somewhere and i didn't care . He opened the door for me and handed me the baby. He got in and drove me to the house. We walked in , i step foot and felt home , At last home at last. I walked in with the baby. He couldn't wait to get his hands on Junior.

Alpha: Let me help you with the baby.

Me: Oh thank you.

Alpha: So are you going to breastfeed the baby?

Me: Not now.

Alpha: Oh , i thought he will be hungry.

Me: Isn't there milk in the house?

Alpha : I think the must be milk in the fridge , but didn't you

prepare for the baby's arrival.

Me: I'll warm him some milk .

I walked to the kitchen and called my dad . I needed a nanny . I know nothing about baby's. I looked at him as he held the baby it was like he and Amara went to parenting classes he knew how to hold him even rock him. Or maybe is it because his the father .

AMARA

I open up my eyes and looked at her , she was asleep. I tried getting up from the bed but my lower body was still weak , my body was failing me yet again.

Grace: Amara .

Me: I just want my baby back.

Grace: you not well yet.

Me: I watch her take away my baby , she took my baby , i didn't even hold him . I don't even know who he looks like. She stole my baby boy.

Grace: Who are you talking about?

Me: Megan , she took my baby.

Grace: I don't know who you talking about but I'm willing to help you get your baby boy back but before that you have to

recover you can't be roaming the streets with a c-section if it rips open. Your son needs you to be strong for him. Gain your strength first.

Me: (yelling) Have you ever had your child adapted from you while you laid on the bed helplessly? Have you ever watch another woman walk out with your newborn baby , she stole my moment , i was supposed to hold him for the first time, she took him away from me before i could even get the chance to have him laid on my chest for the first time and kiss him, tell him i loved him , i carried that baby full term and I'll be damned to let a piece of trash like Megan take my baby away from me !

Grace: Okay sweetie calm down , I'm here for you , we will work together and go get your baby tomorrow , for now you need to rest Amara your body has taken too much strain okay.

I nodded my head , my breast were heavy with my nipples itchy. I held my nipples on the hospital wear rubbing my nipples the milk spilled wetting the dress. I needed to get a hold on Alpha , he will understand me . He is probably looking for me. Jaden walked in he stole a glance at me as i hid my wet top. He check on me .

Jaden: How is your abdomen? Do you feel any pain?

Me: Still painful but not much.

Jaden: Would you like me to involve the police on this matter.



Me: is there something wrong with me ?

Jaden: Your womb has been badly damaged. My afraid you might never get to carry a baby anymore.

Grace: Oh my god , oh sweetheart.

Me: The father of my baby Alpha Smith has become to look for me here.

He looked at his mom then looked at me.

Jaden: Alpha was with his fiancée in this same hospital and they both walked out with a baby boy.

Me: No it wasn't my Alpha, he would never.

Jaden: It was him , he left the hospital yesterday with his fiancée and newborn.

I looked at him shaking my head in disbelief , i was now shaking and crying out loud . My eyes started to sting and my chest felt heavy .

Me: But I'm his fiancée, I'm the mother of his child. I need to go , i need Alpha to explain to me what's happening! I need clearance.

I got up from the bed as they stopped me.

Jaden: Amara please you need to rest your body.

Me: No ! There's no time to rest my body. The more time i waste

in this hospital Megan gets to spend time with my son.

Grace: Just spend the night then tomorrow you will meet whoever you want to meet okay spend the night, just one night , till we sure you fine.

Me: Fine? I will never be fine how do i be fine ?. Emotionally I'm done ! Spiritually I'm shattered.

I laid on the bed and cried, holding on my tummy. I was exhausted emotionally drained , with my hormones running wild. I continue crying in heavy sobs getting hiccups with swallow eyes , I didn't know what to make up on this situation.

NANDI

I have been counting Amara's months and i knew she will give birth this month, i was praying for her safety and the baby . Lord knows i wanted to escape this place and just go home. The doctor walked in my room .

Me: Martin , what has my husband paid you to do now.

Martin: Nothing pack up your stuff you are leaving tomorrow.

Me: You not joking with me ain't you?

Martin: Do you think I'd leave my office to come joke with you pack your things tomorrow morning your husband is coming to get you.

He walked to the door and stopped turning around.

Me: And congratulations on your grandchild it's a boy your husband said i should let you know.

I maintained a frown as he closed the door behind him , i exhaled and smiled crying through my tears , i was happy for them and i just couldn't wait to be united with my grandson. Oh i kept wondering if he looks like Alpha or Amara? Maybe he has Amara's eyes. I laid down on the bed and closed my eyes passing time with sleep.

ALPHA

The baby cried so much , Megan was asleep. I got up from the bed and took him out of the crib and rocked him . He kept crying his little lungs out. I woke Megan up.

Me: Megan wake up and breastfeed the baby.

Megan: Go warm his milk or something, I'm sleeping.

Me: Megan ! Wake up and breastfeed the baby ! His hungry , he needs his mother's breast milk not cow milk ! What kind of a mother are you!

She got up and took the baby that was even boiling hot because of crying. She took the towel and covered herself breastfeeding him , he kept quiet for a second and cried aloud.

Megan: What is wrong baby?(rocking Junior)

Me: Give him to me !

I took the baby from her hands and rocked him , he didn't want to hear a thing , his only a day old and he already good moods. Megan just stood there stupidly, lost , awkward. She knew nothing on how to calm the baby and she knew nothing about breastfeeding, how did i end up with such a stupid baby mama. I took him downstairs and warmed him up some milk and poured it in his baby bottle feeding him. I sat down on the couch looking at his little hands curled into a fist as he sucked hungrily at the bottle. I looked at him as he was slowly stop sucking. I was dozing off exhausted and i had to go to work tomorrow. I closed my eyes for a minute holding him against my chest.

[THE FOLLOWING DAY]

STEVE

I woke up early and got dressed to go get Nandi. I knew she will mess things up for me and Megan so i have to give her a dose too. I took the syringe and pulled out the drug. I walked to my car and drove to go get her. I waited for about half an hour and she was released , i looked at her smiling opening my arms for her , she looked at me and walked out the door and opened the car getting in the backseat. I drove the car home and we got out , she walked in the house first. Not saying a word , she walked to the bar and poured herself a glass of whiskey .

Me: Nandi stop it ! You embarrassing yourself.

Nandi: Not as much as you had embarrassed me Steve! You locked me up in mental asylum! And you expect me to ran into your arms.

I walked to her holding her arm.

Me: (softly) Nandi

Nandi: Don't touch me !

Me: Nandi listen ..

Nandi: No ! you listen to me now . The only reason I'm stayed with you is because of our son , i tolerated you all these years and watch you snatch the innocence out my baby boy. Not this time around with my grandchild. From this day forward I'm your wife only by name and legal papers. I'll sleep in the guest room.

Me: Nandi you being unfair !

She walked to the bedroom packing her clothes off the main bedroom shelves. I looked at her with my teeth grinding in anger. My marriage is as good as over. My wife hates me.

ALPHA

I woke up and the baby was not on my chest , i got up looking at the floor and under the couch for him.

Me: Junior! Where did he go.?

I looked at him in the kitchen and walked upstairs. Megan was on the bed , she had her back against me.

Me: Baby .

Megan: Yes.

Me: I think i lost the baby.

Megan: Don't be silly , i just bathe the baby.

I walked over the bed and he was laying naked on the bed , Megan was apply lotion on his skin. I kissed his forehead.

Me: I'm so tired.

Megan: Sorry baby you had to watch him all night, i was really tired last night. And maybe when you come back from work i can make it up to you.

Me: You don't have to make it up to me , I'm the father i have to play a role.

I got ready for work and wore my shoes wearing my watch , Junior was sleeping on the edge of the bed unsupervised. I laid him nicely on the center and pat his back as he went back to sleep. I took my things and went downstairs. She was sipping wine watching tv. I walked to her and grabbed the wine glass and smashed in against the wall.

Megan: (yelling) Alpha!

Me: Don't you dare yell at me ! Are you mad ? You drinking while you still breastfeeding? And you here relaxed while you laid the baby on the edge of the bed , you in your right sense of mind why would you lay the baby on the edge of the bed unsupervised? Mean these a baby crib for godsake if you didn't know ! Stupid fool.

I rolled my eyes annoyed walking to the door , i walked back in.

Me: And another thing If anything happens to my son , I'll kill you.

Megan: I hired a nanny for Junior she will be here in any second.

Me: His only 2 days and you already hiring nannies!

Megan: I need help Alpha , I'm a first time mother.

Me: ( annoyed) know what just do whatever!

I walked out the house and drove to work. I got to work and Ipek handed me my messages.

Ipek: Amara is waiting for you inside , congratulations on your baby boy.

Me: Thank you.

I walked in the office and closed the door , she got up from the chair and looked at me. Her eyes were puffy , with eye bags , she looked exhausted.

Me: How may i help you Mem?

Amara: Mem ? Did you just call me Mem?

Me: What should i call you?

Amara: Please stop playing games with me , just give me my son please.

She cried , i looked at her not sure what to answer cause i didn't know her. Her voice sounded familiar and her eyes too , i knew them from somewhere. I walked to my desk and took out my handkerchief from my blazer pocket and handed it to her. She took it and threw it back at my face.

Me : (angry) Get out before i call security! Leave who the hell do you think you are coming out from whatever hole you came from and walking into my office to come and disrespect me ! Get out .

Amara: My love what did they do to you?

I looked at her as her lips shaked , tears streaming down , it was either she is mentally unstable or she is a gold digger , she walked to me dragging her body. And held my hand. I pushed her away as she flinched holding onto her front waist and cried



i took my telephone .

Me: Ipek send security in my office urgently

Amara: Don't you remember me ?

Me: Young lady , i don't know what's wrong with you but you clearly need help.

Amara: NO ! I want my baby that you and Megan took from me ! I want my son Alpha.

Me: We didn't take your child .

Amara: Don't you dare lie to me ! You betrayed me ! You stole my child and now you pretending you don't know me !

I took the telephone and called Ipek again , she grabbed the phone off my hands smashing it on the floor. The hate in her swollen eyes.

Me: Take a step away from me.

Amara: Why you doing this, Tell me why ? What have i done? Can't you see you hurting me , you hurting our baby.

The gaurds walked in .

Me: You took your precious time , get this woman out.

Ipek: Mr Smith are you sure?

Me:Do i look unsure ?Get this mad woman out of my office.

Ipek: (confused) Sir..she.i don't understand.. Amara please let's go.

Amara: I am not going anywhere! Till they give me what is mine ! I want my baby.

Me: Just listen to her what sort of nonsense is that !

Amara: Nonsense ! I'll show you nonsense.

She lifted up her t-shirt showing her incision that was brutally stitched up , it was carelessly done looked like it would rip open and everything will fall out. Ipek walked the security gaurds out and closed the door.

Me: What are you doing !

I walked to her and she pushed me away from from her .

Amara: No ! look at me ! Look at my body . look how damaged i am , i carried a baby for you ! For us and you robbed him from me . You took my baby . Why didn't you say from the start you wanted a surrogate instead of selling me lies and getting me butcherd up like an animal ! You promising to marry me ! You said you wanted to spend every second of your life with me ! But you knew it was a lie all along , you left me when i needed you the most . You and your family planned this all along didn't you ! Rose's killing all of it , you planned it? Why you quiet?

I shrug my shoulder and shook my head.

Me: I don't know what to say to you , cause i don't know what you talking about.

She sat down on the chair and blinked quietly

Amara: This is what you wanted from the start wasn't it ? You like seeing me like this, broken and miserable, does seeing me cry bring you pleasure? Are you happy?

Me: Seeing you bashing me and crying doesn't bring me pleasure, i feel sorry for you , i heart breaks for you .

Amara: Then give me my baby.

Me: I'm afraid i can't do that cause the only baby i have right now is my son that I'm sharing with my fiance.

She pulled her sleeves wiping her watery face.

Amara: (sniffing) does your fiancee breasts leak ? Mine are leaking, my feet are swollen, my breast are heavy , my womb has been tempered with and I'm never having a baby again .

Me: I can get you help from the top specialist in the country even better throughout the world.

Amara: I want my son Alpha. I want him and i won't stop coming after you for my son , you will have to kill me . I despise you. I will never forgive you for this , never!

She got up and took a glance at me , she took off a ring from

her finger and threw it in my face . Leaving the office, she slammed the door behind her. I looked at down at the ring that was laying on the carpet , i picked it up and looked at it. Who was that woman? And why was she claiming Junior is her baby . A lot didn't make sense here , i was confused . Didn't understand a thing the last thing i remember is being in the office with Diana everything else that followed i didn't remember nothing not going to the hosipital or even Megan's pregnancy. I just remember waking up on the chair and Megan laying on the bed with a baby bed besides her. I sat down stretching my head in frustration. Ipek walked in.

Me: (angry) Ipek not now !

Ipek: Your meetin..

Me: I said not now ! Reschedule it!

Ipek: Opss okay sorry.

She walked out the office and closed the door.

NANDI

I got on my car driving to Alpha's house , i looked at the side road and saw Amara , i stopped the car and walked to her.

Me: (smiling) Amara.

Amara: Don't !

Me: Honey what's wrong?

Amara: Don't you dare come near me !

Me: Amara why you crying where's the baby.

Amara: You asking me ! After your family butchered me and took my baby , you took him ! And you asking me where he is the nerve .

People in the street looked at us , i was embarrassed .

Me: Can you get in the car so we go talk in private.

Amara: You will be talking to the police!

Me: Amara you causing a scene please, come talk to me .  
Where is the baby.

She turned and walked away , I didn't understand what was going on , what was wrong with her? She should be celebrating at home with her newborn but she's roaming the streets looking like a zombie , a lifeless body just floating around. I got into my car and drove to Alpha's house. The guards let me in , I walked in and Megan was holding a baby .

Me: What are you doing here?

Megan: uhmm.. Ma I live here.

Me: I was only gone for 8 months did time pass by so much that things suddenly changed , was i locked up that long?

Megan: You think out aloud. Here come see , this is your grandson Junior.

She walked to me and handed me the baby , i looked at him.

Me : Where did you get this baby?

Megan: (laughs) What do you mean i gave birth to him , c-section.

Me: Premature?

Megan: Full term.

Me: is this Amara's baby?

Megan: What are you talking about Ma this is my baby .

Me: Prove it ! Or you not getting this baby.....

Megan: What ! Please Nandi don't take my son away from me , his mine , i have an incision.

Me: DNA test?

Megan: ( angry) I will not let you take my baby you old hag !

Me: Watch me !

I held the baby as she ran to me and tried pulling the newborn off my hands , i slapped her so hard she fell on the floor.The baby cried , I took the baby with me and got in the car . I walked to the security.

Me: When Alpha comes back tell him his son is with me !

Gaurd : Yes Mem.

I got the baby in car , i laid him down at the passengers seat and locked my doors , She kept banging on the window , i avoided her placing my coat supporting the baby so he doesn't roll off the seat.

Megan: Ma please , I'm begging you give him back to me.

Me: No !

I drove off the yard to my house.

38

JADEN

I looked at her as she laid on the couch , she was really tired . She was fighting for her child and fighting an emotionally battle. I place a glass of water on the coffee table , Ma was copping vegetables in the kitchen making lunch. I sat down and took a carrot.

Grace: She's still sleeping?

Me: Yes she so tired, her skin is still pale , My fear is that her incision won't heal faster , the more she stresses her body and doesn't allow it to rest , she will fall sick.

Grace: I want to go see Alpha.

Me: No , i don't think that will be possible Ma , Alpha is a very popular persona it will be hard meeting him .

Grace: It's worth a try Jaden , look at her ? If i have too i will kneel before that boy , i will cry before him and kiss his feet just so he surrenders Amara's child. She needs her child , she wants her baby.

Me: What you won't do is kneel before him , i will try contacting his office and set an appointment for you.

Grace : Please do that , we have to help her .

Me: I will try.

I looked at her as she was sweating on the couch , i walked to her and kneeled down , i took a wet towel drying her forehead. Her eye lids were twitching , i looked at her. She opened up her eyes and looked at me, i stared at her.

Amara: Jaden, what are you doing?

Me: I..I..i was just checking on you.

Amara: Thank you , please don't crowd me.

I back away from her as she got up from the couch. She took the glass of water and drank from it.

Me: So i heard you went to see Alpha, how did it go?

Amara: I don't want to think about it.



Me: Okay when you ready know me and Ma are here for you okay.

I placed my hand ontop of hers , she pulled her hand under mines . I got up from the couch as the awkward moment settled in between us.

Amara: I'm sorry i just..

Me: (interrupting) No please don't apologize I'm sorry , i shouldn't have touched you . I'm sorry you don't need to be sorry . Uhhh I'll go check on the fridge , i mean the food.

Amara: Okay.

I walked to the hallway going to my room, i closed the door and sat on the bed breathing. I slapped the nervousness out of me.

STEVE

I walked to the dinning room , Nandi was carrying a baby feeding him , i looked at her.

Me: Whose baby is this?

Nandi: The baby you and that witch snatch from Amara.

Me: What are you talking about?

Nandi: Yes pretend like you know nothing, I'm the fool in this house , I'm the psychopath.

Me: Here you go again. What is Alpha's son doing here.

Nandi: Whatever you done to our son , undo it Steve , you don't understand that in this mess for power and money you hurting innocent souls , i saw Amara on the side of the road , She is broken Steve , she's losing herself, you are making the young girl go through hell !

I took the remote and sat down watching football , i looked at her as she fed the baby .

Me: You are just looking

for trouble cause you know how Alpha will react if he hears you took his child without his consent you just calling for trouble Nandi.

Nandi: I don't care , i am going to reunite Amara with her baby , she waited 9 months to hold this baby .

Me: This is not Amara's baby ! Amara had a miscarriage month's ago.

Nandi: That's not what i heard.

Me: What did you hear? Nandi what did you hear?

Nandi: Why you shaking?

She took the baby rocking him out the room. I looked at her taking my phone and called Megan.

Me: While you busy enjoying hours without the baby Nandi is

reuniting him with his real mother.

Megan: She would never, I'll contact Alpha right now.

Me: How could you be this weak !

Megan: I didn't know she would take the baby and leave , i tried stopping her but she hit me.

Me: Fuck Megan ! Stop being sloppy ! Do you want to lose everything?

Megan: No

Me: If you carry on with this behaviour trust me you will lose everything! You will even go to jail.

Megan: I'm sorry i will handle this.

Me: You better i don't want my wife being too attached to that baby .

Megan: Okay .

I hung up the call and looked at the door checking if no one heard me.

ALPHA

I got a call from Megan crying

Me: Baby talk to me what's wrong ?

Megan: (crying) It's your mom.

Me: My Mom what did she do?

Megan: She..she took Junior and she hit me .

Me: (angry) She did what !

I got up from the took my car keys! I rushed downstairs to my car and speeded off to my parent's house. I got off the car leaving the door open and the engine still running , i pushed the twin doors open they slammed creating a loud bang.

Me: (shouting) Where is my son !

Mute walked to me and held my chest.

Mute: Alpha calm down first.

I held his hand away from my chest and twisted his hand. He groaned in pain tapping my hand.

Me: Don't you dare touch me ! I hate people that touch me.

Mute: Okay , easy.

I walked to the living room and found mom feeding Junior, i walked to her and took him , she tighten her grip on him , i stared into her eyes.

Me: Ma ! Ma! please let my son go ! Give me my son !

Nandi: You not taking him.

Me: Why you doing this to me ?!

Nandi: Why you doing this to Amara?! Why! Do you think carrying a child for 9 months is child's play !

Me: Ma give me my son , i don't want to hate you. Give me my son.

Nandi: You have always hated me Alpha ! I'm not scared of being hated by you . What i will not allow you to do is make the greatest mistake of your life, my child.

Me: What mistake ! I have a family now ! I'm inlove.

Nandi: With the wrong girl , whatever she did to you , i will find a way to undo it ! I won't let you be blinded! Not by anyone!

Me: Ma what are you talking about ?

Nandi: Don't you remember Amara?

I looked at her , what was people and this girl. I ignored her taking my son , i held him in my arms.

Me: May this be the last time i see you near my child ! I'm done with you , this was the last straw i don't want you anywhere near my house, child , Megan or me ! I'm cutting all ties that connected me to you! My mother died to me the minute she decided to kidnap my son away from his mother.

Nandi: (tears forming) Alpha !

Me: Don't Alpha me !

Nandi: Don't do this to yourself don't do this to Amara, you love her more than anything.

Me: I don't love no Amara ! Stay away from my family Nandi ! Stay away from me.

Nandi: Megan won't be able to raise this baby for you ! It's not hers!

Me: Even if it's not hers ! I was yours and you failed to raise me !

Nandi: Please my child , you making the worst mistake of your life.

Me: Stay away from my family !

Steve: She meant no harm to Junior Alpha.

Me: (angry) Tame your wife ! I will not repeat myself ! Heads will roll.

I walked out the house and placed the baby in the baby seat at the back , i secured the chair with my hands shaking in anger , Junior was fast asleep . I drove out the house , driving calm. I looked at him through the mirror looking at his perfectly shaped small face. What was this fight for him? Why would a woman i don't know claim she is your mother. What is the fuss over you my boy , he opened up his brown eyes , i looked at the eyes and parked the car in the drive way , Megan ran to

the car crying and open up the door taking Junior , she kissed him rocking him.

Megan: My baby , thank you for bring my baby to me.

I nodded my head and walked in the house , my mind was just busy trying to piece what is happening . I sat down on the couch with my mind miles away.

Megan: So what did you psycho Mother say.?

Me: yes.

Megan: Alpha.

Me: yes , sorry pardon me what did you say?

Megan: What's wrong?

Me: Do you know a woman by the name Amara.

Her eyes paced around the house. She shook her head.

Megan: no who is that?

Me: every one seems to know her and you don't?

Megan : oh i remember now she's the lady that got sick on our engagement party , your mother got worried instantly what a shame.

Me: was i dating her maybe?

Megan: No the only person you were dating was Diana then

me.

Me: oh , let me go take a shower.

I walked upstairs to the shower . I got out and wore my sweatpants . Megan walked in the room. She held me from behind and kissed my spine bridge.

Megan: remember i told you I'll make it up to you?

Me: Yes.

Megan: I think I'm doing that now.

Me: Oh , show me then

Megan: I'm going to thank you .

Me: thank me.

She kissed me back me to the wall , her cold lips made rounds on my mouth. As she kissed me holding my stomach she kneeled and pulled out my dick licking the tip. I closed my eye's trying to enjoying the pleasure. She licked my dick stroking her neck. My body was warming up taking it's time.

Me: where is Junior?

Megan: His asleep in the crib.

She got up licking her lips. Pulling down her thongs. Pushing me down at the bed . She climbed ontop and stroked herself down letting out a light scream.



Megan: ahhhh ! Fuck .

She kept stroking herself a going down deep a my dick thrust in her , i felt rather not intimate with her something was lacking as she made love to me. I held her small waist helping her for momentum as she was dripping wet. She laid her head on my shoulder sucking my neck, i don't understand how a woman that had a c-section fuck a man like that , she fucked herself tirelessly and roughly like she's been waiting or rather hungry for this , she reached climax closing her thighs

Megan: (screaming) Ohhh god! Oh my

I lifted her ass up as my dick fell out in between my stomach , i cummed letting out a sigh. She licked my dick and dipping her tongue on my gushy body liquored and licked it off.

Me: I'll go check on the baby.

Megan: junior is fine Alpha , can we lay down for a second have our time please.

Me: let me go check on the baby.

Megan: Alpha what's wrong with you , you haven't been yourself , was the sex bad?

Me: No the sex was okay.

I kissed her and took my pants , i looked down at Junior and let him grip on my hand with his small palms . I leaned and kissed

his forehead.

Me: i love you.

He cutel sneezed brushing his nose with his whole hand twitching his eye lids.

AMARA

Grace took me to a room and opened the door.

Grace: Here is your room , you can stay with us as long as you like.

I looked at her and cried giving her a hug.

Me: Thank you so much , may god bless you.

Grace: You don't have to thank me , you are family to us Amara.

Me: But still you don't owe me nothing but here you are helping me , my god will bless you countlessly .

Grace: Amen. Now you take a bath and dress your incision, i will go dish up so we eat. Okay.

Me: Okay.

Grace : Don't cry , you not alone . Let me leave you to freshen up .

She walked out the room smiling, what a good woman. I took a towel and walked to the bathroom locking the door , i filled the

tub with water and got in. The warm water stung my operation , i kept squeezing the milk out my swollen full breast, they were sore but i had to do it , i can't have my breast leaking all the damn time because of being full. I held my stomach and cried , i didn't understand why was Alpha doing this to me? Was it him or his doing this unwillingly. I sat on the tub crying for hours. This was all my fault , i shouldn't be trusting like this , i shouldn't have fallen for him, what was i thinking?falling inlove with a guy like Alpha while i was a peasant , i should've stayed in my lane , Rose would be alive . We would be having coffee and chatting the day away. I hugged myself and cried out loud.

Me : (crying) Why did you leave me Rose ! You should've taken me with. I'm in pain. You left me to deal with this pain alone and it's too much. I have a person depending on me for everything out there and I'm failing him, i don't know what to do, I'm helpless .

I cried out for a few minutes and got out the bathroom , i got dressed and laid on the bed looking at the wall that was grey painted. I kept wiping the tears off my face as they fell continuously. I looked at the wall that reminder me of the bedroom i shared with the man that ripped my heart and baby away from me , it's hard to actually hate him cause i love him , i made him the centre of my universe all the months i shared with him , i had to lock those feelings and emotions away for

the sake of my son , i know you probably thinking I'm a fool and mad to still care about someone that hurt me this deep but when you truly care about someone their actions don't change how you feel because it's the mind that gets angry , not the heart . The hearts love is unconditional .Grace walked in the room approaching me with a tray of food. She placed the food on the side table.

Grace : here's food , please eat.

Me: I'm not hungry.

Grace: Amara please , you need strength.

Me: Please don't push i just want to sleep.

Grace: Okay but please eat when you wake up.

Me: I will.

She kissed my forehead and walked out . I laid on the bed . If i knew i was going to go through this pain and suffering i would've aborted him. I let my weight down and closed my eyes on the bed crashing down with, emotionally, psychologically and spiritually.

39

MEGAN

I could see right through Alpha , he wasn't in the mood for me .

He kept avoiding me diverting his attention fully to Junior. We sat down in the seating room as he was laying on the carpet with Junior, i sat down on thr couch holding on myself tightly.

Me: baby.

Alpha: (annoyed) Mhhh.

Me: Can we talk?

Alpha: About?

Me: Why you avoiding me ?

Alpha: How would i avoid you , I'm with you in my house 24/7 if i was avoiding you I wouldn't even bother coming home.

Me: Then what's wrong?

He got up and sat besides me holding my hand , he looked at me.

Alpha: Are you sure this is our baby?

Me: Alpha what do you mean?

Alpha: Amara was in my office Meg she cried begging me to let her have her child, my heart broke for her . She is in pain. Is Junior our baby?

My heart paced in my chest . I looked at him. I need to improvise

Me: Yes he is our child !

Alpha: Then why is Amara saying he is her child? Maybe there was a baby swap in at the hospital?

Me: Junior is our baby Alpha if you don't trust me do a DNA test then ! Do it his your child.

Alpha: I'm not doubting you okay , i know his my son.

I got up from the couch and pretended i was crying. He hugged me from behind as i stared in space , feeling his crotch brushing against my booty.

Alpha: I'm sorry okay , i didn't mean to hurt your feelings, I'm just checking just so we know we going to be raising our baby in peace and not have another woman cry in the background.

Me : I understand that but and if it makes you better , i will go talk to Amara and hear her story out, are you happy now?

Alpha: That would be good my love, I'd hate we lose the upper hand on this , if she goes running to the media it will destroy my company.

Me: she won't trust me , excuse me.

I took my phone and walked upstairs. I dialed Steve's number.

Steve : Wow getting to hear your voice 2 times a day ain't it my lucky day.

Me: Stop flattering yourself Steve, Amara has talked with Alpha and his believing her.

Steve: That's your problem , it got nothing to do with me , your father must sign the land deal !

Me: He won't not untill i get Amara out the way !

Steve: Then hire I'll someone to silence her.

Me: No i don't want her dead , i need her.

Steve: What for?

Me: I need breast milk, Junior can't be living of formula. For now let her be , i will set up a cabin were I'll keep her there.

Steve: Okay and where do i assist?

Me: I need breast pumps equipment i will text you the list.

Steve: Don't you think you over doing things now? Mean you took her baby now you want to keep her hostage so she you forcefully take her breast milk , you can just ask her to pump some mean it's her baby , she won't let her baby starve.

Me: No ! She will rat her mouth about it , when we lock her up we get to know where she is and she won't tell no one or even bother Alpha.

Steve: Fine I'll organize everything.

Me: And please those guys that handled the job did a bad job ,

She is meant to be dead but here she is still living and talking .

Steve: I'll have Mute attend to them , is that all?

Me: Yes , i have to go Junior is crying.

I hung up the call and deleted his number from the call log, i walked downstairs smiling.

AMARA

I forced the food down my throat even though i didn't want to eat but i had to i was too hungry to starve myself , i got up and walked to the kitchen. Jaden was washing the dishes. He looked at me as i place the plate in the sink.

Jaden: One more plate to my load.

Me : I can help you if you lazy doing the dishes.

Jaden: No please , you the guest , i got this .

Me: Okay then .

I felt a sharp pain in my womb with my nipples tangling , they suddenly got itchy so bad. I was embarrassed to even touch them and scratch infront of Jaden what if the milk sprays out. I placed my hand over then rubbing.

Grace: Nipples are itchy ain't they?

She place the empty cup of coffee on the table. When i had my child and had to go somewhere without her i experienced that



when she was crying. I initially knew she was crying.

I looked at her acting strong not to cry i kept swallowing .

Me: I'll go sleep goodnight.

Grace: Please don't leave on my account , i actually love seeing you not locking yourself in your room and socializing with us.

Jaden : I'll make us all a cup of hot chocolate so we watch a reality show.

Grace: Would you like that?

Me: Yes thank you.

Grace: I'm afraid i won't be able to join you.

He made the cups as we all sat down looking at the tv. He kept gazing at me through the cup as he drank. I looked at him he locked his eyes on the tv.

Me: Is there something you want to say to me Jaden.

Jaden: Me? No ofcourse not why would you ask that?

Me: You staring at me and my sister once told me it's rude to stare.

Jaden: Nothing I'm just wondering how you and Alpha ended together , mean we all know Alpha his..

Me: Out of my league?

Jaden: Let's say his best suited for woman like Megan. No offense okay.

Me: Non taken , that's what i thought when he made moves on me , i thought he just wanted to sleep with me but he fell for me and i did for him. He loved me so much and i did too , i still do believe he still does , I'm just confused on what happened, he was urged to marry me , wanted to make me his and i wanted him bad too but i don't understand what changed it's like i was rolled in that room and he let go of my hand felt like he let go of the memory of us , he let go of me , our love everything (sobbing) .

Jaden: I'm sorry you had to go through this , but you have to accept reality now , it's no longer like that , he has a family of his own now.

Me: What family? Just shut up if you have nothing to talk about.

Jaden: I know it will be hard to accept but instead of you fighting so much just be thankful your son is with his father.

Me: Do you guys have liquor?

Jaden: uhm..we have a few bottles of wine in the cupboard, why do you want liquor?

Me: Just asking.

I got up and place the cup of coffee on the table.I walked to the kitchen and took out a bottle of wine , i opened up the bottle and drink from the bottle.

Jaden: You shouldn't be drinking.

Me: I'm grown enough know what's right for me now leave me alone please.

I drank from the bottle with my eyes closed as the wine left my taste buds jumping for more. I walked to the seating room and sat down on the couch drinking quietly. Jaden continued drinking his hot coc as i drank the bottle empty. I closed my eyes and bite my lips to control my tears.

Jaden: Should i stay up with you ?

Me: (burps) No please go sleep.

Jaden: Are you sure?

Me: Yes I'll be okay , i have always been okay , I'm better off alone.

Jaden: Goodnight then.

Me: Night.

He got up and took his cup walking out the room. I sat alone just blinking gazing into space , i just thought to myself how he looks like, does he have my eyes? Or maybe he looks like Alpha.

I got up dragging my feet to the room . I tossed myself on the bed.

[THE FOLLOWING DAY]

NANDI

I woke up in a urge to hear from Amara , even hear her talk just to know she's still alive. But her phone went straight to voicemail. Did she even have a phone?i kept trying to call her endlessly. I even gotten called Dorothy's husband to find out about Dorothy, he just insulted me saying i used his wife for rituals. I didnt understand cause his wife left my house without even saying why she dropped us. I kept trying Amara's phone still voicemail.

Steve: whoever you calling doesn't want to talk to you. Where is breakfast?

Me: Make your own breakfast.

Steve: Are you really being serious?

Me: Do i look like I'm joking , go make your own breakfast or better yet call Megan to come make you breakfast since you so close these past months.

Steve: So you going to use Megan as an excuse for neglecting your duties as a wife.

Me: i am no one's wife , i have errands to run.

Steve: Where? Nandi where you going.

I took my bag and walked out my car.

ALPHA

I woke and looked besides me , Megan wasn't on the bed , she walked out the bathroom pampered out looking beautiful. I took my watch and looked at the time it was still 7 oclock in the morning .

Me: Where you going this early?

Megan: hey handsome.

She walked to the bed and gave me a kiss , waving her wig backwards.

Me: You look beautiful.

Megan: Thank you.

Me: Now where you going this early?

Megan: I have work , Mayoral elections are coming up so Dad and i have to have strong support behind us.

Me: But you just gave birth Megan you need to be at home healing and bonding with Junior.

Megan: Alpha Junior isn't running away , he will be here all day for the rest of our lives

She giggle applying lipstick , she picked up her bag .

Me: I have to go to work, i can't take him with.

Megan : I'll call the nanny .

Me : You can't expect me to leave our baby with a stranger.

Megan: Then take him with, i promise i won't take long , I'll come get him at the office.

She walked out the room , i looked at the door.

Me: (calling) Megan ! God what is wrong with this woman.

I got up and looked through the window watching her drive off. What sort of nonsense is this. I walked to the crib , Junior was already awake eating his tiny fingers , i feel like a single parent . She doesn't breastfeed the baby in front of me . I could barely get work done at home cause i have to look after the newborn alone , for being a first time father i was coping pretty well.

Me: So you get to spend the day at daddies work place .

He blinked looking at me as if he was trying to figure out what i was saying to him. I picked him up and ran the bathtub with water . I took off my clothes and undress him too , i carried him in the tub placing him on my chest. I bathe him with water brushing his pushed up bum as he curled himself.

Me: Is daddy doing it right?

He just sneezed , i felt half bathe cause i don't usually use the bathtub but at the same time i can't use the shower with Junior. I dried him up and dressed him.

Me: Now it's my turn , you not going to cry won't you ? No you won't , we the Smith's we never cry isn't it ?yes we don't.

I looked at him as he gazed in my eyes , the was something about my boy's eye's . His eyes looked like Amara's . Why didn't i piece this together at first.

But that still confirmed nothing eyes are the same , maybe he inherited a gene from Megan maybe they have a people with brown eyes in her family , i applied my wrist watch and picked him up made him his milk bottle and packed his baby food. Driving to the office, i walked out the elevator carrying him.

Ipek: Mr Smith.

Me: Morning Ipek.

Ipek: you brought him to work?

Me: Unfortunately yes , his mother had work.

Ipek: Can i ?

She handed out her hands, I looked at her .

Me: No , get the door for me.

She quickly got the door, i walked in and placed him on the

table besides me.

Ipek: are you going to work perfectly with him.

Me: I'm his father , so yes i will , close the door behind you.

She walked out and closed the door, i didn't want no one holding my son the last time someone held him , she kidnapped him that psychopath. I gave him his milk bottle as he latched on.

AMARA

Sunlight hit my face, i blinked looking at the opened up curtains. I saw Rose , i got up handing out my arms to her , my eyes filled up with tears as i looked at her eyes that glittered.

Me: Rosie

Rosie: (smiles) Ammie.

Me: You left me .

She approached the bed with her face fading. It suddenly changed to Grace , my smile faded i was disappointed.

Grace: It's me Grace , I'm sorry.

Me: It's okay i just had an illusion .

Grace: It's okay , get ready.

Me: Where are we going?



Grace: To Alpha's office i set up an appointment to see him , quickly get up sweetie.

She walked out the door i got up and walked to shower quickly getting ready , i dressed up and tied my hair upright. I walked out the room , Jaden was having coffee.

Jaden: Coffee?

Me: No thank you , I'm fine.

Jaden: Okay, so are you ready?

Me: Yes.

Grace walked out the room carrying her bag ,Jaden drove us to Alpha advertising. I looked at Grace as the car stopped. We got out the car as Jaden drove away , he had work . My heart was racing , I was nervous to look at Alpha cause on the last visit here , he shattered my heart. We approached Ipek's desk.

Grace : We have an appointment.

Ipek: Okay please wait here I'll go inform him.

A baby cried in his office, i held my mouth and cried , Ipek opened the door, i looked at him as he rocked the baby that was in black.

Me: (whispering) My baby.

He looked at me as i approached the door with my eyes set on

the little baby , i couldn't see his face but i knew he is perfect. I longed for him , just a touch of his hand , even if i wasn't going to hold him just to touch his skin.

Alpha: What is she doing here , Ipek.

Ipek : They have an appointment sir.

Alpha: Tell them I'm busy.

Ipek: Sir please , I'm trying to understand what's going on here cause a month ago you were happy with Amara now you suddenly changed. I'm sick of this.

She approached me walking in. I looked at Grace she smiled nodding her head. I walked in and looked at him as the door closed behind me , hot tears streamed down my cheek as i pushed a smile swallowing bulks of salvia.

Alpha: Stop right there.

I stopped following every order and submitting to him. Even if he said i must kneel and bark like a dog , i would just to see him. He was only a foot away from me. His cry was music to my ears as my nipples vibrated. He was crying because he could feel his mother in the room.

Me: Please , let me hold him for you.

Alpha: No his fine , what is the appoint for.

I handed out my arms to him .

Me: Please , i let me in , i promise i won't hurt him , i won't hurt you.

He kept crying his little lungs out as Alpha brought him to me. He placed him in my arms. I broke down . Seeing his face for the first time. I held him against my chest and cried loud , my heart filled with so much warmth , love , peace. It was incredible how i suddenly fell so deeply inlove with my baby, this was real love. I looked at his face as he was quiet now. He place his head on my top with his tougue swirling against my breast. Alpha looked at him.

Alpha: What is he doing?

Me: He wants to leach on.

Alpha: No i can't have my baby leach on someone else's breast.

Me: That someone else is his mother Alpha , can't you see he knows me , he knows I'm his mother.

Alpha: Give me my baby.

Me: My love please , listen to me.

I held his hand, he looked at me with his chest was rising.

Alpha: Amara give me my son.

Me: Tell me how you feeling right now? Look me in my eyes

and tell me how you feel , i want you to show me you still remember me , cause that's the only way i could understand.

Alpha: I feel nothing , these nothing to show you.

Me: You lying.

Alpha: Please hand me my son.

Me: His my son too.

Alpha : You promised you won't hurt him.

Me: I'm not hurting him , how will i hurt my baby , I'm the one getting hurt here you surrender yourself and my child to another woman Alpha , i gave you, i made you my world and you watching me crash before you. I have became a stranger to you .

Alpha: I'm sorry for whatever thing you going through , I'm sorry i don't remember you.

Me: It's fine that you don't remember me , but don't keep my baby away from me . You want Megan don't do?you want to spend every second of your life with her. Then do that just give me my son.

I walked to the door carrying Junior. Alpha wasn't going to let me walk out with Junior that easily. He held my arm tightly.

Alpha: Amara i won't let you walk out with my son ! Give him to

me.

Me: (angry) No ! His mine as much as he is yours. He is my baby , you can't expect me to hand him over to you.

Alpha: I'm expecting just that , I'm asking you .

Me: (sobbing) You have to let me go , you have to help let me let you go . I need you to do that for me. I need you to let me walk out of here with my son. I need my baby. Don't let the love i have for you turn to hate .

I held my baby tightly in my arms , i wasn't prepared to let him go , i didn't want to . Just holding his tiney body against my body was satisfying my soul , if i had to go against Alpha for him then so be it. I wanted to kill him , i wanted to murder Alpha and ran away with my child. He shut the door blocking my way with his arm . My heart was racing. Even Junior was crying . Alpha leaned looking at me .At that moment my eyes connect with his . His hand grasped tightly on my arm as if i was going to run away. He was angry at me fuming.

Alpha: (agitated) If you say you know me as much as you do , you'd know i hate people that don't obey commands, i hate not being listened too , i dispise repeating myself , but because I'm a good hearted man I'll say this one more time. Hand me my son. I don't want to hurt you cause i will, i will break you Amara .

Me: What are you going to do are you going to kill me !

Alpha: Oh no i won't kill you , I'm just going to hurt you really really bad that you won't even recognize yourself.

Me: You think so ? Well then i can take it.

Alpha: (scoffs) Don't challenge my limit.

Me: You have broken me before , you have hurt me more than ever nothing you do now will hurt me , I'm numb to pain.

Alpha: Oh really .

He forcefully grabbed Junior off my hands, as we fought over him struggling, i had to let him go we were hurting him , my baby cried so much , he held him and unlocked the door pushing me out , i fall on the floor , i felt my c-section rip open.

Me: Ohh my word! (Screaming)

Grace: What's wrong? Amara talk to me.

Me: My o..operation

Grace: What , what wrong with it.

She lifted up my t-shirt as I screamed groaning in pain with my lips shaking she looked down at my abdomen and tears filled up her eyes. Ipek and Grace kneel with me. I was massive pain , it felt like i was cut open yet again , i was crying unstoppable as the company stuff approached me , Alpha handed the Junior to

Ipek and kneeled holding my head up , i was bleeding . Ipek ran to her desk calling an ambulance, god i felt like i was dying. My whole body suddenly was freezing, shaking uncontrollably because of pain .

Alpha: Ipek call an ambulance!

Ipek : I'm trying they placed me on hold.

Alpha : I'm so sorry Amara, please don't die. Hang in there ,( angry) Damn it Ipek !

He picked me up and got me in the elevator, rushing me to the hospital. I blanked out in the car.

JADEN

Amara was rushed into hospital by Alpha with her operation open. I knew this thing of her going to that man would end up like this , i just knew. She was rushed to theater to be stitched again and this time correctly. Ma couldn't stop crying. With alpha pacing impatiently in the corridors on the phone . I looked at his sorry ass of a man , i wanted to walked right to him and punch the living hell out of him , what was he thinking pushing a woman down.

Me: Just look at him , bloody douchbag.

Grace: Jaden don't start.

Me: No Ma someone has to stand up for Amara! Alpha is a

bloody pig !

He looked at me approaching me dropping the call.

Alpha: Pardon me?

I got up from the seat as he launched to me , i swallowed a lump.

Me: (angry) How can you push a woman with an operation like that?

Alpha: You said I'm a what? Listen here you don't know me ! I don't know you too . If you ever disrespect my name like that I will rip your throat out with my bare hands.

Me: Is that a threat?

Alpha: (chuckles) no it's a unfriendly fact !

Me: You must think people are scared of you ain't you, well I'm not scared at you ! I have faced bullies before and tell you what ! The wicked never taste victory .

He looked at me and laughed in my face, i clutched my fist tightly forming knuckles oh i was mad , i was angry , he looked at my hand that was charged up and laughed even more , what sick person is this, he handed me his cheek. And lowered down his knees .

Alpha: Hit right here ! Come on , give me your best shot! I'm



the bad guy !

Grace: Will you guys stop this please .

Me: (Yelling) Ma Stay Out of this ! I don't want to Yell at you !

Alpha: you already yelling Mr Doctor , and don't talk to your mother like that.

Me: Says a man that pushed a woman down ! And who the hell do you think you are interfering between me and my mother you rotten egg ! I dare you to come closer to Amara again ! I dare you to hurt her again !

Alpha: or what ? Are you going to beat me up !

I grabbed his suit in anger , just clinching it on under my tight fist.

Me: Yes i am ! It's a pity i know you will fuck me up ! But it's worth a try.

Alpha: Come on hit me , but hit me strong so i cannot get off the ground.

A guy in black approached us .

Guy: Alpha !

He held the gun on his hip.

Alpha: Stand back Mute !

Mute: Okay.

This guy was underestimating me ! I got boiled up . holding on his flirty cost suit.

Me: So you think my strength is not enough.

Alpha: (shouts) Hit !

I launched in a knuckle punching his face , he tilted down gaining moment

Grace: (screaming) Jaden No !

Mute walked to him helping him up , he pushed him aside and walked to me.

Alpha: AGAIN!

Mute: Alpha don't do this ! We in a hospital.

Alpha: Don't interfere Mute ! Stand back !

He exhaled taking a step back as i swunged my sore knuckles.

Alpha: You blocking your fist too much ! You don't understand the power of your hand , you blocking your fist too much. Do not take your power from your hand , take it from your arm .  
AGAIN!

I looked at him shaking, i hit again Ma cried in the background begging me to stop ! He was enjoying being hit ! He was enjoying everything swing.

Alpha: The balance of your opponent can be shaken in his ear !

I looked down as he approached me tightening his grip on my sore knuckles! He held my knuckles strongly firmly closing them in his hand.

Alpha: (angry) look at me when I'm talking!

I looked at him. He slapped the side of his face , clinching on his teeth as his jaw muscles moved .

Alpha: Right here ! You will hit me right here ! HIT ME !

I punched him giving my all ! He fell on the floor and laughed , i walked to him.

Me: Are you okay, are you fine ! Did it hurt.

His mouth was bleeding , he inserted his finger in his mouth taking out a broken off tooth and smirked

Alpha: That did hurt.

I flapped my hand in the air , as my knuckles were hurting , i groaned in pain.

Grace: Please , stop this ! Jaden please my boy this is not you.

Alpha: That was a good one.

Mute helped him off the floor. He looked at me and nodding his head.They walked out the hospital. God that felt so good , i

don't even remember the last time i took such a hit or punched someone. Amara was rolled out of theater , she was still unconscious as i took ice bag and placed it on my knuckles that were burning.

40

NANDI

I sat down at a restaurant with a friend of mine . She's been my friend ever since i met her through Steve , her husband is an associates of Steve .

Me: I have been considering divorcing Steve.

Thandeka: Don't you think that's overreacting? You have been with Steve for a almost a decade now.

Me: that doesn't give him reasons to treat me less of his wife, his cheating and involve in a lot of gruesome things that can send chills down your spine if i had to open the can of worms.

Thandeka: No one knows Steve better than you , you are his wife , his life . If things are getting too much to handle why don't you just take a little break away from each other go find yourselves and maybe when you get back the will be change.

Me : That's the thing he will never change Thandeka , Steve has nothing to lose and he knows very well i won't leave him.

Thandeka: Then take that as an advantage hit him where it

hurts the most .

Me: And where is that?

Thandeka : Man are like wild animals they overprotective when it comes to their family , their family is territorial for them . When another wild animal threatens their territorial the is war.

Me: So basically you saying?

Thandeka: (sips of her wine) Find someone that will make you happy but at the same that will open Steve's eyes so he acknowledges what is before him . My husband was cheating too and i got myself a sweet little boy to play with .

I held my mouth and giggled, as i clapped my hands.

Me: Oh my word No ! Absolutely No ! I won't cheat on my husband, two wrongs don't make a right, plus Steve cheating is not what is bothering me.

Thandeka: Then what is bothering you friend?

Me: Alpha, he has changed , very much changed.

Thandeka: Oh i heard he is a father now , who would've thought Alpha would be a father (laughs) people just seize to amaze me.

Me: Alpha is human come on Thandeka he has balls like every

man , you people make Alpha to be some sort of Alien or out of this world person.

Thandeka : I was just saying no offence.

Me: Well back to my problem, i feel like Alpha has been brain washed. He doesn't remember the real mother of his son.

Thandeka: (confused) What are you talking about?

Me: Alpha was dating this girl Amara and she was pregnant then out of the blue when i come back from the mental asylum the girl has switch places with Megan , Megan claims to be the boy's mother, it's insane and the mother of the child is devastated Thandeka , her baby has been taken away from her.

Thandeka: Wait , balance me here , so you saying Alpha and Megan stole the baby from this Amara girl, maybe she was a surrogate Nandi.

Me: She wasn't, Alpha loves that girl , Amara got in his life and changed him , she saw the light i have been seeing in him while other people saw darkness .

Thandeka: She sounds like an angel.

Me: She definitely is and i know Steve is behind this whole ordeal it's him and i will have to get to the bottom of this.

Thandeka: And knowing how Steve operates for him to go with such drastic measures the must be something big he was

planning and this girl was in his way. Not saying what his doing is right cause it's totally wrong ! I will pull some strings on my side try and get help for Alpha cause his the only hope we have in solving this problem.

Me: The most annoying thing his blinded to this whole situation, I'm scared he will settle for this and adapt to it , the more his stuck with that woman the more Amara gets less chances if getting her baby back.

Thandeka: I wouldn't wish what this girl is going through even on my worst enemy. I would lose my mind if i had lost ny girl's.

Me: We have to help her .

She looked at me as we sipped on wine , the pity in her eyes , i was sad for Amara too and i was afriad with Alpha angry at me it will be hard now to break through to him. Taking Junior was a wrong move i shouldn't have taken him , i acted on pulse.

ALPHA

I looked at the road , with my ear still ringing from the punch , i twitched my eyes that were blurry as i looked at the road .

Mute: Alpha what's wrong?

Me: Nothing I'm fine.

Mute: Bro you not fine .

Me: ( angry) Damn it Mute ! I said I'm fine just a little blurry sight.

He back down looking at me , i think i was losing my sight i couldn't see probably. The car was dancing on the road , he held the starring wheel.

Mute: Park the car.

Me: I said I'm fine ! I can drive.

Mute: Will you stop being stubborn and park the car ! You have a baby that still needs you dying won't solve anything! Park the car.

I parked the car and got out the car getting some air , damn my eyes are blurry, i think the doctor hit a nerve, i slowly gained my sight back . Mute handed me a bottle of water .

Me: And what is this supposed to do ? Heal my nerve?

Mute: I told you to not take those punches , they were unnecessary and it was stupid of you !

Me: This is my damn face! This is my damn body ! I will take as much punches as i want on my damn body !

Mute: Why are you like this? Why do you always want to have the upper hand .

Me : It's my nature .



Mute: (laughs) a stupid one that will get you killed.

We got in the car and he drove me home , Megan was with Junior, the minute i walked in , she handed Junior to the nanny rushing to me holding my cheek.

Megan: baby what's wrong? What happened.

Mute: He decided to be a doctor's punching bag.

Megan: He what! Alpha are you fine?

Me: I'm fine , i just want to go take a shower.

Megan: Baby you need a doctor, you are bleeding.

Me: I'm fine , it's just a mouth cut .

Megan: let me see.

Me: ( angry) I said I'm fine ! What's the damn fuss !

I pushed her aside and walked upstairs. I got into the bathroom and unbuttoned my shirt that had blood stains on , i looked at the blood stains and broke down , i felt something for her , her touch set feelings in me i think were there but they hid themselves , it was a train wreck of feelings she just handed to me causing a chemical confusion in my brain , i needed those punches so he hit me back to reality, i am afraid, i am scared of finding out Amara is the mother of my child and she is the woman i love , I'm scared of knowing i left her when she

needed me the most , i was afraid of knowing i failed the woman i loved , she walked in closing the door behind her , i looked at her.

Megan: Ipek told me about what happened to Amara.

Me : I pushed her (sobbing) what sort of a monster am i ? What kind of a person am i Megan?

I held my mouth and cried , my whole body was shaking.

Megan: It was a mistake.

Me: It wasn't i did it intentionally, i knew she had an incision and i pushed her! I was a selfish bastard!

Megan: No ! You were not ! What was she doing there in the first place !

Me: Don't make this her fault cause it's mine , nothing you say will make me look good . I pushed a defenceless woman on the ground. Just go please , i want to be alone.

Megan: Alpha please i want to help you through this please just let me !

Me: Let you in ?

Megan : Yes please i promise i won't hurt you.

Me: Promises! Promises! Just get out !

She held my body , colliding her head on her chest , she stood

so close to me , her breast were pushing against my torso .

Megan: I'm not leaving you , I'm here to stay through the bad and good times. I will always be with you.

She held on me tightly. Mute knocked on the door.

Mute: Alpha , the are police men downstairs.

Megan: Policeman?

Me: I'll handle this.

Megan: No don't go ! What if they came to arrest you?

Me: Lets go find out.

We walked downstairs and the two policeman looked around the house.

Me: How may i help you gentleman?

Policeman: Alpha Smith?

Me: Speaking.

He took the cuffs off his hip and approached me , Mute held the gun on his hip , i held his hand.

Me: It's fine Mute.

Policeman: Alpha Smith you are under arrest for assaulting Miss Amara McKenzie .

Megan: No this is nonsense! This is wrong ! I'm coming with you.

Me: Megan i will handle this stay with Junior.

Megan: But..

Me: No buts ! Stay with the baby Mute will look after you !

Mute: I'll call your lawyer .

Me: Don't do that neither.

Mute: here you go again with your nonsense .

The cops walked me out the house and loaded me in the Van driving off , Megan stood on the drive way looking at the car . I just wish they lock me up in the darkest cell. I needed some time alone. We got at the police station and they walked me in and took me to a holding cell , i walked in and looked at the filthy place , how do people live here ! I laid down on the bed looking at the roof.

STEVE

I got a call from the station commander informing me about Alpha's release .

Me: Don't you think we could make a plan about this?

Commander: Your son is getting into way more trouble now. First it was drinking and driving now Assault what is next ?

Murder?

Me: Me and you been friends for a long time now , come on my friend his just a little boy that is still learning the ways of life , he doesn't know better.

Commander: I believe in third chances but this will cost you.

Me: I don't care how much it is , i don't want my son spending a night in a cell.

Commander: I will see where i pull strings .

Me: Thank you .

Nandi walked in the house , she was a bit tipsy holding her heels. I looked at her as she took a bottle of wine from the cupboard, she sat down on the couch and drank from the bottle

Nandi: (mumbling) I had a good day with Thandeka if you wondering.

Me: I actually am not ! While you busy gallavanting the streets looking like a whore ! Alpha is being arrested!

She looked at me , placing the bottle down .

Nandi: What ! Where is he?

Me: You asking me ? You were having a good day weren't you keep enjoying your day as i Steve Smith do what i am always

good at .

Nandi : And what is that you are good at ? What is it!

Me: Getting you guys out of trouble! That's what i do ! That's what I'm used for . I'm the trouble sweeper !

Nandi: we didn't ask you to clean our messes Steve! We never did !

Me: Oh is that right !

Nandi: Yes go to hell Steve! Go burn in hell !

Me: (chuckles) I will .

I looked at her as she tilted on the table taking the bottle and drinking from it . I wanted to walk right to her and strangle her or rather let her to rot in the mental asylum.

AMARA

I was given food and some water with pain killers, i had to go through the pain of having another incision again. I fixated the pillow behind me rising my lower body. Jaden walked in the room but not as Jaden as Dr Jaden. He checked my wound that was not covered up .

Jaden: See now , you will heal properly and i hope you will stop being stubborn and actually listen to me this time.

Me: No i won't, I'm fighting for my child and nothing will stop

me , a few pushes on the ground won't stop me .

Jaden: Well you will be glad to know Alpha has been arrested, i made sure the hospital wrote a letter to the police station and he was arrested.

Me: You did what ! Are you mad who asked you !

Jaden: Amara i am trying to help you .

Me: (yelling ) Did you hear me ask for your help ? Did i !

Jaden: Why are you yelling?

Me: because what you did was stupid!

I got off the bed and held on my stomach.

Jaden: Where are you going? Amara please lay down .

Me: No ! I'm getting out of here ! You took away Alpha from Junior now his left with that witch alone !

Jaden: She won't hurt him !

Me: How do you know huh? Can you read minds and emotions? Don't piss me off. Where are my clothes?

Jaden: (sulking) fine , I'm done helping you , you are on your own ! I'll go get your clothes.

Me: Thank you ! That's the only right thing you will be doing now.

Jaden: I don't even know if this is being stupid or what but the is definitely stupidity in this mix.

Me: While you still wondering please request a uber for me , i need to go to the police station.

He got my clothes and walked in tossing them on the bed then walked , i got dressed and walked out the room , even though it was a little hard to walk but i was used to pain anyway. I walked to the exit and got in the car that was waiting for me. He drove me to the police station. I walked in approaching the front desk , Alpha was walked out the cells he stood at the door looking at me while the policeman took off his cuffs. He launched to me brushing his wist as i took steps back i don't know but i was scared of him now , this man pushed me , he harmed me.

Alpha: You got me arrested, what do you have to say for yourself?

Me: Nothing.

Alpha: Did they operate on you well?

I looked at him , what kind of a nonsense question was that ? How dare he even utter those words from his mouth , Didn't he know he did this to me , i can't even stand straight because of him.

Me: i didn't come here for a social chat with you.



Alpha: Then why?

Me: I came to drop the charges.

Alpha: (Laughs) Really, you love me that much?

Me: I didn't do this for you , i did this for Junior, i can't bare the thought of having him alone in the house with Megan. I don't even think about you anymore, i dont think i love you anymore .

Alpha: Oh so you have fallen inlove with that doctor of yours?

Me:What are you talking about , I am not dating Jaden.

Alpha: (smiles) Jaden that's a sweet name , no wonder his punches were sweet too , weak for a man.

Me: You fought with Jaden?

Alpha: He fought me.

Me: Since you out i would like you to go back to junior.

Alpha: Yes Mem.

He walked to the door . As Mute came to pick him up .

Mute: Lift Amara?

Me: No thank you , I'll walk.

Alpha: How long can you walk ? You can barely stand up straight , swallow your pride and get in the car .

Mute helped me walk to the car , he opened up the door for me , Alpha looked at him while his being nice to me. He closed the door and got in.

Alpha: That was such a gentleman act of you

Mute: How did you expect her to get in the Jeep without assistance?

Alpha: Amara is a big girl , she can take care of herself quite well.

On the road we were quiet, as Alpha kept staring at me on the review mirror , his eyes sinked at me. The car stopped infront of Grace house. He looked at it and nodded his head.

Alpha: Not bad.

Me: What?

Alpha: The house it's actually liveable.

Me: It's a house why wouldn't it be liveable ? Just because you live in a mansion that doesn't mean you have to look down at people's homes , the house you saying is not bad , feels twice as much warmer than your big cold house.

Alpha: You talk so much , close the door behind you.

Mute scoffed, i would laugh to if i was him.

Me: Excuse me.

Alpha: Close the door.

I got off the car and slammed the door. They drove off. I am not even getting a thank you for getting him out of jail . I walked to the house and open the door.

Grace: Amara? You should be in hospital.

Me: I know i had business to take care off.

Grace: Good grief you are such a fighter you just like your mom.

I looked at her.

Me: You know my mom?

Grace: uhmm , i just was guessing.

Me: No don't lie to me , you knew my mom? This means you know my family , please help me find them take me to them.

Grace: (sobbing) I am your family , I'm your grandmother Amara.

Me: No ! How? Why didn't you tell me?

Grace: I was scared on how you will receive the news on how you will react towards me.

Me: Tell me who is she? Is she still alive? Does she look like me? Why did she give her children up ? Weren't me enough to her?

Grace : She didn't give you up . Rose ran away with you.

Me: What do you mean Rose ran away with me?

Grace:She was still young Amara , she was a baby herself. She was still a child (crying) I failed to protect her . I failed my baby girl.

Me: Grace what are you talking about ? Please tell me.

Jaden walked in the house, he looked at Grace.

Jaden: Ma have you taken your pills.

Grace: Jaden please give us a moment.

Jaden: You already a minute late Ma what if you get a blood clot , no please whatever you were discussing with Amara can wait.

Me: But Jade...

Jaden: (Yelling) AMARA Please , just because you don't care about your health doesn't mean Ma should be careless about hers , she's getting old her immune system is weak she needs more care than you so please .

Me: I'm sorry , i just wanted to talk to her for a minute.

He got her up from the chair and walked her to her room, god i was curious on what she wanted to say , i wanted answers i needed answers. I walked to the door and looked at him as he

gave her pills.

Jaden: Lay down for an hour please .

He tucked her in and Grace closed her eyes. He walked out the room closing her door

Jaden: I don't want no one to disturb her sleep.

Me: I would never hurt Grace Jaden.

Jaden: If you say so.

Me: What is that supposed to mean?

Jaden: Amara can't you see everything you touch turns to dust , you come a whole lot of problems and I'm afraid if you stay here any longer you might be the death of my Mom , she doesn't need the stress you putting her through.

Me: Are you kicking me out?

Jaden: No i am not , just saying.

Me: No you are , just say it Jaden be man enough to tell me to go !

Jaden: Maybe you should just accept your child is better off with Alpha and Megan , mean look at you , you can't even make a right decision nor look after yourself, you depended to much on your sister now Alpha and you lost them both, now that you have no one to depend on your life is crumbling before your

eyes.

Me: Why you so mean? Is because i went to drop the charges?  
Is it because of that !

Jaden: I don't have the energy to argue with you cause it won't bring me no gain. I'm going to bed.

He left me standing in the hallway . I walked to my room and sat down on the bed . I didn't understand why he was so angry to me that he even thought it was best my child lives without me , was i that bad of the person , am i that weak?

MEGAN

The nanny had Junior with her . I sat down on the couch looking at the door . Alpha could walk in any minute now. The latch slight open he open up the door and walked in .

Me: Baby, are you fine?

Alpha: I have been in for a couple of hours why wouldn't i be fine Megan.

Me: I'm just checking.

Alpha: I'll go upstairs, thank you Mute.

Mute: No need to thank me.

He walked up the stairs , Mute looked at me and walked out the door , i followd him out.

Me: Mute , may i have a word with you.

Mute: Sure what's wrong ?

Me: I have a job for you.

Mute: You have a job for me?

Me: Yes and I'll pay you very well i promise.

Mute: (laughs) Really? Trust me you can't afford my services Mrs Alpha but because you are Alpha's wife i can do whatever you want no need to pay me.

Me: Thank you.

Mute: So what is bothering you.

Me: I want Amara , i actually need her location

Mute: Oh , i can actually take you there now , we just came from dropping her off at the house she's living in.

Me: ( grins) Really? That would be really helpful.

Mute: unless you won't hurt her , she's going through a lot right now she doesn't need any more stress.

Me: I won't stress her.

Mute: I'll take you tomorrow, i have work to catch up on.

Me: (disappointed) Okay .

He walked to his Jeep and left. Damn it ! I walked inside the house. Alpha had just had a shower , he walked down the stairs wearing his boxing gloves , the nanny was feeding Junior . I tapped my phone on my palm.

Alpha: I'm going to the basement for a second don't interrupt me.

Me: okay.

I looked at the nanny , she was good with Junior but doesn't change the fact Junior had to be breastfed. Instead of me locking Amara up in a cabin how about i make her Juniors nanny. She will be able to breastfeed him without Alpha being suspicious of anything. And it's a win win situation to us all , she will be able to be close to her child and i will be close to Alpha and still maintain my position in his life , i walked to the basement and peeked through the slightly opened up door , he was really letting out his frustrations on the bag , weighing down heavy punches as the bag swung around the room. He took a a punch and the bag swung off the hook falling on the floor. The loud bang as it dropped frightened my body that acted out of pulse and let out a light scream. I held my mouth and moved away from the door , he stopped for a second and listened, i heard footsteps approaching the door and i hid in the corner he said he wanted no one to disturb him and here i was in the basement. He opened the door and looked at around i



held my breath thank god i was behind the door , he walked in and the door closed. I walked the stairs and took a deep breath as i walked in the house. I took my baby and held him close to my chest kissing his head.

Me: Mommy is doing this for you , i have to put my needs aside and get Amara in the house even though i know the three of us living in the same roof is risky bur i have to do it , i guess my motherly instinct is kicking in , i love you Junie you my boy , my baby. Forever will be.

I rocked him through the room , kissing him countless times.

41

ALPHA

I got ready for work . My body was warned out, i was so tired my knuckles were burised. But i can't afford to lack from work for another day . We had deadlines to meet with a big tycoon in Hawaii. That wanted his money to be washed and shipped i was talking about a whole bulk of money , now with the bank being under transfer as we were buying the land it was on it will be much easy laundering the money. I sat on the bed wearing my shoes.

Megan: Baby i have decided.

Me: On ?

Megan: I know you will think this is stupid of me but i want a new nanny.

Me: What's wrong with the one we have.

Megan: She is just not good with Junior .

I got up from the bed wearing my watch and looked at her as she laid under the black sheets with her red silk lingerie that had her cleavage exposed to me.

Me: You are his mother you know what's best for him , if a new nanny is what is best for him then that's fine with me , as long as you know that person and trust her i don't want my son kidnapped for money gains , just be careful.

Megan: Good thing we both know her and trust her.

Me: Who is it?

Megan: (smiles) Amara.

Me: ohh , okay.

Megan: Just that?

Me: What do you want me to say then? Argue with you?

Megan: Yes put on a fight and tell me I'm stupid for taking that woman in to look after our baby after such accusations she stated about Junior being her son.

Me: I got no issues with Amara , if she is what is best for my son

then get her a place to stay.

Megan: She will live with us , in that way we get to watch her all day while she's with Junior we don't want her running away with our child.

Me: Fine i got no problem with her living , I'm going to work now.

Megan : Alpha promise me you won't sleep with her or even look at her directions or develop any sexual tension between you guys.

Me: (chuckles) Why would i sleep with my son's nanny? Come on i can control my sexual urges pretty well.

I walked towards the door.

Megan: No kiss?

Me: Oh yeah .

I walked to the edge of the bed and kissed her.

Megan: I love you.

Me: Same.

I walked downstairs to the nanny and held my son , gave him a thousand of kisses and gave him back. I drove to work. Ipek approached me with my day schedule, god i had back to back skype calls with clients. This is going to be a long day , i had

checks to sign and video calls explaining to clients why they haven't gotten track on their shipments. Steve called me.

Me: Pop's.

Steve : You fucking up your duties.

Me: I know am at work right now cleaning the damn mess , tell them to have whisky and chill their money is coming.

Steve: Don't disappoint me Alpha I'm trying my best to keep us float but if you keep on letting your personal problems disturb our business the will be hell to pay , didn't i warn you about love ! I did look how soft you have turned out.

Me: (angry) I am not soft !

Steve: (yelling) Then show up , show me you still the Alpha i know ! Handle this mess ! pull through!

Me: You just like pissing me off ! You always nagging! If you think you can do a better job than me take your damn shady business elsewhere! I am the boss ! I don't take no damn orders !

I hung up and tossed the phone on my desk , Ipek knocked on the door.

Ipek: Mr Smith.

Me: (yelling) What !

Ipek: I'm sorry I'll come back some other time.

Me: Ipek what is wrong !

Ipek: Your arrest has made headlines.

Me: So i can't get arrested in peace now , my life is headlines , vultures feed on my downfall. Let me see.

She handed me her tablet, they all were making assumptions about my arrest other's saying Chloe's parents opened a case of rape against me. This was just bullshit.

Ipek: They bashing you calling you a rapist.

Me: well it's not the first time. Get a list of all the newspapers that wrote fake news about my arrest and hand them to my lawyer .

Ipek: And say what sir.

Me: He knows.

Ipek: Okay I'm on it right now.

She walked out the room , a man can't even get arrested in peace cause the are people lusting over what to say on my life. I built this name and earned it ! I will not let anyone drag my family name through the mud.

AMARA

I was in the house washing dishes as Grace was outside

watering her roses , i wanted to continue the conversation we had last night but i didn't want to jeopardize my relation with Jaden , these people have been good to me and I'd hate for Jaden to hate me if something happened to Grace. She called out to me. I dried my hands approaching the door. My eyes met Megan's and everything i went through when Junior was born flooded back. My heart got heavy filling with hate and anger.

Me: You have a nerve showing your face here .

Megan: I'm not here to fight.

Me: You started a war the minute you walked out that door that night with my baby living me to die.

Megan: Lord i thought we were over that.

Me: Over that? I will never be over what you did to me Megan .

Megan: What do you want me to do ? Kneel and beg you for your forgiveness? I thought coming here and asking you to be in Junior's life will be enough for an apology but it was just a mistake coming here , Mute let's leave.

Me: No ! Please don't go , I'm sorry.

God did i just apologize to her , what was happening to me ? But i had to suck up to her. For the sake of my son.

Megan: I'm glad you apologized.

Me: Please take a seat , coffee, tea, juice?

Megan: No thank you sweetie , let's get this over and done with.

Me: Okay.

Mute gave us space , she sat down and placed her hand bag on her lap.

Megan: Well i came to ask you to be Juniors nanny , i know it's too much to ask but Junior needs to be breastfed and since you have the breast and milk I'm trusting this on you.

Me: So you want me to be my son's nanny.

Megan: Point of correction. I am his mother, you are the nanny that's going to take care of my son for me.

Me: If that's brings you a peaceful night sleep then okay fine we'll call this arrangement that. Did Alpha agree.

Megan: I had to beg him for this. Looks like he hates you.

I swallowed a lump , that hit hard than i thought it would. Why was he hating me , i had the right to hate him for leaving me.

Me: I don't care how he feels about me is non of my business , he can go to hell.

Megan: Then we have an agreement, Mute here will escort you to the house tonight i don't want you being seen by Paparazzi

and think we in a love triangle after what happen between you and Alpha Miss White dress , you have a good day won't you .

Me: (fakes a smile) You too.

Megan: Thank you i actually need that being a mom ain't easy.

She got from the bench approaching the gate. She waved at me getting into the car and drove.

Me: You witch!

Grace: Was that her?

Me: Can you imagine ! She still has the guts to laugh and smile .

Grace: To be honest you are giving her all the glory .

Me: I would even kneel before her and wash her feet for my son Ma.

Grace: I'm proud of you .

Me: Proud of me? But i did nothing to make you proud.

Grace: And your son is the happy boy alive to have a mom like you , you humbled yourself for your son , you place your pride aside and became selfless for your baby.

Me: (sobbing) I had too cause now i will hold him , breastfeed him.

Grace: And remember what you went there to do , don't allow



that boy to distract you it will be hard , it will be draining for you to watch the man you love making love with another woman , it will be difficult being in the same roof with a man you shared a bed with and you can't even touch anymore. But whenever it hurts to breath , whenever you feel like you don't understand what's happening in your life just close your eyes , take a deep breath and say God i know this is your plan but just help me through it and say Amen.

Me: Thank you Ma.

I grabbed on her tightly wrapping my arms around her , god keep this woman for me please. I guess Jaden was right it was time i learn to depend on me now it was time i completely focused on getting my child back and stop giving myself too much to Alpha . Alpha wasn't going to help me with anything he isn't going to hand my baby over to me. He was just going to keep hurting me and terrorising my feelings.

Grace : Arrgh even though i don't want you to leave but i have to let you go claim your baby back. You doing this for him after all.

Me: No one else.

Grace: I'll help you pack a few clothes.

Me: Okay.

We walked to my room and she helped me pack a mini bag , i

hope me finally leaving will bring Jaden happiness and peace. He will know that me and my problems are no longer squatting in his mother's house .

NANDI

I got up from the bed. God the headache i had was massive. I got up and wore my gown approaching the kitchen. Mute was making himself a sandwich .

Me: God my head.

I took out a bottle of water and drank from it , he stole glances of me and looked down . I looked at him as Thandeka's words circulated in my mind " get yourself a sweet little boy to play with" . I wiped my face , what was wrong with me , i can't mix Mute in this mess, his just a sweet boy and he wouldn't dare touch me in any funny way he respected Steve like his father. And he ia young and good-looking , he is a image of Steve while he was still a young man. The tight vest he was wearing hugged on him tightly , i looked at the muscles that shown on his torso and traces of his abs. God i was checking Mute out. I drank from the bottle as he chewed on the sandwich.

Me: You look hungry don't you.

Mute: uhmm yes i just had too much work to do with The big Boss so he said i could grab some food here. Been on the road so much.

Me: You look exhausted too baby , look at your eyes , oh you poor thing.

Mute: (confused) Are you okay Mem?

Me: I'm fine i just feel sorry for you.

Mute: This is my life , I'm used to this.

Me: Do you have a girlfriend?

Mute: Uhm Not quite.

Me: Mhhh , such a handsome young man that's a shame , if i was your age id be chasing after you.

He narrowed his eyes in confusion and laughed awkwardly.

Mute: I have to go

He collected his leather jacket and walked out the kitchen. I made the poor boy feel uncomfortable. I got up and walked to him.

Me: Mute.

Mute: Mem.

Me: I'm sorry i shouldn't have said all those things to you. I'm just going through an emotional crisis and i just wanted to get someone to help me , you know.

Mute: i understand Mem I'm sorry i couldn't help.

Me: No it's fine , you can exit and go back to whatever you were about to do.

Mute: I will and Mem , you are beautiful and in due time Pop's is going to recognize that . He might not show it but he loves you dearly.

He forced a smile of his face. Then walked out. I looked looked at his gorgeous butt on the blue jeans as he walked out the door. What has Thandeka done to me . I laughed and walked in house meeting Steve. Looking at him just sent my mood to zero.

Steve: Good seeing that smile , wonder who made you happy.

I walked to him and fixated his collar.

Me: Man are like animals ain't they , when they see gorgeous prey like me what do they do Steve? They hunt me down and I'm afraid my dear husband , I'm getting tired of running.

I held his waist walking towards my room. He was boiling.

Steve: Say what? Nandi come back ! Nandi i won't repeat myself ! Come back here ! What nonsense wild animal's and prey's are you talking about?

I walked to my room and closed the door. I heard him mumbling in anger in the corridors.

Me: (laughs) Oh my word look feels Threatened.

I walked to the bathroom and soaked my body in a bubbly bath.

MEGAN

I got in the house and tossed myself on the couch . I called the nanny taking Junior from her.

Me: Sisi we have to let you go.

Nanny: why did i do something wrong?

Me: We don't need your services anymore.

Nanny: But Madam i really need this job.

Me: I know you need this job sweetheart that's why i decided to pay your salary for the next 5 months .

Nanny: (sobbing) i would really appreciate that Madam.

Me: I know that's why i want you to have the money, just till you have some income.

Nanny: i will really miss my boy

Me: He will miss you too.

She got up and kissed Junior then took her bag and walked out the house. That wasn't as hard as i guessed. Junior looked at me with his brown shiny eyes.

Me: Ain't you handsome? mommy's handsome little boy. Yes you are , mommies little boy.

I walked to upstairs feeding him his milk bottle.

JADEN

I got home from work and looked at Amara , she was in the kitchen cooking. She actually was a nice cooker the divine smell that filled up the house. She looked at me forcing a smile on her cute face .

Me: Smells good what is the occasion?

Amara: I just thought i should prepare dinner for you guys and just thank you for letting me stay with you.

Me: Oh that sounds like a goodbye.

Amara: (chuckles) It actually is.

Me: Where you going to ?

Amara: To live with my baby.

Me: Oh so Alpha finally came to his sense?

Amara: Something like that. Here have taste.

I got close to her as she inserted the spoon in my mouth, she burnt my lip with the gravy , she dropped the spoon and held my cheeks blowing my lip.

Amara: (blowing) I'm sorry , I'm sorry, is it better.

I looked at her on the urge to kiss her. I have never been this

close to a woman in a long while. So close to feminine lips . I leaned to her grasping on her soft lips before i could even hold get a hold them entirely , she gently let me off.

Me: I'm sorry i just ..i will.. i will go to my room and leave you finish up .

Amara: Yes that's a good idea.

Me: Yeah , i will leave.

I walked away from her approaching my room. That was really awkward moment over there. I freshen up and sat down on the dining table , Amara really went all out. Not mentioning the beef stew that was really mouth watery , couldn't wait to dig in.

Grace: Let's say Grace before we eat.

We closed our eyes and held each other's hands. I held Amara's hand tightly. She looked at me .

Grace: Amen.

Amara: Amen.

She pulled her hand off my touch and we began eating. The food tasted good , she is a splendid cooker.

Grace: My god Amara this is amazing.

Amara: (giggling) Thank you Ma.

Me: It really is good , good job.

We ate up laughing and talking , i have to admit i was going to miss her. I helped her wash the dishes and pack them up.

Me: So you are living tonight?

Amara: Looks like it.

Me: You be a good girl at that house okay.

Amara: (laughs) Why wouldn't i?

Me: Mean you will be with Alpha.

Amara: Alpha is seriously not a problem.

Me: I hope so.

She looked at me and smiled. A car hooted outside.

Amara: That must be Mute.

Me: But why are they transporting you at night.

Amara: She's trying to hide me i guess from Paparazzi.

Me: (scoffs) Oh i forgot that Alpha is a well known guy.

Amara: Unfortunately.

She got in her room taking out her mini bag , i assisted her with it and we walked to the door , She and Mom shared a long hug .

Grace: Do come visit okay.



Amara: I will Ma.

She walked to me and gave me a hug. She smiled and got in the car . I looked at the guy that was in the drivers seat. Was Alpha involved with criminals or what ? This guy looked like a top hit man that has thousands of bodies on his conscious. She waved as they drove away.

ALPHA

I had a cup of coffee as Megan paced in the house preparing a room for Amara. I placed Junior on chest .He loved having skin to skin contact with me , i have used it to calm him everytime he cries uncontrollably the tricky part is when he sucks on my torso , his tongue will curly on my skin tickling me.

Me: (smiles) Your son is sucking my chest.

Megan: Don't allow him to suck Alpha.

Me: I had a bath so it's okay.

Mute hooted outside.

Megan: She's here.

Me: Yeah i guess.

The door open up and she got in holding her bag.

Megan: Amara welcome.

Amara: Thank you , Alpha good evening.

Me: Amara , please come in , let me help you with the bag.

I took the bag and handed her Junior. She eye's were watery , she set her eyes on him and held him tight against her heart.

Megan: Let me have Junior, it's past his bedtime .

Amara: Ohh , i can put him to bed if you like.

Megan: No you can go settle in your room you will spend time with Junior tomorrow.

Amara: Okay.

Me : I'll take you to your room.

We walked up the stairs to the spare bedroom. Passing by the main , she stopped and looked at the door .

Amara: Still can't believe you sharing the same bed you used to share with me with another woman. You settled for a family that doesn't consist of me.

Me: Your bedroom is this side.

She walked in the room and looked around. I place the bag on the bed and walked out.

Amara: Goodnight Alpha.

Me: Night.

I closed the door and walked to my room.Megan was laying on

the bed wearing a black thong her whole body was exposed to me.

Megan: You took a while.

Me: What is going on?

Megan: I'm offering myself to my husband.

Me: Not tonight.

I walked over to Junior's crib and kissed him , got in the bed and covered my body.

Megan: Alpha , did you look at me.

Me: I did .

Megan: and?

Me: I'm not in the mood.

Megan: (clicks her tougue) you are always not in the mood .

She hit me with a pillow and switch off her lamp. What is she thinking, she expected me to have sex with her while Amara is laying on the next room.

STEVE

I sat outside on the balcony having a glass of whiskey. Mute walked in and sat besides me. He had a glass too we both looked at the stars that filled up the galaxy.

Me: Something is bothering me.

Mute: What's wrong sir?

Me: Nandi is cheating.

He choked on the glass of whiskey coughing.

Mute: Are you sure?

Me: Yes , are you fine?

Mute: No I'm fine I'm just shocked. Mean it's Mam'Nandi we talking about here.

Me: She is cheating if you heard how she talks to me , someone is feasting on my wife Mute why in the hell would i lie to myself!

Mute: I know you wouldn't.

Me: I want you to follow her.

Mute: Follow her where?

Me: Be her shadow but make sure she doesn't see you.

Mute: Okay , i will do that Pop's , but i don't think she's cheating that's extreme maybe she just wants you on your toes

.

Me: No , Nandi would never tell me that men are behind her when they not , i want to find out who is the bastard! I need a

name , address everything every information about him ! I swear when i get my hands on him , he'll wish he never stepped on the same land my wife is walking in , he will regret seeing her in a lusting eye.

Mute: You love Mem don't you?

Me: I married her Mute.

Mute: Then show her you love and appreciate her.

Me: I show her that every day by providing security and looking after all her basic needs so that she lacks nothing.

Mute: Have you tried maybe dinner dates and picnics.

Me: Dinner dates? I don't have time for dinner dates.

Mute : Make time Pop's if you don't want her to cheat . Make time for her show her you love her.

Me: Since when have you became a relationship specialist?

Mute: I'm not I'm just giving you old man some youth advice

Me: Did you just call me old me?

Mute: (laughs) allow yourself to age .

Me: (laughs) Never!

We shared a glass and laughed. it was quite noon and i was tired we broke up our little bonding time as i went to bed.

AMARA

I woke up thirsty and reached for the a glass of water , i looked at the bedside. I forgot i wasn't at Ma'Grace place they kept a jug of water on my table everytime when I'm thirsty. I took my gown and walked down the stairs . I opened up the the fridge taking out a bottle. It was dark in the kitchen couldn't see anything. I bumped a vase on the table it tilted i grabbed it in time placing it nicely on the table.

Me: (whispering) Gosh that was close.

I turned bumping into a built up body , my hands touched his warm skin. I took a deep breath releasing the tension with my mouth.

Alpha: You should normalize lighting up the kitchen when getting yourself some water at night, you might get shot.

Me: You should normalize to stop being jumpy all the damn time.

He leaned against me lighting up the kitchen.

Alpha: So why you up, sleepless night?

Me: where's your wife? Ain't she cold?

Alpha: You can't stomach the thought of Megan touching my body isn't it?

Me: I really don't care, i came for my son here not you.

He just smirked at me , we both stared at each other longer than we ever had in such a long while . I finally gave up because the longer i looked at him, the more i became vulnerable to him , he wanted that , he wanted me to be vulnerable to him.

Alpha: Do you feel something for me Amara?

I swallowed hard because i never expected that question , i couldn't even look him in his eyes , i feel coming to stay here was a mistake.

Me: Goodnight Alpha.

He grabbed my wrist tightly gripping on it .

Alpha: Amara i am asking you a question and i need an honesty answer.

Me: Can you please let me go .

Alpha: No .

Me: Ain't you bossy!

Alpha: I want an answer Amara.

Me: Does it matter ?

I found my voice and i feel way more confident in my words i had to make him back off , i can't have him distracting me from Junior.

Alpha: That's not an answer Amara . I need you to be honest with me . When I'm closer to you, do you feel something?when you look at me , what do you see?when i touch you like this do you feel the warmth deep inside you.

He held my waist pulling me closer to him. His fingers ran on my thighs he softly touched my skin.

Me: (sobbing) Alpha please , i don't want to plays these games no more, I'm tired of this rollercoaster ride we taking. I just want my son, i came for my baby, You are not someone worth being loved, loving you is a losing game Alpha i always lose , get hurt and i don't want to feel that way anymore , train wreck when you let her take my baby , you let everything crash when you let me go.

He smiled , the curve on his face. All i can do is look at his beautiful face . I wanted to hold him and comfort myself against his lips and kiss him senseless just wrap my arms around his neck like the olden days. But i was a coward i couldn't. I broke down and cried. He backed away from me looking down.

Alpha: I'm sorry , i just wanted to know how you feel about me.

Me: You remember me don't you ?and you like what you see.

He gently laughed and walked up the stairs looking at me , i took the bottled water and switched off the lights going to bed.



I walked past their bedroom looking at the baby crib next to the wall , it had blue lights circulating around changing colours, i leaned at the wall lusting to walk in and watch him sleep. If someone told me being a mom is this hard , i would've taken contraceptives. I walked to my room and sat down having water , i got up packing my clothes in the wodge , i couldn't go back to sleep. I walked to the window and looked at the moon keeping myself occupied. I felt Rose's presence in the room . I felt her and it felt good knowing i had an angel above looking down at me.

42

MEGAN

Alpha got up early and went to work. I peeked in the window and watched him drive away , i took Junior to Amara , she was still fast asleep. I shook her , she looked at me yawning.

Amara: Morning.

Me: Feed the baby.

She got up and sat on the edge of the bed. She carried him placing his head on her arm and breastfed him. Junior latch on. She flinched and laughed.

Amara: Ouch , his latching aggressively.

I looked at her enjoying breastfeeding her baby . She kept

brushing his forehead . I walked out the room giving them space , watching her breastfeed him was really taking a toll on me , i didn't want that cause it will create a unshakeable bond between them. I walked downstairs and made myself a cup of coffee. She walked downstairs holding Junior still breastfeeding him

Me: Come seat down after doing whatever you doing.

Amara: Okay.

She sat down besides me holding a glass of water. Patting Junior's back , he let out a burp .

Me: I hope bringing you in my home won't lend me into regret.

Amara: Rest assured I'm not here for your man sweetheart , you can have him

I looked at her , isn't she getting too comfortable in my house. She drank the glass of water , the awkwardness of this whole situation , i also was preparing myself for a love triangle mean Amara and Alpha had or even better still have love for each other, the feelings they have won't just go away because of me.

ALPHA

I had a meeting with my dad and Mute about a shipment at the warehouse. We looked at the bulks of money in 5 suitcases. Each going to be transported abroad.

Me: So this was the last load i was working on , our financially records are drowning the is way too much money coming in .

Mute: We should lie low for a while cause the hawks are on our tale , got information from my inside man they still investigating money laundering scheme in all companies.

Steve: I second you Mute maybe lie low for a week or so. But we have to get to work after the week we can't keep our clients waiting on their money.

Me: So where are we storing this Merchandise.

Steve: It must remain here , we can't be transporting these bags at the same time a lot can go wrong.

Me: I agree and we'll have to depot security here, just for safety.

Mute: I'll handle the security.

Steve: so how's being a dad son?

Me: I'm showing up but it's much easier with Amara in the house now.

Steve: Amara is staying with you?

Me: Yes

Steve: Wow , who would've thought, you living with your wife and another woman under the same roof? Hope nothing

happens between you two.

Me: No one knows what the future holds.

Steve:What is that supposed to mean?

Me : I don't know too , I'm trying to figure it out. I'm going to work.

I walked out the warehouse and drove to work. I got in the office and Ipek walked in carrying my coffee.

Me: My dairy ain't full today?

Ipek: Not at all , you have all the free time to go about your work just a few forms to sign and we good to function for today.

Me: Close the door behind you.

She walked out closing the door. I was really worried about the merchandise staying at the warehouse, it's a lot of money and i had a bad feeling about it being there, something bad is going to happen i can feel it . The door open up , i looked at the light skinned legs with an anklet on , she peeked in smiling.

Me: Diana.

Diana: Hey stranger.

Me: I'm busy.

Diana: Don't lie , friendly visit i brought you lunch , medium

rare cooked steak with your vegan salad?

Me: Come in then.

She knows I'd never say no to steak. She walked in and sat down as I opened up the takeaway.

Diana: Don't worry I didn't put any love potion in even though I would've.

Me: Still have jokes I see.

Diana: (smiles) I'm just glad I had to spend time with you even if it was a short while, you happy with Amara means she gave you a child.

I choked on the steak juice, she handed me the tissue. I coughed continuously.

Me: What are you talking about?

Diana: You and Amara? Mean you love her, it was quite some unique love cause no one would've thought you would go for someone like that. Why do you look so shocked?

Me: I don't remember Amara being pregnant for me, I feel the warmth deep inside me everytime she's in the room or I touch her but I don't remember spending time with her.

Diana: (confused) That's weird, do you remember being in the room with her when she gave birth.

Me: I was asleep the whole time , i woke up and Megan was besides me with a baby.

Diana: Megan (laughs) The Megan that paid me to seduce you in your office i have been waiting for her call.

Me: She did what !

Diana: Me and my big mouth, I'm sorry i have to go.

She quickly got up heading to the door , i rushed to her and grabbed her hand .

Me: You will sit your skinny ass down and tell me everything you know!

Diana: I know nothing.

Me: You have two choices Diana , i don't beg you should know that , you tell me what you know or you die.

Diana: But i just told you all i know. You cheated on me with Amara and made a mock out of me after your picture with her were leaked to the media , i was angry at you ! I was mad at me for allowing myself to think you will ever love me or open up to me. But you didn't you fell inlove with some rusty chick from wherever she came from , you fell for Amara rapidly and the was nothing i could do about it.

I sat down at the edge of the desk , i was now confused how can one not remember a thing about the mother of his child ,

if Amara is the one that carried Junior, where did Megan come from? Why is she claiming to be the mother the cut on her abdomen is it just a front to shut people up. Diana kept going on and on about her and me , she was just crowding my mind with nonsense , i had a mini attack as i dig deep in my thoughts, the more i stressed my mind by applying to much thoughts on it , i got a headache was that even normal? I held my forehead sitting down.

Me: (yelling) Can you shut up for a second ! This is not about you it's about my son !

Diana: I'm sorry i just.. got carried away .

Me: Get out , close the door behind you .

Diana: Okay.

Me: Take this food with.

Diana: You not eating anymore?

Me: No , take it.

Diana: What am i going to do with it?

Me: Throw it away .

Diana: But i bought the meal for you.

Me: How much did it cost you?

Diana: It's not about money Alpha.

I took my wallet and took out a few bills and tossed them on the table. She collected the money and walked out the room. Ipek got me some headache pills and a glass of water. I looked at my social media timelines browsing through as i saw the picture of Amara and i. Megan has a lot of explaining to do same goes to Amara , i need clearance on this whole nonsense that's going on here. I called Mute .

Mute: I'm busy here at the warehouse what's going on?

Me: Drop everything and get me the hospital CCTV footage of the night Junior was born.

Mute : Why what's going on?

Me: Something Fishy is going on in my life and i hate fish.

Mute: Okay I'll handle that.

Me: Remember the Doctor i had an altercation with?

Mute: Yes .

Me: Get me his numbers.

Mute: Noted.

Me: Make it snappy i need the video and number before night fall

I hung up the call. But why wasn't there any pictures of the pregnancy or anything was i that private about Juniors



pregnancy.

JADEN

I walked down the hospital corridors towards this guy with black clothes , he stopped before me.

Mute: I'm Mute and i need your assistance.

Me: I'm Jaden with what?

He handed me his phone and looked at me. I laughed .

Mute: What's amusing?

Me: I'm sorry but I'm not into guys , i know i might be good looking but..

He took out a gun and pointed it to my tummy , looking sideways.

Mute: Just punch in your numbers Doc , I'm not Gay too.

I took the phone and saved my numbers, this was weird why was another man asking for my numbers .

Me: There you go is the anything else.

Mute: Where is the CCTV footage room?

Me: Why do you need that?

Mute: You may lead me to the room as you see I'm not really in a friendly mood today.

We walked into the elevator and he took out a silencer fasten it on the tip of the gun .

Me: Please don't hurt anyone.

Mute: that's up to them.

The elevator door open up , i walked him to the footage room , he knocked on the door.

Security: Who is it?

Me: It's Doctor Jaden.

Security: Doc please go downstairs you know you not allowed up here.

Mute rolled his eyes impatiently, i had a man with me that was impatient and had a loaded gun with.

Me: I'm sure we could work something out.

Mute: Step aside princess.

Me: This is a hospital please don't cause a scene.

I stepped aside , he back up to the wall and launched at the door kicking it down , the door slight open. The security gaurd, lifted his gun ready to shoot. He pointed his gun at him .

Mute: put the gun down sweetie , you don't want to do that.

Gaurd: What do you want !

Mute: put the damn gun down cause between me and you i will walk out of here alive.

The Guard wasn't prepared to back down easy , Mute pulled the trigger shooting at his arm. The gun automatically dropped on the floor as he groaned in pain. My Doc instincts rushed in as i walked to him trying to ease the blood. Mute went through the CCTV footage and took out a tape.

Mute: Thank you for your involuntary co-operation.

He inserted his gun on his hip and walked out the room.

Guard: Who the hell was that !

Me: i don't know too , i was at the wrong corridor at the wrong time. Let me take you downstairs , I'll be able to assist you there.

He got up and we walked to the elevator , he wasn't hit that much it was just a scratch the bullet grazed him. I cleaned the wound and applied a plaster.

AMARA

I laid Junior to sleep and had a shower . It felt so good to be around him , i don't care what the circumstances were but i was happy to be close to my son. Megan was having wine watching tv , Alpha stormed in the house , he just walked past us in anger walking up the stairs , Mute walked in and looked at

me.

Me : what's wrong with him?

Mute: He won't tell me anything too.

Megan: I'll go check up on him.

Mute: I advise you don't if you want to still be in one piece.

Megan: What's wrong with him?

Mute: Some weird shit is going on with him and his livid.

Me: I have to go get Junior he can't be with Alpha while his like that.

We all stood down the stairs , looking up.

Megan: Mute go check on him.

Mute: You are his wife to be you should know how to calm him down.

Megan: Fine i will go check .

She walked upstairs as tipsy as she was she managed to get and disappear into the hallway.

Me: What is wrong with him.

Mute: I got him the CCTV footage of the night when Junior was born.

Me: And what was in it?

Mute: He saw his father hugging him .

Me: So that makes him that angry?

Mute: He stabbed him with a needle behind his neck.

Me: Oh wow , that's even more complicated.

She got down the stairs raising her hands.

Me: What happened.

Megan: I will have me a glass of wine .

Me: Megan what's wrong?

Megan: i didn't have a chance to talk to him , he slammed the door in my face , i just can't! What kind of a man is this moody .

She walked to the kitchen. One of us had to go check up on him , i looked at Mute.

Mute: No , i have work to do.

Me: Please.

Mute: Let him cool off he will okay.

He walked to the door exiting the house , i walked up the stairs and approached the office. He looked at me as i walked in closing the door behind me .

Me: Are you okay?

Alpha: Why wouldn't i be?

Me: You walked in the house very angry and you scared us so we worried about you.

Alpha: Can you just walk out.

Me: No .

Alpha: i knew you'd say that you just like annoying me.

Me: What's wrong?

Alpha: (smiles) nothing is wrong.

Me: Oh okay if you say so.

He walked out to me and held my hand kissing it. I looked at him as my body quickly warmed up.

Alpha: Will you tell me what happened to you the night of Juniors birth.

Me: Can i not?

Alpha: Don't make me mad ? Just don't piss me off. Tell me what happened.

Me: So you can do what about it?

Alpha: Just know i forgive a confession but i can't forgive something i found out on my own tell you bestie downstairs i

said that .

Me: What is that supposed to mean?

Alpha: Leave.

He walked to the door and opened it up for me. I walked towards the door and looked at him.

Me: I miss you.

I reached out to him and kissed his chest , my hand brushed against his chin. And i walked out. I walked downstairs to Megan that was drinking wine .

Me: He knows.

Megan: Knows what?

Me: He knows I'm Junior's Mom and that you are making a fool out of him.

Megan: No ! What am i going to do?

Me: I don't know but his angry he might not show it but his furious. You need to come clean.

Megan: I can't! I won't! Ever since you came here my house hasn't been peaceful ! You are a curse.

Me: Don't you dare ! You came to me remember i never begged you to come stay here so don't you even dare !

Megan: Then get out ! Leave!

Me: I'm not going anywhere , if i leave I'm taking my son with me.

I looked at her and smiled. I took the glass of wine and drank from it.

NANDI

I had myself a glass of wine and sat down watching tv. Mute walked in the house, he looked at me and turned around.

Me: Mute please don't ignore me.

Mute: I'm not ignoring you.

Me: Don't lie. Come seat down so we discuss this as adults

Mute: Is Sir home?

Me: No he is out with friends probably will be back late.

Mute: Oh okay.

He sat down , i poured him a glass of whiskey and handed it to him. He drank from the glass as i made myself comfortable next to him.

Me: I wanted to apologize yet again for my actions they were uncalled for and wrong, i understand you being tense when I'm near , you have been working for Steve for far to long isn't it?



Mute: Yes.

Me: You know he has been cheated on me right.

Mute: I do.

Me: And why didnt you say anything Mute , do you know who they are?

Mute: It wasn't my place to say anything Mem.

Me: Oh so it's okay i be the fool in this marriage, is it fine when Steve collects illnesses and sickness from outside and come deposit them in me.

Mute: I'm sure Sir knows safety precautions he would never put your health in danger like that.

Me: You think he cares don't you?

Mute: He does care.

I took my glass and drank from it. I felt hot tears boiling up my eyes.

Me: He locked me up in a mental asylum for 9 whole months ! He stole 9 months of my life , and you claim he cares how naive of you Mute.

Mute: I'm not naive

Me : You young and naive you won't understand how it feels to love someone and they just rubbing you the wrong way to not

love them?

Mute: Young and naive ? I see

Me: Or maybe you a big boy?

Mute: Big boy i am.

Me: Mhhh i see , but can the big boy drive curves.

He looked at me and let out a light laugh , I had a sip on the wine twirling my tougue on my lips catching every last drop of the wine, suddenly , i feel his finger moving across my bottom lip. He placed his whiskey glass on the table and leaned closer to me. My heart skipped a beat as his lips touch mine. I held his neck , he wrapped his arms on my waist. I pulled back for a moment and got up from the couch. I could hardly catch a breath , i was heavy breathing a little horny. He looked at me and laughed. I don't even know what lead to him kissing me but i liked it.

Me: We shouldn't go there.

Mute: Then force me too, inform the boss i was here.

He got up and walking to the door.

Me: Mute can you please not tell anyone about this.

Mute: What?

Me: Good, you may leave.

He walked out the room , i heard the door close behind him.  
God what came over me , atleast it was just an innocent kiss ,  
we did nothing big. I had another glass and walked to my room  
, wine makes ladies do despicable things.

ALPHA

For every flower that burns in the shade of evil , a bud is born  
with chaos as it's closed petals of darkness will yet again open  
up beautiful as it is blooming only evil, destruction and  
devastation , the very root of the beauty is poisonous . I had a  
shower only those words circulating in my mind , i wrapped a  
towel on waist walking out the bathroom , Megan walked in the  
room she tried keeping her balance but i saw right through her ,  
she was drunk wet . I looked at her as she sat on the bed  
burping.

Megan: (sobbing) Please don't leave me (crying) I know i fucked  
up your life , just that you pushed me away Alpha, you treated  
me like dirt , i wanted to make you happy , i want you to see a  
future with me . I tried everything. But you just saw nothing but  
a cheap whore while you saw only the good in Amara .

I lotioned my body looking at her as her body reflected on the  
mirror. I wrapped my boxing gloves .

Megan: Don't leave me please , we have a son together.

Me: Which son?

Megan: Junior.

Me: (chuckles) Ohh , i tend to forget his yours, sometimes it just hits me that maybe...maybe you stole him from Amara. But let's not go there won't we. That's the thing when it comes to women , a man just can't trust you whores !

Megan: I did nothing wrong!

Me: Then why are you crying?

Megan: It's the wine.

I walked out the room and walked to the basement. So she is really going to keep up with the lies , i was still going to investigate this whole Junior situation and when I'm done with them i will be ripping evil out with the roots . I had a breath taking fight with my bag . Spent a whole hour in the basement and walked up , i dried my face walking past Amara's room , she was still awake wearing a gown standing across the room looking out the window . I walked closer to the door sliding it open.

Amara: Hi.

Me: Why are you still up?

Amara: Same reason as you.

Me: You were boxing your frustrations out?

Amara: No , i am not feeling okay, i miss her so much & every night i stand here and look at stars hoping she's one in the sky watching over me.

Me: Oh , may i?

Amara: I don't want to step on Megan's toes.

I walked in the room and tossed the sweaty towel on the bed.

Me: I came to apologize Amara.

Amara: for what?

Me: I don't usually do this cause I'm not usually wrong but I'm sorry for pushing you down , i know my actions hurt you physically and not to say emotionally i ripped your heart off your chest . I know you here for Junior and not me so i won't push you into doing anything you don't want to do. (Smiles) So can we start all over.

Amara: ( laughs) Just like that start over?

Me: These nothing stopping us from starting over.

Amara: Yes the is , Megan is still in the house with us , We could start over Alpha , we could be a family me , you and our son.

Me: I'm not ready for that yet.

Amara: ( yelling) Will you stop being a coward! Just take this

leap of faith with me , don't think about it , just love me Alpha.  
Love me again , i miss you , i miss us . I want you , don't you  
want me?

Me: We should keep our distance for now.

Amara: I don't want to keep my distance, i want to be with you.  
I love you , i want to touch you, i have this hole in me , that you  
can only fill in , you complete me Alpha. All this hurt i have  
been through, it all faded away because I'm with you and my  
son . You both are the important to me. Okay fine then stay  
with me tonight. I just want to be wrapped in your arms just be  
next to you can you do that for me?

Me: I will leave you to sleep , goodnight.

Amara:(sobbing) Do you love her?

Me: No i don't.

Amara: Oh , then why are you standing so far away from me ?  
(laughs) I'm getting tired of this whole situation, I'm getting  
pissed of the thought of you in a room with her. God no I'm not  
this desperate, please , please don't allow me to belittle myself  
like this.

She paced around in room crying , she turned at the corner of  
the room and opened up the window , the cold night breeze  
blew at her , she inhaled raising her head up and let out a loud  
sigh, i walked towards her.

Amara: This is what you want , you want to see me like this .

She wrapped her gown brushing her arms. I walked to her and place my hand on her shoulder settling it down.

Amara: (sobbing) Don't.

Me: please don't hate me.

Amara: Don't you dare touch me , get out.

I walked away from her and walked to the door. I stood at her doorstep looking at her as she wiped her tears sniffing .

Me: I'm trying to make my way back to you.

Amara: then why are you so angry at me .

Me: I'm not angry at you ! I'm angry with the fact you let this go on , you let Megan play me ! You didn't force my hand to investigating this further ! You broke my heart Amara.

Amara: (laughs) I think you heart was way broken before you met me , I'm just a victim of the sick and twisted game of money and power your family is playing. And i will be damned to have you drag my son in , deal with your demons far away from my baby Alpha.

I walked out the room and closed the door. As much as i wanted to spend the night with her , i would rather not , dad was right love has soften me up .

43

STEVE

I woke up and got ready for a meeting with an associate, thing about Thabo he doesn't know, i know his after my bread and butter , he really thinks he got all this covered. Well i wasn't going there for a friendly visit i was there to warn him to back down from cleaning money , this is my ground , my territory. I wore my black suit and sealed the look with a black pair of shiny shoes. I walked towards the kitchen for a cup of coffee. Nandi was already up having breakfast she looked at me.

Nandi : Ain't you dressed up what's the occasion?

Me: I'm going to handle important business.

Nandi: Is that so ? Wow.

Me: You need to understand not all of us seat around the house an drink themselves to death .

Nandi : Mean why wouldn't i drink myself to death after all i got my dear husband and son doing their most to keep my wine shelve full of bottles.

She smiled gulping a spoon of yogurt.

Me: I even lost my appetite.

I walked out the kitchen to the door , Mute walked in.



Mute: You already heading to him.

Me: What will i be waiting for , let's go , have you set up men at the warehouse?

Mute: I did .

Me: Are they loyal full capable for that job.

Mute: I handled that well they my men i know all of them and they are trustworthy.

Me: Let's go then

I got into my car and he sat in the passages seat , we drove to Thabo's house, fucken traitor i thought we were friends but all along he was gunning on dethroning me . Been handling this business since i was a teenage , I'm in my 50's right now. The car stopped at his drive way , he is a goon himself he had security around his house. Mute is very cautious and often jumpy when it comes to situation as these he was already holding his gun on his hip looking at the security guys.

Mute: Security tight.

Me: They won't stand a chance.

Mute: My point exactly, with a right plan i could penetrate this house and walk out without begin seen.

I chuckled to his under raging statement, we walked to the

door and pressed the bell. Thandeka opened up the door with a smile .

Thandeka: Goodness Steve long time.

Me: Indeed , Wow Thabo really grounded a beautiful wife here.

Thandeka: (giggles) I see you still have your charming way.

Me: Our little secret.

Thandeka: Please come in.

She let us in leading us to the dinning area , the house is fully furnished dazzling here and there showing the is really a woman on great style living in it. I looked at their portrait that was hanging on the wall.

Me: I see you and your husband are still solid.

Thandeka: Whiskey?

Me: Raw.

Mute: On ice thank you.

Thandeka: Uhm ..yes , we are solid got flaws of our own but that doesn't mean we should give up on our marriage, we got kids after all.

Me: How are the children anyway?

Thandeka : Drew is a gown man he is taking after his father

and Abbygail and Ayra are still in school.

Me: Mhhh I see.

I sipped on the whiskey glass looking at Mute the news of Drew getting into his father's shoes wasn't what i wanted to hear , I'm afraid this Drew is the one influencing his father in part taking in the laundering business.

Thabo: Steve , this is an unpleasant surprised.

Me: Old friend.

He walked in and we shook hands. He looked at Mute .

Thabo: Alpha?

Mute: Mute Sir.

Thabo: Oh excuse my mistake, i thought you were Alpha cause his also into black clothes haven't seen him , damn these boys grow up super fast.

Me: Tell me about it.

He sat down and looked at me.

Thabo: So what did i do to be honored such a visit from the Smith family.

Thandeka: i will let you men do what you do best.

She got up and left the room , i circled my finger on the glass

looking at Thabo.

Me: Heard from a flying bird , you want to get into the laundering business and i just thought damn instead of hearing rumors why don't i come find out for myself.

He sat on the couch unsettled, he took out a box of cigars as i stared at him copping off the head and lite it up puffing.

Thabo: Cigars?

Me: Mute a cigar?

Mute: I'm good.

Me: I need a straight answer from you .

Thabo: What if i am jumping into the laundering business mean Steve you have wealth, you have an empire and we thank you for paving a way from men like me. But i think it's about time we stair the boat together.

I smiled and drank from the glass , placing it on the table , shifting my bum to the edge of the couch.

Me: That's the thing , I'm the captain of this ship Thabo , i don't share , the will only be one bull in this kraal and that bull is me ! You will bow down and drop all this nonsense that's circulating in your mind or the will be a war ! Be careful cause power is thicker than friendship.

Thabo: (laughs) You just a toothless dog barking Steve, you don't scare us no more.

Me: Oh is it? Tell me what's stopping me right now from redecorating this dining area with your brains? ( he blinked and looked at me) Exactly you get where I'm coming from don't you? ( smiles) Yes old friend so this is how we are going to do this , you will back the fuck away from my business , it's actually your choice , I'm a very generous man .

Thabo: And if i don't?

Me: That's still your choice too but unfortunately a bad one , but who am i questioning your choices?

Mute: ( chuckles) A very bad one , very very bad.

Me: These nothing i hate like the killing of woman and children! I despise man that fail to protect their families! Greed ! Greed ! My friend can be very dangerous, mark my words. I would stay for long and we chat and catch up but unfortunately i got business to attend to.

Thabo: You just threatened my family?

Me: No i didn't , i was just letting out a friendly warning.

Thabo: You don't know who you messing with.

Me: (laughs) Show me ! Come at me with your best ! You want it don't you ? Come get it ! I will kill you Thabo , you and your

little bastards! I'll wipe you from existence. That my dear friend is a threat . I make the call in this war ! I run the laundering business! Me , Steve Smith . Stay in your lane Boy !

Thabo is known for having connections throughout the world associated with dangerous people but the good thing about this situation i knew all his contracts and none of them wouldn't dare double cross me. Mute got up from the chair as we approached the door.

Thabo: Steve .

Me: Yes

Thabo: I'm coming for everything.

Me: (smiles) Let's play.

I walked out the door to the car , i was low key angry but at the same time excited, nothing excited me like a fool taking me on cause i know in the end I'll win. We drove out the yard . I took my phone and called Alpha letting him know how my discussion with Thabo went.

Alpha: You did What!

Me: I did what any man would do?

Alpha: Oh! you placed targets on our backs ! Is that what a man does ? Are you freakin kidding me !

Me: Just prepare yourself for anything , i will have your house guarded.

Alpha: That won't be necessary i can take care of my family

Me: i hope so .

Alpha: How stupid can you be calling on a war because of money you know we don't need , we could've just worked together with Uncle Thabo .

Me: I don't work with no one.

He hung up the phone breaking our conversation.

Mute: What did he say?

Me: What he is best at criticizing and always acting like he can do a much better job.

Mute: To be honest you should've let Alpha handle this , mean his good in business strategies .

Me: This needed no Business strategies , it needed to be adressed head on ! I am not scared of Thabo ! His a peasant when it comes to me a nobody ! I just need you to focus on securing the warehouse and moving the cash as soon as possible we don't need no weak links right now and that money is our weak link.

Mute: I will focus on the order.

## AMARA

I got Junior and breastfeed , bathe and dressed him , seeing his cute face every morning made my day , i am really blessed to be his mom , and my operation was healing slowly and steady but i was getting better , atleast i could stand straight. I walked in Megan's room and laid him in his baby bed kissing his forehead , Megan was still snoring the wine knocked her out . Junior slept so peacefully after sucking me dry . I walked to my room and wore a sweater i stopped looking at my body at the mirror, i was losing weight rapidly. My body was just hanging, that's probably reason enough for Alpha to even avoid touching me or even loving me who would love such i looked at the hanging meat on my waist god what has pregnancy done to me . I wore the sweater and walked downstairs to the kitchen , saw him pacing around the kitchen.

Alpha: Look who finally showed up.

He looked at me staring, i felt he could see how insecure i was about myself , i no longer feel comfortable in my own body , i disgust myself while he is over there still looking amazing , he had a navy blue shirt on and a jeans could see the muscles on his torso and the traces of his abs. I looked at him and flashed a smile, i lightened up a little.

Alpha: Can i get you something to drink? Coffee, tea or milk?



Me: Milk.

Alpha: Lucky for you , i woke up hungry for a sandwich so I'll make one for both of us.

He walked to the fridge, i looked at him , what is going on ? Is he trying to kill me or what? Why is he nice to me. He collected the ingredients as i watched him build up the sandwich. He added salt and pepper to the fillings and closed it up with another slice.

Me: Can you cook?

Alpha: ( smiles) You don't have to cook to know how to make a sandwich Amara. ( playfully) fool.

Me:( giggles) I know right.

He handed me the plate cutting the sandwich in half , sitting besides me , i looked at the plate that had only two slices of bread and fillings inside guess we were going to share. He took a slice and ate up , weird as it was i felt heat radiating between us , igniting my body. He looked at me looking at the untouched half sandwich.

Alpha: It's not poisonous Miss Mackenzie.

Me: Oh yeah, thank you .

I had a bite and drank down the milk , he lifted up his finger wiping away the bread grains on my lips , my vaginal muscles

contracted as my vulva's became itchy , my little dirty demon in me shouting " Yes , please , touch me like that, nice and slow " would he just gobble me like he used to , can he please give me dick and just make up for lost time? Can he satisfy my sexual urges yet again please .

Alpha: How did you sleep?

He moved his finger from me and held his mug .

Me: Shouldn't you be going to work?

Alpha: No , I'll working from home. Or will it be a problem for you ladies?

Me: Not at all.

Alpha: Good , remain in the house, don't leave without informing me , okay.

Me: Uhm Okay , should i be worried?

Alpha: No , i just want to know where you are at all times. Eat up .

I chewed on the sandwich and down it down with the milk , i was still hungry but i didn't want to make him feel bad for the snack he made it was sweet enough for him to even consider making me a sandwich.

Me: So what will you be doing the whole day cause i know you

won't be working the whole day.

Alpha: I'll be doing exactly that .

I cupped up his face and leaned. taking deep breaths as i descended to his lips. Laying my forehead on his and reaching for his lips as we collided, a whole lot of emotions flow in forgetting all the hurt i have been through , he feels, smell like everything is going to be alright. For a slipt second i expected him to embrace me too as i embraced him , he kissed back but i didn't feel him touching me , i wanted affection and love. He got up from the seat i held his hand.

Me: You not running away from me.

Alpha: I'm not running.

Me: ( yelling) Why won't you.. ( lowers her voice) I love you.

I bottled up tears as i professed my love to him .

Alpha: I'll be at the study if you need anything.

He walked upstairs leaving me yet again. My phone rang in my pocket i took it out and checked wiping my eyes and cleared my throat.

Me: Ma .

Grace: You have already forgotten about your old lady.

Me: (sniffs) Not at all , I'm just busy, Junior is a hand full.

Grace: Aww , how i would kill to hold him , we miss you.

Me: I miss you too .

Grace: Wanted to go visit Rose's grave today just to clean .

Me: Can i accompany you? It's been long since i visited her .

Grace: Ofcause why not we could have coffee after and you tell me all about your stay there.

Me: I'll meet you in an hour.

Grace: Okay baby , bye.

Me: Bye.

I hung up the call and wiped my face. I got upstairs and prepared for my leave , i need this , getting out the house and being with someone that actually wants to see me happy and am going to take Junior with me. I had a shower and dressed up , Alpha was in his office and his door closed , i packed Juniors bag and carried him downstairs as my uber arrived.

DREW HUGHES ( Thabo's son)

I'm Drew Hughes a businessman / entrepreneur / martial arts teacher aged 37 , I'm into advertising too just like Alpha Smith, the great douchebag . I'm my father's first and last son , after me are two girls Abbygail and Logan my step sisters , Thandeka is my step mother. She married my dad months later

after my mom's death , never liked her since then but we try to co-exist for the sake of my sisters . I love my sister's dearly they mean the world to me so does my dad , I'm much more of a family man , love keeping everyone happy. I carried my bag on my shoulder as i exited the OR Tambo airport. I wore my black sunglasses and my bike jacket. Home sweet home , my arrival is a going to shock my father cause i have been living in Landon for a whole year. My advertising company is in london , couldn't wait to get home and be reunited with my sister , Alpha will be so mad I'm back . He and i have never seen eye to eye , we always fought in school mostly for girls and for the hottest boy in the school title and he always won but we grown now , those are things of the past , i always believe we will be bestfriends as our father's are close friends but Alpha has a ego and is very arrogant he believes in being superior in everything practically he takes after his name Alpha . I walked out to my bike that was parked at the parking lot .

Me: Hey baby girl , daddy missed you , ain't you sitting here looking all sexy.

I looked at my bike and brushed the leather seat , i sat down as my wife bowed for me descending down , revving the horn she spat smoke creating a loud bang. She is still fit. I revved her one more time and she speeded off , i raised up the front as she balanced with her back wheel god i missed my bike and mostly i

missed home.

GRACE

Jaden had already left for work , i was left alone at the house having coffee i was waiting for Amara , she was on her way . I looked through the window as a car stopped in front of the house.

Me: This must be her.

She got out the car carrying a baby , i got goosebumps already , lusting to see my great-grandson. I opened up the door she got in the yard.

Me: Oh my goodness.

Amara: Ma ( smiles) i missed you so much.

Me: Oh my sweethearts

She approached me as we shared a mini hug.

Amara: Is Jaden home?

Me: That workaholic, is this him?

Amara: (smiles) Yes this is Junior.

We got in the house and sat down at the dinning area, he was asleep and he looked exactly like Amara. He was just Rose , he screamed the McKenzie bloodline. I held his little body looking at him , Amara made herself a cup of tea.

Me: You did good , his perfect more than what i expected , oh Amara.

Amara: Thank you Ma.

She sipped on tea as i placed Junior on my chest brushing his back.

Me: So how is your stay there? Are they treating you good.

Amara: Yes they are , i expected harsh conditions from Megan but she's actually minding her business while i mind my baby.

Me: I see and Alpha?

Amara: Alpha , I don't even know what's going on between us , there is a spark but i don't know why his so afraid.

Me: Maybe his scared of hurting you again.

Amara: Ma in my life the have been heartache and pain , i just don't have the power to face another heartache but for him i'd go an extra mile , i want to feel wanted by him.

Me: Give him time will you , his probably still dealing with his hurt , bare with him , just be there for him.

Amara: I scared i might be losing him , his slipping away from me again , i don't want to give up on him and i , i don't want that cause i love him too much to let him go. It kills me how i feel hopeless when it comes to us. ( tears forming) I don't want

to talk about him. This is no time to weep over Alpha .

Me: Let me go grab my bag so we leave for grave yard.

Amara: Okay Ma.

I handed her Junior and walked to the room collecting my bag . We waited for a few minutes for the uber that's what she told me i thought we were using a taxi , we got in the car and left to visit Rose. Seeing my daughter's grave and visiting her every once in a week broke my hear , cause i should be the one laying in that grave and Rose should be the one coming to visit me , couldn't have god spared her life and took mine instead. We arrived and got off the car , we took the mini walk to her grave and sat down , I introduced Junior to Rose and we kneeled down and talked to her.

MEGAN

I woke up and ran to the toilet to vomit , i sat down on the cold floor as my head felt heavy, the headache i had was unbearable.

Me: God my head.

I got up and washed my face rinsing my mouth. I walked out the bathroom to the bedroom , i looked at Juniors bed and headed to my bed.

Me: Wait wait , where is Junior?



I got up from the bed and checked the crib , Oh hell no ! That bitch better had not ran away with my son . I looked at his things and saw a few of his things where gone i took a deep breath and pretended i was crying , i walked out the room to the hallway and stood there crying and screaming.

Me: My baby!

The study door opened up , Alpha walked out , i threw myself in his arms and held on him tight crying.

Alpha: What's wrong?

Me: She took Junior and left ! She kidnapped our baby.( crying)

Alpha please my baby

I held on his built up chest as he pushed me away , i just sticked to him crying.

Alpha: (yelling) Can you get off me !

I walked away from him wiping my crocodile tears .

Me: She's gone, i failed our child.

Alpha: did you check downstairs?

Me: No .

Alpha: Go check. ( raging) I told her to not leave the house without telling me , Fuck !

He clicked on his phone annoyed, i could see he was heating up

as he tried Amara's call , we both walked downstairs and looked around , he walked outside and the security confirmed she took the baby and walked out. I looked at him from the distance as he slapped the security gaurd. God damn could he be any sexy when infuriated.

Alpha: Fucken fool ! What did i say to you !

Security: She said you approved.

Alpha: What was so hard to come in the damn house and verify ! If something happens to my son you will be sorry ! Fucken amateur !

He walked towards the house on call , i was happy a little like yes Amara keep piss him off , keep pushing him into my arms.

Me: Anything leads baby?

Alpha: Mute , i need you to organise man for me , Amara has disappeared with Junior. Now Mute ! Drop everything and prioritise finding Amara. Geez ! What's so hard to understand in my orders.

He dropped the call and walked in the house.

Me: What are we going to do? I'm so scared.

Alpha: Don't be she will come back.

I held my mouth and sobbed.

Me: ( crying) Ohh my god my poor baby , i failed our child.

He walked towards me and held my head against his chest , i wrapped my arms around him as he embraced me.

Alpha: Junior is safe with Amara, she wouldn't dare hurt her. I just hope she did nothing stupid cause i won't forgive her for this. I will hunt her down , she wouldn't dare run away with my son.

I laid my head on his chest with my hand against his heart , could feel his heart knock my hand , god a strong beat he has .

NANDI

I got a call from Mute asking me if there were any locations i knew Amara would be in , i was surprised to hear this .

Me: No why?

Mute: She ran away with Junior.

Me: What ! How?

Mute: She has been living with Alpha and Megan for days now

Me: And I'm only hearing about this now ?

I got up and wore shoes taking my car keys, my poor baby he must be devastated.

Mute: Please any information is useful.

Me: I'm sorry but i have nothing to say , i don't know where she will be.

Mute: Okay thank you.

He hung up , i quickly wore a coat and walked to the door as it was about to rain outsides, the was a cold breeze that suddenly hovered in the sky as the clouds gathered.

Steve: Where are you going?

Me: To Alpha's house.

Steve: Why is the something wrong?

Me: Apparently Amara ran away with Junior.

Steve: I warned you about this girl , that girl is bad news but you just don't listen to me no watch you will see she will call us demanding ransom.

Me: This is unlike her Steve.

Steve: Well if it's unlike her where is Junior? Did he get off his cripp bed and walked out the house to explore the world?

Me: the must be some sort of an explanation to all this.

Steve: I see no explanation here deal with the facts your angel is the devil.

Me: Can you shut up instead of helping out you busy here running your mouth.

Steve : She will come back , she's a orphan Alpha is the only person she has stop stressing ourselves.

Me: Maybe you right, I'll call Alpha.

Steve: yes plus a storm is brewing outside.

I sat down on the couch and called Alpha he wasn't picking up my call , i called him about 5 times, he called back.

Alpha: What ? I have a pandemic on my hands.

Me: Son , is she back?

Alpha: No , i guess Mute informed you .

Me: I'm sorry you going through this.

Alpha: I have to go.

Me: Alpha ?

Alpha: Yes.

Me: I love you baby.

He hung up without answering me , i looked at Steve as he sank in the couch , a heavy thunderstorm striked , this was a bad sign.

ALPHA

I looked at the sky that was covering up , heavy rain was coming. I was impatient and Mute and his man came up with

nothing , i couldn't help but think maybe it was Uncle Thabo, mean he and dad are fighting and this happens. I sat down on the couch as Megan sat besides me , she held my hand . I got up from the couch and walked upstairs. This waiting was doing me no justice, i got in my room and opened up my safe taking out my gun , i loaded in 5 bullets and walked downstairs.

Megan: Where you going? Alpha where are you going with a gun?

Me: Mind your business.

Megan: Please my love don't do anything Stupid. Alpha!

I walked out the house to my car and drove off speeding to uncle Thabo's house , they have a lot of explaining to do ! As soon as i got in the yard i noticed a motorcycle and i walked towards the door , the security gaurds tried stopping me but i was already inside , the twin doors slammed on the wall as they looked at me . Drew was with them , that son of a bitch was back.

Me: Where the hell is my son!

Drew: Alpha .

Me: Don't Alpha me you piece of shit where is my son!

Thabo: Alpha what are you talking about.

Me: Oh ! So you want me to refresh your mind ?

I released a shot on the air the girls screamed in fear.

Thandeka: Just give him his son back please Thabo !

Thabo: i don't know what his talking about ! I haven't done a thing.

Me: You and my father argue and a few hours later my son and baby momma disappear? What a damn coincidence.

Drew: My father is not behind the disappearance of your baby mama champ, i would like you to leave you are interrupting our family time can't you see.

Me: Ofcause! I give you 5 hours to hand me my son and his mother or you will be family bounding in hell , Don't try me , Hughes.

Thabo: Alpha calm down son and come seat down maybe we might assist you.

Me: ( chuckles) Yes you might, by dropping the mother of my child and my son at my door step before midnight , cause you won't like what i am going to do to you all ! 5 hours! Tick tock , tick tock!

I walked out the door and got into my car and speeded off , it was beginning to rain now and i was worried not for Amara and Junior but for the Hughes. I never act irrationally Unleased provoked and this time ! I'm damn provoked! My family has

nothing to do with his greed war with my dad , the nerve!

AMARA

After visiting Rose we had cake and tea at a coffee shop just to chat for a while . After we were done since it was about to rain we had to split before the rain gets worse.

Grace: I had a good time with you and Junior.

Me: I had a good time too , i want to do this more orphan.

Grace: Then we will baby.

Me: I somehow feel happy ( smiles) I'm over filled with happiness.

Grace: I love you so much.

Me: I love you too.

We shared a kiss and a hug as her uber arrived , i waited for a short while for mine and i was taken home. There was a little thunderstorm and Junior just had to cry , i got of the car and walked to the house as soon as i walked in Megan ran to me and grabbed Junior off my hands.

Megan : Don't worry baby mommy here. What the hell do you think you were doing with my baby!

Me: We went out .

Megan: Out where ? Why didn't you tell us ! Who gave you



permission to take him with ! You sick psycho i don't want you anywhere near him ever again !

She grabbed his bag away from me as Junior cried , i don't understand where is sudden anger came from. I placed my handbag on the couch and wiping the rain droplets from my forehead. Alpha walked in , he looked at me , i looked at the gun that was in his hand , the rage and anger in his eyes.

Alpha: Where were you !

Me: I..i went out with Mam'Grace to visit Rose.

Alpha: Mhhh , ( yelling) after i strictly prohibited you from walking out that door without my consent!

Me: Why are you yelling?

He placed the gun next to vase on the table that was near the door. Walking towards me , he laughed.

Alpha: ( yelling) While you were out galavanting at the grave yard! I was out here looking for you ! I just made a fool of myself because of you !

I closed my eyes as he yelled at me with tears streaming down . I made him angry .

Me: ( mumbling) I..I'm sorry.

Alpha: You sorry? You always sorry Amara! Always damn sorry !

Fuck ! I had people out combing the streets looking for you .  
And all you have to say is you sorry ! Poor Amara always sorry  
and crying , I'm getting sick of you always sniffing and crying !

Me: (crying) I'm sorry , you didn't say why it was so important i  
stay in , i promise i would have stayed in.

Alpha: That's too late for your empty premises ! Now i have to  
go and apologies to the Hughes because of a disobedient baby  
mama ! Geez Amara i gave you simple instructions ! What do i  
do with you ! I'm surrounded by snakes , traitors and fools !

He turned away from me and wiped off his wet face . I blinked  
and wiped my chin that was flooding in tears.

Me: I disobeyed you right ? Punish me.

Alpha: (chuckles) You want to be punish you ?

Me: Yes , i need you to show me what you can do to me ,  
punish me , you Alpha right? no one disobey you and walks  
scout free , punish me , hurt me , i want you to show me the  
worst.

He slowly walked towards me and held me by my neck  
whispering in my ear.

Alpha: You want to be punished right!

He took off my sweater and ripped my t-shirt off . Stripping me  
completely naked. I covered my boods with my hands , he

walked to the door and opened up the door for me.

Alpha: Go stand outside in the rain till you have learned your lesson. (Yelling) Get out.

I looked at him and cried. Thinking about the cold i will inflict on my body from standing outside in the raining and cold breeze of the thunder showers . I slowly approached the door and looked at him.

Me: So is this meant to hurt me ? Cause i will handle the pain. I'll bare the humiliation.

Alpha: Yes you will ! Like the humiliation i will face because of you !

I took a step outside meeting the rain , the cold droplets met my warm body , quckily my body became cold , as they flooded my hair , i heard the door shut close behind me. Thank god the cloud covering made it dark so no one sees me like this. The ran kept pouring on my body, don't know but i felt happy being out here , i felt born again , washed clean by the rain. As freshening the rain was , i was freezing cold , my teeth grinding against each other ,i couldn't feel my feet and fingers. I stayed out for 15 minutes and felt a towel being wrapped around me. I looked at him.

Me: Has my punishment ended?

Alpha: Whatever you doing to me better stop here Amara ! I'm

trying so hard ... i wish i didn't want you. You are my curse. You make me feel so weak , so soft and i hate it ! I hate you but i love you more , i hate the fact of thinking about how much i love you and you killing me , i love you and i love you , I'm so inlove with you. Get in the house , your punishment is over.

He pulled me inside the house . And closed the door as the rain poured outside.

Me: I love you too.

Alpha: I hope the rain washed away your disobedience , go upstairs and have a warm shower , I'll bring you towels.

He wrapped my hair with a towel drying my hair . My heart was speeding, my blood ran hot. I rushed upstairs shivering, i got in my room and open up the shower and got in . God the water warmed me up pretty fast , i smiled a little hearing his rough voice saying he loves me , he hates me but he loves me more. The bathroom door opened up and he walked in holding the towels.

Me: Alpha .

Alpha: What ! Amara ! What .

Me: Ain't you cold?

Alpha: No I'm hot.

I walked to him and held his hand pulling him in the shower. I

loosened up the towel and held his crotch with my hands . I have never done this but the was a first time for everything. I got on my knees and held the crotch with botj my hands stroking the tip in.

Alpha:( groans) God exactly what i meant when i said you killing me.

I sucked on the tip cause the dick was a little to be for me to swallow it. I sucked till it was solid hard , veiny and stiff . He held me off the ground and grabbed my bum cheek and squeezed with his tougue circling in my mouth, I held on him tight as he lefted me off the floor wrapping my legs on his waist and he penetrated , i bite my lower lips as he thrusts in occupying himself in me , the pain stung don't know if it's the tempered womb or what but the was a discomfort.

Me: ( moaning) Aaaah oh my.

I screamed , heavy breathing as he pushed himself further in , he bite my ear and groaned in it whispering.

Alpha: Sssshhh , you want Megan to come join in?

I shook my head , flinching.

Alpha: This is your cock take it.

He sloshed in banging me up the shower wall , i sinked my teeth on his shoulder , crying.

Alpha: Should i stop? Does it hurt?

Me: No , no don't stop, just hold on me tight and come closer just don't stop . Mhhh oh god !

He wrapped his arms around my back hold me tight , keeping me grounded as he made his way with me. Painful as it was but it was enjoyable. He stroked me with every stroke paving it way in a painful manner , he was getting at me like he has been counting on fucking me up. he placed me down pinning my back as i held on the shower wall. He penetrated in bending me over and hitting it from the side . I held on my mouth with my hands slippery on the wet wall , he laid my back on his torso with his arm wrapped on my stomach another on my neck. I went silent taking that cock as the heavens claps for us , the rain was showering us , making heavy noise so Megan doesn't hear a thing , i wanted this but at the same time scared if she finds out she can take Junior away from us , she is on his birth certificate legally she's the mother . He kissed my ear as i moaned straining my voice box , my whole body zoomed out off a second , i reached down to my clit and rubbed.

Me: Oh goddd I'm cumming ! No please stop.

Alpha: ( chuckles) No don't say a word , hold on to me tight.

I grabbed his arm that was wrapped on my body , God he slowly he penetrated like a Gentleman , i held on my cut

abdomen, my vaginal muscles contracted i bite my thumb releasing.

Me: ( shivering) Oh my wordddd you going to hell ! (Panting)

He pulled out and picked me up walking me out the bathroom. He laid me on the bed and covered my wet body with a blanket . He sat down on the bed and kissed my forehead.

Alpha: I'm sorry for letting you stand out in the rain naked .

Me: know what will make it even more better?

Alpha: ( smiles) what?

Me: Lay with me and i will forget all about it.

Alpha: Tempting but i have some damage to fix control .

He took a towel and wrapped himself.

Me: No , don't go stay with me , please .

Alpha: Amara see you going again with your nonsense.

Me: I don't want you to leave.

Alpha: I'm steps away from you sweetheart , I'm not going anywhere anytime soon even if i ran away i will come back to you.

He got and approached the door. He placed his hand on the door knob.

Me: Alpha , I love you.

Alpha: ( smiles) i know.

He walked out the room and closed the door. I laid on the bed , I love this man , all the pain and hurt i felt just faded away when i held him in my arms, he completed me. Was i asking to much if i just wanted wanted him and my son . I just want us to be a family. Would i be evil if i just wanted Megan dead or for her to just vanish ? She is runing my life , and she just won't give up this fight , Alpha loves me not her what is so hard to understand in this , she can't make a man like Alpha love her willingly. I didn't make him fall for me , he just loves me and i love him. I pray she find's someone that will love her from the stars and back , i pray she finds the kind of love i share with Alpha , the kind of love that's written in a fairy tale world , i feel like beauty cause i found my breast. After all every beauty needs a beast to love and protect her from everything besides him.

44

ALPHA

I walked downstairs to have my morning coffee and look at some emails. I held the mug and had a sip looking at Megan she woke up in mother mode today, she was feeding Junior , she didn't know i knew she wasn't Junior's biological mother , i



couldn't stand the sight of her for what she did , i looked at her as she smiled down at Junior and kissed him , just a while longer and you will be out of you witch , enjoy it while it last.

Megan: Can't believe i almost lost my son , can you believe Amara? Babe .

I looked at her.

Megan: I think it's time Amara leaves we don't need her existence in this house , she has proven she has overstayed her welcome here.

Amara walked down the stairs and approached the kitchen. She looked at me as i saw she heard Megan , i drank from the mug.

Me: Amara is going nowhere.

Megan: Excuse me? She has betrayed us , she disappeared with our son.

Me: She came back.

Megan: ( yelling) That makes what she did right !

Me: I will not have you shout at me in my house, if you can't learn to co-exist with Amara you can do me a big favour and move out while you still at that leave my son behind.

Megan: A-Alpha but .. she ..

Me: Will you just shut up it's still early for your whining don't

ruin my morning .

Amara: I just wanted to apologize for what happened yesterday it wasn't my attention to make you feel like i ran away with Junior I'm sorry.

Megan: The nerve , you still have the nerve to apologize! I want you out !

Me:( demanding) Apologize to Amara .

Megan: (sobbing) She should be apologizing to us .

Me: I won't repeat myself , you will humble yourself and apologize to her , now!

Megan: ( softly) I'm sorry Amara.

Me: And you will tell her you forgive her and you have placed whatever happened yesterday behind you.

Megan: I forgive you ( sniffs) It's all in the past.

Me: Go upstairs , give us space.

She got up and took Junior with her , she was really upset and sobbing , i looked at Amara she was really sorry and regretted going out with Junior without telling us i have forgave her After all i can't stay angry at a woman.

Me: Come here.

Amara: No , what if she walks down and sees us.

I pulled her closed to me and wrapped my arms on her waist , she laid her head on my shoulder and hugged on me.

Me: Look at me , i know she scared you..

Amara: ( interrupting) Yes , she scared me but you scared me the most . The submission and obedience she gave you , I'm afriad i won't be able to do that , i don't want to be controlled like that.

Me: Don't be ridiculous Amara what are you talking about? She doesn't mean anything to me , i don't need her . I need you.

Amara: Then break all ties with her . Why you letting her spend more nights here , why you letting her bond so much with my child. I don't know how long i can keep up with this little set up we living.

Me: I have to go work.

I pushed her aside and collected my laptop and car keys.

Amara: You running away from me again , Not again , you not leaving me , we going to talk about this now ! (Yelling) Come back here Alpha !

I rolled my eyes annoyed , i looked at her.

Me: fucken pain in the ass , Just because i said i love you and fucked you , that doesn't mean you will disrespect me , you will adress me with respect , Amara McKenzie! And if the seat is too

hot for you to seat on you can gladly walk the fuck out , both of you get the fuck out ! I love you but i won't suck up to your nonsense!

Amara: I'm sorry , I'm just tired of feeling like a side chick or like we doing something wrong .

Me : We not doing anything wrong, you need to chill and stop worrying yourself.

Amara: Okay , have a good day , i love you.

I walked out the house and drove to the office.

DREW

We had breakfast as a family , it was quite good to be back home and hearing my sisters giggle along and make silly jokes.

Logan: So what is going to happen now that Alpha was here last night?we can't avoid what he said right Dad?

We all looked at her , why was she bringing this up now.

Thandeka: baby please we having breakfast.

She tossed the fork and knife on the plate and got up.

Me: Where are you going?

Logan: To my room to go hide under my bed ! We in danger and you here eating breakfast like Alpha didn't barge into the house and threatened our lives.

Me: Log please seat down the is absolutely no need to overreact like that , Alpha probably made a misunderstanding . I will personally go to pay him a visit.

Thabo: You are not going there.

He said calmly biting on his food. The girls looked at him.

Logan: But Dad ..

Thabo: ( shouting) I said he is not going there ! Whoever has a problem with that say another word ?

He looked at us infuriated. Logan walked to the corridors , i got up.

Abbygail: I'll go check on her.

Me: Okay Abby.

She got up and went for Logan, i sat down and looked at my father. Thandeka got up and walked out the room too leaving us men.

Thabo: I hope you heard what i said.

Me: Are you going to tell me what's going on?

Thabo: Yes i will , gladly i will.

Me: Then start talking cause i don't understand what's going on here ? Did you and Uncle Steve have a fallout.

Thabo: More than that .

Me: More than that ! What is more than that mean?

Thabo: He threatened my family he walked in my house and came to threaten me and my household and i tell you Drew that was a bad move .

Me: Why would he do that?

Thabo: Because i want to join the laundering business.

Me: What ! Why? We are doing fine in the gun business why ?

Thabo:It's not about why i want to join it's about when and i have already came up with a solid plan , i have mules in Steve's cycle and i have got some good news that will knock him off the top.

Me: I hope this got nothing to do with Alpha's Baby mama , we are not going to kill women and children in this shit ! Plus why are you fighting about this you all should just settle this as friends and work together.

Thabo: You think i didn't want that ! But unfortunately Mr Smith doesn't like sharing ! The disrespect i got from that man ! I will never forget, gear up son we going to war.

He got up and left me seating alone in the dining area i was really confused . And Father didn't go in much deeper length on the Ace card he has under his sleeves that will knock Uncle

Steve off the top. I felt this was complete madness and childish for them , i have to link up with Alpha so we dissolve this situation before it erupts two resourceful and powerful men going head on , the was going to be a lot of blood shed . I got up as the maids approached the table clearing it. I walked out to the door and wore my leather jacket. I speeded off my bike approaching Alpha advertising. Can say the company is big and it has been a lot of sucess , why was i even surprise? It's Alpha Smith company I'm standing outside of. I walked in the company and approached the evaluator , i approached the lady on sitting at reception.

Me:Hey.

Ipek : ( smiles) hi.

Me: Is Alpha in ?

Ipek: Do you have an appointment?

Me: Unfortunately not beautiful but i know he won't mind.

I flashed her my charming smile. She smiled too blushing.

Ipek: You can go in .

Me: Thank you Mem.

Ipek: Pleasure.

I walked in the office and looked around.

Alpha: Drew.

Me: Alpha , you have really outdone yourself.

Alpha: Don't tell me you just came here to shower me with compliments.

Me: No , I'm here on a matter i think we both need to work together on.

Alpha: before you say anything send my apologies to your family about yesterday, there was a big misunderstanding about my baby mamma and i couldn't help but think because of the stupid fight between my father and yours

Me: i understand champ. But I'm here because i want us to talk about exactly that .

Alpha: Take a seat.

I sat down as he laid back on his chair brushing his trimmed eyebrows.

Me: Alpha i think we should work together and resolve this issue, mean there's no need for this whole fight , we could work together.

He chuckled and brushed his forehead looking down , he leaned on the table and looked at me letting out a light laugh.

Alpha: you think i didn't suggest that to Pop's. I also agree with



you Drew but you should know how hard it will be to convince my father otherwise. Listen here , i am in no war with your family, i have a little boy to protect. If your father tries or even thinks of targeting my family , I'm coming for all of you , in the mean time I'm no threat to you and your family and i will gladly inform you if there is anything that will come to my attention on hurting any of the woman in your family , you can believe i will tell you , I'm not in support of nonsense.

Me: I know and i will do the same.

Alpha: Good then , i think that's all.

Me: Yes , can we go out for drinks sometime.

Alpha: Unfortunately I'm a very busy man i don't do drinks i do business.

Me: Still full of shit i see.

Alpha: ( laughs)really now?

Me: I'm trying to be nice to you since we never seem to see eye to eye but you turning down drinks with me? What have you lost your touch Mr Smith? Are you scared you won't be able to keep up

Alpha:if you'd excuse me i have work to wrap up.

Me: ( scoffs) Okay champ , I'll be on my way.

Alpha: Send my greetings to Aunty Thandeka and the girls.

Me: will do.

I walked out the office meeting the beautiful lady outside reception. She smiled at me one more time as i walked to the elevator.

AMARA

Magan had locked herself in the room with Junior , i was worried because i haven't breastfed him all morning. I had a glass of rooibos tea as my breast were hard with my nipples poking through the t-shirt. I heard him cry upstairs, i walked up to the room and knocked.

Megan: Go away !

Me: Megan please , his hungry.

Megan: Since when have you known how to communicate with babies! Just go away Amara you have done enough!

Me: I'm his mother, i carried him i know his hungry , i can feel it.

Megan: Amara if you don't back away from me and my family! I swear you will not like what I'm going to do to you.

Me: What else have you got in store Megan? You have done your worst to me these absolutely nothing new you would do

to hurt me ! Just open up this damn door so i breast feed Junior! This is not about me or you ! this is about Junior, are you really going to punish the little boy becuse of your selfish reason? Whatever that's happening between you, Alpha and me got nothing to do with him , please , I'm begging you.

I heard him cry behind the door. The door slid open as she handed him to me. I walked in and sat on the bed breasting him , he sucked on my nipple agitated sucking painfully and let out a cute cough.

Megan: How does it feel?

Me: What?

Megan: To hold him and breastfed him ? How does it feel to be a mother?

Me: I can't explain it cause it's unexplained but you will have your own taste if motherhood some day and i know for sure you will be a wonderful mother.

I place Junior on my chest brushing his back he let out a burp and Megan took him.

Megan: Yes i will be a wonderful mother (smiles) for my son i will , you can leave , i want to spend some time with my son.

I got up from the bed as she laid him down on him down on her arm and laid down besides him . I walked out the room to mine

, i sat on the bed and took my phone browsing on social media. There was nothing i can do than breastfeed the baby and sit around the house , i even miss sweeping at Lucy salon wonder who has taken over now that she is no more . If only her family knew Lucy died because of me , those men were the to kill me but unfortunately Lucy was at the wrong place at the wrong time. As much as i feel bad about what happened to her but her life spared mine and my son's for that i will forever be grateful to her.

STEVE

I had a glass of whiskey with Mute as we talked about moving the Merchandise. Alpha was on call with us .

Mute: Are you still at the office?

Alpha: Yes I'm finishing up some paper work but I'm already done.

Mute: I'll meet you at the warehouse then

Me: Alpha where do you think we should move the money to?

Alpha: My house at my basement. There enough space and no one will ever think the money is in there.

Me: That's a brilliant idea son , very good so when are you two moving the money.

Alpha: Right now the sooner the better for all of us , that

money needs to be our priority , oh and before i forget Drew was here.

Mute: Wait Drew is back?

Alpha: Yes his back and he wanted to have drinks with me imagine.

Mute : Let's take the boy out know what they say keep your friends close but your enemies closer.

Alpha: I have no time faking things with Drew i am already faking things with a whole lotta people, i just don't have time for pretending with likes like Drew his no threat to us.

Me: How do you know that ? Alpha you need to watch how you move, stop trusting everyone!

He bursted out in laughter.

Alpha: You right about that , i don't even trust my own shadow so these no reason for you to worry about me you should be worrying about yourself. Mute I'm leaving the office right now.

Mute: I'll catch you at the warehouse .

Alpha: Okay see you in a hour.

He hung up the call , Mute drank from the glass and got up.

Mute: I need to rush to warehouse.

Me: Mute , make sure you safe and Alpha is safe okay son.

Mute: uhmm Okay.

Me: I love you boys, and I'm sorry for all the bad decision i take and place your lives at risk.

Mute: These absolutely no need to apologize , we family and family sticks together.

He walked out the room towards the door. I picked up my glass circling my fingers on it , Thabo will have to back down from this , Laundering is my business, my bread and butter. I will not roll over or even share it with the likes like him , he has been running the gun trade for years and i never wanted to join in or take the route from him instead i helped him bring down the people that were threatening his bag and now is this the thanks i get for having a big heart?

THABO

I paced in the house hoping Drew didn't go to Alpha or even Steve, sometimes this boy gets me thinking if he is really my son? Cohen called me , i took my phone and left the room going into the bathroom i closed the door.

Cohen: We are in your positions.

Me: how many men do you have with you?

Cohen: Enough to go in take the merchandise and leave

Me: Listen to me carefully Cohen.

Cohen: Yes sir .

Me: Gun everything down.

Cohen: Damn it Alpha has just arrived sir.

Me: He is at the warehouse right now?

Cohen: I am looking at him right now , what do we do ?

I looked at the mirror , If we kill Alpha it will hit Steve hard , it won't just tilt him from the chair but it will knock him out completely. Alpha is his only son and the one behind most of his success. When we kill the Prince the king will be discouraged in keeping the throne.

Me: Make sure his dead.

Cohen: Roger that.

He hung up the call and i walked out the room , Thandeka looked at me , i doubt she heard my conversation with Cohen.

Thandeka: I'm going out for shopping do you need anything?

Me: No my lovely wife , come here come give your husband a kiss.

She approached me as i held her cheeks kissing her , she giggled inbetween the kiss and pulled back.

Thandeka: Mhhh someone is in a good mood , so tell me what's happened.

Me: It's not about what is happening it's about what is going to happen.

Thandeka: And what is going to happen?

Me: Just know our lives are going to change for good.

Thandeka: Should i be scared?

Me:Not at all you got nothing to worry about.

I gave her another kiss and a tight hug as she walked out the room, i inserted my hands in my pants walking towards the window, i watched her car drive off the drive way and disappear out the gate.

45

DREW

I reached home and got in placing my helmet on the table , i looked around the girls weren't at sight.

Thabo: My son , come join me for a drink.

He smiled leading me to the bar area , he took out the finest bottle of whiskey pouring for the two of us.

Me : ( smiles) You look happy.

Thabo: Why shouldn't i be? I have a son and two beautiful girls and a wife worth dying for.



Me: I see.

I took the glass and drank from it , i looked at him as he poured himself another round.

Thabo: It will all be over in a few hours from now.

Me: What Father, oh and before i forget i went to pay Alpha a visit before you talk let me finish talking. We talked and came to an agreement that he will talk to his father and he will personally let me know when there is an attack on the family. Alpha is a good man father it's just that he pretends to be strong to intimidate people.

Thabo: The leaves never fall far from the tree , he is just saying that so we let our guard down then boom they attack! , nice one Alpha but I'm not buying any of that nonsense !

Me: He was actually sincere.

Thabo: And you believe him? How naive can you be Drew ! Are you really even my son?

Me : And what is that supposed to mean?

Thabo: I'm just asking.

He sipped on his glass , i placed the glass on the table and left infuriated. How are he even let those words escape his mouth?

MUTE

I arrived at the warehouse, Alpha was on his phone he was clearing a few things with his security , don't know but i suddenly had a bad feeling, i looked around the warehouse at the bushes. This sudden shiver with the cold breeze sending chills down my spine , i had my eyes staring at the bush as it was awkwardly silent.

Me: Something is wrong.

Alpha: What? I'll get back to you Mute I'm still on call.

He paced towards the cars still talking on the phone , i looked around as bushes move.

Me: Everyone get down !

Shots were fired at us from all angles , bullets flying in the air, our men weren't down like flies , It felt like a scene in a action movie so unreal but damn fun ! I took cover behind my jeep releasing shots from my gun , the worst thing was not being able to see who you shooting at they were still taking cover.

Me: (calling) Alpha !

It was just quiet he didn't respond. I moved from the car still taking cover to check him at the other side , i had to know if he was still alive or not , he was too exposed to those people. I sneaked to the other side of the car coming face to face with the enemy , i raised up my gun pulling a shot it jammed, he looked at me and laughed. Pulling up the pistol , my life

flashed before my eyes , i was already accepting my fate . He was shoot in the head , his blood spat on my face , i looked up as he fell on the ground looking at Alpha.

Me: Alpha.

Alpha: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine are you shot?

Alpha: No , come on let's move the money.

Me: No mission abort Alpha that's a suicide can't you see it's just the two of us.

Alpha: It's not my day yet.

He took bullets from the dead body loading it in his gun , he set up the chambers. I picked up the AK- 47 , the Warehouse door was 4 yards away from us . He peeked at i covered him.

Me: Where are they?

Alpha: They launching closer. The fuck!

Me: What ! Do you recognise them.

Alpha: I will kill them all ! I will murder them.

Me: Let me see.

We changed positioned as i peeked looking at the enemies approaching the car. I saw Cohen , Cohen is Thabo's lap dog , he

is behind this.

Alpha: How did they find the warehouse!

Me: I don't know but we have to move , they getting closer , I'll cover you.

Alpha: No I'll cover you Mute.

Me: Alpha your life is more important than mine .

Alpha: I'll count to 3 , then you run.

I looked at the distance i was supposed to run and where i will take cover, it was a bit far but I'll make it , Alpha is good when it comes to shooting , good aim but he acts out of pulse and anger and that will get him killed , you can be a powerful men with no fears but when it comes to gun fights you even forget you supposed to be strong, my heart was racing , this was a matter of life and death i looked at the man i worked with laying facedown on the ground dead. We had to make it out here alive.

Me: Okay , let's do this.

Alpha: 3

I ran as he was left behind shooting , what was worse was passing through bullets showering at you and at the same time you had to survive cause if i get hit the are less chances for Alpha to walk out there alive. I reached the warehouse

bursting through the door , i fell on the floor quickly getting up and taking cover , it was Alpha's turn now , i held the machine gun setting the chambers. Alpha lifted his hand signaling me that i should be ready to cover him. My eyes fixated on the enemies that were approaching the car , he gunned down atleast 5 but they were still a lot. He count down and reached 1 as i pulled the trigger shooting , he speeded up ran towards the door as he stepped in , Cohen looked at him and smirked pulling the trigger, Alpha got hit and he fell on the floor. I dropped the gun on the floor closing the warehouse door , i approached him on the floor slapping him , his eyes were closed , is he dead? No he can't die .

Me: Alpha! ( slapping him) Get up you son of a bitch ! I need to get you out of here , get up !

He blinked flinching.

Alpha: Get the money bags , we need to move!

Me: Fuck the money! I'm getting you out of here.

Alpha: ( shouting) Mute ! I'm fine ! Get the bags !

He got up trying to balance his legs and fell on the floor holding himself up , he got shot on his left shoulder , he was losing momentum. I tried helping him up but he pushed me off him , that's how he is , he hates being assisted even when he almost got killed he still has pride and arrogance. I took the gun and

pointed it at the door carrying the bag of cash, he got up taking steps and picked up a bag holding it with his bleeding arm , his arm was giving up on him he just groaned in anger screaming.

Alpha: ( heavy breathing) Fuck! They shot me !

Me : We need to go let's go leave the bag !

Alpha: No !

He carried the bag as we used the back door to go out leaving behind 7 bags of cleaned money , in 7 bags we left with 2 . I smashed the car's window using the gun , i opened the door from inside and we got in , stripping the car wires to start the car , i rubbed them together as the car started and turned of , i clicked them together impatiently

Me: ( Panting) Are they coming?

Alpha: Not yet , Do whatever you doing fast or we dying here.

I clicked the wires together as sparks of electricity fell off the connection, the car roared, as the engine compressed, i speeded off the car leaving the warehouse behind.

Me: Apply pressure on the wound, I'll get you to the hospital.

Alpha: No hospitals!

Me: Alpha you have been shot we don't even know the damage the bullet did.

Alpha : Take me to a hotel near by i can't go home just incase they following us , i need you to get Junior and Megan out the house , they will be safer with Pop's we can never be too careful , we at war now , they crossed the line ! When it rains pours .

Me: What about Amara?

Alpha: Pop's won't agree to have her in his house just bring her to the hotel.

Me: She will freak seeing you shot ! Women are weak Alpha you can't expose her to such.

Alpha: Amara is much stronger than you think.

I let out a sigh as he tore off his shirt that was blood, the wound just let letting out blood and fluids. They really smoked him on his shoulder just a inch away from his arm joint just a little inch to the right and they would've hit his throat and I'd be telling a different story to his father. We arrived to a hotel he reached in the bag taking out money , i carried the two bags in , it's funny how someone would want to be taken to a fancy hotel and not the hospital while he has a gun shot wound. We walked into the hotel approaching the reception table , he just walked in with a bloody shoulder half naked with dust clothes , the people looked at us like we were mad man.

Receptionist: Uhm...Mr Smith.

Alpha: book me into a suite , and send two bottle of vodka and a emergency kit.

Receptionist : you sure you don't need more than that , i think you need to see a doctor.

Alpha: keep your thoughts to yourself shall you?

Receptionist: Sorry , here is your key card and i will personally deliver the kit to you.

Alpha: Thank you.

We walked caught an elevator to the suite and walked in the room. I placed the bags on floor.

Me: i will go get the ladies.

Alpha: don't tell Ma i was shot.

Me: if that's what you want.

Alpha: It is what i want , i don't want her worrying about me don't tell Amara too she will see me when she gets here.

I nodded my head and left the room , this is a lot for one day , i was warned out my heart still racing , i thank god I'm still alive . I got in the car and speeded off to get Amara and Megan.

THABO

We were sitting as a family in the seating room watching a movie, the girls covered themselves with a fleece eating chips



while my wife laid on my torso looking at the tv , Drew was on his phone. My phone rang i looked at the caller it was Cohen.

Me: My love excuse me for a second.

Thandeka: Work?

Me: Just a call , I'll be back in a second.

I got up and left the room , answering the call.

Cohen: We got the money.

Me: The boy?

Cohen: He got shot and i don't think he will make it cause i hit his left side .

Me: I though i said make sure ! Make sure ! A hit in the head would've done the job.

Cohen: I know sir and i lost a lot of man in the hands of Alpha , we gunned down all his team in a minute of seconds with no one in my team hurt but when we launched in that boy had already studied our attack plan i went out with 15 men and came back with 8 . This boy will be hard to kill and if i had to kill him in close range the were less chances of me coming back home alive.

Me: Stop whining i will pay you handsomely, how many bags did you get.

Cohen: max of 7 they left with two .

Me: how much is inside?

Cohen: i don't know but this is surely a lot of money sir.

Me: okay you know what to do with the money.

Cohen: Yes sir.

Me: I'll be in touch.

I dropped the call and turned and Drew was behind me

Drew: what did you do?

Me: What you were going to fail to do.

Drew: Father what did you do ! Who were you talking to on call was it Cohen !

Me: Yes it was Cohen , lucky bastard his ancestors are besides him.

Drew: Don't tell me you pulled out a hit on Alpha ! Father we talked about this ! (Screaming) What have you done! Fuck!

He smash the vase of flowers in frustrations ans anger .

Me: See the anger you have right now, keep it up , it will help you when you go head to head with Alpha , as i said before gear up son .

Drew: God ! I came back to spend time with my family not

participate in a fight that got nothing to do with me.

Me: We are family, I'm doing this for our family, you will stand besides me and we will fight this like a family.

He left me storming to the rooms , Thandeka looked at me shrugging her shoulders.

Thandeka: And ? What was that all about?

Me: Inform the girls to never leave the house without a gaurd so goes to you.

Thandeka: Thabo what is going on?

Me: A war.

I looked at her and left her in the room , she was confused.

STEVE

Mute walked in the house carrying Junior and Megan was with him , i looked at him . He wasn't settled his facial expression spoke it all something went wrong.

Nandi: What is going on here?

Mute: Alpha instructed me to come drop off Junior and Megan here , they will be safer here.

Nandi: Safer from what? Mute. ( looks at me) Steve?

Mute: We were ambushed

Nandi : By who? Why? Where is my son ? Is he fine.

Mute: He got shot but his okay.

Nandi : take me to him, take me to my baby .

Mute: He doesn't want no one to see him right now , but i assure you he is fine.

Nandi: (sobbing) No ! I want to see him!

Me: ( shouting) Nandi can you shut up ! Can't you hear the boy doesn't need you or us ! Alpha is a grown man he will be okay. Mute at my study right now.

I left the room and walked in the office, i was heartbroken for my son , i almost lost my boy. Mute walked in , i looked at him.

Mute: We fine you don't need to worry , Alpha handled this well , we did our best we could only save two bags i apologize.

Me: The money is the least of my problems right now , your lives are more important to me than the money. Who was it.

Mute: Cohen .

Me: That bastard ! He has touched the untouchables! He has invited death in his house. He better know I'm coming ! who the fuck does he think he is? shooting my son ! My boy !

Mute: I think that was more than a ambush those man were ready to finish us off , they were gunning on killing us , we

managed to escape all the guys that were at the warehouse are dead.

I walked over to him and hugged him holding his head .

Me: Don't worry boy , don't you dare sweat .

Mute: I have to get to Alpha .

Me: How is he?

Mute: They shot him on his shoulder, watching him lay on the floor , i thought he was dead.

Me: ( chuckles) Not Alpha he wasn't going to die without a fight .

Mute: I will go now but i will come back , i organized men to surround the house extra tight security.

Me: good and Alpha does he have security?

Mute: He will remain at the Hotel .

Me: Tell him to come home , when we all here we will protect each other better.

Mute: I'll let him know.

He walked out the room. I took my phone and dialed Thabo's number, i sat down on the chair looking at the window.

Thabo: Old friend.

Me: You tried to kill my son?

Thabo: Correction! I wanted to end him .

Me: (chuckles) You have woken up the big dog .

Thabo: Talk to me nice Steve, i had the life of your precious son in the tip of hand ! I tried to kill him what will stop me this time?

I let out a light laugh and got up pouring myself a glass whiskey.

Me: Look at you letting out your tail ? you acting corny with me? Sleep with a gun under your pillow Thabo or don't sleep at all you don't know when the enemy will arrive , a soldier never sleeps in the battle field . I will kill you Thabo and i will dance ontop of your grave , this fight will go on till i kill all your bloodline ! I will personally suck the life out of you and if you die and not on my hand i will kill myself so we meet in hell and fight , you will not know peace , i dare you to try and kill my boy again !

I dropped the call as Nandi walked .

Nandi : Talk to me ? What's going on?

Me: Don't leave the house for a few days if you need something send the guards .

Nandi: You not talking to me Steve? Should i be worried?

I got up and held her hugging her .

Me: I love you Nandi so much , you are my world , without you I'm nothing , I'm your husband you may hate me sometimes and wish bad upon me but my heart would never hate you.

I let her go and walked out the room leaving her behind , i walked to the bedroom sniffing , i closed the door and broke down seating at the end of the bed. I heard the door crack open i quickly wiped my tears.

Maid: Sorry sir i was just bringing in the towels.

Me: ( clearing his throat) So ?

Maid: Sorry I'll just..

Me: Hey ! Come here ( she walked in) You saw nothing right?

Maid: saw what sir?

Me: Good get out.

She walked out the room, i closed the door and locked it walking to the bathroom to splash my face.

ALPHA

The receptionist brought me the vodka and kit , shw wanted to help me clean and dress the wound but i ordered her out , i don't need her help , i can do it myself. I opened up the vodka bottle drinking from it. I kept playing with my hands gripping

and non gripping just to check my arm was still working. I had a drink from the bottle and poured the remaining liquor on the wound washing infections. God it stung i took a knife from the kit and cut on on wound slightly , i bite my teeth as the pain made my whole body tremble , i dropped the bloody knife on the floor inserting two fingers in the bullet wound , the bullet was visible on my front shoulder, it passed by at the back and stopped inside inches before it could exit at the front , i inserted my fingers in grabbing hold on the bullet , i closed my eyes flinching.

Me: ( groaning) Goddd ! Tears escaped my eyes as i dug in the wound , i held the bullet pulling it out , i tossed it on the floor and grabbed the vodka bottle drinking from it numbing the pain.

Me: ( heavy breathing) fuck that hurts ! ( sniffing) should've gone to the hospital instead.

I cleaned up the wound with cotton wool as it kept releasing blood. I took pain killers from the kit laid back on the chair and drank down the pills with vodka. The door opened up i took the gun pointing it at the door.

Mute: Easy ! It's us geez !

Me: can never be too careful. Where is she?

Amara walked in , she looked at me .



Amara: You bleeding, what happened?

Me: I was committing suicide.

I looked at Mute as he smiled , i smiled back at him. Amara kneeled down before me holding looking at the wound .

Amara: You need to get to the hospital Alpha you bleeding out.

Me: Just take a bandage and stop worrying yourself.

Amara: You need to be stitched up Alpha a bandage won't do the trick.

Me: Amara please ! I was dogging bullets today I don't have the strength to argue or fight with you i need you to just do as i say , is that so much to ask for ? !

Amara: Okay I'm sorry , i just...seeing you like this is not easy for me ( sobbing) It's not .

Me: Okay baby look, don't worry about it okay , I'll be okay ,you know I'm a dog I'm an animal , this bullet wound will never be my fall from grace , it will never be my downfall. These are minor things okay don't cry . I'm fine look at me , I'm alive okay.

She nodded her head and laid her forehand on my chest. She cried for a while , i didn't even know why she was crying, i was the one in pain , i am the one who is shot. Mute left the room as he had to keep watch at dad's house for the night . Amara wiped her eyes and dressed my shoulder, i looked at her as she

diverted her attention to the arm , she tied it tightly i flinched.

Amara: Sorry , does it hurt now?

Me: ( smiles) No,come seat on my lap.

She sat down on my lap , i held her waist kissing her hand .

Amara: Who shot you Alpha?

Me: Someone you shouldn't worry yourself about .

Amara: whoever he is shot you Alpha , you could've died, oh my god. Just thinking about you dying and Megan taking Junior away from me but who am i kidding ?you don't even care you here drinking vodka instead of going to a hospital and receive professional help , you need professional help not a damn bandage.

Me: You are all i need right now .

She got up from my lap and picked up the bottle and instruments on the floor , i looked at her and smiled she was boiling up with puffy red eyes from crying . Couldn't have asked for another better companion , i would risk it all for Amara and our boy , i love the fact she loves me even when I was tarnished in a dark pit and loved me even though i hurt her deeply , i broke her heart but look at her still here holding on tightly to me and never letting go , i would die another day just to bond with her , i hated the life she has accepted with me ,

this is not the life she deserves but i don't want to leave her alone , i would hate to walk out her life . If reminding her everytime that i love her is what it takes to keep float and together then i will do that after all this is what it takes to raise a son real talk , we have to be together . I drank from the vodka bottle and got up from the chair looking out the balcony closing the curtain.

Me: You can order if you hungry.

Amara: I'm not .

Me: okay come to bed then

I laid down on the bed holding the gun on my right hand.

Amara: Are you seriously going to sleep with that thing Alpha? What if the police arrive is it even legally registered?

I covered myself with the sheets laying face down.

Me: Come to bed Amara.

Amara: Are you going to get revenge on the people that did this? Are they the ones that killed Rose?

Me: Are we sleeping or not?

Amara: Please communicate with me , i need to know please.

She got on the bed and sat up , i closed my eyes as she silently sat on the bed.

Amara: Sometimes it's better to just let things be , let people go , don't fight for closure , don't fight for explanations just let things be.

Me: That's not how things work in my world sweetheart , you can shoot me and expect me to buy you a rose it's a bullet for a bullet ! Blood for blood !

Amara: It doesn't have to be like that my love , they almost killed you what makes you think they won't do it again? And actually succeed this time Alpha.

Me:I don't die Amara, I'm not the dying type. I don't desire to die Amara and you know why i don't? Because desire becomes surrenders and surrenders become power , don't give death too much gratitude sweetheart .

Amara: I'm just scared for you , i don't know what i would do if i lose you , i need you Alpha.

She laid her head ontop of me , i turned around and laid on my back she cuddled against me .I kissed her forehead.

Me: I love you Amara and i have accepted the person that you are i would really appreciate it if don't try to change me , i don't need change or being bettered. I just need you to be by my side always , let me handle the mechines through this storm we will make it through.

Amara: Then Promise me you will always come back to me , i

don't care even if you are shot multiple times but you will come home to me.

Me: I'm not going anywhere anytime soon .

She placed her leg over my waist kissing my chest. I laughed to the tickling feeling as she kissed my torso swirling her tongue on my skin.

Amara: You not promising me baby.

Me: okay I promise .

I laid my hand on her bum cheek and squeezed biting my lower lip her ass felt like jello soft as teachable. I was hardening my blood running hot. I just had a rough day , i just wanted to have some good fun with my girl tonight. I rotated her to my side of the bed and laid on hers laying her sideways kissing her neck , she closed her eyes i ran my fingers up her thighs into her panty , slowly and steady i played with her coochie as she slightly lifted up her leg. I played with her clit , she held my arm moaning. I encircled my finger spreading her vulvas , i inserted my finger in penetrating it and touched her g-spot , she closed in her thighs moaning.

Me: Relax your thighs momma.

She slightly opened up for me , i rubbed her as she cummed wetting herself . I wonder if I'll be able to make love to her with my shoulder injured? i liked holding her waist cause she tends

to run away from me a lot , holding her waist maintained her on one position so i explored and pleasure her. I licked her neck laying her back down on the bed. I got ontop opening her thighs with my knee slightly slid her pantie sideways and rubbed myself , i closed my eyes and bite my lip.

Me: (groaning) Mhhhh , Miss Mackenzie.

She looked at me , she eyes red, horny i looked at her and brushed my tip against her , she was really wet . I inserting the head in and pulled out stroking the head in , she held my waist opening up the thighs , i penetrated in , holding onto her tight with our lips locked together as she struggled kissing me moaning in my mouth . I gave my all , taking out frustrations of the day but loving her at the same time with our bodies rubbing against each other sweat dripping from my face , i felt really good. I pulled out and nutted on sheet falling on the bed .Amara just couldn't get enough of me , she laid on my chest and closed her eyes falling asleep she was tired i was too and in pain . I brushed her hair kissing her forehead. Can't believe i almost died today , i almost left her and my boy , this all proves i was a fool for trusting Drew what the hell was i thinking letting him give me such assurance to the safety of my family while i knew exactly what kind of people they were , he played me for a fool , pull the strings like a puppet master as i was his damn puppet not again! Not ever , looked at me in the eyes and told

me we can work together but he was just there to suck information for the ambush , his so weak to the point he pretended to care about my family while he didn't give a shit ! He just came to spy on me . I got up from the bed laying Amara on the pillow i slightly open up the sliding door for some fresh air , i sat on the chair drinking the drop of vodka left in the bottle , i blinked looking at her while she laid peacefully on the bed.

Me: I can't guarantee that i will come back to you after this , the is just a lot of things happening and you don't know about them all because i feel it's better you don't know . I'm not who you think i am Amara . I'm a criminal , a murderer , i have blood in my hands and then the is you , an angel in my eyes like you were sent from up above , sweet , gentle , strong and have so much love to give . I keep wondering to myself if you knew what i do? The real me would you still love me the same you do , will you love a criminal unconditionally?

I closed my eyes and broke down , crying in silent. My heart was bleeding, i was softening up , i was hurting , emotionally i was scared , miserable. I laid back on the chair wiping my tears , i sipped on the vodka bottle looking at the ceiling getting myself drunk running away from the demons that whispered in my mind. Got to send a card to the Hughes informing them I'm coming and I'm coming hard , they better have they guns and

automatics close to them, they disrespect the game , it's going to be a blood bath.

To be continued.

45

DREW

I reached home and got in placing my helmet on the table , i looked around the girls weren't at sight.

Thabo: My son , come join me for a drink.

He smiled leading me to the bar area , he took out the finest bottle of whiskey pouring for the two of us.

Me : ( smiles) You look happy.

Thabo: Why shouldn't i be? I have a son and two beautiful girls and a wife worth dying for.

Me: I see.

I took the glass and drank from it , i looked at him as he poured himself another round.

Thabo: It will all be over in a few hours from now.

Me: What Father, oh and before i forget i went to pay Alpha a visit before you talk let me finish talking. We talked and came to an agreement that he will talk to his father and he will personally let me know when the is an attack on the family.



Alpha is a good man father it's just that he pretends to be strong to intimidate people.

Thabo: The leaves never fall far from the tree , he is just saying that so we let our guard down then boom they attack! , nice one Alpha but I'm not buying any of that nonsense !

Me: He was actually sincere.

Thabo: And you believe him? How naive can you be Drew ! Are you really even my son?

Me : And what is that supposed to mean?

Thabo: I'm just asking.

He sipped on his glass , i placed the glass on the table and left infuriated. How are he even let those words escape his mouth?

MUTE

I arrived at the warehouse, Alpha was on his phone he was clearing a few things with his security , don't know but i suddenly had a bad feeling, i looked around the warehouse at the bushes. This sudden shiver with the cold breeze sending chills down my spine , i had my eyes staring at the bush as it was awkwardly silent.

Me: Something is wrong.

Alpha: What? I'll get back to you Mute I'm still on call.

He paced towards the cars still talking on the phone , i looked around as bushes move.

Me: Everyone get down !

Shots were fired at us from all angles , bullets flying in the air, our men weren't down like flies , It felt like a scene in a action movie so unreal but damn fun ! I took cover behind my jeep releasing shots from my gun , the worst thing was not being able to see who you shooting at they were still taking cover.

Me: (calling) Alpha !

It was just quiet he didn't respond. I moved from the car still taking cover to check him at the other side , i had to know if he was still alive or not , he was too exposed to those people. I sneaked to the other side of the car coming face to face with the enemy , i raised up my gun pulling a shot it jammed, he looked at me and laughed. Pulling up the pistol , my life flashed before my eyes , i was already accepting my fate . He was shoot in the head , his blood spat on my face , i looked up as he fell on the ground looking at Alpha.

Me: Alpha.

Alpha: Are you okay?

Me: I'm fine are you shot?

Alpha: No , come on let's move the money.

Me: No mission abort Alpha that's a suicide can't you see it's just the two of us.

Alpha: It's not my day yet.

He took bullets from the dead body loading it in his gun , he set up the chambers. I picked up the AK- 47 , the Warehouse door was 4 yards away from us . He peeked at i covered him.

Me: Where are they?

Alpha: They launching closer. The fuck!

Me: What ! Do you recognise them.

Alpha: I will kill them all ! I will murder them.

Me: Let me see.

We changed positioned as i peeked looking at the enemies approaching the car. I saw Cohen , Cohen is Thabo's lap dog , he is behind this.

Alpha: How did they find the warehouse!

Me: I don't know but we have to move , they getting closer , I'll cover you.

Alpha: No I'll cover you Mute.

Me: Alpha your life is more important than mine .

Alpha: I'll count to 3 , then you run.

I looked at the distance i was supposed to run and where i will take cover, it was a bit far but I'll make it , Alpha is good when it comes to shooting , good aim but he acts out of pulse and anger and that will get him killed , you can be a powerful men with no fears but when it comes to gun fights you even forget you supposed to be strong, my heart was racing , this was a matter of life and death i looked at the man i worked with laying facedown on the ground dead. We had to make it out here alive.

Me: Okay , let's do this.

Alpha: 3

I ran as he was left behind shooting , what was worse was passing through bullets showering at you and at the same time you had to survive cause if i get hit the are less chances for Alpha to walk out there alive. I reached the warehouse bursting through the door , i fell on the floor quickly getting up and taking cover , it was Alpha's turn now , i held the machine gun setting the chambers. Alpha lifted his hand signaling me that i should be ready to cover him. My eyes fixated on the enemies that were approaching the car , he gunned down atleast 5 but they were still a lot. He count down and reached 1 as i pulled the trigger shooting , he speeded up ran towards the door as he stepped in , Cohen looked at him and smirked pulling the trigger, Alpha got hit and he fell on the floor. I

dropped the gun on the floor closing the warehouse door , i approached him on the floor slapping him , his eyes were closed , is he dead? No he can't die .

Me: Alpha! ( slapping him) Get up you son of a bitch ! I need to get you out of here , get up !

He blinked flinching.

Alpha: Get the money bags , we need to move!

Me: Fuck the money! I'm getting you out of here.

Alpha: ( shouting) Mute ! I'm fine ! Get the bags !

He got up trying to balance his legs and fell on the floor holding himself up , he got shot on his left shoulder , he was losing momentum. I tried helping him up but he pushed me off him , that's how he is , he hates being assisted even when he almost got killed he still has pride and arrogance. I took the gun and pointed it at the door carrying the bag of cash, he got up taking steps and picked up a bag holding it with his bleeding arm , his arm was giving up on him he just groaned in anger screaming.

Alpha: ( heavy breathing) Fuck! They shot me !

Me : We need to go let's go leave the bag !

Alpha: No !

He carried the bag as we used the back door to go out leaving

behind 7 bags of cleaned money , in 7 bags we left with 2 . I smashed the car's window using the gun , i opened the door from inside and we got in , stripping the car wires to start the car , i rubbed them together as the car started and turned of , i clicked them together impatiently

Me: ( Panting) Are they coming?

Alpha: Not yet , Do whatever you doing fast or we dying here.

I clicked the wires together as sparks of electricity fell off the connection, the car roared, as the engine compressed, i speeded off the car leaving the warehouse behind.

Me: Apply pressure on the wound, I'll get you to the hospital.

Alpha: No hospitals!

Me: Alpha you have been shot we don't even know the damage the bullet did.

Alpha : Take me to a hotel near by i can't go home just incase they following us , i need you to get Junior and Megan out the house , they will be safer with Pop's we can never be too careful , we at war now , they crossed the line ! When it rains pours .

Me: What about Amara?

Alpha: Pop's won't agree to have her in his house just bring her to the hotel.

Me: She will freak seeing you shot ! Women are weak Alpha you can't expose her to such.

Alpha: Amara is much stronger than you think.

I let out a sigh as he tore off his shirt that was blood, the wound just let letting out blood and fluids. They really smoked him on his shoulder just a inch away from his arm joint just a little inch to the right and they would've hit his throat and I'd be telling a different story to his father. We arrived to a hotel he reached in the bag taking out money , i carried the two bags in , it's funny how someone would want to be taken to a fancy hotel and not the hospital while he has a gun shot wound. We walked into the hotel approaching the reception table , he just walked in with a bloody shoulder half naked with dust clothes , the people looked at us like we were mad man.

Receptionist: Uhm...Mr Smith.

Alpha: book me into a suite , and send two bottle of vodka and a emergency kit.

Receptionist : you sure you don't need more than that , i think you need to see a doctor.

Alpha: keep your thoughts to yourself shall you?

Receptionist: Sorry , here is your key card and i will personally deliver the kit to you.

Alpha: Thank you.

We walked caught an elevator to the suite and walked in the room. I placed the bags on floor.

Me: i will go get the ladies.

Alpha: don't tell Ma i was shot.

Me: if that's what you want.

Alpha: It is what i want , i don't want her worrying about me don't tell Amara too she will see me when she gets here.

I nodded my head and left the room , this is a lot for one day , i was warned out my heart still racing , i thank god I'm still alive . I got in the car and speeded off to get Amara and Megan.

THABO

We were sitting as a family in the seating room watching a movie, the girls covered themselves with a fleece eating chips while my wife laid on my torso looking at the tv , Drew was on his phone. My phone rang i looked at the caller it was Cohen.

Me: My love excuse me for a second.

Thandeka: Work?

Me: Just a call , I'll be back in a second.

I got up and left the room , answering the call.



Cohen: We got the money.

Me: The boy?

Cohen: He got shot and i don't think he will make it cause i hit his left side .

Me: I though i said make sure ! Make sure ! A hit in the head would've done the job.

Cohen: I know sir and i lost a lot of man in the hands of Alpha , we gunned down all his team in a minute of seconds with no one in my team hurt but when we launched in that boy had already studied our attack plan i went out with 15 men and came back with 8 . This boy will be hard to kill and if i had to kill him in close range the were less chances of me coming back home alive.

Me: Stop whining i will pay you handsomely, how many bags did you get.

Cohen: max of 7 they left with two .

Me: how much is inside?

Cohen: i don't know but this is surely a lot of money sir.

Me: okay you know what to do with the money.

Cohen: Yes sir.

Me: I'll be in touch.

I dropped the call and turned and Drew was behind me

Drew: what did you do?

Me: What you were going to fail to do.

Drew: Father what did you do ! Who were you talking to on call was it Cohen !

Me: Yes it was Cohen , lucky bastard his ancestors are besides him.

Drew: Don't tell me you pulled out a hit on Alpha ! Father we talked about this ! (Screaming) What have you done! Fuck!

He smash the vase of flowers in frustrations ans anger .

Me: See the anger you have right now, keep it up , it will help you when you go head to head with Alpha , as i said before gear up son .

Drew: God ! I came back to spend time with my family not participate in a fight that got nothing to do with me.

Me: We are family, I'm doing this for our family, you will stand besides me and we will fight this like a family.

He left me storming to the rooms , Thandeka looked at me shrugging her shoulders.

Thandeka: And ? What was that all about?

Me: Inform the girls to never leave the house without a gaurd

so goes to you.

Thandeka: Thabo what is going on?

Me: A war.

I looked at her and left her in the room , she was confused.

STEVE

Mute walked in the house carrying Junior and Megan was with him , i looked at him . He wasn't settled his facial expression spoke it all something went wrong.

Nandi: What is going on here?

Mute: Alpha instructed me to come drop off Junior and Megan here , they will be safer here.

Nandi: Safer from what? Mute. ( looks at me) Steve?

Mute: We were ambushed

Nandi : By who? Why? Where is my son ? Is he fine.

Mute: He got shot but his okay.

Nandi : take me to him, take me to my baby .

Mute: He doesn't want no one to see him right now , but i assure you he is fine.

Nandi: (sobbing) No ! I want to see him!

Me: ( shouting) Nandi can you shut up ! Can't you hear the boy doesn't need you or us ! Alpha is a grown man he will be okay. Mute at my study right now.

I left the room and walked in the office, i was heartbroken for my son , i almost lost my boy. Mute walked in , i looked at him.

Mute: We fine you don't need to worry , Alpha handled this well , we did our best we could only save two bags i apologize.

Me: The money is the least of my problems right now , your lives are more important to me than the money. Who was it.

Mute: Cohen .

Me: That bastard ! He has touched the untouchables! He has invited death in his house. He better know I'm coming ! who the fuck does he think he is? shooting my son ! My boy !

Mute: I think that was more than a ambush those man were ready to finish us off , they were gunning on killing us , we managed to escape all the guys that were at the warehouse are dead.

I walked over to him and hugged him holding his head .

Me: Don't worry boy , don't you dare sweat .

Mute: I have to get to Alpha .

Me: How is he?

Mute: They shot him on his shoulder, watching him lay on the floor , i thought he was dead.

Me: ( chuckles) Not Alpha he wasn't going to die without a fight .

Mute: I will go now but i will come back , i organized men to surround the house extra tight security.

Me: good and Alpha does he have security?

Mute: He will remain at the Hotel .

Me: Tell him to come home , when we all here we will protect each other better.

Mute: I'll let him know.

He walked out the room. I took my phone and dialed Thabo's number, i sat down on the chair looking at the window.

Thabo: Old friend.

Me: You tried to kill my son?

Thabo: Correction! I wanted to end him .

Me: (chuckles) You have woken up the big dog .

Thabo: Talk to me nice Steve, i had the life of your precious son in the tip of hand ! I tried to kill him what will stop me this time?

I let out a light laugh and got up pouring myself a glass whiskey.

Me: Look at you letting out your tail ? you acting corny with me? Sleep with a gun under your pillow Thabo or don't sleep at all you don't know when the enemy will arrive , a soldier never sleeps in the battle field . I will kill you Thabo and i will dance ontop of your grave , this fight will go on till i kill all your bloodline ! I will personally suck the life out of you and if you die and not on my hand i will kill myself so we meet in hell and fight , you will not know peace , i dare you to try and kill my boy again !

I dropped the call as Nandi walked .

Nandi : Talk to me ? What's going on?

Me: Don't leave the house for a few days if you need something send the guards .

Nandi: You not talking to me Steve? Should i be worried?

I got up and held her hugging her .

Me: I love you Nandi so much , you are my world , without you I'm nothing , I'm your husband you may hate me sometimes and wish bad upon me but my heart would never hate you.

I let her go and walked out the room leaving her behind , i walked to the bedroom sniffing , i closed the door and broke down seating at the end of the bed. I heard the door crack open

i quickly wiped my tears.

Maid: Sorry sir i was just bringing in the towels.

Me: ( clearing his throat) So ?

Maid: Sorry I'll just..

Me: Hey ! Come here ( she walked in) You saw nothing right?

Maid: saw what sir?

Me: Good get out.

She walked out the room, i closed the door and locked it walking to the bathroom to splash my face.

ALPHA

The receptionist brought me the vodka and kit , shw wanted to help me clean and dress the wound but i ordered her out , i don't need her help , i can do it myself. I opened up the vodka bottle drinking from it. I kept playing with my hands gripping and non gripping just to check my arm was still working. I had a drink from the bottle and poured the remaining liquor on the wound washing infections. God it stung i took a knife from the kit and cut on on wound slightly , i bite my teeth as the pain made my whole body tremble , i dropped the bloody knife on the floor inserting two fingers in the bullet wound , the bullet was visible on my front shoulder, it passed by at the back and stopped inside inches before it could exit at the from , i

inserted my fingers in grabbing hold on the bullet , i closed my eyes flinching.

Me: ( groaning) Goddd ! Tears escaped my eyes as i dug in the wound , i held the bullet pulling it out , i tossed it on the floor and grabbed the vodka bottle drinking from it numbing the pain.

Me: ( heavy breathing) fuck that hurts ! ( sniffing) should've gone to the hospital instead.

I cleaned up the wound with cotton wool as it kept releasing blood. I took pain killers from the kit laid back on the chair and drank down the pills with vodka. The door opened up i took the gun pointing it at the door.

Mute: Easy ! It's us geez !

Me: can never be too careful. Where is she?

Amara walked in , she looked at me .

Amara: You bleeding, what happened?

Me: I was committing suicide.

I looked at Mute as he smiled , i smiled back at him. Amara kneeled down before me holding looking at the wound .

Amara: You need to get to the hospital Alpha you bleeding out.

Me: Just take a bandage and stop worrying yourself.



Amara: You need to be stitched up Alpha a bandage won't do the trick.

Me: Amara please ! I was dogging bullets today I don't have the strength to argue or fight with you i need you to just do as i say , is that so much to ask for ? !

Amara: Okay I'm sorry , i just...seeing you like this is not easy for me ( sobbing) It's not .

Me: Okay baby look, don't worry about it okay , I'll be okay ,you know I'm a dog I'm an animal , this bullet wound will never be my fall from grace , it will never be my downfall. These are minor things okay don't cry . I'm fine look at me , I'm alive okay.

She nodded her head and laid her forehead on my chest. She cried for a while , i didn't even know why she was crying, i was the one in pain , i am the one who is shot. Mute left the room as he had to keep watch at dad's house for the night . Amara wiped her eyes and dressed my shoulder, i looked at her as she diverted her attention to the arm , she tied it tightly i flinched.

Amara: Sorry , does it hurt now?

Me: ( smiles) No,come seat on my lap.

She sat down on my lap , i held her waist kissing her hand .

Amara: Who shot you Alpha?

Me: Someone you shouldn't worry yourself about .

Amara: whoever he is shot you Alpha , you could've died, oh my god. Just thinking about you dying and Megan taking Junior away from me but who am i kidding ?you don't even care you here drinking vodka instead of going to a hospital and receive professional help , you need professional help not a damn bandage.

Me: You are all i need right now .

She got up from my lap and picked up the bottle and instruments on the floor , i looked at her and smiled she was boiling up with puffy red eyes from crying . Couldn't have asked for another better companion , i would risk it all for Amara and our boy , i love the fact she loves me even when I was tarnished in a dark pit and loved me even though i hurt her deeply , i broke her heart but look at her still here holding on tightly to me and never letting go , i would die another day just to bond with her , i hated the life she has accepted with me , this is not the life she deserves but i don't want to leave her alone , i would hate to walk out her life . If reminding her everytime that i love her is what it takes to keep float and together then i will do that after all this is what it takes to raise a son real talk , we have to be together . I drank from the vodka bottle and got up from the chair looking out the balcony closing the curtain.

Me: You can order if you hungry.

Amara: I'm not .

Me: okay come to bed then

I laid down on the bed holding the gun on my right hand.

Amara: Are you seriously going to sleep with that thing Alpha?  
What if the police arrive is it even legally registered?

I covered myself with the sheets laying face down.

Me: Come to bed Amara.

Amara: Are you going to get revenge on the people that did this? Are they the ones that killed Rose?

Me: Are we sleeping or not?

Amara: Please communicate with me , i need to know please.

She got on the bed and sat up , i closed my eyes as she silently sat on the bed.

Amara: Sometimes it's better to just let things be , let people go , don't fight for closure , don't fight for explanations just let things be.

Me: That's not how things work in my world sweetheart , you can shoot me and expect me to buy you a rose it's a bullet for a bullet ! Blood for blood !

Amara: It doesn't have to be like that my love , they almost killed you what makes you think they won't do it again? And

actually succeed this time Alpha.

Me: I don't die Amara, I'm not the dying type. I don't desire to die Amara and you know why i don't? Because desire becomes surrenders and surrenders become power , don't give death too much gratitude sweetheart .

Amara: I'm just scared for you , i don't know what i would do if i lose you , i need you Alpha.

She laid her head ontop of me , i turned around and laid on my back she cuddled against me .I kissed her forehead.

Me: I love you Amara and i have accepted the person that you are i would really appreciate it if don't try to change me , i don't need change or being bettered. I just need you to be by my side always , let me handle the mechines through this storm we will make it through.

Amara: Then Promise me you will always come back to me , i don't care even if you are shot multiple times but you will come home to me.

Me: I'm not going anywhere anytime soon .

She placed her leg over my waist kissing my chest. I laughed to the tickling feeling as she kissed my torso swirling her tongue on my skin.

Amara: You not promising me baby.

Me: okay I promise .

I laid my hand on her bum cheek and squeezed biting my lower lip her ass felt like jello soft as teachable. I was hardening my blood running hot. I just had a rough day , i just wanted to have some good fun with my girl tonight. I rotated her to my side of the bed and laid on hers laying her sideways kissing her neck , she closed her eyes i ran my fingers up her thighs into her panty , slowly and steady i played with her coochie as she slightly lifted up her leg. I played with her clit , she held my arm moaning. I encircled my finger spreading her vulvas , i inserted my finger in penetrating it and touched her g-spot , she closed in her thighs moaning.

Me: Relax your thighs momma.

She slightly opened up for me , i rubbed her as she cummed wetting herself . I wonder if I'll be able to make love to her with my shoulder injured? i liked holding her waist cause she tends to run away from me a lot , holding her waist maintained her on one position so i explored and pleasure her. I licked her neck laying her back down on the bed. I got ontop opening her thighs with my knee slightly slid her pantie sideways and rubbed myself , i closed my eyes and bite my lip.

Me: (groaning) Mhhhh , Miss Mackenzie.

She looked at me , she eyes red, horny i looked at her and

brushed my tip against her , she was really wet . I inserting the head in and pulled out stroking the head in , she held my waist opening up the thighs , i penetrated in , holding onto her tight with our lips locked together as she struggled kissing me moaning in my mouth . I gave my all , taking out frustrations of the day but loving her at the same time with our bodies rubbing against each other sweat dripping from my face , i felt really good. I pulled out and nudded on sheet falling on the bed .Amara just couldn't get enough of me , she laid on my chest and closed her eyes falling asleep she was tired i was too and in pain . I brushed her hair kissing her forehead. Can't believe i almost died today , i almost left her and my boy , this all proves i was a fool for trusting Drew what the hell was i thinking letting him give me such assurance to the safety of my family while i knew exactly what kind of people they were , he played me for a fool , pull the strings like a puppet master as i was his damn puppet not again! Not ever , looked at me in the eyes and told me we can work together but he was just there to suck information for the ambush , his so weak to the point he pretended to care about my family while he didn't give a shit ! He just came to spy on me . I got up from the bed laying Amara on the pillow i slightly open up the sliding door for some fresh air , i sat on the chair drinking the drop of vodka left in the bottle , i blinked looking at her while she laid peacefully on the bed.

Me: I can't guarantee that i will come back to you after this , the is just a lot of things happening and you don't know about them all because i feel it's better you don't know . I'm not who you think i am Amara . I'm a criminal , a murderer , i have blood in my hands and then the is you , an angel in my eyes like you were sent from up above , sweet , gentle , strong and have so much love to give . I keep wondering to myself if you knew what i do? The real me would you still love me the same you do , will you love a criminal unconditionally?

I closed my eyes and broke down , crying in silent. My heart was bleeding, i was softening up , i was hurting , emotionally i was scared , miserable. I laid back on the chair wiping my tears , i sipped on the vodka bottle looking at the ceiling getting myself drunk running away from the demons that whispered in my mind. Got to send a card to the Hughes informing them I'm coming and I'm coming hard , they better have they guns and automatics close to them, they disrespect the game , it's going to be a blood bath.

To be continued.

47

MEGAN

I was at the corridors eavesdropping on their conversation. I heard Amara scream in the next room , the room went quiet, i

pretended like i was running to Amara's room , i opened the door and looked at her , she looked at me , with her eyes looking as if they'd pop out her socket , she looked at her hands that were shaking uncontrollably sobbing in tears as she flooded her brown eyes with tears , i looked approaching the bed.

Amara: I need to wash my hands Megan

Alpha walked in rushing to her he pushed me aside and held her hands , the whole group of men peeped at the door , Steve walked in too walking to the windows and peeked if there was anyone attempting to come in, how everyone rushed to her rescue made my heart bleed , i kept wondering if I'd scream would they go to these lengths to help me.

Alpha: What's wrong my love.

My heart sank as i bottled up tears.

Amara: My hands , i have to wash the blood off.

Alpha: There's no blood on your hands sweetheart.

Steve: Please guys , give us space we need to handle this as a family.

Mute: I'll show the guys their work stations.

Steve: Megan get out ! We need space.



I looked at him , wasn't i family? I didn't understand , i looked at him as tears dropped from my eyes . I ran out the room sobbing in tears , i walked in Junior's room , i got him off the baby crib and held him close to my arms. feeling him and smelling him made me feel wanted and loved .

ALPHA

I looked at her as she trembled in my arms. She was still in shocked in fear . I knew this was going to haunt her , i just wished to erase that memory from her head. I laid her head on my chest brushing her clamly .

Me: Sssh , these no blood in your hands baby , it's just shock , your mind is making up these images making you see and feel things that are not really there.

Mute walked in the room as they all rounded the bed . They all looked at her , Pop's came closer holding Amara hand at first i was defensive but then seeing how he held her hand he was actually genuine. I got up the bed and Pop's sat down.

Steve: Amara.

Amara: ( panting) Sir.

Steve: Don't let your fears take over your life , don't let a dead man rule your life . You need to be strong , you did nothing wrong my daughter. You were fighting for Alpha's and your survival, it was either him you guys. That's survival baby girl ,

it's the survival of the fittest and you broke through boundaries you maybe set for yourself to survive. I'm proud of you and we will make sure you break through this , as a family we will help you get through this , we are family and in this family we look after each other.

He lifted up her hand to his mouth and laid a kiss , i looked at Mute as we all were still trying to process what was going on.

Nandi: I will make everyone a cup of coffee as emotions are running high.

Mute: I will help you.

They left the room , as dad hugged Amara brushing her hair, No i don't like this , him comforting Amara like this all of a sudden just doesn't seat me right , his my father i know him and these definitely an ace up his sleeves.

Me: Pop's can you give me and Amara some space.

Steve: Ofcause ( holds Amara's cheek) be better , not for you , not for Alpha but for your baby boy , he needs his mother.

He walked out the room and closed the door. She sat up and held the pillow inbetween her legs.

Me: Should i bring Junior? so you just sleep next to him maybe he will calm you down

She just looked at me and dried her face staring into space. I

walked out the room and let out a sigh as i closed the door , approaching Juniors room Megan was sitting on the chair rocking him.

Megan: Hey , i was just rocking him to sleep.

Me: Give me my son.

Megan: Okay

She got up and handed me the baby, i looked at her as she kissed Juniors head.

Me: When will you stop this game you playing?

Megan: What game ?

Me: I know Megan , i know you not Juniors mom and how you brutalized Amara and stole her child , i know you and my father are behind my loss of memory , so why don't you pick up your rags and just go home , you don't belong here , you have forced your way in for far to long don't you get tired of being treated like an outsider ? Treated like furniture?

Megan: (sobbing) But i love you , why you treating me like this ?

Me: Like what? Cause I'm actually looking out for you here.

Megan: well then don't look for me ! Cause I'm going nowhere Alpha ! If i leave I'm leaving with Junior.

Me: You must be sick! You not going anywhere with Junior his not yours.

Megan: (smiles) i am on his birth certificate.

Me: We'll see about that.

I walked out the room , Pop's and Mute were seating in the sitting room . I sat down as Mute took Junior.

Mute: Let me hold something pure for once in my life.

Me:(laughs)You have been holding darkness all your life.

Mute: You know . Maybe he might cleanse my soul.

Steve: (chuckles) He is definitely the light in this family.

Me: I was taking him to his mother but then you guys seem to love him

Mute: Who wouldn't love this cute face , i feel like I'm warming up to some baby fever.

Steve: I think it's time Alpha takes the boy to its mother, his softening Mute up , we'll see him getting baby fever while gun fighting.

Mute: ( laughs) Oh come on Pop's.

Spike walked in the living room as we all looked at him.

Spike:These some guy outside said his name is Jaden .

Mute: It's the doctor let him in .

Spike: Okay .

He walked out , i took Junior from Mute and walked to the room , looks like i will be stitched , i don't want my son present when all this happens, i walked in the room and laid him next to Amara. She turned and shielding him taking out her breast.

Amara: A whole hour .

Me: Sorry babe i had a little chat with Mute and Dad , you'll find this funny but Mute has fallen inlove with Junior said our son will cleanse his soul ( laughs) how stupid is that.

She looked at me and went about breastfeeding Junior guess it wasn't the time to make her smile. I looked at her as she sank in the bed, puffy red glassy eyes with messy hair. She looks like she was hitting depression. I walked out the room closing the door.

DREW

I looked at her as i reached orgasm . Fuck she's so warm. My penis head was swollen up , god i pulled up and let loose the condom and gave myself a handjob , i brushed my head as she pushed me down on the bed and held my crotch sucking the tip , the warmth of her mouth as her tougue swirled on my tip i held her head and pressed her down deep , penetrating her throat , i cummed in her throat as she pulled away from me

swallowing.

Me:(panting) God damn it.

Girl: God you a stallion (laughs) so do you really fuck all girls like that ?

Me: uhmm i thought prostitutes don't ask too much questions ?

Girl : We people geez , we might be in the sex service but we living and breathing humans.

Me: I know that , i just don't like talking to you guys about my life so let's keep things professional okay , this is business not social sex.

Girl: Okay if you want that.

I got up from the bed and took my wallet , i took out money that i set aside for her , i tossed it on the bed.

Me: Your payment.

Girl: Thank you.

I walked in the bathroom and had a quick shower, i walked out and got dresse , i took my helmet and walked to the door.

Me: Guess I'll see you another time , when I'm heated.

Girl: Guess so .

I walked out the hotel room and approached the door. I got on

my bike and speeded home. I wanted to reach home when they are asleep, i can't be asked question of where i was cause I'm going to tell them the truth. I parked my bike and walked inside , the house was surrounded by Cohen's men for protection, the Smith's are rather quiet they not attacking or anything, i guess they have given up we made it clear to them that we run these streets now. I hope they got the message and just back away from us cause they don't stand a chance. I walked in the house and Abby was having coffee. I placed my helmet on table and sat with her.

Me: What's bothering you?

Abby: Nothing i was just studying for a test tomorrow and i just thought of making myself a cup of coffee.

Me: Oh make me a cup too?

She poured me coffee from the pot and handed me sugar.

Abby: Where you coming from at this time?

Me: From blowing off some steam.

Abby: Geez Drew you should've kept quiet instead.

Me: Oh come on you old enough to know that I'm having sex.

Abby: I do but now you got me imagining you having sexual activities with whomever you doing it with.

Me: These nothing wrong with that just don't have sex yet , you still have to get married baby sister.

I got up and took the mug walking to my room

Me: Thanks for coffee.

Abby: Pleasure.

I got in my room and took off my shoes tossing myself in the bed.

JADEN

I looked at him as he approached me , god he looked like he has been hit by a car , the bruises on his face .

Alpha: Doctor.

Me: Alpha.

Alpha: I'm glad you came please have a seat.

Me: Thank you.

I sat down and place my aid bag on the table. He took off his t-shirt and i looked at the wound that has turned colour it was navy , i could see the pain he was in by just looking at the wound.

Alpha: So can we get this over and done with?

Me: Ofcause.



I got up and took out my gloves, i walked over to him and touched his shoulder that had swollen up because of the pain and bleeding. I squeezed his shoulder from his armpits.

Alpha: (groaning) ahh God , it's a sore okay not so hard.

Me : I'm examining the damage , it was going to be much easy if i was doing this at the hospital cause that's the felicity that has everything needed for this , i would make an x- ray to see how deep is the damage.

Alpha: As you can see doctor, a bullet went through my shoulder i need you to be stitched up that's why you here , x-rays and all that shit you talking about won't happen man.

I shook my head and took out a detol bottle and cotten wool , i cleaned up the wound in both sides as he flinched , the wound let out a body fluids as i took out a numb ejection , i gave him 4 shots he laid back on the couch as i tied his bullet wounded shoulder together . In the room the was the guy that came to retrieve the footage aggressively from the hospital , i expected to see Amara here but she maybe doesn't want to see her beloved soulmate get stitched, not to sound jealous or nasty towards Alpha but i don't think this is the life Amara deserves nor is he good enough for Amara . Imagine getting married to a guy that will come home with a bullet wound and still doesn't want to go get professional help legitimately, he would rather be stitched up in his couche. I pulled the flesh together as he

looked at me . I continued my work and did the back too , bandaging his shoulder tightly , i gave him some pills for when the ejection wears off.

Me: I guess i am done here .

I took off my bloody gloves packing my things.

Alpha: Good job Doctor.

Me: It's not like you gave me a choice, i had to do my best, I'm a doctor, i save lives.

Alpha: ( chuckles) You sound like a lady now Jaden come on ! Sulking is for Amara not you .

Me: Where is Amara anyways? Is she okay?

Alpha: She's asleep.

Me: send my greetings.

Alpha: Will do , Mute give the Doctor our appropriation gift as the Smith's.

Mute handed me a envelope. I looked at him as he nodded his head for me to take the envelope.

Alpha: Come on now Doctor take it .

Me: No thank you , I'm fine.

Alpha: Boohoo mood spoiler , then take it with and throw it

outside or even donate to homeless people it's yours.

Me: Okay fine.

I took the money and placed it in my bag.

Alpha: Coffee or tea? I'll have someone to make you a cup.

Me: No thank you but i have to get home.

Amara: Please have a cup with me.

I turned and looked at Amara , she looked devastated , not in a good shape at all , i automatically felt sorry for her. She walked to me and held my hands , giving me a warm hug like she used to , she held on me tightly as i rested my hands on her waist.

Alpha : I'll go lay down.

He got up and left the room so did Mute , Amara sat me down on the couch, i sat next to her as we were served with two mugs of coffee .

Amara: How's Ma? Is she okay?

Me: She is always good you know that , she just misses you Amara , she never stops talking about you.

She held the mug with both her hands and sobbed crying , i didn't know what to do cause she cried so painfully just sobbing , i took the mug and placed it aside , she covered her face and cried.

Me: Amara what's wrong talk to me? Is it Alpha? Is he mistreating you again.

Amara: No (sniffing) You won't understand Jaden , it's eating me up , i didn't mean to .

Me: Tell me what's wrong with you, please .

She wiped her tears and got closer like she wanted to whisper something to me , Alpha appeared.

Alpha: I think the Doctor has to go home now .

Me: Please just a minute with Amara.

Alpha: Doc please , Momma had a long tiring day so i think she needs some sleep.

Amara: It's fine Jaden , thank you for having coffee with me and please greet Ma' Grace for me please.

Me: Will do , are you sure you want me to go now you look like you were about to tell me something.

Alpha: Yes she wants you to go , don't you Amara?

She nodded her head and we shared a hug , i whispered in her ear.

Me: Text me when his asleep.

I pulled back and faked a smile.

Alpha: goodnight Jaden.

Me : Goodnight Alpha.

I walked out leaving the house, i got in my car and couldn't stop myself from thinking maybe he was abusive to her ? Mean he pushed her not so long ago causing her C- section to split open. Was Amara being abused ? It didn't seem to be Physically cause she doesn't have bruises this means he was abusing her psychology or maybe verbally. Why did she break down in that way and she had something to tell me but that evil man just had to show up. I drove out the house driving home couldn't help but have a psychological debate about Amara . If he is abusing her why is she still living with him ? Oh i forgot Amara is there for her son probably that rotten egg is using her son to blackmail her , i need to get to the bottom of this.

AMARA

Alpha looked at me as we walked into the bedroom

Alpha: what did you tell him?

Me : Nothing.

Alpha: (shouting ) Amara don't lie to me !

Me: Oh my god ! I'm not lying instead of you that gets shot at and a man tried to kill you and in all that you have bags filled with money ! Whose the liar now Alpha cause i know I'm not

that dum ! You involved in illegal business ain't you !

Alpha: ( scoffs) Where is this all coming from now? Oh i see is it because of the little get together hug you had with the Doctor? when you were with him you had something going on isn't it ? I saw how cosy you were .

I looked at him and raised up my hand , i let out all my power investing it in my hand , i gave him a hard hot slap across the face he held his cheek , slap filled with rage , disappointment and disgust , did he have to take it that far ? To view me like that kind of a woman , a man i love with all my heart , he is questioning my faithfulness.

Me: Is that what you see when you look at me ? A whore ? I was faithful to you even when i had no damn reason to be and you have the guts to stand there and question me like you were faithfully to me ! I cause i know you had your nights with Megan, but you will never hear me calling you out because of those nights , you broke my heart Alpha , i don't believe you.

Alpha: (softly) I didn't mean that baby, I'm sorry.

Me: I asked you a question! Is that what you see when you look at me!

Alpha: I love you.

Me: ( laughs) Really ? You got a funny way of showing your love Mr Alpha Smith , well for your information I would never

stoop to your level, sleeping around is your category!

Alpha: Oh now I'm a cheater ? Really now Amara how long have you been keeping that ? You have been dying to tell me that weren't you.

Me: I have nothing more to say to Alpha because if i do open my mouth you will hate me and I'd hate that cause you mean the most me.

Alpha: ( scoffs) I don't even understand why you angry here cause only guilty people get angry when defended by the truth, the truth hurts .

Me: ( laughs) says a undercover criminal.

Alpha: Excuse me?

Me : Don't you dare deny it cause i know you a criminal Alpha ! Yes i do know that just admit it and stop throwing tantrums! Man the fuck up and admit you actually are involved in illegal businesses , no one gets shot at and a man tried to kill you and in all that you have bags filled with money and don't you dare stand there and pretend like those are just coincidental cause they not . But now you have me caught up in the mixture , you dragged me in you bastard ( crying) I took a life Alpha and you pretending like nothing happened , i am not you ! I'm not a heartless , cold bastard like you !

Alpha: I know that quite well Amara but that doesn't mean

everyone should know you killed someone ! If you open up about this you will go to jail sweetheart . Do you want that , do you want to go to jail?

Me : I just needed someone to talk to Alpha , I'm trying but it ain't easy to forget him, when i close my eye's i see him , i see blood in my hands , i feel dirty , i feel filthy .

Alpha: I'm sorry.

Me: You always sorry remember when you said that to me ? That I'm always sorry ? How does it feel now ! How does it feel to fuck up , are you even sorry ? Know what Just get out , go sleep in the couch or somewhere , just leave.

Alpha: I don't want to leave you Amara. I won't leave you .

Me: I need you to leave , please , just leave me alone , i want to be alone .

I walked to the window and swunged it open , the night breeze cooling my face as i was burning up with emotions, i looked at the sky with a bed of stars and one just standing out shinning bright than the others. I heard the door shut closed , hoping he walked out the room. I looked at the shining star . I just stood at the window for a prolonged moment looking at the milky sky.

Me: I hope you forgive me and my soul.



I closed the window and got into bed laying next to my little human , i looked at him as he sucked on his little thumb fast asleep.

Me: I'm sorry i haven't been your mom but i promise from now on i will be your mom , i won't let you out of my sight . I won't ever leave nor forsake you , I'm yours and you mine , bonded for eternity . As for your father all i can say is that it's hard loving someone like him always followed with garbage and troubles , you won't be like him , not like any of the men in your bloodline , you will be different you will change the world and you will be a better man , you have to Junior .

I kissed his forehead as he moved a little stretching his little arms , god please don't wake up , i pat his back softly humming a sweet song. The whole room just suddenly warmed up , i loved that feeling , i felt safe and nothing could touch me not even bad dreams , i laid my head on the pillow and closed my eyes , hoping for a better day tomorrow.

48

NANDI

I woke up and had a morning coffee while preparing breakfast, i just love cooking for the family and actually have my house filled up like this i didn't want this moment to end , i even want Junior to grow up here , be groomed in this very own house just

like Alpha. The maids helped me set the table and i made sandwiches and some tea for the security gaurds they needed strength and today is a cold and breezy day with cloud covering.

Me: Take these sandwiches to the gaurds outside.

Maid: Okay Mem.

She took the sandwiches and left the room , i wiped my hands on my kitchen apron as i opened up windows for the morning breeze. I walked to the seating area . On the couch Alpha was fast asleep , he looked very uncomfortable on that sofa .

Me : (calling out) Alpha .

He just twitched his eye lashes. I placed my hand on his stomach and shook him . He opened up his eyes and looked at me getting up .

Alpha: Ma , what's going on? Where are they?

Me : Where are who? Why are you sleeping on the couch ?

Alpha: I was giving Amara some she time.

Me: She time? What in the living god is that? You children had fight? We heard the arguing Alpha.

Alpha: It wasn't a fight , it's a misunderstanding.

Me: Is that how the generation of today define arguments

these days? Okay sweetie tell me what's wrong?

Alpha: Have you made breakfast , I'm starving.

He got up from the couch and left the sitting area , Alpha and always avoiding opening up , guess I'll have to have a conversation with Amara , i got up and fixed the pillows on the couch opening the windows. Amara walked out the room carrying Junior, she looked better than yesterday and Junior looked good too , like he was already fed and had a bath.

Amara: Morning Ma.

Me: Morning sweetie? Come have breakfast, may i?

Amara: ofcause , it's amazing how he sleeps the whole night without interrupting my sleep it's like he knows mommy needs some sleep.

She handed me Junior, i held him against my chest , looking at her as she smiled.

Me: I heard you and Alpha fight last night was it serious cause he slept on the couch.

Amara: I just wanted some time away from him , just a me moment.

Me: i see but you understand that Alpha is injured right he can't be sleeping uncomfortably, he needs proper sleep and his body to be relaxed, when you arguing try talking till you resolve the

issue don't go to bed still angry at each other okay.

Amara: Okay.

Me: Let's go have breakfast you must be starving.

We went to the table and sat down , Alpha was just having coffee his not really of a breakfast person , we sat down all as a family including Madam Megan they were all quiet with just plate communicating with the folks. I looked around and my eyes met Steve's , he looked at me chewing.

Me: I would really love we eat like this every morning for the rest of our lives , eat as a family.

Megan: ( chuckles)

Me: Is there a problem Megan?

Megan: Absolutely not Mrs Smith , I'm just imagining what kind of family has secrets like this one , remember when Alpha said his surrounded by backstabbing people , snakes and cheaters , i second him.

Steve : ( clears his throat) Megan we having breakfast please stop it with the tantrums not this early !

Megan: No ! I'm sick and tired of these games now Steve! I want to know where i stand in this family! Am i even in the family?

Alpha: No you not !

Steve: Alpha stop it.

Alpha: What? Like seriously Pop's Megan needs to go ! She's just unwanted goods in this house slowly and steady getting on my nerves mean like geez even a mentally unstable person could see when she doesn't belong in a place . Fuck is this house? A shelter for woman .

Me: Alpha please don't talk to her like that , have a heart a little sympathy please.

Megan got up from the table tossing the utensils on the table , i could see the hurt in her eyes and i felt sorry for her.

Megan: ( sobbing) Okay fine.

Me: Megan please seat down .

Megan: No ! You all heard him insult me ! Paint me blue black and you sat there and said nothing and i won't sit here and listen to Alpha insult me !

She walked out the room heading to the rooms.

Me: Goodness Alpha , we know you not fond of her but no how you spoke to her is unacceptable, you need to go and apologize to her.

Alpha: I will when i want to right now i don't.

Amara: Why am i not surprised with his response, excuse me.

She got up from the table and left, i looked at Alpha.

Alpha: What ! No I'm not running after Amara.

Me: You need you swallow your pride if you want to work things out between you and that girl we heard you two arguing last night Alpha and it wasn't good cause you had your child in the room with both of you as you screamed your lungs out.

Alpha: I know and I'm sorry you had to hear that , if we crowding you in your house i will gladly take my baby and his mother so we leave you peacefully.

Me: Baby that's not what i meant.

Alpha: I'm done having this conversation with any of you , we will leave as soon as possible .

He also got up and left. The goes my family breakfast down the drain .

Steve: You shouldn't get in between two lovers , when it comes to people's relationships you should step back my love , i know you mean well but it's clear Amara and Alpha are grown people now , they will have fights and arguments , Alpha is your child he will remain your baby boy but let him handle his relationship problems please sweetheart.

Me: Mute can you go get me these from the market please .

Mute: Yes Mem.

He took the list of products and left the room , I looked at Steve and just clicked my tongue also leaving the table, i just wanted to help that's what a mother does after all she helps her child by making things easy , i hated seeing him laying on the couch like that if i have to be crucified for trying to help my baby boy , then hang me. I held my grandson and sat down with him watching tv .

ABBYGAIL

I packed my lipsticks in my purse and walked out my room. I walked to the door going out .

Thandeka: Baby you already leaving?

Me: Yes .

Thandeka: But you haven't had breakfast.

Me: Mommy I'm fine I'll grab breakfast on my way to campus i have a early test.

Thandeka: Goodluck then.

Me: Thank you.

Thandeka: Take a security gaurd with you just for safety.

Me: No i will not ! I'm fine on my own what are the students

going to say seeing me walking around with a security guard they'll gossip about me and call me a drama queen No I'm cool.

Thandeka: Be careful then.

Me: I will be plus i have some pepper spray in my purse.

I walked out the house and approached my car driving out the house , isn't my life crazy , a 27 year old still living with her parents and doing my 4th year in varsity , i wish i had taken a much better course than Psychology maybe teaching or something but my passion is in psychology . I played music on my way to the market to get myself so juice and a fruits to eat , i really don't want to spend much time in the house with all the drama with Alpha's family , ever lived in fear? I was living in fear in my own home imagine but then My father and Drew act like they have things figured out while deep within they know they don't stand a chance against Alpha , Drew has this sick obsession with trying to be better than Alpha and that's the thing that actually drives me crazy cause Alpha seriously doesn't care while his barking like a toothless dog behind him. I am even looking for a place to stay just till this while situation is over. I parked my car and got out taking my bag i felt knife just on my tummy , i froze.

Robber : Give me your bag and car keys.

Me: Please take everything just don't hurt me please.



Robber: Hand it to me slowly or you will meet your maker.

I handed him by car keys , god my car is even new i got it as a birthday gift from my parents . I sobbed in fear handing him the car keys. I heard another voice in the background a deep , demanding voice.

Voice: What is going on here?

The robber panicked , a tempting to run away , but my knight in a shining armour had already grabbed hold of him .

Man: Give the lady her car keys and bag , and tell her you sorry.

I looked at him as he ordered the robber to give me back my things , he handed the things to me and apologized , he was scared too hell , his facial expression said it all , the darkskinned knight was standing behind him , i looked at him as his blissful eyes looked at me piercing into my soul , my cheeks got hot.

Robber: I'm so sorry Mem , please have a good day .

Me: Ummm thank you , have a good day yourself.

Man: Get lost !

The robber speeded off running, i looked at him as he inserted a gun in his hip. Oh now i see that why the robber was shaking he was scared of being shot at , i let out a laugh.

Man: What's funny ? You almost got robbed.

Me: I know silly me just that you just made a robber that actually tried to rob me apologize to me .

Man: No harm done , let me be on my way , bye.

I looked at him as he turned, the black clothes , gun and attitude he must be a police officer.

Me: Uhm.. excuse me sir.

He turned and looked at me , god those gorgeous eyes that melted my insides .

Man: Yes.

Me: I'm Abby , Abbygail Hughes, you must be a police officer.

Man: I'm Mut..Marcus.

Me: Nice to meet you Officer Marcus

Marcus: Back at you Abbygail.

Me: please call me Abby.

I looked at him smiling a little with emotions and my whole body just acting up. I looked at his eyes falling for him and i was up for taking chances , i looked at his hands browsing for a wedding ring , these no ring good.

Marcus: I will leave now.

Me: Are you going to the market?

Marcus: Yes.

Me: Let's walk together then cause I'm going in too plus I'll feel safer walking with you.

Marcus: ( smiling) okay then My lady .

Me: Your lady ?

Marcus : Oh sorry if that sounded offensive, just that i was raised in a very respectful family so i adress women in a respectful manner.

Me: I'm flattered.

I locked the car and we walked together , i looked at him stealing glances as he smiled at me , we got in and he took out a list. I looked at him as he cutely selected ingredients.

Me: Shopping for your girlfriend?

Marcus: No for my mother , she's old so i do the shopping for her.

Me: That's so sweet , so are you single?

Lord , what has came over me , but i had to ask, don't judge me i need to know if i will be persuading something.

Marcus: Yes i am single.

Me: Liar, liar pants on fire !

Marcus: No i actually not lying i am single in the mean time.

Me: Why is such a fine looking man like you single?

Marcus: Guess his still looking for a fine looking lady.

I giggled blushing looking down as i met his eyes again. He smiled with his horse white capped teeth , nice bushy brows and a trimmed haircut.

Me: I see.

Marcus: I think I'm done here so I'll go pay , nice meeting you Miss Hughes ( smirks)

Me: You too Marcus.

He nodded his head and pushed the trolley to the cashier , i didn't get his numbers. I took a bottle of water and stood behind him as he swiped paying for the goods. Some nerve this guy has to make a girl drool over him like this , yes i have a boyfriend but he isn't as fun as Office Marcus. Just looking at his gorgeous shaped face , it's like god took his time molding this man , in the 7 days of rest he had he was molding Marcus. I paid for the water and walked out following him out .

Me: Uhm Marcus.

Marcus: Yes.

Me: I don't want to seem forward or awkward or even

disrespect you , I'm not used to this.

Marcus: Talk to me what's wrong?

Me: (awkwardly)Can i give you my numbers , just incase i come past a robber some day and i have your number in emergency dail.

Marcus: Why not , your phone?

Me: here.

I took my phone out my purse and handed it to him , slightly our hands collided, i looked at his clean fingers press gently on my phone as he punched in his numbers. He handed me my phone

Marcus: There you go.

Me: Thank you , bye.

Marcus: Bye beautiful.

I opened up my car and got in , looking at him from the review mirror as he got into his jeep, i drove off heading to campus , i looked at the time , i had 15 minutes to get into class or I'll miss the test , am i even going to be able to focus? I speeded off and got off the car and rushed to class , i reached the door as the Professor was handing out the test papers.

Professor: I almost thought you weren't coming Miss Hughes.

Me: Wouldn't miss this test even if the world was coming to an end.

Professor: Good answer , 15 minute test Ladies and Gentlemen, goodluck.

I looked at my paper and flicked my pen , quickly scrambling down .

AMARA

I fixed the bed and picked up Juniors teddy bear that was on the floor. Alpha walked in , he just looked at me and approached the bathroom knowing the kind of person he is if i don't reach out we will spend the rest of our lives with him ignoring me. I walked in thr bathroom as he was rinsing his face , i reached out with a towel handing it to him , he looked at me and walked to the towel taking one for himself.

Me: Really now? Are you going to avoid me because of one silly argument that you started.

Alpha: (chuckles) I'm the bad guy, always will be , listen just let me be , i don't want to catch myself saying the wrong things cause the won't be any come back so let me be.

Me: Please don't say that baby , I'm sorry.

Alpha: when i said i was sorry you didn't forgive me

Me: But I forgave you , i swear i didn't sleep angry at you , i

even missed you. I hate sleeping without you besides me , i felt really bad sending you out , i wanted to kiss you and feel you all night but you weren't there.

I looked at him as he softened up , smiling a little .

Alpha: I forgive you , the couch wasn't even comfortable. I am worried about you Amara , i feel you should see a therapist baby , maybe if you talk to someone that is a professional about this she will help you get through this , i have my own personal therapist she will help you get through this okay or if you don't want to see her then I'm here talk to me.

Me: I'll think about it , but I'm much better now.

I looked at the mirror and saw the man , he was staring at me with a bullet wound in his forehead, i froze , shaking just looking at the guy.

Alpha: Baby , what's wrong? Amara you shaking.

He grabbed my face shaking me , i was numb looking into the eyes of the man i killed , was it real ? Is he real? Or is my mind playing with me? I looked at him and cried.

Me: I'm sorry , please forgive me

Alpha: His not real , baby come back to me !

Me: You are not real , I killed you and you will never torment me again !

I looked at him one more time as the scare and fear rubbed off , i was taking my life back , i wasn't going to beat myself up for someone that wasn't even a good man , the moment sunked in as i gained my senses . I looked at the clear mirror looking at my reflection.

Alpha: Are you okay ? Should i bring you water?

Me: It's about time we pray for salvation Alpha , we can't continue living like this.

Alpha: You can pray Baby and also pray for me , i have work to do.

Me: Are you seriously going to run away ? You need to pray as much as i do!

Alpha: I don't have no problem with sleeping you do sweetheart and i total understand why you have to pray i have no problem with prayer , infact go ahead momma I'll give you some room to pray.

I looked at him as he walked out the bathroom.

Me: You were suppose to hold my hand as the father of my child.

Alpha: I will always hold your hand sweetheart , spiritually my heart and hand are with you. The door shut close behind him , maybe his family has made the deal with the devil for wealth



and status that's why he doesn't want to pray with me never think you know someone. I walked out the bathroom and sat on the bed. My phone rang, i looked at the caller , Jaden i wonder what's wrong.

Me: Jaden.

Jaden : Ammie are you okay , i was worried about you last night.

Me: Oh no please don't don't worry I'm fine really , just an argument with Alpha but we talked and it's all fixed.

Jaden: Are you sure? Cause i feel the is more but you scared to say.

I shook my head swallowing hard . Alpha is right i can't go around opening my chest to everyone about this.

Me: No , ofcause not , I'm fine ( fakes a laughs) It's just moodswings i suffer from those lately guess motherhood is catching up on me.

Jaden : You know we here for you right?

Me: I do and i appreciate , greet Grace for me Please , tell her I'll come visit soon.

Jaden : I will be safe then.

Me: I will, take care.

He dropped the call as i looked at the phone , god i wish he buys my sob story and not pasture me cause i will come clean , i hate lying to the people i love , Jaden and Grace are close to relatives to me. I got up from the bed and walked out the room, maybe if I'm inbetween people i will forget about everything, i need a little happiness,after what i did i know i don't deserve any joy , i took a life maybe he had a wife and children and they depended on him and i took away their hope , oh lord i will never forgive myself if i killed a family man , maybe he thought he was doing a job for a quick buck and i just had to show up and kill him , maybe if i just shot his arm just to stop him , i got carried away.

ALPHA

I felt bad leaving her like that , maybe she needed a hug or maybe a prolonged kiss of assurance that she's not alone should i go back to the room and just give her a long tight hug. Mute walked in the kitchen and place the grocery bags on the table.

Mute: You won't believe what just happened .

Me: Bro please don't tell me any of your sob stories I'm not interested.

Mute: Just shut up and listen to me , i met Abbygail Hughes just an hour ago.

I looked at him frowning.

Me: What did you do to her?

Mute: Nothing easy tiger, i know you don't want us to hurt the girls but i thought that might change after the incident with Amara. Plus this Abby girl approached me not the other way around.

Steve : Abby girl ? What are you boys talking about?

Mute: Abbygail Hughes, she showed interest in me at the supermarket.

Steve : Maybe it's a trap.

Mute: No it's not because i saved her from getting rob ( laughs)  
She thought i was a police officer imagine.

Steve: We could use her.

Mute: I was thinking just that she might be useful to us.

Steve: Keep her entertain.

Mute: With pleasure.

Steve: Do you have objections Judge Alpha?

Me: No , do whatever is necessary those bastard almost killed me , not once but twice , we grabbing every opportunity we can get to destroy them .

Steve: Why not start in his weakest links which are his daughters plus those girls seem very fond of you Alpha.

Me: Mute already has Abby entertain, Mute get me a place and time , i think i have to officially introduce myself to Miss Logan Hughes.

Mute: I don't think Amara will be happy with that Alpha let me and Cohen handle the girls okay.

Me: What Amara doesn't know can't hurt her Mute.

Steve: My boys ! Let's get to work , i will try my luck on Mrs Hughes, every bitch has a throbbing clit after all.

Me: What ! No dad ! You are not cheating on my mom ! Geez imagine telling me you actually going to cheat on Ma. No stand back old man.

Steve: Then you standing back too daddy ! Mute is right Amara doesn't deserve this , him and Cohen will handle this yoh try to mend things with your wife.

I looked at him , he called Amara my wife.

Me: Am i hearing correctly? Say that again , pardon me.

Steve: Don't push it young man.

He left the room , i looked at Mute as he laughed it out , the maids unpacked the products.

Me: He called Amara my wife.

Mute: His beginning to like Amara.

Me: That is what i have been noticing , funny cause he hated the guts out of her.

Mute: Amara is a cool girl , who wouldn't like her?

Me: You like her too? Cause i got a gun on my hip soldier just incase your forgot I'll redecorate this whole kitchen with your brains.

Mute: Chill , she's not my type , i like my girls ratchet , Amara is too goofy for my liking.

Me: Good , now get moving soldier , order black roses for Mrs Mute !

Mute : never seen you order flowers for Amara.

Me: Boy what you talking about ? I ordered a whole human from heaven for her , she has my heart , soul , brain what more does she want my body ? cause she has that too.

Mute: ( chuckles) God please let her walk in and hear you talk all that shit !

Me: I don't care she knows she can't breathe without me , she will have an heart attack without me.

Amara walked in the kitchen holding Junior's bottle , i looked at

her and smiled , Mute and the maids just had to laugh in the background giving out we were talking about her .

Amara: Why are they laughing? Do i have something inappropriate on my face.

Me: No Momma you look beautiful, they just laughing at a joke Mute made his such a brainless fool.

Amara: ( smiles) Oh really i love jokes okay let's hear it comedian Mute , lighten my day.

Mute: Actually Alpha is ly...

Me: I think I heard Junior cry . ( calling out) Don't worry boy , mommy is on her way. Duty call Momma.

Amara: But i left him sleeping , i don't hear him crying .

Me: go check just incase , his quiet now , he heard my voice and kept quiet , father and son connection.

Amara: You acting weird, are you okay?

Me: I'm okay , I love you.

Amara: I love you too.

She took the bottle and walked out.

Me: Bare with me guys , she can be a handful sometimes , if she heard i said all that i will be sleeping on the couch even tonight, talking about those couches they need to go , they not

comfortable.

Mute: Hello , they were made for sitting not sleeping.

Me: Haha very funny, get to work , all of you get to work!

I clicked my tongue walking out the kitchen , i took my phone and called Ipek, i have been really lacking on work and i needed the clients to pay up so i use their accounts for money laundering.

Ipek: long time.

Me: I will be working from home if these clients that come in for me divert them to call me okay , i will be skyping with them.

Ipek: Any reason why you working from home?

Me: Who is whose boss between us ? Whose working for who? Maybe I'm forward i don't understand this work arrangement.

Ipek: Sorry for asking.

Me: Good , email me the business financially documents.

Ipek: Okay sir.

I hung up the call , This Ipek girl is getting forward since when has she had the nerve to question me . I make the rules she follows the hell. I walked into the room and got on laptop waiting for her email. Junior was really asleep , so embarrassed i was making a fool out of her but she'll understand. She laid

down besides me pressing on her phone , was a little anxious wanted to take her phone and see who she was talking to but i don't want to seem controlling. She smiled as i looked at her ,rage was building up with Ipek taking her time to send the documents.

Me: You look happy who you talking to?

Amara: A friend on Instagram is the a problem?

Me: No it's good that you keeping yourself entertained with social media.

She continue tapping on her phone and smiling. God was this jealousy or what, i have had this bad thing of feeling angry when Amara is with a man , last night seeing her feeling so secured in the Doctor's arms really sent me down to hell, that we ended up in a minor argument. I just hope i still bring meaning and healing in her life , our relationship was simple and fun now things have changed with Junior in the picture, i love my son don't get me wrong but he just came unexpectedly and i wasn't ready to be a dad no one is but I'm taking it one step at a time , i had to open up to this new life , I'm no longer a bachelor now , I'm a lover and a father and these two people mean the world to me.

Amara: I was thinking of getting some of my comfortable clothes from the house and i want to visit Grace's house maybe



tomorrow.

Me: I'll send the guards to go get all your wodge , i don't want you leaving the house , i also want my punching bag i have work on my arm.

Amara: You seriously can't expect me to be stuck in this house all day every day , i need fresh air to go out and meet people.

Me: You will be stuck with me , baby you don't love me no more .

Amara: I can't love you and love Junior , you a grown man .

Me: I think Junior has to go , he can't come from wherever he comes from and take up my space in your heart.

Amara: You sound so stupid , i am going to Grace's house like it or not.

Me: Okay fine I'll personally drop you off , i want to see for myself that you safe .

Amara: Why wouldn't i be safe ? And you still haven't told me why there are so many guards surrounding the house with guns Alpha , i just don't seem to understand what kind of life you live .

Me: It's your life too now you will have to adapt to it , the guards are just for security purposes for robbers and all the chances.

I held Amara's hand and laid a kissed. She looked at me and smiled.

Amara: You are really acting weird today first in the kitchen and now in the bedroom , what's wrong , are you sick?

She placed her hand on my forehead.

Me: I'm not sick , so showing affection to my baby is called being weird these days?

Amara: No it's not , i love it but it's just suspicious.

Me : Let's get married.

Amara: see why I'm asking if you okay?

Me: I'm being sincere here , i know i don't have a ring to officially ask you with but here i am laying down my heart and asking you to marry me for the third time, will you be my wife and this time we will officially get married, i promise.

Amara: Marriage is a big step Alpha , we still caught up in emotions and we trying to still find our way back and cope with Junior and i know you got a lot in plate right now , let's not talk about marriage .

Me: What has all that got to do with us being husband and wife? If you want we can keep it intimate and call a judge make it officially then we'll celebrate , you still love me right.

Amara: Don't be silly you know i love you.

Me: Then marry me , be my wife.

Amara: Okay then , yes i will be your wife for the third time , because i love you and i believe in us .

I held her closed and kissed her , she looked at me and smiled , i promise this time we will get married, we will tie the knot after that i will have to talk to my contacts and get Junior a new birth certificate with his real parents on it. I am getting my family together and when we were married with Amara it will be hard for chances like Megan to penetrate inbetween us again , Amara and i belong together, through the rough tides we still holding hold , she never gave up on me even when i gave her reasons and when i marry her all those men that make her smile on Instagram will back the fuck away from my wife , i am securing what's mine , marking my territory.

DREW

I took my ride around town and stopped in a bar in town , just for a few drinks alone , not having friends can be hard but i will have to look at the people i invite into my circle just incase i invite snakes , i sat down at the bar.

Me : single malt whisky.

Bar man: Coming right up.

Mute : Make it two glasses on the house.

I looked at him and held my gun. He looked at me and laughed, what was with this Smith men and laughing.

Me: What's stopping me right now to finish you off?

Mute: You a bluff Drew , if you wanted to you would've seconds ago , plus you won't get out of here alive boy .

He sat down as the barman handed us our orders. He took his glass and drank from it dropping it on the table as he swallowed the hot whisky.

Me: So what now you following me?

Mute: Why would i follow you into my club?

Me: What ? this is your joint?

Mute: i just told the barman to give you a drink on the house , what the hell was that supposed to mean?

Me: We are supposed to be enemies Mute.

Mute: I never said we weren't enemies.

Me: Then why are you kind to me.

Mute: I'm not a bitch like you Hughes, i believe in playing by the book not dirty ! Your family is filled with bitchies, you a bitch , your dad is a bitch , your step mom who is cheating on your stupid father ! Your sisters . Mhh ( smiles) Your sister , these

that one sister of ours what is her name .

Me: Don't you dare come near my sisters , i will kill you !

Mute: Chill , another drink?

I could feel the anger build up inside me , why can't i end this bastard right here and they just kill me , it will be worth it ! But i have to be smart about this i had so much to lose if i die here today , he wants this , he wants me to boil up and attack him , he thinks this is a game. The barman gave us another round of whisky .

Mute: What's up with you? we grew up with you? now you lurking on our blood, what's wrong with you?

Me: I'm doing what anyone in my position would do .

Mute: And what is that ?

Me: I'm standing with my family.

Mute:( laughs) You dead , you going to die ! With your family, but first i have to have one of your sister's in my bed doing dance moves.

Agitated i let out a punch , he tilted a little on the chair and laughed, the whole room of men got up holding their hips , jesus what have i done ? I'm outnumbered.

Mute: Stand down , let the young cub roar !

They all looked at me seating down as Mute got up from the chair. I was boiling in anger .

Me: If you ever talk about my sisters like that i will kill you ! I don't care even if you have a whole room of lap dogs i will end you !

Mute : No wonder you send skanks to kill Alpha instead of doing it yourself, you hit like a bitch, he will finish you off in one blow , I'm not even bleeding homie you need a few lessons son or you won't last in this race , punch to knock out baby boy not to hurt , barman serve this dead man walking some drinks on the house.

The whole club looked at me and laughed , i have never been this embarrassed , i took my helmet and walked out the club to my bike , he looked at me and drove off in his Jeep , i got on my bike and drove off. The nerve he has thinking he will teach me how to punch who the hell is he ! Who the hell is Alpha that his giving him so much credit ! Fuck is he Mike Tyson? I'll beat him up right here right now , Alpha is fucked up he won't even have the strength to lifted up his arm , his done !

49

ABBYGAIL

The test was a bit hard i have never had a problem when it comes to my test or assignments , i surely failed that test , i

got in my car and drove to the apartment i will be staying in , nothing big a bedroom, kitchen and toilet .I walked in as the owner showed me the room, it was nice and clean and i liked that , i wasn't up for cleaning and stuff , i don't clean.

Owner: So what do you think?

Me: I love it , I'm taking it , I'll sort out all the payments just text me your account details.

Owner: perfect.

I looked around the room smiling , my phone rang , i took it out my bag and looked at the caller , it was Marcus. Blushing slowly and answered the call.

Me: hey.

Marcus: Hey , i don't want to bother you or anything but i just felt like hearing your voice.

I licked my lips, with a curve on my face .

Me:Uhn a minute please.

Marcus: Okay sorry if i disturbed you , I'll call later on.

Me: No please just a minute.

Marcus: Okay.

I placed the phone on my boobs and informed the owner i had to leave , he nodded his head as i walked out to my car.

Me: So how did you get my number cause i remember only you giving me my number.

Marcus: I have my ways.

Me: Really? Wow.

Marcus: Yes sweetheart, so are you home?

Me: No I'm at my apartment.

Marcus : Apartment you live alone?

Me: I will be living alone.

Marcus: Oh wow grown up step , i like that.

Me: Unfortunately it's not a grown up step , I'm running away from family problems.

Marcus: Really never knew a beautiful girl like you is suffering from family dispute.

Me: well this beautiful lady has a crazy and power hungry family , know Marcus i just feel like running away when they in a dispute now that my brother and dad are busy adding coal to a already burning flame really pisses me off .

Marcus: When you say burning flame what does that mean.

Me: Arg never mind let me not bore you with my family issues .

Marcus: If you need someone to talk to , a shoulder to cry on



I'm here for you, i know we just met but I'd like to be a friend .

Me: ( smiles) I'll think about your friend proposal , how about we go out tonight just a friend taking a friend out.

Marcus: Not tonight sweetheart, i have to work.

Me: Arrg bummer.

Marcus: Sorry okay.

Me: No harm done , maybe some other time.

Marcus: I'll call you later on.

Me:Okay I'll be waiting on you.

He hung up the call and i got in the car and drove home , i looked at the yard that was filled with man just buzzing , i hated this why can't we just be a normal family for atleast a whole full year . I parked my car Cohen opened the door for me , smiling.

Cohen: Abby.

Me: That wasn't necessary.

Cohen: I couldn't let you open the door by yourself princess , you look royalty you deserve to be treated like royalty.

I looked at him and laughed , says a whole criminal with ghost following him around , whatever is in his mind will not happen. I looked at him and frowned.

Me: If you even dare try to hit on me again, i will inform father and you will be thrown out of this house , keep your distance away from me boy , I'm not your type.

Cohen: Oh yes Feisty , i like my woman feisty.

He looked at me and smiled . I locked my car and walked in the house, my day just suddenly went dull , Cohen just ruined my day so early. I settled in my room and got into comfortable clothes a cup of coffee would do right now.

Logan: Sis you back.

Me: Unfortunately.

Logan: Okay spill the beans who dares to get you this upset.

I looked at her making coffee for the both of us.

Me: Isn't it Cohen , he was actually hitting on me.

I handed her the mug as her face turned , looking like she was disgusted.

Logan: eew so gross , what is he thinking? I would've told him where to get off , geez he looks so gross i would've puked on him.

Me: ( laughs) Geez Log his not that bad , that disgusting.

Logan: He works for us so he is disgusting for even thinking he can put his hands on that body. Anyways look at these shoes oh

my gosh, definitely a need , i could already see myself rocking them with my silk black dress , girl i will be on fire.

Me: Is there anything you just want to talk about that is not shoes , clothes or fashion?

Logan: I breathe fashion darling.

I looked at her as she paged on her phone , Drew walked in slamming the door, we looked at him as he launched into the kitchen .

Drew: Which one of you is seeing Mute?

I looked at Logan and she looked at me , we were both confused, who was Mute.

Logan: Who the hell is that? And what kind of the name is Mute ?

Drew: Don't act smart with me Logan! Who is dating Mute between you two , i demand an answer ! ( shouting) NOW !

I just looked at him and sipped on my coffee , the real reason i want to move out is because of this nonsense, who in their right senses would just walk in the house slamming doors and accusing us of seeing a man we don't even know. I got up from the chair and walked to the door.

Drew: And where do you think you going Abby.

Me: To my room or am i not allowed to got to my room now  
Drew?

Drew: What's with you and an attitude.

Me: I don't have an attitude I'm just tired of being in this house with you all barbarian behaviours.

Drew: excuse me ? Who do you think you talking to like that Abbygail? I am your elder brother you will respect me!

Me : Hang me oh even better shoot me , send hitman to come kill me , since that's all you good at.

I walked out the kitchen and approached my room locking the door , i took my phone and sat down enjoying my company.

ALPHA

I looked up the companies Financial documents everything was normal, the graphics showed nothing suspicious. My phone beeped i looked at the notification , it was Logan she liked my photo which i posted months ago , was this a sign that i should go after this girl maybe this is a sign i should , she's calling for my attention ,I'll DM her . I looked at Amara that was fast asleep next to me , i looked at her as i wrote the text to Logan .

Me: Are you stalking me now Miss Hughes?

I scrolled down her timeline watching pictures and videos , oh wow , she has really improved herself became a very

beautiful young lady . I just browsed through her timeline and came past a video, she was in a white swim wear , beautifully displayed on her body as the bra hugged her boobs . Just looking at that picture i felt like i was committing a huge sin , i felt like i was cheating.

Logan: Would it be wrong if i was Mr Smith?

I looked at the text and chuckled .

Me: No , do as you please.

Logan: And you do as you please Mister.

Me: I surely will , do you want to grab a drink with me later on.

Logan: I don't think that's a good idea Alpha , my father won't be happy about that.

Me: Sorry then daddy's girl , i thought you were a grown woman who makes her own decisions.

Logan: I am.

Me: To me it doesn't look like that sweetie. But it's okay if you don't want to grab drinks with me .

Logan : Okay fine , you will send me the location and I'll be there in a flash.

Me: I hope so I'm not very patient.

She sent a heart emoji , i deleted the chats and placed my

phone aside , i got up from the bed .

Amara: ( yawning) Where you going?

Me: To take a shower.

Amara: Oh , can you bring Juniro please , i have to breastfeed him.

Me: Okay.

I got Junior and handed him to her as she went about her motherly duties. I had a quick shower and got dressed comfortably.

Me: I think we should get married in this weekend .

Amara: Isn't that a little soon Alpha? We haven't even told your family and i haven't told Mam'Grace. I don't see the hurry in getting married Alpha , don't rush things.

Me: I just can't wait to make you my wife.

Amara: Ain't i already your wife?

Me: You the mother of my child that happens to be the love of my life who is my current and forever girlfriend so practically you are my wife.

Amara: You could've said just that instead of naming all my positions in your life , you can have your son , i think it's about time i take a bath too.

I sat on the bed , Junior was getting big , must say he is fat in a cute way but not right for a baby boy. I laid him on my chest with his face on my lips, i kept kissing him repeatedly as he frowned. He hated being kissed but i still went on anyways , i wasn't going to be told what to do by a broke young man in my room .

Me: Mommy and i are getting married , so what are your views on that young man?

His eyes paced around the room as he looked at me wiggling his big head , his hands touching my face as his sharp nails made trials on my face stretching me. I have never been this bored in my life , so how do father's actually cope with these little people . Mute walked in the room.

Mute: Sorry for interrupting your bonding time with J but we need in the study.

Me: New adjustments?

Mute: yes.

Me: I will be there in a sec.

He walked out the room , i placed Junior in the center of the bed and stuffed a teddy bear next to him just so he doesn't feel alone.

Me: Babe i have a quick meeting with Pop's, I'll be back.

Amara: Okay make sure Junior is in the center of the bed.

Me: I did, I'm a very responsible father.

I walked out the room meeting Pop's , Mute and Spike in the Study. I looked at them as i got in.

Steve: Have a seat.

Me: What's wrong you guys look tense.

Mute: It's about Abby.

Me: what about her?

Mute: She is having the hardest time coping with this fight between us and her family , looks like she hates violence .

Me: Who doesn't hate violence Mute , we all do ! It's just that we are forced in all this , we fighting with no one here the Hughes are fighting with us and we are protecting ourselves.

Mute: I know that and the great news is that she will be living alone she's moving out of her parent's house.

Me: Really? That makes her vulnerable to us.

Steve: knowing Thabo he won't just lay low on this matter , he will force her to reconsider staying make her feel unsafe.

Me: That is where Mute comes in , you need to make her trust you , make sure she feels much more safer with you , but at the same time don't make her push her family away , she must go



home so she comes back and reports to you.

Mute: You understand i will not be living with this girl right?

Me: Where will it hurt if you moved in with her?

Mute: Oh no Alpha , we can't jump things , Abby is smarter than you think.

Me: The question you should be asking is that is she smarter than you? She's a woman Mute , once you give her a good time and be what she wants in a man you done .

Steve: Alpha got a point here , let's talk about how we will make the moving in together mission possible.

Spike: Let's scare her , a few boys to rough her up and scare her will definitely do the job and then Mute appears again and saves the day.

Me: No , that will raise brows he can't always save her , it will become suspicious.

Mute: Okay then Mr smarty pants what do you think we should do.

I looked at him , nothing is stopping me from getting up this chair and punch the fuck out of him.

Me: Watch your tougue.

Mute: You seem to have everything planned out Alpha why

don't you do this fucken job then!

Me: The hell you talking about ! You said you will handle Abby , are you getting cold feet already boy !

Mute: ( shouting) Who are you calling a boy?

Me: Who am i looking at Boy.

Mute: ( softly) he actually called me a boy again , he repeated himself. ( chuckles) I'll fuck him up !

He got up from the chair agitate just breaking through the room to get to me , i got from the chair and formed a fist , i was going to knock him out . Spike stopped him before he could even reach to me .

Spike: Wait , wait ! Mute back down.

Me: What do you think you going to do?

Steve: Boys! Boys! Stop this !

Mute: You need to talk to your son !

Me: Talk to me and say what? If you have something to say , talk to me straight up Mute!

Mute: Talk to you and say what , i have nothing to say to you bra ! The problem about you , you don't listen but you demand to be listened to Alpha , it's either your way or screw everyone else !

Me: Okay fine , I'm quiet, I'll seat down and listen to your stupid plans you probably don't even have a plan just going with the flow .

Mute: Know what ! I'm out , cause the minute i stay any longer in this room I'll fuck someone up !

I sat down and laid back on the chair and laughed.

Me: You not going to do shit , I dare you Mute ! You might need two of you to fuck me up.

Mute: says a man that got saved by a woman.

Me: Okay know what , let's take this from the top , you feeling invincible now ! You acting corny with me . Come outside! Let's go resolve this matter once and for all !

Steve: No one is leaving this room! Alpha you still recovering from your surgery and your bruises what you calling for is unnecessary you should stop using your body as a object , Mute seat down , we are family we can't be fighting like dogs , there are no enemies in this room , we can't be rubbing each other up the wrong way , we need to be united and stand strong if we are going to fight in our own circle it's clear we might as well kill ourselves cause we won't last out there! I need you both and i love you both , you are my son's, i hate seeing you fight like this , it brings nothing but shame to me to watch my boys squabble , please boys try calming yourselves down so we work like a

team .

Spike: Come on guys , Alpha seat down.

I looked at Mute and sat down , god i was boiling losing myself , how dare he question my relationship with Amara , i know for a fact letting him kill that man was wrong cause i should've handled it like a man she just got in at the wrong time. I feel guilty already him rubbing it in will just make me angry and when I'm angry i act irrational. I just sat down at the study quietly .

Steve: So we were saying Spike will send men to scare the girl then Mute appears and saves her , Alpha said it will be suspicious when you always saving her before he could say anything the fight erupted so Alpha please resume.

Me: I have nothing to say .

Mute: ( laughs) There we go.

I looked at my watch the time flew pretty quickly it's already late , i got up from the chair .

Me: I have plans , he said he'll handle Abby , then let him do it his way , I'm done with this Abby thing.

Steve: Alpha where you going?

I walked out the study and approached the room , Amara was laying on the bed next to Junior, i opened up my wodrope and

took out a suite , she looked at me.

Amara: You going out?

Me: Yes.

Amara: oh , and you didn't inform me about that.

Me: Do i have to Infrom you about everything? Okay fine , I'm going to get dressed now Amara after that I'm going to a meeting.

Amara: ( confused) Uhhh...okay , why are you upset? do you want to talk about it?

Me: I would rather not.

I walked into the bathroom and got dressed tucking my shirt in my pants , i wore the blazer applying , cuffs and deodorant. Firmly fixing the shirt as it was half buttoned up showing my chest. I walked out the bathroom and got my car keys and phone .

Amara: So when should i expect you back?

Me: I don't know but don't wait up i might be back late.

She looked at me as i walked out the bedroom door.

Amara: I love you.

Me: Me too.

I closed the door behind me and drove out the house. Arriving at the restaurant i sent her the location.

Me: Table for two.

Waiter: This way Sir.

She led me to the table, i took my blazer and hanged it on the chair and sat down , she looked at me.

Waiter: Can i take your order?

Me: double shot of hennessy raw no ice.

Waiter : Anything else.

Me: I would've ordered if i wanted anything else girly , when a lady arrives you bring the menu okay? I won't be calling you or any of the signaling shit.

Waiter: Okay sir.

Me: Get lost.

She left the table a minute later she brought my order , i drank from the glass looking at the time ,wonder what has happened to flash girl . I rolled my eyes and scrolled on my phone.

Logan: I hope i didn't make you wait .

I looked at her as she was in a silky dress , she looked at me and smiled , her lipstick just matched her make up isn't she looking pretty for me. I got up and walked to her giving her a

hug.

Me: I'm glad you came , have a seat .

I pulled the chair for her , she sat down , the waiter approached the table she handed her the menu

Logan: Gosh I'm starving.

I rolled my eyes as she browsed on the menu.

Me : Can't decided?

Logan: I'm actually on a diet of I'm very careful when it comes to my food.

Me: I see.

This is going to be a long meeting. I took my glass and had a sip.

Logan: Okay I'm ready uhmm a salad with Calamari stripes and a glass of red wine , are you eat?

Me: No , I'll just have Hennessy.

Logan: That will be all , sho away , chop chop.

I looked at her as she shoed away the waiter.

Me: So what do you do besides looking smoking hot.

Logan : (blushes) I'm in fashion school, upcoming fashion designer , I'm a lover of fashion if i had to rate your look I'd give you a top tied ten , nothing is as impressive as a man in a black

suit with a matured deodorant.

Me: Oh , so you already impressed by me?

Logan : you don't fail to impress me Alpha.

I nodded my head as she received her order , feasting her food , i just looked at my phone and paged through my emails , kind of bored , i even was browsing in Amara's dm , i placed the phone on the table and looked at her.

Me: Enjoying your meal.

Logan: It's quite good , want a bite.

Me: I'm not big on eating at night.

Logan: Come on just a bite won't hurt.

Me: Okay then lets see what you having.

She filled the fork and diverted it in my mouth as i leaned on the table taking a bite , her hand touched my chin as she reached to catch any food that fell off , i chewed .

Logan: And ?

Me: (nodded) Mhh , it's good.

Logan: I knew you'd like it.

Me: I actually don't i just enjoyed it.

Logan : So tell me the real reason for us to meet cause i know



we both not stupid

Me: What's wrong with having drinks with a supposed family friend.

Logan : With everything that's happening mean look at you all bruised up and you still referring to me as a family friend.

Me: I'm in no fight with you sweetheart . The men in your family are in a fight with us as you see I'm all bruised up as you say.

Logan: You are really a fascinating man do you know that?

Me: Fascination in what way?

Logan: Firstly i expected you to be attacking my family left right and center but here you are having drinks with me , just know i have pepper spray in my purse if you try anything funny.

Me: I don't harm women , i just use them to get to what i want .

Logan: So you using me?

Me: What will i be using you for?

Logan: I don't know you tell me.

Me: Maybe for sexual pleasures?

Logan: You are not serious.

Me: What if i am?

We stared at each other for about a minute as she tried to understand what my statement meant , nothing excites me like playing games , i enjoyed playing with a woman give her exactly what she wants , there are a lot of ways to make a woman think she's in control while you playing her like a puppet just controlling the strings , she smiled and sipped on her wine glass , i pulled my chair next to her , leaning closer to her lips so she feels i wanted a kiss , she tucked her hair behind her ear and looked at me , just a inch closer to her face could feel her warm breath on my face that's how close i was to her , my legs close to her thighs , i placed my hands on her white exposed thighs brushing softly against her skin , I leaned holding her chin up , i kissed her , she grasp on my lips hungrily as i smoothed tasting the red wine on her lips they were sweet in a tasty way , my blood got hot , i pulled back breathing calming myself , i was up to no good , i needed to end this before i do something stupid.

Me: I think we should call it a night.

Logan: I think so too , I don't know if it's me or this room is rather hot.

Me: I think it's the room.

Logan: Yes exactly they should plug in air conditioners.

I paid the bill and we got up and walked out. I walked her to her

car as it was dark .

Me: You'll reach home safely.

She extended her finger and wiped my lips.

Logan: Let's get rid of the evidence.

Me: ofcourse.

Logan: So Mrs Alpha at home doesn't suspect anything.

Me: We did nothing wrong , it was just an innocent kiss.

Logan: If that's what you want to call it , hope we will do drinks again i really enjoyed your company.

Me: why not , off you go now little lady , don't want daddy to get worried.

I opened up the door for her , she got in and looked at me smiling.

Logan: bye Alpha.

She drove off , i walked in my car as a reporter approached me.

Reporter: Are you and Logan Hughes in a relationship?

Me: No comment.

Reporter : you just went off the grid for months now did you have a fall out with Megan? When is your wedding?

Me: Megan and i are no longer getting married.

Reporter: But why because you both share a son.

Me: No we are not sharing a son , Junior is not Megan's son , he is mine and Amara McKenzie who is soon to be my wife , that's all i can say.

I got in my car and drove home.

LOGAN

I got home and walked in taking off my shoes . I'm the Queen B in the family the glam and beauty. I'm 24 doing my second year In a fashion academy, when it comes to the soft life, glam and gorgeous looking I'm the Queen honey, i tend to attract a lot of hate because of my attitude and often it's because people are jealous of me , mean who wouldn't be jealous of a light skinned lady with a glammed up body , straight legs and a body that would put models to shame. I picked up my heels and walked inside the kitchen.

Abby: And where were you?

Me: Geez Abby don't you sleep? Why are you sitting in the dark?

Abby: I'm just having a glass of wine , wine helps with frustrations.

Me: Let me join you .

I sat down with her on the couch.

Abby: So where were you?

Me: Out .

Abby: With? Logan do you seriously want me to grill you to speak.

I looked at her through my glass .

Me: I was with Alpha.

Abby: Oh my word , You dirty dirty girl !

Me: Not too loud sis you will get me disowned.

Abby: ( whispering) What were you doing with him ? Don't you know he has a fiancée and a child , you want to be labelled a homewrecker.

Me: let me teach you a lesson Abby , You can't wreck a home that isn't wrecked already big sis.

Abby: Oh my word Dad and Drew better not wind this , or you surely going to get a earfull.

Me: they won't hear it from me and surely you won't tell them

Abby: So what did you do? How did you guys even get to the point of going out.

Me: Let's just say a reactions on a insta post got me a dm.

Abby: Okay so keep it rolling what happened?

Me: We had dinner , drinks , we talked and we supposedly kissed.

Abby: You kissed? Geez Logan , you just asking to be played by this guy , you know he doesn't like you nor find you interesting, all of a sudden when Dad and his dad have a fallout he suddenly slides in your DM and gets you out for dinner wake up black child.

Me: No i don't want to wake up black child , I'm actually enjoying this ride let it be if his playing me , black child , goodnight.

Abby: Goodnight stupid.

Me: I love you too.

I walked to my room and took off the dress , it slipped off , i walked into the shower for my facially routine.

MUTE

Alpha walked in the house , i got up and approached him

Me: Can we talk.

Alpha: No , i just want to go sleep.

Me: Just a minute, please.

Alpha: Okay what's wrong?

Me: I wanted to apologize for losing my temper earlier it was definitely unprofessional and that isn't me.

Alpha: i understand man and it's fine , all in the past now.

Me: And i would really like we don't hold on to that.

Alpha: Dude it's fine.

Me: brothers?

Alpha: Always.

We shook hands , i looked at his cheek he had smeared lip stick on his cheek .

Me: You have lipstick on your cheek , geez Alpha you still a Casanova while you have a beautiful girlfriend and kid , you need to get yourself together and stop playing around , i hope it's not that Hughe girl cause we talked about this.

Alpha: You don't have the right to stand there and judge me okay , mind your business.

Me: I won't mind my business while you know exactly what this will do to your relationship when Amara finds out , did you sleep with her?

He lookef at me and smirked .

Me: Are you mad ? You slept with her.

Alpha: I didn't for godsake

Me: ( sighs) If you lying to me know you lying to the wrong person Alpha, always remember that everything that's done in the dark surfaces to the light and when this catches up with you don't you dare walk around biting our heads off cause we talked about this and that you are falling back and letting me and Spike handle this.

Alpha: nothing is going to happen trust me , i got this okay .

Me: Keep on saying you got this till you don't get it.

Alpha: I'm going to marry Amara and we married she's bound to me , for now keep our mouth shut.

I walked inside the house , i just can't believe him , this will surely come back and bite him. This was just immature of him.

50

STEVE

I woke up and had coffee in my study , i took my phone and sent Megan a text summoning her to the study. She walk in the study wearing a laced slik gown , she locked the door i looked at her as she approached me , wrapping her arms around me.

Megan: Oh i got your text and just as i was thinking you forgot about me , so glad i was called into your chambers , you seem to not want to play it safe no more , we can take it all the way , on the table or where daddy?



Me: I didn't call you here for that.

Megan: Oh i see you playing hard to get no worries i got something that's going to make you want me.

She held my belt, i grabbed her hand off me.

Me: I want you out of my premises before dawn .

Megan: What ! No you don't mean.

Me: I do , pack your bags and leave.

Megan: You need me , you need my father.

Me: Not anymore.

Megan: Oh so you don't need me anymore you pushing me to the curve?

Me: Unfortunately yes , get out .

I walked to the door and turned the key around opening the door for her.

Megan: (smirking) I am not going anywhere.

Me: I don't want to fight with you , the last time someone tried to put a fight with me , he ended six feet underground.

Megan: I am not scared of you Steve and you know why?

Me: Why is that Megan?

Megan: Because i got dirt on you that's why, you are not going to kick me out of here or your whole family will know how you played with my coochie and licked it out with your fingers , how will Queen Nandi like that ! And how will Alpha feel that you pushed him into marrying a woman you were fucking! Oh and what if the police find out about Dorothy, oh yes i know about her . Opppss mhh , how about the Hughes find out about the warehouse plan? (evil laugh) cat got your tougue now Mr Smith , okay fine I'll just go and have breakfast with the family.

She walked to me at the door and looked at me smiling and walked out , this girl is going to get herself killed ! Damn it ! How could i be so sloppy ! I have to deal with Megan now before she goes running her mouth to Nandi . I can't afford to lose my wife over a silly sex session with Megan plus our relationships is already on the rocks , i have to deal with her and fast.

AMARA

I looked at him as he was fast asleep next to me , i didn't even hear him walking in , i wrapped my arms around him , brushing his forehead , i kissed his nose carefully not waking him up , he looks cute when his asleep , harmless , more like the beautiful sun set behind a tall mountains. I'm getting married to this guy , I'll be waking up next to him for all the days of my life. I leaned and kissed his lips.

Me: ( whispering) I love you so much , promise I'll never leave your side.

I laid down on the bed , still watching him sleeping it was still early about 6 am , i page through social media just browsing even Junior was still asleep i don't know why i am so up early . His phone beeped , i looked at him as another notification got in , i got up and took the phone just swiped up , it was a Instagram DM from Logan Hughes. I paged in and got into the DM.

Logan Hughes: Morning i know you probably still asleep cause last was a long night not to say i didn't enjoy spending time with you cause i did , i just wanted to say goodmorning , have a handsome day, handsome ( winking and kiss emoji)

I looked at the messaging reading it about three times , was he at the meeting with this girl , this text doesn't sound like a business text with winks and kissing emojis, i got on her timeline , geez he literally reacted on all her pictures. I paged her photo's looking at this perfect girl that my supposed fiancée is cheating with . I placed the phone on his table and got off the bed , i just paced in the room as insecurities made their way in me whispering to me " did you see her figure , oh and her legs perfectly shaved , can you compete with that baby mama? You are done , expired , your body looks tired , you breast are saggy with stretch marks, you really don't expect Alpha to actually

stay loyal to you mean look at you , go to the mirror and face your disgusting body" i got into the bathroom and had my morning routine . I got Junior and fed him the breastfed him. He just fell asleep under my boob , i laid him on his crib.

Alpha: babe , you up ( yawning) i overslept.

He got up and took his phone , he looked at it and looked at me

.

Me: ( smiling) Morning.

Alpha: Morning.

Me: Junior is asleep don't wake him up.

Alpha: Okay , I'll be quiet.

I looked at him and walked out the room to the dining area , everyone was already on the table. I sat down as everyone ate , Mute kept stealing glances of me across the table , i could see he knew Alpha was out with that girl, I'm the fool here. The table just was tense this morning i looked at them all as Nandi was her usually self bubbly and the light of the house , Steve was a bit down, he wasn't even eating just staring down at his plate playing with the egg with his fork.

Alpha: Morning , god I'm starving.

Nandi: Morning baby , have some beacon i made it crispy just how you like it.

Alpha: I'll just have fruit salad and coffee.

Nandi: Should i bring Yogurt for you?

Alpha: No Ma I'm fine , these nutrients will boost my body I'm just warn out.

Me: The meeting was streamy i see , you even came home late , i didn't hear you come in.

He choked on his coffee , I looked at Mute as his eyes paced around the room.

Alpha: Amara where is this coming from?

Me: So how was the meeting Alpha?

Alpha: Baby can we talk in private please.

Me: No baby lets talk right here , why do you want to talk privately about a business meeting?

I looked at him as he laid back on the chair chuckling.

Alpha: Amara what is going on ?

Me: Oh and before i forget , Me and my cheating fiancée are getting married on the weekend.

Megan: What !

Nandi: So soon what's the rush?

Me: I asked him the same thing and he just said he couldn't

wait to make me a fool of a wife out of me isn't it baby?

Alpha: ( yelling) Amara can you stop ! What the hell is wrong with you ?

Me: Go ask Logan Hughes maybe she knows what's wrong with me?

He coughed looking at Mute.

Mute: I said nothing.

Me: Do you want juice my love? You look like you might use some juice.

Nandi: Amara sweetheart please this is unlike you.

I looked at her pouring juice for Alpha , i looked at him splashing the juice on his face , he just sat down as the juice dropped from his face.

Me: You want some more huh since you so warn out?

I grabbed Megan's glass next to me and poured it over him , he lifted up his hand blocking the liquid , i picked up a slice of toast and tossed it at him. I got up from the table and left . I walked in the room .

Alpha: baby it's not what you think and what's with the throwing things now, you suddenly became savage and ratchet this is not you Amara.

Me: Oh then go to Logan she looks like a Angel.

Alpha: Amara please stop this baby please , Logan is nothing to me.

Me: Oh wow well your nothing sent you a good morning text and that's so sweet of her to suddenly wake up at 6 am and decide to send a soon to be married man a text and call him handsome, go check , i know you dying to.

He took his phone and paged in his phone , he looked at the screen and looked at me.

Alpha: I can explain.

Me: You don't have to explain yourself to me Alpha , you never did , you left here agitated you could barely say you love me too cause you knew exactly you were going to meet you girlfriend.

Alpha: She's not my girlfriend.

Me: Oh okay lie to ! You always do that anyways.

Alpha: Just let me explain!

Me: No ! I don't want to hear anything from you Alpha , I'm disappointed in you.

Alpha: Nothing is happening between me and Logan okay fine we kissed last night and that's all baby i swear , i didnt sleep

with her or anything.

Me: Does that make it right? You even saying it out in confidence Alpha. Like you throwing it in my face that you get to kiss every girl you want , i can't believe you.

Alpha: I made a mistake baby i know and I'm sorry.

Me: No ! You not sorry , you just sorry cause you got caught Alpha , i don't know what i expected from you , why am i even surprised? My bad for expecting a good man out of you , i don't even know why i bother with you. (Sobbing) Do you even love me? Am i beautiful enough?

He looked at me and smiled .

Alpha: You are beautiful Amara.

Me: Then what's wrong ! What's wrong with me? Is it because I'm a mom? Now you don't find me attractive anymore? Mean i would understand if you just tell it to my face i don't interest you no more instead of lying to me and say you going to meetings while you going to meet your girlfriends!

Alpha: Come here let me give you a tight hug so you know you enough, i love you only you.

Me: No ! You need to explain to me what's going on between you and that model girl , i want to know.

Alpha: Damn you look so sexy when you jealous did you know



that? You just can't stomach the thought of another woman being with me when you so close to my heart .

Me: If you think you the only one that can cheat think again cause you got things wrong Mister , i can cheat as well.

Alpha: ( frowning) two wrongs don't make a right Amara.

Me: in your world.

Alpha: What's wrong with you so you really telling it to my face you will cheat on me? I didn't even cheat.

Me: Cheating doesn't start with sex it starts with sneaky conversation that you have to delete so i don't see them , late night dates , when you have lie to me so you can go meet another women that's cheating , I'm not mad at her I'm mad at you Alpha for giving her so much access to you so she even has the guts to text and even worse put her hands around you . your lies are slowly tearing us apart but atleast i know I'm not the only one , I'm afraid I'm giving up on you Alpha , I'm so scared of losing you cause i love so dearly but at the same time I'm done speaking to you about this and i don't know how much longer i can keep sparing and giving you chances to a shot of bettering yourself not only for me but for that little boy , he deserves much more better than this.

Alpha: I'm so sorry that's all i can say for now , what should i do to earn your trust back , i swear I'll do anything.

Me: No , I'm am sorry for not being enough , Rose was right about us , we really are from two different worlds , how can i really expect to settle down someone like you Alpha .

I just walked in the bathroom and locked the door. I had a bath preparing for my visit at Grace house , maybe being away from this house will do me some justice.

MEGAN

I looked at them as they all sat on the table frowning .

Me: I could use some juice.

Mute: Can you shut up god !

Alpha walked in back in the room.

Steve: And what's going on ! You got a lot of explaining to do !

Alpha: Pop's please , not you again , my ears are already hot please.

Me: Want some juice?

Alpha: You think this is a joke ? What the hell are you still even doing here !

I looked at Steve as he sat uncomfortably on the chair.

Me: You seriously need to get used to me Alpha , I'm the mother of your child.

Alpha: On paper yes , and paper can be changed.

Me: That won't happen.

Alpha: Try me , you can't even take me to court cause I'll embarrass you, I'll show the whole world what kind of a woman you are.

Me: And i will always drag your family down with me , I'm not going down alone.

Steve: Enough drama children please ! God damn it !

He got up i followed him out .

Me: You better make sure your son doesn't erase my name from Juniors birth certificate am i clear ? Cause the will be hawks , hawking this house and your precious Alpha will be facing 20 years in prison for Money laundering and you murder maybe 15 years old man .

I walked to my room and locked the door , i can never be safe with a house filled with enemies.

ALPHA

We sat down in the study, father just looked at me shaking his head continuously.

Steve: You don't listen , did you say that ! That's a woman that cares about you , she wouldn't be acting up like that if she isn't

hurting Alpha , i thought we made things clear!

Me: Come on , those where just minor things i handled it.

Steve: You will cut ties with that Hughes girl Alpha now !

I picked up the whiskey glass and drank from it.

Mute: Alpha , you jeopardizing your life here.

Me: Amara will have to understand I'm not just doing this for fun !

Mute: She doesn't even know what's going on, how do you expect her to understand?

Me: Then i will have to tell her everything.

Steve: No , not now , after the marriage when she's your wife.

Me: At this point i don't thing the will be a wedding.

Mute: Just listen to you !

Me: can all of you stop being so concerned about my affairs, each person in this room has their own shit ! So focus on yours i will on mine deal?

Steve: I surely have my problems

Amara walked in the room carrying Junior.

Amara: Mute can you please drop me off at Grace's house please.

Me: I thought i was going to drop you off.

Amara: Mute can we leave now.

Me: Don't worry I'll drop her off.

Amara: Fine then if you don't want , I'll request an uber after all you both are liars!

She walked out the room .

Mute: And he says we should stay out his shit while i was just called a liar.

Steve: She has every right to be angry at you Mute you knew Alpha is cheating.

Mute: But it wasn't my place to tell her.

Me: I really don't know how i will get out of this mess , maybe i should organize a romantic set up for her and i tonight just to show her how much I'm sorry , i can't have Amara ignoring me. Like did you see that ? She blindly pretended i wasn't even in the room.

Mute: She's going out ans going to meet family obviously she will come back and not remember a thing , she will come back smiling you will see.

Me: No i can't relay on that , i have to die down this situation early.

I got up and called the event organizer that helped me with the special first night i had with Amara, her charm worked then so i just hope her creativity could help me get my baby back.

LOGAN

I walked out my room to get myself some food , like seriously though Alpha left me on read maybe he will get back to me. I walked past daddy's study , they door was slightly open, i heard the name Alpha and i stopped eavesdropping.

Cohen: I found out from my contacts Alpha advertising company is just a front.

Thabo: Front for what? Wait they using the company as a laundering machine?

Cohen: Isn't that a big fish.

Thabo : sloppy Alpha is going to jail, I know we should be acting fast on this but lets let him enjoy some bonding time with his family cause his going to jail for a very long time on this he needs to sleep in a holding cell tonight.

Cohen : Who should we contact the hawks or the police?

Thabo : definitely the hawks! Alpha is a big fish and this will be the death of the Smiths RIP in advance , this deserves a toast.

Cohen: ( laughs) let's be merry.

Thabo : And don't you tell Drew about this , we will tell him when all is finalised.

Cohen: I'm your loyal servant.

I heard the glasses click , Oh no , this can't be happening not now that i have grown closer to him , why is dad so fixated on bring the Smiths down. I walked away from the door rushing to my room i locked the door and opened up the sliding door leading to the balcony. I called Alpha as his phone just rang .

Me: Please answer my call .

I tried again and called him .

Me: Arggg! Alpha damn it ! Please.

I tried again and again calling him.

Me: Why isn't he answering my calls !

I tried one last time if he doesn't answer it will be all on him.

Alpha: Logan

Me: I have something important to tell you.

Alpha : I'm listening.

Me: Not on the phone i want to see you.

Alpha: I don't think that will be possible Logan , I'm already in a very rocky place with my girlfriend.

Me: Do you want to go to jail?

Alpha: What are you talking about?

Me: It has got to do with my father , your fate lies on your hands Alpha. I will send you the location.

I dropped the call and , i just did some make up touch ups and lip gloss , i looked at myself in the mirror and walked out .

Thabo: Where are you going?

Me: Daddy ?

Thabo: I said where are you going?

Me: where i am going, oh I'm going to buy some pair of sneakers for tomorrow, i feel like wearing something causal.

Thabo : Okay be safe okay , love you.

Me: love you too daddy ( whispering) I'm sorry.

Thabo: What ?

Me: No I'm just talking to myself.

Thabo: Your fashion nonsense is getting to your head.

I smiled and walked out the house and got into my car , my heart and conscious began having conflict, i didn't want to betray my father but at the same the is this guy i have been



lurking on and now i can get to be close to him. Plus Dad won't know it was me.

Cohen: Hey sweetheart.

He peeped in my window . I looked at him raising my nose.

Me: Eww ! Get off my car ! You weirdo!

I drove out the yard and got to the nearest hotel , i walked in and booked a hotel room sending Alpha my location and the room number. We needed to meet somewhere where no one will see us together and a hotel room was honestly what came to my mind first.

GRACE

Amara arrived with my great grandson , she walked in the house and place his bags on the couch , she gave me a tight hug and a kiss.

Amara: I missed you so much Ma.

Me: I missed both of you.

Amara: I'll make coffee.

Me: Give him to me , i want to see that cute all over again.

She handed Junior to me , i looked at him .

Amara: His getting heavy.

Me: I noticed he also has cheeks now , whatever you feeding him stop it now.

Amara: He doesn't even eat that much.

Me: But his gaining weight rapidly , my poor great grand baby , is mommy feeding you to much.

Amara: ( smiles) Why you calling him your great grand baby? Not grandchild ? It's weird because i call you Ma as in like my mother not grandma.

I looked at her , i think it's time i told Amara we are really relatives and that i am her grandmother and Rose is her biological mother.

Me: Sweetheart come seat with me please.

Amara: Here's your tea made it how you like it.

Me: Thank you my angel , Amara these something i need to tell you.

Her phone rang , god is this a sign from you to not tell her right now ? Maybe i shouldn't. She got up and answered her call.

Amara: What Alpha ! You want to take me out for dinner? Oh is that your way of apologizing! Where are you taking me to the same restaurant you were with Logan in? Don't tell me to not start ! Know what you ruining my day ! Bye cheater !

I looked at her as she dropped a heavy sigh.

Me: Trouble in paradise?

Amara: More like a hurricane that comes with topical thunderstorms in paradise.

Me: That sounds bad.

Amara: anyway i didnt come for that here , i just came to spend time with you , you said you wanted to tell me something?

Me : Oh no sweetheart don't mind me , i was just going to tell you that Jaden and i have been arguing here about him getting a girlfriend he refuses.

Amara: Ma do you think maybe Jaden is gay?

Me: Oh no his not trust me .

Amara: This would've been wonderful news but now they not , Alpha proposed these past days.

Me: He did? Oh wow congratulations honey let me see the ring.

Amara: I don't have a ring , it was just a verbal thing.

Me: Oh you two really share a unique type of love.

Amara: I second you.

She sipped on her coffee as i looked at her smiling. My beautiful grandbaby , my very own flesh and blood , i enjoyed

spending time with Amara i just wish she could officially move in with us so we be a family . Me , her, jaden and Junior. I looked at her as she smiled drinking coffee.

51

ABBYGAIL

I had bought myself furniture for my apartment with my trust fund money , spent over 50k , Marcus (Mute) came over and helped me set the place up . I looked at him as he hanged a painting on the wall .

Marcus: The painting has been hanged.

He got off the chair and smiled placing the hammer on the floor.

Me: Thank you for coming and helping , i know you were probably busy with your own life then annoying me came and took up your time.

Marcus: I love being annoyed by a pretty lady.

Me: ( blushes) You probably say that to all the girls you meet.

Marcus: ( chuckles) Really now?

Me: I don't know you tell me.

Marcus: Well... do you think i do this to other women?

He wrapped his arms around my waist pulling me closer to him

, i place my hand on his chest leaning back. His other hand gulped the back of neck as he slowly moved my head towards his , our foreheads collided , i closed my eyes .

Marcus : Do you think i hold other women like this?

Me: ( breathing heavy) No .

slowly rubbing his nose against mine , he licked my lips , i wrapped my arms around his neck kissing him. Marcus picked me up from the floor carrying me to the bedroom. He gently laid me on the bed , with my legs on his waist , he inserted his hand in my shirt scooping my boob in his hands , rubbing . I laid down on the mattress . I was horny my panty soaking wet , just hearing him breathe on my neck as his warm air evaporated on my skin , set dynamites on my body . I inserted my hands in his t-shirt taking it off touching his warm body , god this man is built well , why was i even surprised his a police officer . Taking his time admiring my breast he unbuttoned my shirt gulping on my nipples , sucking and slowly biting on them.

Me: ( moaning) Ahh , oh my god where did you learn that? I want more , please give me more.

Impulsive, i held his pants and loosening his belt and zip as i inserted my hand in his boxers his phone rang in his pocket , he took it out and answered it.

Me: No please don't answer it Marcus.

Marcus: sssh a moment of silence please.

I laid down on the bed kissing his neck as he was still ontop of me talking to the phone .

Marcus: No don't go there what if it's a trap? where are you now? Take back up. Take men with you , why are you so hothead , okay I'm coming to back you up , what do you mean you got this bro ? Hello , he dropped the call on me.

Me: Who was that your partner?

Marcus: Yes.

I laid back on the bed and looked at him. He got up the bed , wearing his t-shirt.

Me: And now?

Marcus: I have to go.

Me: Now? No please don't.

Marcus: I'm sorry okay but i have to go , duty calls.

Me: bummer cause things were heating up .

Marcus: I know and I'm sorry i have to leave you in this state , I'll make it up to you.

Me: Promise you will call me later on.

Marcus: I will call you when i get the chance to call, okay.

Me: Okay.

He got up and fasten his belt , i closed up my shirt as we left the bedroom towards the door , he wore his leather jacket.

Me: Do you really have to go?

Marcus: unfortunately.

Me: Geez , okay then bye.

Marcus: You not angry at me ain't you?

Me: No , i can't get angry with .

Marcus: I will leave now.

He kissed my cheeks and left, i stood at the door as he disappeared in the hallway. I closed the door and leaned on it , why did he have to leave ? I walked in the kitchen and drank water from the sink , i looked at my phone that was on the kitchen counter , i picked it up and called Logan.

Logan: Hey you have reached the Logan leave a message and I'll get back to you asp.

Me: voicemail? Hey sis i just wanted to talk you about something ..uhm call me back when you get this , love you.

I hung up the call and looked at the empty house , that still had furniture in boxes , i took a scissor and walked to the boxes opening them up.

LOGAN

I sat down on the bed and had a glass of wine while waiting for him , the room was really nice , 5 star with white sheets and a seating area with a balcony, a master suite . I took my bag and walked in the bathroom and looked myself in the mirror. Was i really selling my father out to Alpha? Will this make a snitch ? The door cracked open, i walked out and checked , it was him.

Alpha: I'm here what's going on?

Me: Should i call room services , do you want anything.

Alpha: ( scoffs) No , i don't want anything.

Me: So it's down to business?

Alpha : what am i doing here , Logan?

Me : I don't want this to seem like I'm selling my family out  
Alpha.

He approached me and held my waist smiling.

Alpha: Hell no you not sweetheart , and i promise you anything  
said in this room stays here.

Me: Uhhh.. you know i always liked you right.

Alpha: I wouldn't have been here with you right now if i knew  
you didn't.

Me: And I'm doing this because i care about you , i don't want



you to go to jail or even for my father to get hurt or my brother.

Alpha: As i said , I'm in no war with your family your family is at war with us.

Me: I know you said that last night.

Alpha: You see that's it , you can trust me , i wouldn't do anything to hurt.

I placed my hand on his cheek and smiled.

Me: Well , my father knows Alpha.

Alpha: About?

Me: I heard Cohen talking about your company and money laundering something around those lines i don't know.

He let me got quickly taking out this phone, he looked at me , tapping on the screen and placed it on his ear.

Alpha: Dad , The Hughes know about the company , i need you to go to my room , my laptop is in the top shelve. The password is Junior , reverse every pending payments, do it now .

Me: Alpha ..

He placed his finger on my lips shutting my mouth. I kept quiet and looked at him as he proceeded talking to his father , it took him about time as he spoke on the phone, i poured myself wine and sat on the bed listening to him as he explained to his

father how to reverse the money. And always clear up the database so it's impossible for the money to be tracked, he sounded like a nerd, sort of a software guru. He said his final words and instructed they send him the account balances so he knows the amounts are usually. He dropped the call and looked at me.

Alpha: I think I might use a glass of whisky.

Me: (smiles) coming right up.

I poured him whisky and handed him the glass. He drank from it and sat on the bed next to me.

Alpha: you women seem to surprise me each and everytime.

Me: And what is that supposed to mean?

Alpha: The fact you stood by me when you should've chosen your family and you chose me, and I know you didn't do that out of the kindness of your heart.

Me: What if I did?

Alpha: No you didn't, name your price Logan, every man has his price, I hate owing people.

Me: Then let's settle your debt now.

I got off the bed and took his glass placing it on the table, I modelled to the bed pushing him down as he laid back, I got

ontop of him.

Alpha: Logan, i can't.

Me: You can't what Alpha?

Alpha: I'm sure we can settle this some other way than this.

Me: Never knew you were a coward too.

Alpha: Coward?

Me: You just said you hate owing people but now you getting cold feet .

Alpha: Cut your phone off.

Me: It's off , i got protection.

I took out my bag and took out the condom waving it , he looked at me and laughed.

Alpha: You came prepared didn't you.

He reached for my neck and pulled me down kissing me aggressively, his wet lips made their ways on mine as i grasped of the soft lower lip , holy he touched my waist just nicely and caring not to break me , he laid me on the bed and took off his blazer tossing it on the floor , i held his shirt and wripped it open , my hands made their way on his paved abdomen. He turned me around and unzipped my dress , i took it off tossing it on the floor paying attention to him. As we both got naked ,

he laid on my back as i was face down , he wripped the condom open with his teeth and rolled it on. His hands touched my hips lifting my ass up , bending me over. He penetrated, i grabbed the sheet and let out a slight moan as he filled me up. He placed his hand on on my waist as my booty was up , my stomach laid on the bed as he hit me from behind . He smashed in deep inside as i opened my legs. He laid on me breathing down my neck.

Me: Oh my gosh , yes , god i love the pain.

I held his arm as he parted my bum cheeks. I have never experienced this kind of sex , sore but enjoyable, he just sloshing in as my coochie opened up for him just juices escaping my coochie as wet as i was feeling his balls tapped on my behind , could feel it hit my womb as my kitty felt wripped , i was hurting , i wiggled and whine on that dick assisting as he slid it in.

Me: ( moaning) Uhhh my word ( crying) don't stop !

I closed my eyes , tears escaping my eyes as i listened to the pounding , i sinked my mouth against the pillow and grabbed a handful of the sheets screaming.

MUTE

I got in my car and drove off the flat complex , i called Alpha and his phone went straight to voicemail.

Me: Pick up your damn phone Alpha.

I drove into the house and got out the car . Spike was outside with the guys .

Me:where is Alpha?

Spike: He left.

Me: Did he say where he is going ? Is he alone?

Spike: No he didn't say ! Should we be worried?

Me: Is Amara back?

Spike: I don't know i haven't seen her.

Me: ( agitated) FUCK !

Spike: Mute what's wrong?

Me: Isn't it Alpha ! He called me saying his going to meet the Hughe girl , she has information , i told him not to go alone , if it's a trap his dead !

Spike : What is wrong with Alpha ! He said nothing he just walked out.

Me: What did you expect that he'll announce his going out?  
Your men are just useless here Spike !

Spike: We doing our best here Mute and we are really not here to be your security gaurds but we doing this because we want

to help you.

I walked inside the house to Pop's, all he knows is drinking whiskey and let us clean his mess he probably doesn't even know Alpha left the house to meet the very same girl we warned him about.

Me: Alpha has gone to meet Logan

Steve: I know .

I looked at him surprised as he sat down drinking from his glass

Me: You know?

Steve: Yes , you just missed him he called an hour ago informing me why he is with the girl.

Me: What did he say?

Steve: Thabo and his lap dog thought they were smarter than us , apparently Alpha meant a lot to Logan than her own father , she told Alpha her father knows about the company and we had resolve the problem don't worry.

I looked at as he calmly said that , he took out his cigar box and lite up a cigar.

Me: Okay so where is Alpha now?

Steve: He hasn't called in , his probably on his way back.

Me: That was a close call.

Steve: Thank god Thabo has loose daughter's .

Me: Loose , that i know.

Steve: Something happened?

Me: Almost but i got a call from Alpha and it disturbed the whole process , i think I'm dealing with a hard nut with Abby , she doesn't like talking about her family .

Steve: So you want to break ties with her?

Me: No not yet , I'll give this things a few days then I'll disappear.

Steve: You should be more patience my boy . Just because Abby is not like Logan it doesn't mean she won't open up to you .

Me: I also personally don't want to get attached to this girl.

Steve: Then don't spend too much time with her .

Me: I'm counting on that.

Steve: Pour yourself a glass in the meantime we wait for Alpha.

I got up and poured myself a glass.

Me : Pop's , have you spoken to Carlos?

Steve: Yes i have and he is not happy about his money it's about time we speed things up and actually get the money back so it's transported.

Me: Even the mules are panicking, they think maybe we have dropped them but i told them we have issues with the money and we will be back in business as usual.

Steve : they should be patient everything is coming together, god i wish i could see Thabo's face when the hawks inform him about his wrong tip off , i would kill to be a fly on that house's wall.

Me: Especially when he learns his own flesh and blood turned against him.

Steve: ( laughing) He will be shattered.

I looked at him as we both laughed , i drank from the glass.

DREW

I walked into Logan's room and looked around .

Me: Logan are you in the bathroom.

I walked in the bathroom and checked she wasn't inside , where were the girls cause they both not in their rooms , i walked out the room to the dining area Cohen walked out dad's study, i looked at him as he smiled at me.

Cohen: Baby boy.

Me: Where are the girls?

Cohen : Logan drove out hours ago as for Abby i haven't seen



her all day.

Me: This is really weird they usually are at home at this time.

Cohen: Maybe if you stopped paying attention to the girls and actually involved yourself in man stuff like the business for example , you won't be stressing when the girls are not in the house in time , Mommy Drew.

He pat my back smiling and walked to the door, I looked at him. Cohen tends to sicken me sometimes , he tends to think he is my father's son , he tries so much to take make himself noticeable in my father's face , be good in his books . I tried Logan on the phone it went straight to voicemail , i called Abby too hers just rang of the hook.

Thandeka: Are you worried are the girls?

Me: Yes , they not picking up their phones.

Thandeka: Don't worry yourself, they okay , they will be back . They grown women darling.

Me: I know it's just my brotherly instincts, i tend to always feel like i should protect them.

Thandeka: You are a good brother Drew.

I looked at her and walked away. I don't want anything to change between me and her , we may be able to co-exist but we not friends.

Thabo: Drew .

Me: What's wrong?

Thabo: Come in let's have a drink.

Me: I'm not in the mood for drinking Father.

Thabo: What's wrong?

Me: I'm worried about the girls.

Thabo: Don't be Logan said she's going out shopping Abby has gone to visit a friend probably going to sleep over. Don't work yourself out come have a drink so you tell me about London.

Me: ( chuckles) What do you want to knowM

Thabo: Everything.

I walked in the study and sat down as he poured us drinks.

AMARA

I cooked for Jaden and Grace , i switched off the stove. We had an amazing day with Grace just seating and having coffee as she shared a story about her daughter that ran away from home , it's sad she really hadn't got the chance to make things right with her as she says she has passed on , i felt sorry for that maybe that's why she mistakenly thought i was her daughter at the hospital. I closed the pots and took off the apron , i requested so i get a ride home , it was already darkening

outside.

Me: All done.

Grace: What did you make?

Me: Beef stew.

Grace: With Rice?

Me: Just the way you like it and a touch of love.

Grace: Perfect , i just can't wait to eat.

Me: I'm sorry but i can't stay for supper.

Grace: You have to go meet Alpha.

Me: Yes .

Grace: It's okay sweetheart, i just appreciate that you took your time and came to see this old hag.

Me: Don't call yourself that , you are very special Ma'Grace .  
You are like the mother i never had , yes i had Rose but she was my sister and i feel like if we both had a mother maybe our life would've ended in a good way.

She looked at me and sobbed crying.

Me: I'm sorry if i touched you , i didn't mean to make you cry.

Grace : I'm so sorry Amara.

Me: What for no , i am sorry , i shouldn't have brought my sad story up.

Grace: Amara i am your grandmother.

I looked at her and smiled.

Me: I know Ma and i will forever thank god for bring me you.

Grace: I am your biological grandmother, you and me share the same blood , Rose is not your sister.

Me: What are talking about ? Rose is my sister you don't even know Rose.

Grace: I do know Rose , i gave birth to her , she is my daughter and she is ( crying) she is your mother Amara.

I looked at her confused and disgusted. How could she even say , how can Rose be my mother? That's impossible.

Me: No , you got thinks twisted here , i don't know what's going on with you it's probably your medication making you make up things but that's not true.

Grace : ( crying) Rose was molested as a young girl .

Me: What are you talking about! Rose and i grew up in a Orphanage! Our mother left us at the door of an orphanage .

Grace: That's not true , Rose is your mother , please believe me.

Me: NO ! I will not stand here and let you tarnish my image and

my sister's ! You don't know us Grace ! You don't so you have no right to make a ridiculous story about my late sister like that ! Please i don't want to hate you , don't push me away.

Grace: Why would i lie Amara? Why would i lie to you?

I packed Junior's bag , Jaden walked in.

Grace: Thank God you came , please tell Amara, i am telling the truth.

Jaden: About what? Ma you told her?

Grace: I couldn't bottle this up any longer she needed to know the truth that she had a her mother through all her life.

I walked over to her and took my baby off her hands.

Jaden: Amara please seat down so we talk about this.

Me: No ! Jaden not you too ! You believe this nonsense that Rose is my mother? What are you both telling me ?That Rose lied to me all my life claiming to be my sister while she is my mother are you listening to yourselves right now !

I slid my baby's bag on my shoulder , Jaden blocked my way , i looked at him.

Jaden: Running away from this won't help you Amara .

Me: I'm not running away from anything! Both of you are psychopathic , to even think i referred you guys as my family

sickens me to the core ! (crying) Why is everyone so bound to hurt and bring me down why? What have i done to deserve all this? I did nothing to you , why are you doing this to me ?

Grace: We love you Amara.

Me: No you don't! Just please leave me alone ! Don't ever bother crossing paths with me ! I will never forgive you both for making me doubt my self.

The car hooted outside, i walked out the house to the car and it drove off . I held on tight to my baby and sobbed. I was hurting, how cause they do this to me ? Don't they understand the creepiness and darkness of what they said to me , how can Rose be my mother? That's impossible. Rose is just a couple of years older than me , if she was raped , this means I ruined her life , No , i shouldn't be thinking about this, no i refuse to believe that Rose is my mother this is absurd. I got in the house and walked in the yard , i felt like a zombie walking , i didn't know what to believe , i felt lost . I walked in the house .

Nandi: hey you two , You back .

I handed Junior to the maid.

Me: Please go put Junior in bed.

Maid: Okay Mem.

Me: I can talk to you Ma.

Nandi: Yes sweetheart what's wrong ?

We sat down on the couch as she held my hand.

Me: Grace said ( panting) She said Rose might be my mother.

Nandi: What ? How? Why will she just say that?

Me: Imagine , she just bursted out and told me she is my grandmother and that Rose is her daughter , i just couldn't stomach this whole thing , i left.

Nandi: I'm so sorry .

She hugged me as i cried in her arms.

Me: I don't understand , i really don't. Why would Rose lie , 27 years and the worst thing she is not here , she's not here to deny all these allegations.

Nandi: I think you will have to go talk to Grace tomorrow and really hear the whole story Amara that's the only way you can find out the real truth.

Me: I really want to know the truth but at the same time i am scared to death, knowing i ruined my sister's life . Rose had already given up her life for me imagine living with the fact i took her childhood away from her , this is just too much.

Nandi: I know but you need to be strong Amara and it's not forced for you to know the truth but it will help you figure out

who you really are.

Me: Talking about a hard knock life.

Nandi: You are going to be okay , atleast you got people who love you, we will support you .

Me: Thank you but i think I'm better off finding myself on my own.

Nandi: you don't have to deal with this all alone.

Me: I want to , right now i have me .

Nandi: Are you hungry? Should i make you coffee it make you feel much better.

Me: No , I'm fine , I'll just go join Junior .

I got up and walked out the room, i opened the bedroom door and walked in stumbling on candle light picnic , just red roses scattered on the floor as a blanket was laid just before the bed with a lot of cushions, pillows, two wine glasses and dessert with strawberries. I smiled and looked around , it was beautiful , melted my heart. I don't know but i expected him to have showed up and made a his sorry speech.

Me: Alpha you can come out now.

I looked around the room and also the bathroom he wasn't in the room , i called his phone again it went straight to voicemail,



i called Ipek.

Ipek: Hi.

Me: Hi Ipek it's me Amara , sorry to disturb you but is Alpha at the office?

Ipek: No he didn't come today it's been 2 days.

Me: Thank you , sorry for disturbing you.

Ipek: It's okay , bye.

I hung up the phone , where could he be , maybe he rushed out to get something. I sat down and picked up a rose smelling it , i took my phone out and called him , his phone was still off , so i left a message.

Me: hey , well I'm sorry if i ruined the surprise but i am in the room right now , get home soon we need to talk.

I hung up and sat down, dipping the strawberries in the chocolate bowl.

ALPHA

I woke up yawning i looked at Logan who was laying on my chest.

Me: God i fell asleep.

I took my phone and switched it on it was already 11 pm . My picnic with Amara , fuck , i messed up again . I slid Logan off

my chest gently and got up quickly getting dressed , i picked up my blazer and wore my watch walking out the door. I left the hotel and drove home getting dressed properly in the car , i fixed my tie . What am i going to say to her? I parked the car and walked in the house to the room , i held the door handle and twisted it softly hoping she's asleep. I walked in the room as she was laying on the bed that had roses scattered on the sheet , the candles were still on. I sat down on the edge of the bed twitching my eyes.

Amara: I waited for you.

Oh god , she's awake , i swallowed hard and turn taking off my shoes , i got on the bed .

Me: I'm sorry my love i got handle up at the office, Ipek called the was a emergency.

Amara: I called in at the office you weren't there Alpha so just stop with the lies please , you were with her ?

Me : Can we not go there , i don't want to talk about that. I don't want you preaching at me and yelling me , it's late at night please .

Amara : I wasn't going to say anything.

She got off the bed and wore her gown , walking towards the window. She inhaled looking at the sky as the moonlight fell on her skin.

Me: How was your day?

Amara: Just sleep and leave me alone , you must be tired.

We both were silent for a while , she folded her arms .

Amara: I don't know who i am in this place no more , i feel lost like i don't belong anywhere.

Me: Baby..

Amara: Please don't call me that and don't you dare say you love me cause you and i both know you don't know what it means to love someone.

Me: What do you want me to say then?

Amara: guess nothing. I don't think i want to marry you anymore, i don't want to be with you anymore. I don't love you anymore.

Me: That's madness Amara since when don't you love me !

Amara: Since now , i don't love you anymore. I just want to leave , i want to go to somewhere so far away from you and this town and it's people . I want to start afresh and be the best mom i can be to Junior. That's what i want right now.

Me : No you don't mean that , you and i are going to get married, we are going to raise our boy together, no one is going anywhere here.

I got up from the bed and approached her , she got away from me.

Amara: Don't , i won't believe your lies ever again. I waited for you , i thought we'd seat down and talk and fix things and I'd tell you about what i went through today but guess what ? You weren't here . Just like you always are not there.

I looked and her and laughed taking steps back away from her.

Amara: Why are you laughing? Is this a joke to you ? Do you find pleasure in this.

Me: I'm not laughing out in happiness , i am angry at you Amara can't you see that ! I am sick and tired of your whining ans crying , yeah i am upset at you for always punishing me for one fucking mistake ! Everything i do is never right to you Amara , i have always failed you , yes i know i wasn't there for you when Megan did the horrible deed she did to you , but why you blaming me for everything that goes wrong in your life .

Amara: Because ever since i met you everything has been wrong !

Me: ( shouting) Then what the hell are you still doing here Amara ! Since I'm so wrong why are you here , why did you agree to marry ? Why are you even the mother of my child ! You could've gotten rid of Junior long ago and quitted your job and got back to your fucken boring life and stayed the hell away

from me , you think i wanted this , i wanted to fall in with you ? Cause you always so damn innocent! You always pretending like you this nice person when you know you fucked up just like the all of us ! You hallow just like the all of us Amara , you empty and it makes you feel good to always point out my mistakes does that fill you up ? Stand there and cast a stone at me cause you pure ! Say it to my face that I'm a waste of love , tell me i will never find anyone like you , when you done, tell me i will die this unlovable dog i am ! I'm sorry i am not perfect , i apologize I'm not Mr Right .

Amara: I didn't want Mr right from you , i wanted the truth, honesty, loyalty. I wanted you , because when I'm with you I'm at home , but it doesn't feel the same anymore , i don't know you anymore. But look at you putting everything on me . I sent you into the arms of all the women you been with this past weeks ? Was it me ? I'm sorry that you cheat and lie to me , it's all my fault Cause you are Alpha nothing is ever on you !

Me: Do you hate me ?

She shook her head and cried wiping her tears

Me: Am i a problem to you ?

Amara: Not just a problem , you a pandemic, a disaster. Everything you touch turns to dust.

Me: Then what do you want from me Amara McKenzie! You

said you don't love me no more don't you? so get the fuck out !  
Leave ! Since I'm such horrible person to you what are you still  
doing here ! Go !

Amara: Okay , alright , I'm leaving, I'll go. I'll go right now.

She took out her bag and packed her clothes, i walked into the  
bathroom and closed the door. I opened up the sink and  
washed my face , Ma walked in the bathroom.

Nandi: Alpha what's going ? Amara is leaving?

Me: Let her go !

Nandi: Are you mad ? At dawn ? Baby please what's going on  
with you two?

Me: Just mind your business Ma please

Nandi: I can't mind my business when you shouting at night  
Alpha and you here in the bathroom while the mother of your  
child is leaving in the middle of the night.

Me: ( shouting) Then what should i do ? Goddamn it I'm tired . I  
just want my life uncomplicated.

Nandi: Uncomplicated? Is Amara and that little boy  
complicating your life Alpha? Is this what you calling them a  
complication! I didn't give birth to a coward ! You are going to  
go out there and talk to Amara.

Me: No I'm not !

Nandi: Then you going to leave my house !

Me: Gladly i will.

She looked at me and gave me a hot slap , she began beating me towards the corner of the room just flapping her hands on my body .

Nandi:( sobbing) You have disappointed me Alpha , I'm disappointed in you my baby , i hate the person I'm looking at . I hate the beast you have unleashed , it saddens me .

She left the room , i walked out the bathroom and looked at the wodrope that was opened up , she had cleaned up all her shelves. Amara really left. I walked out the room and walked outside. It was really dark outside with the cold night breeze blooming.

Me: Where is Amara?

Security: She walked out.

Me: And you let her walk out ?give me your gun!

Security: Sir ?

Me: I said give me your gun.

He handed me the pistol, i shot him in the head , and released more gun shots.

Spike: Alpha ! What the hell is going on !

Me: Take your bitchies and get the fuck out of this yard , or I'm killing every single one of you ! Who in their right sense of mind let's a woman and a baby walk out the yard in the middle of the night , fool !

I walked out the yard and looked deep in street. I didn't see her , i took my phone and called her walking in the darkness, a light beamed about 3 houses away from the house , i walked to her as she was sniffing and crying in the street. I walked behind her as she dragged her suitcase holding Junior.

Me: So you really are leaving me Amara , just like that.

Amara: What am i meant to do then , Stick around and be submissive ? I told you i can't be that person!

Me: Don't leave , please , I don't want you to leave.

Amara: I have been so lost day , I have been losing my mind and you don't even see that , you don't even care...

Me: But I'm here now baby.

Amara: Will you just listen to me for one second can you stop dismissing me like I'm a nobody, can you listen to me , I'm not asking for much I just want you to listen to me

Junior began crying, i looked at him . He probably feels cold.



Me: Let's go inside Amara , the baby is cold

Amara : No ! We are going nowhere with you you said we should leave didn't you , we leaving.

Me: It doesn't have to be this way .

Amara: No it has ! i am not a toy you can play with whenever you lonely or horny or bored Alpha

Me: I love you.

Amara: Don't do that ! you embarrassing yourself .

Me: But i do , i really do love you .

Amara: The was a period in our lives were i would've believed you but right now you can go straight to hell.

THABO

I took a burner phone and sat in my study , I called Zack directly , his a member of the hawks .

Zack: Hello.

Me: I'm going to say this once .

Zack: Hello , who is this?

Me: Who i am shouldn't concerned you what should concern you is getting a search warrant to shut down Alpha advertising company.

Zack: What are you talking about?

Me: The company is used for Money laundering.

Zack: Where did you get this information?

Me: Bye Zack.

I hung up the call and looked at glass before me , i lifted it up .

Me: Hope you spent time with your son Steve cause the hawks are coming . Cheers.

I drank from the glass and smiled. I got up from the chair and went to join my wife in the bedroom .

To be continued

52

AMARA

I managed to get hold of a uber and it drove me straight home , when i say home i meant the flat i was living in with Rose , i haven't had a chance to come back to this place because i was scared of facing what happened in here , i have known the owner of the flat for years cause this is our home when we first got out of the orphanage. She understood my situation and let our things stay in the room. I opened up the door and looked around the dusty flat , it was clean but smelt stuffy. I rolled my suitcase inside and placed Junior on the couch. He was asleep. I

walked towards Rose's door as the ringing of gun shots caught my ear , i relived that moment again , jumpy i walked out the flat to the hallway catching my breath , i kept inhaling and exhaling a bulk of oxygen as my body cooled.

Enzo: Amara.

I looked up , it was Enzo he looked much more better than the last time i saw him but i couldn't trust him , i took a step back as he approach.

Me: Please , don't get any closer .

Enzo: Don't worry , I'm better, i swear to god i wont hurt you , i have been getting help going for counselling and eating my pills I'm no harm.

Me: But still , stay away from me.

Enzo: I heard about Rose , I'm sorry.

Me: Thank you , I'll just go inside .

Enzo : okay if you need anything I'm just across the hallway.

I nodded my head and walked in the room , i closed the door and locked it.

Me: Keep on breathing Amara , you are going to be okay i believe in you , i have faith in you.

I opened up the windows in my room and dusted off the room .

I took out cleaning material and a bucket of water cleaning the house , i had Junior on my back the whole time took couple of mintues to breastfeed him and placed him back on my back and went about cleaning the flat .

LOGAN

I woke up and looked besides me , his gone. But what did i expect to wake up besides him ? He belongs to somebody else. I got up and picked up my panty and walked to the bathroom , i had a shower and got dressed. I drove home and got out the car walking in the house , everyone was having breakfast.

Me: Morning.

Thandeka: Morning honey.

Drew: Where were you?

Me : Out.

Drew: Out where? We were worried about you.

Me : Well then Drew stop worrying about me I'm old enough to take care of myself thank you.

Drew: Excuse me ! Who the hell do you think you talking to?

Thabo: Drew ! No ! Stop it.

Drew: No ! i wont tolerate my younger sister being rude to me.

Thabo: Logan apologize to your brother.

Me: Why should i ? Drew needs to mind his business seriously , I'm so grown i think i know how to take care of myself .

I walked to my room rolling my eyes. I got in and sat on the bed , i looked at my phone hoping he'd call or even send a mere text , just asking how i woke up? And how i was . I tossed my phone on the bed and laid down.

Abby: Hey stranger, i tried calling you did you get my voice messages?

Me: Abby please not now , just give me space please.

Abby : talk to your big sis what's going on?

Me: Nothing i just want space is that so much to ask for?

Abby: You know I'm going nowhere till you tell me what's eating you up.

She laid down besides me as we looked at the ceiling.

Me: I woke up and he was gone Abby .

Abby: Alpha?

Me : Yes , we had sex and we fell asleep in each other's arms , god Abbygail, i have never felt like that with a men , he..i don't know it felt like we had chemistry going on between us , it wasn't just general sex , it was passionate and it had a lot of

energy transfer. I felt like he has feelings for me.

She looked at me , making funny faces , blowing her cheeks, she kept letting out sighs and got up the bed approaching the balcony.

Me: What? I know you want to say something.

Abby: I don't want you to get hurt Logan.

Me: I know and i don't want to get hurt myself.

Abby: But you are signing yourself for a heartbreak here , Alpha has been around for a while now , we have known him for long but sweetheart he has never shown interest in you nor me. I know you have a crush on him every girl does but the fact you saying you think he loves you because he had sex with you is just absurd. Men have sex with women throughout the day and still don't catch feelings. Just say the sex was good.

Me: The fact you making this about you just shows you jealous.

Abby: What ! Jealous of what ?

Me: The fact i got to be in his arms and not you Abbygail.

Abby: Oh come on i don't even want him .

Me: Then why do you seem to always want to find the negatives in my relation with Alpha? Huh.

Abby : I am your sister Logan, I'm looking out for you.

Me: I didn't ask you to look out for me , infact leave.

Abby : Excuse me?

Me: I said get the hell out of my room.

Abby: Logan what is wrong with you , i am helping you out here.

I got up from the bed and pushed her towards the door.

Me: I said get out ! Get out !

I pushed her out and closed the door locking it . How dare she ? She is supposed to be my sister but look at her being a hater. I didn't expect that from Abbygail that was a low blow , who the hell does she think she is ?

ALPHA

I had a shower and dressed my shoulder , i was healing fast , i also felt like it was time i go hit the bag but still hope my shoulder doesn't rip open it's been a while since i had a fight with myself, i need the bag more than ever now with how bad my life is right now i needed it to blow some steam off , after Amara left last night , i couldn't sleep , i tossed and turned the whole thinking of how much hurt i caused the woman i believe i love, Amara has been nothing but loving and caring towards me even when she was going through her own episodes she tried as much as she can to show me how much she loved me but i

was too coward to notice, blinding by arrogance and being undecided about what i want. I'm a coward, cheater and i am definitely a disaster , i wasn't men enough to see the jewel in front of me , even when i knew she is precious. I picked up my phone and called Jaden.

Me: Doc.

Jaden: Alpha , morning.

Me: Is Amara over there?

Jaden : No , i thought she would be with you after what happened last night.

Me: What happened?

Jaden: You don't know?

Me: Know what?

Jaden: Grace is Amara's grandmother she told her yesterday , Amara was very upset and hurt , she even said she didn't want to see us ever again , Grace hasn't been herself either since last night , she has locked self in her room all morning.

I was confused , how can Grace be Amara's grandmother? Amara doesn't know her family , she grew up in an Orphanage for all i know.

Me: No that is not possible, Amara doesn't have any family



member left , her sister Rose was the only family she had.

Jaden : Rose is Amara's mother, she was raped at a young age , that's how Amara was conceived , i think you should talk to Amara and hear from her the whole story.

I jaw dropped , what the hell is going in our lives? How can Rose be Amara's mother? Oh god that's why she was so emotional last night and angry, she needed someone to talk to , someone to rely on and i wasn't there again , I wasn't there for her. I need to find her , she must be going through hell.

Me: Uhm thank you for informing me about this.

I dropped the call and texted my private investigator , i sent him Amara's photo and her number. I needed to find her. I drank water and paged through her socials to see if she has uploaded anything that could lead me to her.

Megan: I just went to check up on Junior but he wasn't in his room.

Me: He left.

Megan: what do you mean he left?

Me: Exactly that he left with his mom.

Megan: So you let Amara take our child and walk out that door.

Me: What was i supposed to do wrestle Junior off her hands?

Don't be stupid Megan

Megan: Will you ever Man up and stand up for your son ? Will you be the father Junior deserves , you don't deserve to be a father Alpha ! You not ready to grow up ! All you know is chase after useless and unimportant things but not the important ones ! I hate you !

Me: ( chuckles) Thank you are you done insulting me?

She looked at me and clicked her tougue walking out the room. The door bell went off , one of the maids rushed to the door , she walked back in the kitchen .

Maid: Sir the are police at the door.

Me: I have been waiting let them in.

Zack walked in the kitchen , i looked at him and smiled .

Zack: Morning.

Me: Cut the friendly crap Zack why are you here!

Zack: To do my job ( smiles) Alpha Smith , you are under arrest , i have a warrent to close down your business till you declared not guilty of the accusations against you of money laundering. You have the right to a lawyer and if you can't afford any the state will provide one for you.

I looked at him and laughed.

Me: If you find nothing, i will sue the shit out of you.

Zack: That would be greed Alpha with so much illegal money you already have , turn around.

I turned as i handed him my wrist. Ma and Pop's walked in the room.

Nandi: Alpha what's going on? Steve?

Steve: Don't worry it's just a misunderstanding.

Nandi: Misunderstanding? They arresting my son and you are saying it's a misunderstanding , officer what's going on?

She approached me holding my cuffed hands.

Zack: Mem step back please.

Nandi: I will call our lawyer okay , hang in there nothing is going to happen to you.

Me: These no need for a lawyer Ma, tell Mute to come see me , relax I'm innocent . I will be back home in no time.

Zack: ( laughs) We'll see about that , have a good day Mr Steve Smith.

Steve: ( smiles) You making a mistake.

Zack: That's for me to decided not you ! For now let me do my job.

He pushed me out to the police van.

Nandi : No please don't do this.

Steve: Nandi it's fine.

Nandi : ( sobbing) No it's not ! Alpha don't worry okay , I'll get you out.

Zack loading me in the van , i sat down as he slammed the door and secured it. I sat down at the back of the police van as it drove off , Ma was standing outside the house tears flooding her cheeks as the van left .

Me: You making a mistake Sergeant Zach and you wasting both mine and your time.

Zach: Shut up or i will use that against you in the court of law.

Me: ( chuckles) okay fine.

I kept quiet and just sat down as they drove me to the police station , this was just a big fat joke. He was really wasting my time , i had to find Amara and being held up in a police station wasn't helping , the van stopped as he got me out and walked me in the police station everyone was looking at me , the last time i was here was for drunk driving and assaulting police officers but ofcause the case didn't stick. He got in the interrogation room seating me on the chair.

Zach: Make yourself comfortable cause we are pulling out all

your company's financial records , you going down.

Me: Okay.

I sat back on the chair and looked at him. He walked out the room and closed the door , i looked around the room and took deep breaths cause i know i am going to be here for a long while.

GRACE

I just sat down in my bed having a cup of tea thinking about Amara's last words to me , my grand baby hates me , she thinks I'm lying to her , she thinks I'm trying to hurt her while i want is for her to know the truth. Jaden walked in the room.

Jaden: Ma , you haven't had breakfast.

Me: I'm fine Jaden.

Jaden: Can i check your heart beat and high blood level.

Me : No , because i am fine. The is absolutely nothing wrong with me.

Jaden: Just to check Ma please.

Me: Oh my god Jaden why can't you children just listen to me ! First it's Amara now it's you ! I know i was a bad mother and i don't deserve all this generosity and love you children are giving me but i wanted to try again , i want to be the best

grandmother to Amara and i hope if i make things right with her , i will be easing my heart and conscious for what i did to Rose. I just want to make things right , i wanted her to know the truth so we start off in a clear stage.

Jaden: I understand that Ma , but at the same time you need to look after your health, you have been nothing but a supportive and loving mother to me for that i will forever love you . You don't need to make peace with Rose cause i know she has forgiven you but you have to make peace with yourself .

Me: I will never forgive myself for what i did to Rose , it's a deed i will carry in my heart to the grave.

Jaden: Ma please don't do this to yourself.

Me: Just go to work Jaden.

Jaden: Take your pills and eat okay , please.

Me: I will eat it's okay.

He kissed my forehead and left the room , i looked at him through the bedroom window as he drove out. I got up and had a bath preparing for my day , i will have to keep myself company with my garden so i don't think about Amara too much or i'll lose my mind and my high blood will rise , i was really worried about her and how she will be pushing me away while i want to have a genuine relationship with her cause i really love her.

MUTE

I had received a call as i was at the warehouse, packing the money , we had to move the bags as Thabo decided to send the hawks on Alpha , us quickly withdrawing all the money and made sure we cleared financially records , we had someone in the bank helping up with deleting accounts. I packed the bags and handed the mules each one a bag to transport.

Me: This is the last load for now we have to lie low.

Mule: Does this mean this is our last job.

Me: Unfortunately with the Hawks all over Alpha we can't operate.

Mule: Fuck ! And i really need money right now Mute .

Me: I'm sure I'll fix you up with a job in the meantime , for now lie low.

Mule: Okay thank you.

Me: No harm done , i have to go now , make sure you deliver the bag straight to the owners hands don't give it to anyone else.

Mule: I have been in the game for 6 years now , i know how we work.

I walked out the warehouse to my jeep and left heading to the

police station to see Alpha. I got out and walked in they directed me into the interrogation room , i sat down .

Alpha: Thank you for coming.

Me: Yeah man , so what's up? When are you getting out?

Alpha: Looks like Zack is prepared to keep me here even when he has nothin in hand to keep me in.

Me: That's because you don't have a lawyer Alpha if you had one you'd be out of here.

Alpha: I know but i didn't ask you here for that.

Me: what's wrong ?

Alpha: My PI probably has something in hand right now , so i need you to contact him and find out if he has Amara's location.

I looked at him and laughed.

Me: Don't get me wrong i ain't laughing at you.

Alpha: Then what are you laughing at?

Me : I'm laughing at your situation , how you think it's right to cheat on Amara and now that she wants time out to be away from you , you find it even right to run after her . I don't ever want the woman i claim to love cry or even hurt for something i did . I don't know what type of love you have for Amara and if



that's real love? I don't want it that type of love bro.

Alpha: I know i fucked up.

Me: No you don't know you fucked up Alpha , till you go get your girl and sit her down and tell her the whole truth you don't know you fucked up . A real man has nothing to hide , he will tell his women the truth about whatever he wants his women to know even if it breaks her because he knows when his honesty with her , she will trust him no matter what that's a sign of a women that wants to grow with a women.

Alpha: You right man , i am not a real man that's why i want to know where she is so i can make things right with her.

I took out my phone and called the PI , Alpha spoke with him as he informed him about Amara's current location, she has moved back in her flat . Where her sister was murdered. I still can't believe how close i have been with Amara and still don't have a conscious for organizing hit man for her , if she or Alpha would find out I'm sure Alpha will kill me. But i was just doing my job. He dropped the call as i looked at him.

Alpha: Atleast i know where she is and she is safe , can you go check on her for me.

Me: No you will go by yourself for now fight to get out of here , if you'd excuse me i have work to do.

I got up and left the police station.

NANDI

I sat down as i was trying to still figure out what is going on in my family? First Amara leaves now Alpha is arrested? What is going on in my family and thid was just killing me in the inside. I broke down and cried.

Steve: Sweetheart, please don't cry Alpha will get out his innocent.

Me: Get out when?! You should be calling your corrupt friends and try to get my baby out of jail.

Steve: We are not dealing with the police here Nandi , it's the hawks and i know they won't just let Alpha go just like that.

Me: i understand that but do you see what you have done Steve ? Are you enjoying all this , our family crumbling down infront of your eyes?

Steve: I'm sorry.

Me : Oh wow Steve is sorry so what , so what that you sorry ? Will you being sorry undo what has already been done ?

Steve: No it won't but I'm sure you know from deep in my heart i hate seeing you cry Mama , i love you Nandi.

Me: ( chuckles) I am not your wife Steve , you have no right to say you love ! You lost that right when you decided to go lock me up in a mental institution.

Steve: I thought we have moved past that.

Me: Yes you will think that because you not the one always being done wrong . Don't you ever try talking to me from now on , you will only speak with me when Alpha is out of jail.

I got up and left the room wiping my tears.

THANDEKA

I looked at the girls as each one of them was sulking pressing on their phones. I could see they had a fight. As it was awkwardly silent i collected my bag and phone.

Me: Okay let's go out.

Abby: Out where?

Me: I can see both of you are angry at each other so let's go out just a mother and her two beautiful daughters going out for shopping.

Logan: I'm not in the mood.

Me: Please , if you love me then you will go out with me , this house feels cold when you guys are not in speaking conditions.

Abby: I'll go grab my bag.

Me: Logan..

Logan: Fine , I'll go put on my sneakers.

Me: You will meet me in the car.

I walked out the house and got in the car , they both got in the car and i drove off going to the supermarket to buy ingredients for dinner.

ENZO

I looked at my roommate as we were playing games.

Me: Amara is back.

Roommate: Oh yeah i know i saw her when i came from work.

Me: I feel like she needs a friend right now

Roommate: I feel like you should stay away from her , the last time you tried being her friend you cut your wrist.

Me: But I'm better now .

Roommate: No bra just let Amara be.

Me: I'll just go check up on her.

I got up from the couch and walked to the door.

Roommate: Enzo , bro I'm warning you.

Me: I won't do anything stupid.

I walked out the room and walked towards her door. I could hear a baby crying inside , i knocked on the door playing with my fingers she opened the door .

Amara: not now I'm busy .

I looked at her as she was rocking the baby and holding a bottle , looks like she was making milk for the baby but at the same time she could neglect her child.

Me: Let me help you.

Amara: Enzo please i don't need no ones helps.

Me: I promise i won't help you ever again , I'll hold the baby and you will make his/her milk bottle then when you done I'll leave.

She looked at me unsure of what she will do next. She handed the baby to me.

Amara: His a boy , his name is Junior.

I smiled and walked in rocking the baby as he calmed down . Amara made him a milk , i looked at him .

Me: He looks exactly like you.

Amara: ( smiles) I know right, his my look alike.

Me: His yours and Alpha's?

Amara: Yes.

Me: That's good.

Amara: Unfortunately , i would make you a cup of coffee but i

haven't bought groceries.

Me: Oh , you should've just wrote a list , i was going to go get them for you.

Amara: No it's fine , I'll just order in today then maybe tomorrow I'll go out.

Me: You know you should eat healthy right since you breastfeeding.

Amara: Fast food for a day won't hurt.

She shook the bottle of milk and sat down , i handed her the baby , she gave him the bottle, i looked at him as he sucked on it like his life depended on it.

Me : it must be amazing to be a mother right.

Amara: It has it's frustrating times , i wasn't ready to be a mother but here i am , loving this beautiful baby boy , his mine after all , I'm bound to him and he to me , I'm his mother and his my son.

Me : So why are you back ? If you don't mind me asking.

Amara: ( sighs) let's just say , when life doesn't plah fairly people remember where home is so i came back.

Me: ( nodding) fair enough.

Amara: Yeah so tell me about your journey.

Me: Well i thank you for saving my life even though i gave you enough reason to let me die , Amara I'm sorry for forcing you to love me.

Amara: No please don't apologize it's all in the past.

Me: I wish i could redo everything and just right my wrongs.

Amara: It's fine really.

Me: But I'm well now , I'm a better version of myself.

Amara: See that is what is important that you well.

Me: So can i please take you to the supermarket so we buy ingredients for dinner , I'll cook .

Amara: Uhmm i can't, i don't think that's a good..

Me: It's just appreciation dinner from me to you , a thank you dinner just two friends not a crazy guy crushing on you and if i try anything funny you have the right to get me arrested.

Amara: ( exhales) I would really love for you to cook for me.

Me: Thank you for allowing me.

Amara:( smiles) okay

Me: I will go get my car keys and we'll go okay .

Amara: Okay.

I walked out the flat and got into mine collecting my car keys

and my wallet.

Roommate: And now?

Me: What?

Roommate: Where are you going?

Me: I'll be back in a hour.

I walked out and went to get Amara , she looked cute in a grey tracksuit and a black oversized t-shirt with slippers and her afro tied upright . I carried Junior and we walked to the car driving off as she sat next to me on the passengers seat , we listened to a chilled jam. As we listened to James Arthur safe inside. She looked at the window singing along to the song .

Me: you know this song?

Amara: Yes , I'm a big fan of music just that i haven't found the time to just sit down and listen to any lately , my life has swallowed me up.

Me: Now that you alone you can jam to music all night long , Junior doesn't look like the trouble some babies.

I parked the car and we got out and walked in the supermarket. I pushed the trolley and she choose what she wanted , Mostly she bought Junior's need , milk , nappies all those things babies need on the daily basis.



Me: So after i have cooked you a storm what will you be having for desert

Amara: The will be desert?

Me: Yes , ice cream or you would rather have a jelly?

Amara: Uhm i don't know ( giggles) How about ice cream then.

Me: Chocolate, vanilla and strawberry?

Amara: Yes that would be nice .

Me: I think we done here so we could go pay .

She just looked across the ally , looking at another girl . She just stared at her .

Me: Amara?

Amara : Just a minute please.

She walked to the girl that was with her sister and mother i think cause the other woman was looking older than the two. I pushed the trolley towards her and the ladies. I looked at her as the other ladies looked at her.

Amara: Hi Logan.

Logan: ( confused) Hi

Amara : You don't know me don't you?

Logan: Should i have too?

Amara: ( chuckles) I'm Amara , the mother of Alpha's child.

Logan : Oh so?

Amara: I just wanted to greet you and congratulate you , you got him , his all yours now you will stop meeting in the dark at night . Now you can roam the streets like the happy couple you are.

Logan: Amara it wasn't my intention to break up your home.

Amara: No you didn't Alpha broke our home. May i ask ? How does it feel to sneak with someone else's man? Did you enjoy sleeping with him? While you knew exactly there was a woman at home waiting for him to get back?

Logan : Amara I am..

Amara: Sorry ? No don't be , I'm not angry at you Logan , I'm angry at Alpha for giving you attention and make you feel like it's right to actually open your legs for him. I won't call you a home wrecker , i just came to warn you , do you know that there are other women out there that won't be even having this conversation with , some women are heartless out there, watch how you move. Bye.

I looked at her as she turned around , we walked to the till.

Me : And who was that ?

Amara: One of Alpha's floozies.

Me: Oh that girl?

Amara: What you also find her attractive?

Me: I can say she is rather hot but not hot for my liking.

We paid for for groceries and drove home . I sat down holding Junior as she unpacked the plastics. I looked at him as he fell asleep in my arms . He just lite up a bulk of love in me , just holding his small body and be able to touch his soft skin.

Amara: Is he alseep?

Me: Shushh , his sleeping.

Amara: ( whispering) oh sorry , let me go lay him down

Me: No please can i just hold him for a little while longer if that's okay with you?

Amara: ( confused) Uhhh okay , it's fine , I'll go wash the veggies and make us coffee.

She walked back to the kitchen as i held Junior, looking at his chubby face , it was magical how i was feeling with him , i think I'm having baby fever.

ALPHA.

Zach walked in the room and tossed a bulk of papers on the table, he sat down and looked at me frowning.

Me: So ? When am i up for sentencing?

Zach: you free to go Alpha.

Me: Really after such a long holding damn i even thought i was going for a wrongful sentencing .

Zach: Haha very funny, you have became a joker now?

Me: I tend to have many personalities Sergeant Zach ( sniffs) I think i should leave now , you have wasting a lot of my time in here.

I wiggled my hands that were cuffed.

Me: Are you going to take these off so i walk out like a free man.

Zach: Don't get to excited cause that won't last for long , you might have slipped Mr Smith but every criminal has his day.

Me: Can't wait for mine.

He uncuffed me and walked me out the interrogation room. Spike's man came with my car and dropped it off.

Me: Inform Pop's i will be home in no time.

Man: Okay.

I took the car keys and got in the car driving to Amara. I parked the car across the road looking at the building door , the last time i was here was here an tragedy happened , i got off the car locked the car. I walked in the building as the corridors were

busy peoples pacing in and out as kids ran around. I stopped at the door and knocked. The door opened up as a guy got the door for me , i looked at him my whole body ran hot. I could feel my hands sweat the heat just vibrating through my skin. I bite my teeth in anger cooling myself. What was he doing here? I looked at him as he had apron on holding a wooden spoon.

Enzo : Alpha.

Me: Where is Amara?

I pushed him aside and walked in , Amara got up from the mat as it looked like they were playing happy family with my son , Junior was laying ontop of a blanket inbetween the couches.

Amara: What are you doing here ?

Me: Baby can we talk.

Amara: No we can't talk I'm busy , get out.

Me: Amara please , i just got out from jail bra , i jusr want to talk to you , please let me talk to you.

Amara: Talk to me and say what Alpha ? Lie again?

I looked at Enzo as he stared the pot.

Me: Excuse me , Mr chef guy can you get out .

He took off the apron.

Amara : Enzo you are going nowhere, the person that is going

to leave here is Alpha .

Me: Okay fine then i will leave but when I'm done talking you , can you talk outside?

Amara: Anything you want to say you can say it in front of Enzo since you decided to let every girl in the face of the earth see you naked ! Or what are you embarrassed of how much of a hoe you are ?

Me : don't turn me down Amara , just listen to me , i know that i have brought you nothing but hurt but i think we should talk about this aside, just you and i please.

Enzo: I will just go back to my flat and give you space.

Me: ( sighs) Thank you so much! About damn time.

He walked to the door as Amara gave him a hug and thanking him for everything he did today. She closed the door and walked to the kitchen.

Me : So what now you replacing me with him.

Amara: Is that what you came here to do? To see who is comforting me since you ripped my heart off my chest and made a fool out of me.

I picked Junior up and walked took him to the other room , i kissed his forehead and covered him with a blanket. I sat down on the bed and looked at him .

Me: I know i haven't been there for the both of you Amara . I haven't been a father and a lover because i was sucked up in my own circle of trying to do what i thought would benefit the business but i was selfish enough to not think of you and Junior. Funny right how as i man i thought protecting you and giving you money to supply your needs was enough. I thought maybe if i made you my wife you will be bound to me and never leave me. Delusional ain't i ? I won't say i didn't sleep with Logan cause i did , i cheated on you Amara and that was the worst mistake of my life. I am not who you think i am Amara, i have been involved in hideous crimes. I have killed , i have been managing a money laundering business. The advertising company? It's just a front for the laundering business. I am not the perfect family man you looking for. I know you said you don't love me no more and i understand my love, i truly understand i left you no choice but to have you ran away from me.

Amara: Alpha i don't need you coming here and telling me your sob stories i am not interested that is for your mother to hear cause i don't care like honestly , can you just leave me alone.

Me: No i can't know why? Cause i love you , i know my action say otherwise but i do love you .

Amara : Don't do that again.

She walked out the room , i got up the bed and walked out

following her out .

Me: Amara I'm sorry no amount of apologies can make you forget what i did to you .

Amara: No don't , just get out , please , we can co-parent Junior.

Me: No ! I don't want to co-parent our son , i want you and him.

Amara: You can't want me not after what you have done to us ? How do you expect i trust you Alpha? No .

Me: Please , don't do this to us. Don't push me away.

Amara: No , you did this to us , it's all you ! It's all on you.

Me: But I'm here pleading with you Amara , I'm sorry.

Amara: That's the thing i don't want you pleading to me , i don't want you to be sorry , you made your bed so lay in it.

Me: You don't hate me right?

Amara: ( laughs) I saw Logan today , she's still beautiful if you wondering she's not like me , she's perfect.

Me: You are perfect , you are everything i could ask for? You are amazing Amara. I remember the first time i saw you at my office , i never knew I'd fall you cause you were this quiet and sweet girl but then there came i times were i couldn't get you off my mind , i would box you out of my mind Amara cause i



was scared that i was falling inlove with you and that i was going to hurt you and look i fucken did .

She shook her head crying . She opened up the door.

Amara: Go , i won't believe your lies anymore.

I walked towards her and laid my head on her forehead as her body squeezed against the opened door. I cupped up her chin raising her face up to look at me , she closed her eyes tears descending down her cheek.

Me: I am so so sorry.

Amara: What do you want from me ? Just go please , I'm begging you go.

Me: Give me a chance for the last time , i swear I'll make it up to you. I know about your fight with Grace how are you feeling about that ? Nevermind me and my selfish self .

Amara: How do you think i feel ? I just heard that the girl i grew up with that i known for all my life is my biological mother. Rose lied to me for my entire life watched me wish i had a mother but she was here all along in the same roof as me.

She walked under my arm and walked in the house seating on the couch. I closed the door and locked it as she sobbed on the couch , i sat down next to her and held her in my arms, she tighten her grip on me , i lurked on her shoulder just holding

her tight for a long prolonged moment hoping she doesn't let go of me just yet .

THABO

Cohen walked in the dining area as i was drinking coffee watching a soccer match , he paced around the room and sat down, Drew walked in holding his motorcycle helmet.

Cohen: They found nothing , Alpha is innocent.

Me: What ! How ? Did you do research.

Cohen: I did and it was true Alpha is using the company !

Drew : What is going on?

Me: God Drew ! We had Alpha in the tip of our fingers , we found out Alpha is using the company to laundry money.

Drew: So you tipped off the police?

Me: Police? We dealing with a huge person here we gave the information to the hawks.

Drew : So you think the might be someone that tipped him off in the inside.

Me: No it can't be , i gave the information directly to Zack.

Cohen: Then what must've gone wrong?

Me: I think we have a snitch in our circle.

Drew : maybe it's one of the maids or the securities.

Thandeka and the girls walked in , i looked at them as Logan was sulking and Thandeka shouting at her.

Me: What is wrong? Logan what's with the sad face?

Thandeka: She is sleeping with Alpha.

Me: ( shouting) What ! Are you mad !

I walked to her and gave her a hard slap she fell on the couch screaming and crying.

Abby: Daddy please.

Me: Stay out of this Abbygail! How dare you Logan to sleep with my enemy! My own daughter! You are a disgrace in this family!

Logan: Ofcause i am cause that is all i am to you all ! A disgrace. ( crying) i hate you all ! And for your information Daddy I told him , yes i informed him about how you were plotting to get him into jail.

Me: You daughter of a whore !

God i walked over to her and slapped her , just hitting her countless times .

Drew: Father enough!

Me: No it's not enough! She betrayed us ! She betrayed her

own family !

Me: i don't want this , i don't want the fighting , it doesn't concerned me.

I looked at her as she picked herself up from the ground , i waited for her to get on her feet , i slapped her hard again , she cried her lungs out as her cheeks turned red with my hand marks all over her face.

Me: you think he loves you ? His just using you to get to me !

Logan: ( yelling and crying) It's not about you or any of you ! It's about me and him , can anything stop being about Drew or Abby or you can it be about me.

Me: What about you ! That you a slut that goes around sleeping with men old enough to be your brother's ? Is that what you want us to discuss?

Logan: That's what you see in me huh dad? A slut?

Me: Shut up! Shut the fuck up and get out of my house.

Thandeka: Thabo please !

Me: You better shut your mouth too or follow your whore of a daughter? Where are the fucken maids ! Pack her damn bags so she gets out of my house.

Abby: ( crying) Daddy please , she wasn't trying to hurt anyone.

Me: Abby shut up!

She closed her mouth with her hand and cried. Thandeka just stood there crying as well. Drew just looked down so did Cohen , the maids packed her clothes in suitcases as i paced around the room burning in anger. The maids placed her bags at the door.

Me: Tossed them outside.

Logan: No please daddy please.

Me: I am not your father.

Logan: No please , Drew , Abby , Mommy are you just going to stand there.

Thandeka just shook her head and left the room crying uncontrollably.

Me: Get out Logan.

Logan: I'm sorry , please

Me: From now on , i don't have a daughter by the name of Logan , i have only one daughter who is Abbygail Hughes and a son.

She crawled to my feet and held my legs crying , i stared into space bottling up tears .

Me: Throw this piece of trash outside Cohen.

Abby: No Papa it's getting dark outside where will she go?

Drew: I will take her out.

Me: i said Cohen ! Not you Drew , she will go to Alpha since his way to important to her than her own family.

Cohen picked Logan from the floor as she kicked and screamed , he forcefully threw her outside the house and closed the door.

Me: lock it !

He locked the door , i looked at everyone closely that was in the room as Logan banged the door outside.

Logan : Daddy Please ! Please , I'm sorry.

Me: I'm going to say this once and once it will be , if any of you make contact with that traitor , i will have you thrown out of this house like she has been. I hope you all heard me.

Abby: Daddy please.

I walked out the room and got into my study and locked the door crying silently, my own Daughter sold me out? How could she ? I love Logan with all my heart she is my little princess , but look what she made me do ? She is gambling with her bread and butter for what? Dick? Alpha doesn't even love her , goddamn it! Those bastards got a hold on my baby girl , they managed to turn my own Daughter against me , Alpha will not get away with this.

53

STEVE

Mute walked in the house , Nandi got up from the chair and approached him.

Nandi: And ?

Mute: His out i just received a call informing me his out.

Nandi: Oh thank god , thank you Mute.

Mute: You don't have to thank me Ma.

Nandi : Where is he now?

Mute: He went to meet Amara , i had a man to man talk with him and i can see he listened to me , so i think is his going to meet his wife.

Me: Mute meet me at the study.

Nandi: I wonder what scheme are you going to talk about in that room of the devil cause nothing good comes out of that room.

Me: Nandi please don't start with me , i have done everything to show you that i love my family, Alpha is out of jail isn't it so what more do you want from me ? As for the study that room is the reasons you standing here wearing a diamond necklace and a diamond ring so don't start please. I already have a lot on my

plate don't add yourself.

I walked to the study with Mute , Spike walked in behind us , I closed the door and sat down, i pulled out a big chart of paper and laid it on the table and took my chess pieces .

Spike: So what are we looking at?

Me: The warehouse .

Mute : I thought we'd be doing the job on a weekend.

Me: No we can't wait any longer or we will go to war with the Russians , Carlos wants his money and i can't afford to be at war with the Russians.

Spike: Damn boss , but we haven't geared up for the job Sir.

Me: So when you were at the military base before you go into a battle they first had to wait for you guys to gear up ? You think the Hughes are waiting for you to gear up? The Russians are waiting for you to gear up? Come on Spikey ! are you in or out?

Spike: I'm in.

Me : Good let's get on with the plan as i was saying..

Mute: sorry for dismissing you but shouldn't we discuss this with Alpha present?

Me: Alpha will be used as decoy he will be keeping the Hughes



entertained while we sweep the warehouse.

Mute: That's a suicide mission! We can't let him be there alone! Mean if Thabo receives a call informing him about the heist he will surely put a bullet in Alpha's head no questions asked.

Me: That's the thing he won't receive any call because all his man will be dead. I will need like 20 to 30 men for this job, they will be dropped off about 5 feet away from the warehouse, we will engage by foot. Spike I will need you to organize silencers and snipers for this job, we doing this quietly in and out no machine guns that will be there okay.

Spike: Noted.

Me: We will be launching in from all angles surrounding the enter building, we shoot anything buzzing outside let it be a bird in the sky, shoot it the fuck down, it might be CCTV camera. After we have done eliminating the guards we clear up the murder scene and we take positions so everything looks normal as the third team launches in, the will be 30 men consists of 10 men as teams, the third team will be going on and in the third team I will be leading fore front.

Mute: How about Spike leads, Pop's you old.

Me: I am not Old I can still shoot.

Mute: yes but you not up against unskilled shooters, Spike should lead and cover you.

Me: Why are you so scared for me ! I will come back boy , it's not my time yet.

Mute: For godsake you don't know that!

Me: If it is then I'm not scared of dying cause i have lived my life and I'm proud of what i have achieved .

Mute: Spike will lead and he will make sure you get out of there alive isn't it so Spike.

Spike: Don't worry I'll have him on my hip.

I looked at him as his face changed, Mute was really scared for me since he wasn't coming with me , i understood him being scared his a son scared to lose a father. But i just know i wasn't going to die yet , i still have a life to live with my wife i won't die not till i have fixed things with my wife.

Spike: I will go and update the men on the new improvement.

He got up and left the room closing the door behind him.

Mute : As for Alpha to go and play decoy at the Hughes house is just absurd.

Me: That's the only plan i came up with , if you have something better you more than welcome to share your way.

Mute: Me being there will just ruin my expose me to Abbygail.

Me: why do you care caus the main reason you even associated

yourself with her was to get information out of her so don't even worry about her , or have you developed feelings for her?

Mute: ( laughs) hell no !

Me: Then don't even care about her , if she gets hurt that's on her for being too trusty. She was even useless a waste of your time cause you got nothing from her. Alpha took like what a day with Logan she was already singing and dancing to his tune.

Mute: Abby is different she is not like other women.

Me : ( chuckles) Does she have boobs and a vagina?

Mute: Yes she does.

Me: Then she's like all the other women , women are the same, they think , act and have the same attitude. A stinking and very annoying attitude ask me i have been married for more 38 years now. Take Alpha of example you see he has left to see Amara? All he needs to do is push the right buttons and Amara will run into his arms again. Women are like babies, give them lots of love and spend on them a lot and they happy .

Mute: I don't know if that's you talking or it's the booze.

Me: You will remember these words my boy when I'm no longer here with you , when you have mastered the law of women.

I took the my glass and poured myself a glass of whisky , Mute

helped himself too.

Me : A toast?

Mute: Okay

He raised up his glass .

Me: To family.

Mute: To family Pop's.

AMARA

I pushed him off me and wiped my tears, Inhaling. I need some air.

Alpha: You can go by the window.

I looked at him and smiled , he smiled back . I opened up the curtains , he snuggled himself against me holding me from behind , he hugged on tightly on me.

Me: Don't crowd me , i need space.

Alpha : Please don't do this.

Me: I need space and air please.

I pushed him off me and took out cold water from the fridge.

Alpha: Don't give up on me , don't leave me.

Me: (sobbing) I hate what you doing to me

Alpha : Okay then I won't push okay , just don't give up on me  
Amara please , i know at this point you don't even want close to  
you cause you trusted me with the key to heart and i just did  
the opposite of what i should've and promised , i promise to  
hold your heart at a safer distance this time around.

Junior cried in the other room , i looked at him.

Me: I have to attend to Junior you know where the door is at.

Alpha: I'll go check on him.

I handed him his bottle , he walked in the room . I stood at the  
door watching him hold Junior.

Me: Hold his head up .

Alpha : Like this?

He cupped up Junior's head and gave him his bottle. I watched  
him as he wiped Junior's lips and carried him against his chest  
patting his back , Junior let out a burp .

Me: Where did you learn that?

Alpha: What?

Me: How pat him so he let's out a burp.

Alpha: I guess it's fatherly instincts.

Me: So your fatherly instincts develop overnight.

Alpha: Can you not fight me please , this is a beautiful moment over here don't ruin it please.

Me: My bad sorry.

I leaned on the door , he laid down with Junior , they both looked at each other.

Alpha: When is he going to fall asleep?

Me: He won't sleep not when you staring at him like that.

Alpha: Damn okay guess i don't mind having to look at this face for the rest of my life.

Me: Are you hungry i can go dish up for you.

Alpha : No I'll just have coffee.

I walked out the room and made him coffee dishing up for myself. I seriously don't know what Alpha wants from me? He doesn't want to leave me alone , he doesn't want to leave the house , he just seems to find excuses everytime to be here present with me and Junior. I handed him the cup of coffee and sat down besides him.

Alpha: You look settled in here , just a minor fight and you just pack your bags and leave is that how you were going to be when we get married.

Me : If i had to then yes , i have a home.

Alpha : Do you like it here.

Me: It's peaceful and a small place so yes.

Alpha: Would you like to redecorate it make it a comfortable home?

Me: I'm not planning to stay here for ever Alpha , when Junior is 3 month old I'll take him to a creche and look for a job , get myself on my feet.

Alpha: You know that's not necessary right? Mean i got Amara financially and all.

Me : I don't want to depend on you financially Alpha , i want to be dependent on myself cause i don't know when you are going to die since you have decided to play mafia , how long have you been laundering money?

Alpha: Huh? ( sips on his coffee)

Me: for how long have you being dealing with illegal things Alpha? Oh now i see that's why you were so chilled when i shot that man because you have been doing this for the longest of time.

Alpha: Well since i can talk and walk , when i was 21 i had already mastered doing the job , i was natured at a very young age.

Me: What kind of family were you raised in and you better

listen to me i don't want my son involved in any of your illegal businesses am i clear ?

Alpha: That's what i want as well , i want Junior to have a normal upbringing, to go to school and be a happy child without being trained how to hold a gun or even launder money , i don't want Junior to end up in my shoes , i don't want my son living the life I'm living .

I held his hand and smiled , he actually looks honesty and genuine about this , got everything figured out . I looked at him as our eyes locked into each other , i got closer to him in the urge to kiss him , he slowly got closer too ,touching my face as our lips were about to meet his phone beeped, i awkwardly pulled away from him .

Alpha: Damn it , who is that.

He reached out to his pocket and took out his cell , he looked at it and looked at me the guilty in his eyes.

Me: Who is it?

Alpha: ( stuttering) It's Logan.

I suddenly felt angry and hurt . I was warming up to him .

Me: Oh.

Alpha: She got kicked out by her father for being in a relation with me.



Me: Oh , i feel for her so what does she want from you ?

Alpha: She's emotionally Amara probably has no where to turn too.

I got up the bed and took Junior away from him , holding my baby close to my chest , i bottle up tears just fighting so i don't cry cause it will seem like I'm jealous or overreacting, i don't want to give him that satification.

Me: So what do you want to do now?

Alpha: I don't know.

Me: Oh wow i see , so you can choose now?Okay I'll make things easy for you what is it going to be Alpha , Your family or Logan?

Alpha: Amara no please don't make me choose between you and her.

Me: Why? Because you will choose her? I don't know why i bother with you when you clearly have already chosen.

Alpha: Okay fine then , I'll just text her to go to a hotel I'll pay for her suite.

Me: You can go Alpha cause i know you dying to go see her.

Alpha: I'm better off here with you , I'm choosing you.

He tapped on his phone and tossed the phone on the bed.

Alpha: See done , i told her I'm where I'm supposed to be , she must get a room of something. I know better now , I'd rather be here listening to you shouting and yelling me than happy with someone else, I'd rather be with the one who holds my heart.

I rolled my eyes annoyingly even though it felt good hearing him choose us.

Me: You will sleep on the couch or the floor.

Alpha: You know i have a wound on my shoulder i should sleep somewhere comfortable.

Me: Oh but when you were having sex with logan..

Alpha: ( interrupting) I will use the floor.

I handed him the blankets and a pillow , he fixed himself a comfortable spot and laid down. I slept on the bed with Junior, i looked at him as he looked up at the ceiling with his arms folded ontop on his stomach.

Alpha: Tomorrow is going to be a game changing day.

Me: What?

He turned over and looked at me .

Alpha: ( smiles) It's THE DAY.

As confused as i was , i felt it was rather safe i don't know why his calling tomorrow The day after all the crap he told me about

his family business the less i knew the better.

ABBYGAIL

I couldn't stop crying in my room , just tears pouring out , i was stressed about Logan, where could she probably has gone . I tried calling her but her phone kept ringing she's probably angry at each one of us. I sat down on the side of my bed and called Marcus holding a cushion against my chest.

Me: ( sobbing) Hi

Marcus : Hey sweetie you have been crying?

I cried out wiping my tears off my chin.

Marcus : Baby what's wrong?

Me: It's my family Marcus , Dad just kicked out Logan.

Marcus: what for is she okay?

Me: No she's not Marcus, she got disowned by her own father , seeing my sister beg for forgiveness like that just made me realise how toxic my family is , I'm so worried about her .

Marcus: It's okay baby , don't cry okay .

Me: You a police officer ain't you Marcus please go look for her.

I heard him stutter on the call as i raised up my hopes that he will help me get my sister.

Marcus: uhm Abby , Logan is a grown woman isn't she?

Me: Yes but i can't help but be scared for her , she must be alone and crying just breaking down she needs to be with someone right now.

Marcus: How about i come pick you up then we go look for her together when we find her you will take her to your flat.

Me: Okay , you can come over , I'll get dressed.

Marcus: Stop crying .

I nodded my head as if he could see me , he hung up , i wore a hoodie and washed my face , i took my phone and wallet walking out the room

Thandeka: Where are you going?

Me: To find my sister

Thandeka: Did you hear what your father said Abby please go to your room and sleep my child , don't involve yourself in this , it's between your father and Logan.

Me: I can't believe you, you are supposed to be her mom , you should've protected her but no you didn't you watched dad beat her up in front of you ! You failed Logan as her Mom !

She slap me on my cheek , i held my cheek and looked at her , i could still feel her hand on my cheek.

Thandeka: Don't you dare ! You think i enjoyed what happened cause what happened to Logan cuts deep in me ! I am hurt Abbygail as much as you are , i feel the pain you are feeling mine is extreme cause i carried Logan I'm her mother.

Me: You got a funny way of showing your motherly love.

I turned around and walked to the door.

Thandeka: Abby! Come here ! Don't you walk away while I'm talking to you young lady.

I got out the house and walked to the gate.

Security: Mem I'm afraid i can't let you out.

Me: Open this gate or I'll do it myself.

Security: You will make me lose my job.

Me: i will personally fire you Sir open this gate !

He unlocked the gate and opened it for me. Marcus and his Jeep were already on the corner of the street , i walked quickly approaching the car , he climbed down and met me half way , i tossed myself in his arms and held him tightly.

Marcus: Hey it's okay we'll find her okay.

Me: You just won't believe my mom slapped me for telling her the truth , let's go.

I got in the passengers seat as we drove off, i wiped away my

tears and laid back on the seat . His car actually smells good , his deodorant just filled up the whole car and it filled up my nostrils just claming me.

Marcus: So where do you want us to start?

Me: I will try calling her again.

Marcus: Okay you do that , I'll also make a call.

He steered on the wheel, i tried Logan's cell this time it went straight to voicemail in frustration i just screamed. He placed his hand on my thigh.

Marcus: Hey , it's okay , it's usually for a women to switch off her phone after a fight.

Me: I'm sorry , i just , i don't know what to do .

Marcus: I'm sure she's safe don't worry yourself too much.

He turned on the music and drove around . He controlled the stereo from the steering wheel , skipping songs untill he found the one he wanted , he turned up the volume , i didn't stop texting Logan hoping she'll reply to my texts. But i didn't get any relpy back , i just screamed in frustration Marcus placed his hand on my thigh and brushed me softly.

Marcus: It's okay.

Me : i don't know why she switched off her phone.

Marcus: Maybe she wants to be alone, women love that when they get into a fight or argument they like to be left alone. She will get back to you after she sees the texts you sent her.

Me: I hope so.

I looked at him as he looked around the dark streets that were clear just us driving around.

Marcus: Your mother never told you that staring at someone is a sign of rudeness?

Me: no she didn't, she never informed me that looking at a handsome man was wrong.

Marcus: Oh so you like what you see?

Me: I do , Marcus i just want to thank you for driving with me around even though you knew we weren't going to finding her.

Marcus: It's okay really , I'm a friend looking out for another friend.

Me: I don't want to be friends with you anymore.

Marcus: why did i do something to trigger that?

Me: No you did nothing wrong you have been nothing but a supportive and perfect friend.

Marcus: Oh then what's wrong then?

Me: I think I'm falling for you Marcus , i know this might sound

desperate of me but i like you , you the only thing that makes sense in my life right now you have kept me grounded.

He shrugged his eyebrows as i felt embarrassed , how can i be the one telling a guy i like him first this is not how i am , but with Mute i had to make exceptions.

Marcus: Oh wow i don't know what to say to you Abby.

Me: You don't have to say a thing.

I sat up on the seat and held his chin pulling his face closer to mine as i kissed him , he kissed back holding my waist firmly on the seat , god i wish this car could turn into a house a more comfortable place to have sex in. His hand travelled on on thigh up in between my thigh before i could gasp to breathe , he had gotten inside my panty with his finger splitting my vulvas i laid back on the sit , encircling his finger on my throbbing clit , he tapped on my coochie swiping his two fingers up my vagina then in my hole , i let loose of my legs and opened up for him placing my legs that were opened up widely with my feet on the dashboard, in and out his fingers fucked me , round and round my clit the stroking deep in as he touched my vaginal wal in the inside. I bite my lower lip moaning in my mouth , i held on his wrist and moaned , my hand made it's way to his pants as he assist me loosening up his belt and zip his pants down, digging in his boxers i pulled out a strong firm cock , it just bounced out showing it red head like it's been waiting for this



moment, holding it i firmly stroked down to the balls giving him a hand job as he played in me.

Me: ( giggles ) Fuck it's so firmly and strong.

Marcus: And you so wet and dirty. Should we jump in the back seat? I'll get a condom

He reached for the condom and took it out.

Me: you keep condoms in you car.

Marcus: Might never know when it will be necessary for it to be used .

That was awkward cuase i thought we were having it raw never expected him to have condoms. I felt kind of guilty to be here ready to have sex while my sister is going through a breakdown of a lifetime but to tell the truth, Logan got this on herself, if she just listened to me when i told her that Alpha's sudden interest in her wasn't genuine non of this would have happened. I jumped at the back seat as he sat down rolling the condom on himself he laid back on the seat .

Marcus: ( smiles ) Let's see how you can move your waist mamma.

I sat on top sliding down on the dick as it filled me up for a moment i felt it touch my womb , i jumped a little up and wrapped my arms on his shoulder , slowly stroking myself and

gaining momentum, i twisted my waist.

Me: ( moaning) Oh god , yes.

I could barely move for a second just allowing my body to adapt to foreign meat that had just invaded my coochie , steering around my waist slowly and carefully , he held my waist pulling me down , he wrapped his arms around my shoulder and stroked me. I closed my eyes leaning on his shoulder just breathing.

Me : Mhhh , Ohhh my worddd!

My ass slapped against his thighs as i pushed on down in him then up again. He went on and on groaning in my ear and sucking my neck as his warmth breath evaporated on my neck. I held his face and kissed him with my eyes closed just taking that cock as it invaded deep within me , letting out a light scream, i held on him tight with my clit itchy and throbbing.

Me: ( desperately) Oh my god please fuck me !

Without hesitation he stroked me harder and deeper. I held on his neck and bent my neck looking up at the car roof top with him locked inbetween my thighs, he made love to me like he is used to fuck girls in his car , this small space didn't bother him at all. He just made love to me and was really satisfying me. I reached down and rubbed my clit flinching as i felt and orgasm approach my clit was just screaming to be stretched , i rubbed

my myself closing in my thighs on him . My legs twitched for a moment as i released , sighing i held on him and kissed him , he made a few strokes and released too . I just sat down on him with a condom filled with cum in me for a moment as i cooled off.

Me: Can't believe i had sex in the car.

Marcus: Your first time?

Me: Yes and you?

Marcus: Mine too.

Me: Why you lying?

Marcus: How do you know I'm lying?

Me: How you handled me , you felt experienced.

Marcus: Can you get off me?

Me: Oh yeah sorry .

He held the condom down as i climbed off him , he took out wipes from the car box and handed them to me as he wiped himself off.

Me: looks like you still horny.

Marcus: I'm not , I'm good i released so I'm fine.

His penis still had an erection, still hard and firm , he fixed

himself fastening his belt, i wiped myself and wore my panties.

Marcus: are you hungry we can go get something to eat.

Me: uhmm yeah i think so. We can go.

We got into our rightfully seats and he drove away to Mc'D i felt like after having sex he suddenly switched, i felt like i didn't satisfy him as he has done to me . He kept quiet the whole road to the fast food store after taking our orders he paid the bill, i sunked in the seat just feasting on the chicken nuggets.

DREW

I walked out my room pulling the strings on my sweatpants as it hugged my waist. I knocked on Abby's door .

Me: ( calling) Abby .

She didn't answer, she probably doesn't want to be interrupted maybe crying herself to sleep . I walked to Dad's Study , he was sitting in the dark just reflection of the glass shaking dark room made me noticed the was someone inside the room.

Thabo: He won't get away with this , who the hell does he think he is !

Me: Father i don't think kicking Logan out will make things batter for us , we just kicked on of our own out to the wolves.

Thabo: As for Logan she should've thought about that before

going and open her legs to Alpha , she knows exactly what is going on but still she made the decision to jump into bed with that lunatic.

Me: You should seriously consider bringing her back Father please , this is going to break our family apart making us vulnerable to anything.

Thabo: No ! I won't let Logan in this house ! I will not take betrayal lightly ! I'm using Logan as an example so everyone sees what i do to snitches! She should be grateful i didn't behead her , if she wasn't my daughter i would have killed her.

Me: Don't talk like that father.

Thabo: Since Steve decided to attack my family i will attack his , he wants to play dirty huh? I will show him how it's done.

Cohen walked in the room , i looked at him as he sat down. He took out a cigar and lite it up.

Me: I want you to do some digging about Alpha's baby mama , i want to know who she is ? Where is she? Where is Alpha's son? I want the informations before sun set tomorrow.

I looked at him as he stared in space puffing on the cigar.

Me: You not going to hurt a innocent woman and her baby right , this is between us men the women and children got nothing to do with this, Logan went to Alpha knowingly.

Thabo: No ! She was forced! He manipulated my daughter, brained washed her and took my baby girl away from me ! I want him to feel what I'm feeling, want to take away something precious from Alpha just as he did to me , i want his son and i will make sure he never sees him again

To be continued.

54

LOGAN

I woke up and looked besides me stretching my hand , on the white sheets on the bed , the suite was comfortable everything royal treatment. I took my phone and browsed through it , i saw Abby's messages and missed calls. I just tossed the phone besides me and got up going into the bathroom , i washed my face and ordered breakfast. I took my phone and called Alpha , he hasn't tried to contact me since his last message saying i should book myself into a suite , his phone just rang with no answer , i was beginning to question him , question his character if he really was using me to get information from my family but no i can't let those thoughts overwhelm me i can't . Cause that would really break me cause i choose him , i choose to give him the information he needed to save his skin he owes me his life.

ALPHA

I woke up early and bought breakfast with a bouquet of roses , i plated the food in a plate and made her coffee adding sugar. I picked up the tray and placed a rose on my mouth as i balanced the tray to the room.

Me: Wakey wakey you two.

Amara: ( yawning) What time is it?

Me: Time for you to wake up.

She sat up stretching her eyes , she looked at me smiling.

Amara: And what is this?

Me: breakfast and a rose for my beautiful lady.

Amara: Is this a way to worm into my heart?

Me: Is it working?

Amara: No it's not.

Me: I'll keep trying , i know we will get there .

I placed the tray on the bed , she picked up the mug.

Amara: You up early or you didn't sleep?

Me: I slept like a baby.

Amara: Me too , are you eating?

Me : No I'll just have coffee.

Amara: Do you even eat?

Me: I do when I'm hungry right now I'm not hungry.

Amara: You need to eat , have you even been drinking your pills.

Me: Sometimes i do.

Amara: Sometimes? Alpha you not taking care of yourself, you have changed you not the Alpha i know , the one i fell for.

Me: I know sweetheart, everything i has changed since i got shot , i changed guess that bullet penetrated in me and unleashed a monster. I haven't even been at the office these days , i kept my distance away from my job.

Amara: I have noticed .

I locked my hand in hers and held her hand against my lips landing a kiss.

Me: I promise things will go back to normal starting from today on , you , me and Junior we going to be a family and i am going to earn your trust back and your love too, i swear . I love you.

Amara: Thank you for breakfast.

Me: I said i love you.

Amara: i heard you.

Me: Say you love me too Amara , I'm not used to you not saying



you don't love me back , say it.

Amara: I would be lying if i said it , just because you want me and love me now , i should want you and forget you cheated on me Alpha? No it doesn't work like that ! What you did to me is unforgivable Alpha .

Me: I know but I'm trying to make things right between us .

Amara: Then you wasting your time.

Me: What ? Amara what do you mean by that?

Amara: I'm sorry but i want us to break us.

Me: No !

Amara: Don't make things difficult as they already are Alpha.

I couldn't help but lose my mind , i got up from the bed angry as hell , my blood was boiling.

Me: Oh wow so just because i made a tiny mistake you going to crucify me ! Break up with me for a mistake .

Amara: How is having sex a mistake that's a very long process for it to be a mistake Alpha.

Me: ( angry ) So what ? I said I'm sorry !

Junior cried , she picked him up and placed him on her chest patting her back.

Amara: I don't want to hurt anymore Alpha , i don't want to lose my mind with you , i love you so much to the extent i have to choose me , if i stay with you, you are going to send me into a early grave , i need you to accept this, accept you messed up and in the process of your mistake you lost me.

Me: No !

Amara: Yes , I don't want a relationship with you anymore.

I looked at her as i launched towards the bed angry, i shouted to the top of my deep voice just demanding)

Me:( shouting Well you not the only one that gets to have a say in this , i do too ! ( demanding) and i say we're a couple !  
Goddamn it !

Amara: And i say we not ! I won't have you walk all over! How much humiliation do you want to put me through how many girls do you still want to sleep with while you say you love me each and every night ! This is not love , why can't you understand that I'm tired of putting you first ! I'm choosing me this time ! I'm tired of loving a boy not ready to be a man ! I'm tired of being caught in your groove .

Me: To hell with that ! We love each other Amara ! You meant to be besides me all the fucken days your life ! You are mine !  
Mine alone !

Amara: But then you are not mine alone , you are ours , mine ,

Logan, Megan? How many more are they i lost count.

Me: Know what I'm tired of this nonsense! I'm going home and giving you space to get your sense back !

I picked up my wallet on the table and my phone, i leaned against her giving Junior a kiss and walked out the flat slamming the door behind me. I walked to my car and got in . I sat down and groaned! Slamming my fist against the steering wheel.

Me: Fuck is wrong with her ! Oh I'll be damned if she thinks I'll just accept defeat and let her go ! Why is it so hard for her to forgive me ! I'm human for fucken sake i make unfortunate mistakes .

DREW

I wore my leather jacket and wore my watch , i walked out my room to the breakfast table , Everyone just sitting there quietly just feasting on their plates. I sat down , the maid dished up for me.

Maid: Coffee or tea?

Me : Just blend a smoothie for me.

Abby walked in the room , she was sparkling looking gorgeous than yesterday, i expected her to walk out looking depressed.

Abby: Morning family.

She sat down as we all looked at her.

Thandeka: You in a good mood this morning.

Me: I was going to ask too.

Abby: Why shouldn't i be in a good mood , i had a peaceful drive with the one person that actually keeps me sane.

Thabo: You are seeing someone?

Abby: Yes , i am is that a problem daddy? Or are you going to hit me too and throw me out?

Thabo : Watch how you adress me young lady , your tongue mustn't just slid when you talking to me.

Thandeka: Abby apologize to your father.

She rolled her eyes and poured herself a glass of Juice. Cohen walked in the room , he looked at my father, Thabo got up and left the room. I sat down tapping my fingers on the table. I got up.

Abby: And where do you think you going?

Me: Mind your business lover girl.

I walked out the room approaching the study, i got in as father was looking at pictures , i picked up a photo and looked at it.

Cohen: It was taken this morning. Alpha spent the night in his baby mamma's flat.

I picked up the picture and looked at it , Alpha was leaving the flat in the picture.

Thabo: Do you have a Room number?

Cohen: Yes and the name of the woman.

He placed the piece of paper on the table.

Thabo: Cohen you will handle the job tonight.

Cohen: (smiles) I will go read the woman a bedtime story.

Thabo: Make sure you leave with the baby.

Cohen: What about the woman?

Thabo: Do whatever you feel like Alpha deserves.

Cohen: Okay.

They both left the room, i picked up the piece of paper and took a picture of the address, i placed my phone in my pocket and walked out the study. I picked up my bike cap .

Thabo: Are you going out?

Me: Yes , i have errands to do.

Thabo: Be back soon okay.

Me: Okay.

I walked out the house and got on my bike setting GPS on the

screen . I speeded off to the address. I don't know why i felt the urge to see this woman . I'm not going there to warn her or anything just to see this woman that is unfortunately entangled up with the kinds of Alpha.

GPS : You have reached your destination.

I stopped the bike and got off . I looked around the neighbourhood as people passing the street looked at me , i walked inside the building and walked in looking at the door number on my phone , i stopped at the door. And knocked taking a deep breath , i took a step back from the door the door opened up , she looked at me . I looked at her as a goddess opened the door for me , brown eyes with Melanin smooth chocolate brown skin that looked soft as pearls a beautiful version of a black women with round lips and horse capped teeth , fearless of her shade she brightened up her face with a awkward curve smile and a shrugged busy brows , with a fro tied up carelessly but in a beautiful way. My heart skipped , disoriented as i was i just stared down at an African queen.

Amara: hello.

Me: I'm sorry , i just .. i just..

I looked around the hallway and looked back as her snapping my fingers.

Amara: Are you looking for someone?

Me: I'm looking for Abby? Do you know anyone with that name i think she said she lives in this exact building i just don't know which room she is in.

Amara: I'm sorry but i don't know any Abby in the building.

Me: Are you new here?

Amara: I grew up here.

Me: Really that's amazing.

Amara: You don't look like a guy that lives around here.

Me: I actually don't.

Amara: Okay , is Abby your girlfriend?

Me: Oh no she's my sis.. yes she is my girlfriend.

Amara: You sound unsure?

Me: We just met and she gave me the address, uhm sorry for bothering you Mrs..

Amara: Miss Amara.

Me: Miss Amara , I'm Drew.

Amara: Okay Drew bye hope you find Your sister/girlfriend.

Me: ( chuckles) I hope too , I'll just..I'll go.

Amara: Yes bye.

I turned as she closed the door. I just couldn't get enough with looking at her , how did Alpha end up with such a beautiful woman? She is sweet and looks young. She looks like she has been dipped in chocolate , bronzed in Elegance , Enameled with grace , toasted in beauty . God now i feel sorry for her , her baby boy is going to be taken away from her tonight but that's all on Alpha . This is all because of him , she will understand the precautions of mingling with men like Alpha, you can't be with someone like that and expect to have a happily ever after . I got on my bike and looked at the building as i drove off.

NANDI

Alpha walked in the house he tossed his keys on the table and sat down pouring himself a glass of water.

Me: Honey , are you okay.

He drank down the water just shoving it down his throat. I got up from the table and walked to him patting his back that was just hot.

Me: baby what's wrong you burning up.

He shoved me off , heavy breathing in anger , his eyes were red , he walked inside his room as i ran after him. He took out his pills from pill cabinet and tossed two in his mouth and chewed.

Me: Baby what's wrong did you have a fight with Amara?



Alpha: Can you leave me alone? Will you do that for me ? Leave me the fuck alone Geez !

Walking inside the shower he opened up the tab , he stood in the middle of the shower water dropping down his body as his clothes soaked up. I looked at him and wiped my tears.

Me: If you want to talk sweetheart , you know I'm here for you right? I will always love you and i will never leave your side , I love you baby.

Alpha: ( yelling) Just get out ! Geez ! What is wrong with women in my life!

I walked out the bathroom and closed the door.

Steve: His angry?

Me: ( sobbing) He was so rude to me Steve , he won't talk to me.

He walked over to me and gave me a hug kissing my forehead.

Steve: It's okay sweetheart, his just going through a tough time , men go through rough patches, all he needs is pace to face his demons alone , when his ready he will come talk to you , just give him space okay.

Me: I want to be there for my son.

Steve: I know that and we all want to be there for him but for

now do it at a distance cause when you push him to talk you will be pushing him away. How about some lemon tea.

Me: This is no time for lemon tea Steve.

Steve: ( chuckles) But you always make lemon tea when we dealing with stressful situations.

I just looked at him and exhaled leaving the room , Steve can't be serious he can't be suggesting tea while our son is so close to committing suicide , i couldn't help but think Amara is going to send my son to his early grave . Ever since Alpha met her he has weakened , he gets shot , arrested and hurt . Amara is toxic to my son.

To be continued.

55

MEGAN

I sat down watching a movie eating snacks , the land line telephone kept ringing off the hook on the table. I looked at it annoyed as i grabbed it and answered.

Me: Yes.

Caller: Hi , I'm calling from 5 Roses hotel , May i speak to Mr Alpha Smith please.

Me: About?

Caller: May i speak to him it's urgent?

Me: I'm his fiancée so you can talk to me.

Caller: I have a footage here that was captured of an incident that happened in his room on his stay here and i was wondering maybe he would like to have it.

I got up from the chair and paced towards the fire place biting my thumb.

Me: What kind footage?

Caller: I'm not sure if i should be discussing this over the phone.

Me: No it's okay , i want to know so i be able to tell him exactly what it is .

Caller: uhmm( clears her throat and whispers) it's a footage of a murder.

I sudden rush of excitement lighten up my body , oh what a wonderful day.

Me: Oh that's bad , don't worry i will personal come and collect the footage by myself and i will compensate you well for such a good deed you doing for my family.

Caller: Thank you Mem.

Me: Pleasure doing business with you.

I hung up the call and tapped the phone on my palm and

laughed. Things just get mess and dirty in this family , can't they just stay out of murder for even a month? Killing to them is like a daily routine. It's nothing , they kill people like flies just murdering people. I need to get my hands on that footage before him , it will come in handy. I walked to my room and took my bag, phone and car keys. I need to go get my leverage against Alpha , this is unlike him , he never leaves loose ends, means everything happened so fast that he even forgot to have the footage deleted ?

ALPHA

I took out my suit from the wodrope and dressed up tucking my white shirt in my pants i tightly fastening my belt around my waist , spraying myself with my deodorant.

Maid: Your blazer sir.

Me: Place it on the bed , my smoothie? Where is it?

Maid: I'll bring it to you immediately.

She looked at me and smiled playing with her fingers, i looked at her .

Me: What !

Maid: Nothing sir i was just...

Me: Just what !

Maid: Admiring your wear today , you having no mercy on the men out there you truly can dress.

Me: Thank you.

Maid: Pleasure.

Me: You can leave.

She walked out the room and closed the door, unbuttoning my shirts button letting my chest surface, i wore my black nicely ironed blazer and watch. I looked myself in the mirror just observing myself. She said i have changed , neglecting myself? Let's see how she will feel when she notices I'm back to my old self , i thought if i changed how i was , learned to open up my heart and be soft towards her it will make her stay and never leave but Amara wants more , she wants someone i can never be. I took my laptop and car keys walking out the house.

Steve: Where are you going?

Me: To the office.

Steve: Why today you know we have a job tonight.

Me: I do but i decided to go to the office and check on things.

Steve: You are not forced to be there Alpha you are the boss.

Me: So that i am in charge? I need to go check on my team , i can't seat around here and plot and twist on something i know

is going to be a success chill.

Steve: You can't be serious, are you being serious? Did Amara hurt you to the point you want to just shut everything down and just work yourself out?

Me: What are you talking about Pop's?

Steve: I know you were with Amara and you were there to fix things with her and this morning you just came back in a dull mood disrespecting your mother.

I looked at him just staring at him emotionless just looking at him.

Me : I don't know what with you and your wife sticking your noses in my business cause my relationship with Amara got nothing to do with you both and I'd appreciate it stays like that , Respectfully mind your business , us there anything else.

Steve: ( chuckles) No these nothing else son you may leave.

I opened the door and walked out to my car and drove off , i haven't been in work for a while now , just dealing with my company through my laptop, today just popping in and see what challenges they have encountered while i wasn't present might help me get up to date with their daily accounts. I parked the car , got in the elevator . As i arrived on the top floor , Ipek was at reception as always.

Ipek: Alpha , we didn't expect to see you come into the office today.

Me: I'm here ain't i ? Call the creative team to the board room.

Ipek: Okay.

I opened up the door and walked in my office , it hasn't changed a bit , ever walked in a room and felt revived like an electric pulse just passed through your body reviving you , not just the body but the soul too. I took steps to the window and looked down at the busy street .

Ipek : Everyone is in the boardroom ready for your.

Me: Okay I'll be with them shortly.

Ipek: It's good to have you back.

Me: It's good to be here.

She walked out the office and closed the door. I collected files from my table and walked in the boardroom they all looked at me i sat down .

Me: Guys morning so i need to present a small summary on what and whose accounts you have been working on.

I sat back on the chair as one of them got up and handed us documents, i paged through the documents looking at the account graphics and deal . I stared at the inked paper just

hearing Amara voice ring in my ears telling me she wanted to break up with me. How could she ask me of such? I'm ready to turn on a new leaf , i won't change who i am but i can try to be better, be more transparent about my feelings and be there for her and Junior, i know we have been through a lot together , i made mistakes , i have hurt her in so many way , in most accounts i did it unknowingly. Why is she pushing me away , why is she playing with my heart like this? How will i be able to plead with my heart to let her go? This is not me , I'm a man very big man , just filled with dignity and grace , no one is leaves me ! I do the leaving, i push people away , who the hell does she think she is? I can't let her go , No , that's impossible.

Ipek: ( calling out) Alpha, Alpha , sir !

I looked at her as i snapped out from the thoughts.

Me : I'm sorry you were saying .

Ipek: The team is in page 5.

Me: You may proceed.

I paged through the file as we continued with the meeting. I was progressive now , i have to keep my mind of Amara she's just not worth it right now.

MUTE

Spike and i drove to collect the guns needed for the job



including black clothe gear that bulletproof vests , we met the sellers under a bridge just miles away from the houses. I stopped the Jeep and looked before me , the were 4 golf cars parked before us with a group of men standing outside the cars. I set the bullets in my gun.

Spike: That won't be necessary

Me: dealing with goons like these a gun is necessary you do your shit your way i do mine my way deal?

Spike: I know these people Mute.

Me: I don't, let's go collect the merchandise.

We walked out the car , i took a bag of money from the boot and approached the them , Spike had a handshake with the leader , he looked at me handing out his hand for a handshake, i looked at him and nodded my head.

Leader: I see your friend doesn't trust us Spike.

Spike: Don't mind him is very jumpy in these sort of transactions .

Leader: I like him .

I just shook my head and chuckled.

Me: Can we get down to business , this is not a social visit.

I weighed the bag and tossed it before him .

Me: Are these the guns?

Leader: You can check the bag.

I got down and unzipped the bag , picking up a AK-47 , i looked at the machine setting the chambers, his bodyguards held their hips , i looked at them and smiled rolling my eyes.

Me: 400k as agreed on.

Leader : All in the bag?

Me: How do you take us? It's all in. Pleasure doing business with you.

Leader : Back at you .

I picked up the bag , i opened up the boot placing the guns in. We got in the car and drove off.

Spike: You could've shaken his hand that's a sign of respect and trust.

My phone rang in my pocket reaching down i took it out and looked at the caller, it was Abbygail god won't this girl just give up i haven't been answering her text since last night that should be a clue.

Spike: Are you going to get that?

Me : No .

Spike: ( laughs) Who is it?

Me: Non of your business.

Spike: It's that Hughe girl isn't it?

Me: As i said it's non of your business who it is mind what you being paid to do old friend.

Spike: Just answer the call and break up with her that will make things easy for you and her , atleast she will know you are no longer interested in her than to string her along like this.

Me: I will talk to Abby when i get the chance to , she must learn to be patient.

Spike: She will just keep calling and blowing up your phone.

Me: I'll get back to her when i have time I'm busy right now.

I kept quiet driving back to the Smith Mansion , i felt guilty about having sex with Abbygail, it was wrong for me to be intimate with her while i knew exactly what we have is nothing but business . Hearing her tell me she wanted to be more than friends caught me off gaurd , i knew she likes me but don't expect her to just easily want to be in a relationship with me , you can't just jump into a relationship with someone you met a day ago .

DREW

I had got in touch with Logan and she told me where she was, i went over at the hotel and walked in. On my way in i bumped

into a woman , she dropped a USB cable she was holding reaching for the floor to give it to her , she grabbed it and got up.

Me: I'm sorry i just..

Woman: Mind where you going !

Me: I'm sorry Mem but you came straight at me.

Woman: So what are your assumptions? That i just ran straight into your arms , you not even that hot for me to want to fall in your arms.

Me: ( laughs) woah Mem i never said i was hot for your liking cause you not even my type.

Woman: Excuse me ! Do you know who you talking too?

Me: I can sense you don't know either.

Megan: I am Megan the daughter of the Mayor of this town !

Me: Oh I'm Drew Hughes and my father is a well known business man.

Megan: Hughes? That surname sounds familiar to my ears. Are you Thabo Hughes son?

Me: Yes i am.

She looked at me and smiled.

Megan: I see , watch where you going Drew don't bump into women more often.

Me: I will daughter of the Mayor.

She walked to the exit inserting the USB in her bag , that was a weird collision. I walked inside the elevator and checked my DMs just scrolling , i walked out and approached Logan's door , she was in a royal suite that's like the expensive room in the whole hotel . I knocked on the door.

Logan: Hey.

Me: Hey sweetheart how are you?

I gave her a hug kissing her forehead.

Logan: I'm fine come in.

I walked in and closed the door , looking around the room.

Me: This is a nice room.

Logan: I know right but it's not like my room at home.

I looked at her as she let down her wig on her shoulders in a tracksuit, she wasn't herself, the bubbly and fancy Logan , her eyes had eye bags and were red.

Me: You don't look good Log.

Logan: I'm not okay Drew , (sobbing) I feel so sorry for myself and sad.

Me: It's okay don't cry sweetie, everything is going to work out fine , i know you meant no harm , you were doing what you thought was right.

Logan: But look where that landed me Drew? In a hotel room all alone and Alpha didn't even bother to come see me.

Me: ( shouting) I'm not surprised, his a selfish bastard all he knows is taking advantage of innocent women , fucken boy !

Logan: But it's really not his fault it's all mine ! It is my fault father is right I'm a slut.

Me: No ! You are not a slut !

Logan: ( yelling) No i am ! I chose a man over my family.

Me: A man that tricked you made you believe he cared while he didn't! His going to pay for this !

I walked to the door, she held my arm.

Logan: Where are you going ? No Drew please don't go and confront Alpha please.

Me: I have to look that snake in the eyes and punch the brains out of him for what his doing to you ! This is unfair !

I walked out the room and pressed the elevator button countless time , i got in , playing with my hand , exercising my fist as i relaxed and contracted it . I was taking my chances here

, I'm riding to his office that bastard will surely be there . I parked my motorcycle outside and stormed inside the building shouting.

Me: Where is he ! Where is that bastard!

I got in the elevator to the top floors , i looked at Ipek at the reception as she looked at me.

Me: Where is he !

Ipek: Mr Hughes you can't go in there !

I pushed in slamming the twin doors aside , he looked at me while holding his land line.

Alpha: Listen Carols I'll get back to you in a second , some nonsense just showed up.

He placed the phone down and looked at me.

Ipek: Sir i tried stopping him.

Alpha: (calmly) It's okay Ipek , close the door.

The door closed behind me , i launched towards him agitated , i held him by his suit just grabbing a chunk on the fabric , he laughed.

Alpha: if you not going to do anything to me your hands off me boy.

Me: Boy ? Are you still calling me a boy!

I launched a fist at him and punched him aggressively, he got up and pushed me off .

Alpha: Did you just hit me?

Me: Yes ! And what the fuck are you going to do Alpha ! What !

Alpha: Get your ass out of my office I'm not in the mood for you , not today!

Me: You played my sister!.

Alpha: So ? Yes i fucked your sister so what ?

Me: You even saying it to my face.

I approached him as we fought exchanging fist , i held him by his head and lowered him to my torso , i launched a knee in his lip defending himself he lended a fist in my ribs my intestines got numb as i fought battling with the stinging pain in my stomach i felt like i was going to vomit , he knocked me on the side of my ear, i zoomed out for a moment, my ears ringing to the bang . I fell on the floor holding on to my head , i got up and closed my eyes shaking my head back to it's sense , without hesitations i walked towards him for another round I'm a Hughe i won't go down that easily one of us has to die today before i could reach him the security gaurds walked in and grabbed me.

Security: Sir are you fine?



Alpha: Get out ! Let him go and get out!

Security: Sir we trying to neutralise this situation.

Alpha: Did i call you here ? Get the fuck out or you will be neutralizing poverty in your house.

They let me go and nodded their heads walking out , Alpha walked to the door and closed it. He wiped the blood off his lips and sat down on the table sighing , i held my ear and looked at my hand , the pain was excessive it felt like my ear was bleeding but it wasn't.

Me: I trusted you , You said you won't touch my sisters!

Alpha: I trusted you the next thing your family sent a man into my hotel room which i share with the mother of child to kill me ! The trust chain ended there ! You don't know shit about trust you piece of trash!

Me: You bastard slept with my sister!

Alpha: So what! She's your sister Drew for godsake or what you wanted to fuck her yourself?

Me: How dare you ! You old enough to be her older brother!

Alpha : Fuck that ! she ask for it ! Your family sold me out !

Me: You deserved it ! I thought you were bigger than this Alpha ! You and i had a agreement and you broke it now I'm going to

come after you with everything i got !

Alpha: ( laughed ) fuck you man.

Me : My sister is hurting because of you bastard , I'm going to kill you all of you ! Your family will be begging on their knees.

Alpha: let's talk and more action!

Me: You will regret even thinking of Logan when I'm done with you , you will be dry as a dog!

Alpha : That's the thing about you , you talk to much , you all about talking just yapping nonsense , know with that kind of attitude you will be kneeling before me Drew ( smiles) I thought your family wanted to put me away , You wanted to be me , You want to be the Alpha , you want to rule these streets , i mean this is all this is right? Your father wants to put me away you Hughes must have big plans . But see you didn't think things all the way through , it takes balls to do what i do and you don't have the balls , if you want to be king you gotta kill the king ! Get out of my office before your father comes to pick you up in a body bag.

I looked at my heart beating fast , as i was still agitated , furious, angry. I pointed at him wiggling my finger at him , i let out a slight laugh.

Me: You don't know who you messing with.

I walked out the office and slammed the door behind me , he thinks he has won yet he doesn't know the game has just begin . He doesn't know i got leverage over him , i know where his beloved baby is at , where his so called son is at and his son's fate is on the tip of my families hand. He will be begging to us when he finds out his son is missing we'll see where is the courageous Alpha then.

AMARA

I had a quick bath with Junior and got out , i dressed him and got dressed too. I laid him down on the bed and gave him a toy to play with , i checked my phone to see if my phone was on silent it was really quiet . Alpha hasn't called nor texted to check up on me, did this mean he has given up and actually accepted the fact i broke up with him? He can really be unpredictable. I took a photo of Junior and uploaded it for the first time then tagged Alpha with the caption " hey world meet Junior Alpha" my phone beeped as notifications rained in. I sat down and and chatted with the people readying comments.

@AmaraMckenzi , oh my his to die for , so cute.

@AmaraMckenzi , How much is he ? I would gladly take out all my savings to buy him.

@AmaraMckenzi , chom you just vanished and now you came

back with a baby where did you steal him?

I laughed at the comments as some commented mentioning other people trying to compare Junior to Alpha some comments were nasty , some asking if this was really Alpha's child or i was just chasing clout. I browsed through the comments wishing i didn't even post my baby. Majority loved Junior it was just the trolls that were bullying a baby. I picked up my baby and breastfed him , he latched on while i kept browsing down the comments. Megan sent me a text.

Me: What does the hell does she want.

I got into her DM and played the video. I watched the video as i shoot a man in cold blood , my whole body froze , i couldn't breathe.

Me: ( panicking) NO ! NO.

I placed Junior on the couch and got up , i called Megan shaking.

Megan: Call some other time sweetheart I'm busy.

Me: Megan please don't drop the call, How did you get that video? It was a mistake .

Megan: You shot the poor man repeatedly girl .

Me: It won't count the is no body!

Megan: ( laughs) i have you on camera gunning a man down , mini mini mo how if this video ends up to the cops.

Me: No ! Please , i can go to jail .

Megan: Uhm..that's exactly what i want !

Me: No ! You don't want that , what about Junior he needs his mom please , for my son.

Megan: You don't honestly think , i give a shit !

Me: What do you want Megan? What do you honestly want from a poor girl like me? I'm an orphan for godsake, I'm broke, i don't have anything.

Megan: No ! That's untrue! You have everything Amara , you have a man that loves you and a son , you have a family and what do i have ? I have nothing because of you ! Because you won't just die ! You should've died Amara ! You shouldn't have came back ! I had it all and you just came back!

Me: I'm sorry , you can have Alpha i broke up with him.

Megan: That's not enough cause i won't be having him as a whole , his heart will always yawn for you.

Me: What do you want from me then?

Megan: I want to see you suffer Amara , i don't want you to have a peaceful sleep at night, for the mean time i still think

about what i want to do with this video, you can breastfeed my baby okay darling ( laughs) don't die of a heart attack princess.

She hung up the call , oh my god she knows, I'm going to jail for murder. I looked at Junior that was playing on the couch chewing on his hand , i swallowed hard , wiping sweat from my forehead as i paced around the room.

Me: I'm going to jail , Oh my god , I'm done.

I sat down on the couch and called Alpha his phone he didn't pick up .

Me: ( angry) Pick up your damn phone !

I tossed my phone across the room screaming. Junior cried , i picked him up .

Me: I'm sorry baby , I'm sorry my love ( patting his back) mommy is just frustrated, I'm sorry.

I paced around the room calming him down crying , i just couldn't believe this , is Alpha behind this? He , Mute and Steve only know about this, how did Megan get her hands on the video? Is this a way for him to keep me close to him ? So i don't break up with him , mean how would a video like that just surface out of nowhere just a few hours after i broke up with him. Why is Alpha doing this to me. I got up and collected Junior's baby bag and my phone , he doesn't want to answer my calls right? Then I'm going to meet him. I locked the door

and walked over to Enzo's flat and knocked on the door .

Roommate: Amara hey , what's up?

Me: Is Enzo home?

Roommate: No sorry you just missed him , he went to work.

Me: Shucks !

Roommate: What's wrong you look unsettled?

Me: Do you have a car?

Roommate: Yes i do , why is thw baby sick?

Me: No i have an important matter to discuss with his dad , can you please give me a ride.

Roommate : Okay sure lets go.

Me: Thank you so much you a life saver.

He walked inside and collected his car keys, he locked the flat door as we walked out to his car. I directed him to the Smith Mansion. I got out the car and approached the gate.

Security: Miss Amara .

Me : Is Alpha home?

Security: No .

Me: Where is he?

Security: Is there something wrong Mem?

Me: Where is Alpha !?

Security: He left for work.

I walked back to the car.

Me: Drive me to Alpha Advertising company.

Roommate: Is this where the father lives? He must be loaded.

He drove me off towards the company , the video just couldn't escaped my mind , i played like a broken record in my mind , loud bangs of countless shots escaping the gun , i closed my eyes shaking.

Roommate: Are you okay? Amara what's wrong?

Me: I can't tell you I'm sorry , i can't have you mixed up in my mess.

Roommate: What are you talking about?

Me: Don't ask please , just drive me.

The car stopped , i got off the car.

Reporter 1: Is that Amara McKenzie?

Reporter 2: It is her .

The reporters came to me shadowing me , they just buzzed at me like bees protecting their honey.



Reporter 2: Are you the biological mother of Junior Alpha as we saw you posted him earlier on?

Reporter 2 : Miss McKenzie who really is the biological mother of Alpha Smith's son is it you or Megan , we need answers!

I walked in the building as the securities stopped the reporters from coming in. I got on the elevator, I'm actually proud of Junior for not bursting out and crying when the reporters approached up , he really is his father's son , it's like he knows that life is made for him. I walked into reception.

Ipek: Amara hi.

Me: Hi can you hold Junior for me.

Ipek: ( smiles) With pleasure.

I handed him to her as i folded my tracksuit sleeves to my elbows , i walked inside his office, he looked at me and smiled.

Alpha: ( smiling )What's up ? You miss me

Me: No !

Alpha: ( chuckles) then what is this? You look at war sweetheart?

Me: Did you get my messages , my calls?

Alpha: Yeah , you already here so what's going on , what's so urgent that you almost got my attention.

Me: Are you serious? You think this is about getting your attention? I left you 15 calls with messages Alpha you didn't bother yourself to get back at me , i had to come all the way here because you think this is about getting your attention?

Alpha: You here now ain't you Amara so get to the point , Geez ! My day just gets bad and worst.

Me: Megan knows ! I'm going to be arrested for murder!

He laid back on the chair and looked at me chuckling, i just stood there and looked at him as he laughed, flashing his white teeth with a curve on his face .

Alpha: ( chuckles) That sucks.

Me: That sucks ? I'm going to jail Alpha.

Alpha: I heard you , so?

Me: So ? Are you being for real ? You got me into this mess !

Alpha: No i didn't ( smiles) funny how you just ran to me when things don't work out how you wanted them to , when you have a problem the first name your adrenaline kicks in your mind is Alpha !

Me: You created this problem! You are the problem!

He took out a gun from under his table and tossed it on the table , sliding it towards me , i looked at the black machine and

looked at him , he stared at me shrugging his shoulders.

Me: What are you doing ?

Alpha: I'm the problem? Well then take the gun and finish me off , end your problem Mamma.

To be continued.

56

MEGAN

I walked in the house and walked in . I looked around as the maids placed my bags at the door , i looked at her.

Me: What the hell is this?

Maid: It's Madam Nandi orders.

I looked at her and laughed placing my hand on my waist.

Me: Nandi is testing me.

. Nandi walked to the door dragging her slippers across the floor.

Nandi: Oh you have arrived , bye honey i think it's about time you go home your parents miss you.

Me: Did they tell you that or you just assuming they are.

Nandi : Megan sweetheart, you have overstayed your welcome in my house, you and Alpha are not together so i don't

understand why are you still forcing things cause we all know you are not loved here , just pick up your things and walk out my house with you dignity still intact, put your big girl panties on and walk out gracefully.

Me: Does Steve know you are throwing me out?

Nandi: Why should i get permission from him this is my house.

I looked at her and laughed , is she seriously adressing me in that manner.

Me: I understand old lady you haven't had your lemon tea so you not in your right senses.

Nandi: You said what ?

She raised up her hand and slapped me , i held my cheek and looked at her.

Me: Who the hell do you think you are ? Slapping me?

Nandi: Get out of my house ! Go !

Me: I am going no where!

Nandi: Yes you are ! ( calling out) Mute ! Guards! Where are these men !

Mute surfaced from inside the house with Spike.

Mute: Ma what's wrong?

Nandi: Get this girl out my house.

Mute: Did Pop's authorized this?

Nandi : I am the first lady in this house ! Alpha and i want her out ! I see she has grown wings.

Steve: What is going on here?

Nandi: I want Megan out of my house.

Steve: Why? You have never had a problem with her living here?

Nandi: Alpha doesn't want her here! His no longer interested in her, so why is she still squatting in my house doesn't she have a home ?

Steve: She does but darling these absolute no reason for you to throw her out like this ( clears his throat) Megan is like family to us now and we don't do family like this.

Nandi: I want her out ! She must go home or i am living so you stay with your family that is Megan ! I won't be disrespected by a child under my roof ! Alpha has brought us nothing but problems, If it's not Amara , it's Megan , I'm sick and tired of this rollercoaster ride of his love life.

She clicked her tougue and left the room.

Steve: Mute I'll handle this just go to the study and continue

with what we were doing.

Mute: Okay.

He tapped his shoe on the floor inserting his hand in his perfectly ironed black pants. Mute and Spike left the room.

Me: I met Drew Hughes today.

Steve: So? Listen Meg as you can see Nandi doesn't want you here so i think it's about time you leave.

Me: Really Steve? You want me to leave? Okay fine . ( raising her voice) Nandi these something i want to discuss with yo..

He grabbed my mouth closing it , his hand held my waist , a warm rush of blood ran through my viens.

Steve: Shush! I think we can come up with an agreement that won't consist of you living in my wife's house.

I placed my hand on his lips , sliding my hand vertically down his soft lips, he removed my hand from his face awkwardly looking around.

Me: I think so too.

Steve: For now , you can go live in my town house I'll text you the address.

Me: You have a town house?

Steve: Yes , it's the house i used to live in before buying these

mansion.

Me: I will go , only if you will visit me tonight.

Steve: I'll see how i can squeeze you into my tight schedule , don't make this a norm you hear me.

Me: ( flirty) I won't , if you don't show up , Nandi will be serving you with divorce papers , you know the drill baby i don't have to remind you.

Steve : I do , go.

He picked up my suitcase and walked me to my car , loading in the bags in the boot.

Me: This really must be my special day , imagine my bags being packed in the car by Steve Smith , i must be special.

He got closer to my ear and whisper in my ear biting the tip.

Steve: Get your sexy ass out of here.

I got in the car , heated up , i drove off the drive way , he stood before my car with his hand in his pocket another waving, i smiled and drove off his text beeped with the address, i drove to the townhouse.

ALPHA

I got up from the chair as she refused to pick up the gun , i took the gun and placed it in her hand ,forcefully placing her finger

in the trigger, she fought back and pushed me , slapping me crying.

Me: I said kill me !

Amara: ( crying) No , please , i don't want to be murderer again , i don't want to play these games no more , i don't need your mind , emotionally games anymore ! It's fine , I'll handle this myself.

I looked at her and laughed.

Me : I see My Princess has grown up , don't you need your beast to come rescue you anymore?

Amara: This is not a game Alpha , this is my life we talking about here? I'm going to jail , this is not one of your Arcade games , or your damn punching bag you play around with it's my damn life.

Me: You think this is a game for me too? Cause it's not ! Amara you broke my heart , you broke me , do you think after this i will be able to love any women?

Amara: This is not about you why you making this about you ? it's about me , you bastard. It's about me !

I placed the gun on the table and sat down covering my face with my hand .

Me: ( whispering) God you are a pain in the ass.



Amara: I'm a pain in the ass? Okay fine Alpha , I'll handle it by myself, go to hell.

Me: Amara calm down so we talk like adults.

Amara:( screaming) No ! You have no damn right to tell me what to do !

She approached me breathing heavy , she looked at me . I could see the rage and hate in her eyes , the love of my love hates me.

Amara: From this day and forward you are dead to me , i don't ever want to see you ever in my life Alpha Smith , i despise you.

I could breathe for a moment , my eyes building up tears as my heart shattered into thousands of pieces. I didn't know what to say next.I fixed my collar , i didn't have an expression to make , not to smile , laugh or even frown , i just looked at her emotionless.

Me: Are you done?

Amara : Is that all you going to say ? Yes I'm done then , congratulations Alpha you ruined my life , you did it oh you must be so proud of yourself ! You sucked the tiney happiness i had left in me. I will make sure you never ever see Junior ever again !

Me: You will do no such thing ! You won't use my son to fight

your battles or i swear to god i will take him away from you.

Amara: ( laughs) Thank you for showing me who you really are , it's a shame cause i tried to love you , i really tried and it's a shame no one warning about who you are , i wished i listened to Rose when she told me this place is going to break me , i wish i never accepted that PA job cause it's the reason our paths crossed.

Me: Isn't it too late for regrets now sweetheart? When you wish so bad that you never met me this means you regret Junior too cause he wouldn't have been here if our paths haven't crossed.

Amara: Thats where you wrong ! Cause i would've met a man worth loving not you sick twisted dog !

She walked to the door and opened the door , she turned and looked at me.

Me: What now?

Amara: I feel so sorry for you , I'm sorry for myself mostly for trying to love a broken man , I'm just going to get a few things off my chest and I'll be on my way , just know you not half the man you think that you are ! All this fancy life , cars and houses they won't fill you up ! I hope die alone and lonely cause no one will ever love a person like you !

She walked out my office and closed the door. I closed my eyes

tears escaped rolling down my cheeks , the door cracked open , i got up and walked to the window turning my back so she doesn't see , i am crying.

Ipek: Sir are you okay?

Me: Get out.

Ipek: Alpha i heard everything.

Me: Didn't you hear me ! I SAID GET OUT !

Ipek: I'm sorry, I'll give you a moment.

I heard the door close behind me , i closed my eyes and sunked to the ground , i sat down and buried my head in my hands crying. I cried for a long while and got up wiping my eyes. I took my car keys and laptop.

Me: Ipek I'm taking the rest of the day off , I'll see you tomorrow.

Ipek: Okay Sir.

I walked out to my car and went to a bar for a drink before heading home for the misson, i walked in the bar and sat down at the bar.

Barman: What would you like.

Me: Double malt scotch and spirit ( vodka shots)

Barman: Rough day?

He looked at me pouring my drinks.

Me: Non of your business just do what you paid for.

Barman: Okay.

He handed me my drinks as i drank down the vodka , my chest burned , i paused for a second and and drank the scotch.

Me: Keep the drinks coming.

I looked around the bar as men played pool and others vibing to the music dancing . For a second everything just stopped lip syncing, it felt like i have zoomed out from reality. " you are dead to me " i closed my eyes as a broken record of her saying those reckless words my way played in my mind. He placed the glasses of vodka, i drank from the glasses empty the table before me.

DREW

I sat down on the pavement near a coffee shop near Alpha's building holding a pack of ice against my ear. I looked across the road as Amara walked out the building holding the baby . I got up and approached her as the reporters walked to her , she was crying breaking down and they couldn't care less of her state just drilling her to answer their questions.

Amara: Can you please give me space please.

Reporter 1: Who is the real mother of Alpha's son? Are you

their surrogate?

Reporter 2 : Are you and Alpha having a Affair behind Megan's back ? Is it before or after the cancellation of their engagement?

I got in between them rescuing her , i held her waist and walked her away from them.

Reporter 1: Ain't you Drew Hughes? Do you have a relations with Amara ? What's going on ?

Me: I would like you guys to back away from the lady , can't you see she's emotionally? She doesn't need this ! Back away.

I walked her to the coffee shop as the reporters werw left behind taking pictures. I sat her down as she could barely breathe .

Me: Are you fine? Are you okay?

Amara: Thank you.

Me: It's okay , is the baby fine? Do you want water?

She nodded her head wiping her tears.

Amara: Junior is fine.

Me: That's good , should i request for you?

Amara: Please , thank you.

Me: No need to thank me.

I looked at her as she wiped her tears as droplets kept pouring out , looks like i have a heart to repair. I texted my father letting him know i was with Amara and that he should tell Cohen to not proceed with the job I'll handle Amara and Alpha's son. I placed my phone on the table as the waiter approached up.

Me: A glass of water for the lady please. You been crying , did someone break your heart? What's wrong ? You can talk to me?

Amara: I think I'll go.

She got up from the chair .

Me: What about your water? Your uber?

Amara: I'm sorry i don't want to seem rude but i don't discuss myself with strangers.

Me: But I'm not a stranger we have met before.

Amara : That still doesn't give me reason enough to tell you my troubles. I'll leave.

Me: Your uber is here , I'll walk you out.

I got my car keys and took out my wallet, i left cash notes for the waiter and we walked out. Walking to the car she didn't say a word , i opened the door for her and she got in.

Me : Be okay .

Amara: Thank you for rescuing me from the media.

Me: Anytime.

I let out a fake smile as i closed the door and they drove away . I exhaled and smiled looking at the car . He broke your heart did he? Don't worry , Daddy Drew will pick up the pieces, let's see how Alpha would like to hear when he finds out I'm his son's step dad. I need to make my moves while she's still a broken hearted girl. I walked back to my bike and got on.

MUTE

I looked at the time as it was mid night all then men were in the garage as the mini vans we were going to use were parked inside , each one carrying his gun loading bullets and getting their handy weapons such as grenades and pocket knives. We all were in our gear , i placed on my bullet proof vest and loaded bullets in my pistol , i tucked in a grenades and my knife.

Spike: Where is Alpha shouldn't he be here by now?

Steve: I tried calling him but his phone went straight to voicemail but boys , we still doing this mission without him , we there for the money bags the guns are just a bonus keep your eyes on the bags.

Spike: You heard that Soldiers!

Men: Copy.

Spike: We ready Sir.

Steve: Get in the vans we'll leave shortly.

All the men got in , i looked at Pop's as he was geared up as well with his balaclava folded on his forehead.

Me: Pop's i think I'll wait for Alpha

Alpha: That won't be necessary , where is my vest.

He walked in the garage and took off his blazer, he was heated his eyes red showing he was drunk.

Steve: Son just get inside the house and sleep you in no condition to go with us tonight.

Alpha: Do i look like i need your advice ? Do i look like i care ?

Me: Bro , Pop's is right you drunk Alpha.

Alpha: I am not drunk , i had a few drinks and I'm perfectly in shape.

He picked up his vest from the table and loaded his gun , he walked to the van and got in , Pop's looked at me.

Steve: Keep an eye on him out there.

Me: I will , be careful .

He held my hand locking it into his fist and kissed it.



Steve: We coming back, as a family ! Let's go kick some ass.

I got in the van and let down my balaclava as i looked at the boys in the van . One looked up and said a prayer, i looked at Alpha , his eyes were all out looked like they would jump out his eyes balls , he just stared at the other side looking deeply at the guy opposite him , the soldier reached out touching his knee cap.

Soldier: Are fine Soldier?

Alpha just looked at him, with his hand on trigger, i removed the soldiers hand from his knee.

Me: Yes his fine don't touch him , you will get yourself killed.

Soldier: ( swallowing hard) I'm not gay if you think that.

Me: We didn't say you were gay either get your mind in ready for the Misson Mr Gay !

The other soldiers laughed . Alpha was just quiet the whole trip he didn't say a word i kept checking my watch. After a 2 hour trip the car stopped . The door slide open.

Spike: Okay boys it's show time !

They lowered their balaclavas and got out the van , i was left with Alpha outside as the men approached the Warehouse.

Alpha: Let's go.

Me: Wait .

Alpha: What?

Me: I can see you are not okay.

Alpha: Bro , I'm fine let's go clean those bastards.

He held his gun and approached the other men , it was really dark outside, we could see the warehouse lights about a mile away from us .

Steve: We remember the Strategy, all positions and team 3 locks in , clear?

All men: Clear.

Alpha: I'm going in with team 3.

Steve: You are not going anywhere! We talked about this, you shouldn't even be here !

Alpha : I'm here right , so I'm getting in.

Soldier 1: Who the fuck is this guy?

I turned and looked at the soldier.

Mute: Hey ! Hey ! Know your lane Soldier !

I turned my head back and a shot went off , we looked at Alpha's gun was smoking signalling it let out a bullet , the soldier fell on the ground , i light up my torch and walked over

to him to check if he was still alive, i light him up and he was shot in the head, Spike looked at the dead body and lost it.

Spike: ( shouting ) What the fuck! I didn't organize men to come and get killed out here.

Alpha: lower your tone when you talking to me or you next ! Is there any of your monkey ass who wants to ask me a question?

He looked around as the men back away from him.

Alpha: I guess not , we got 90 seconds to do this shit top to bottom , we go in there get my money and get the fuck out. Let's go get my money.

He lead the way as we lauched in towards the warehouse. Pop's was behind me and Spike on his hip , They took out a pliers and cut the fence and we sneaked in , an owl on the pole kept WOOH along as we walked in , we kneeled down as we were a foot closer to the Warehouse . The first team set out their snipers and laid them on the bumped up ground twisting in silencers on the tip of the snipers, they laid down on their stomach ready to shoot.

Steve: Snipers?

Snipers: On position.

Steve: Take them down.

Shots were released from the snipers as the guards fell to the ground , the second team walked over dragging the bodies aside Spike was in the second team he was going to go give us a signal , they stand in position as he walked in the warehouse.

Alpha : So what's next?

Steve: Wait for the signal.

Alpha: what signal?

Spike walked out and lifted up his hand as i counted the number of fingers he placed up.

Me: The are 40 inside

Alpha: How do you know that?

Steve: That's the signal , let's move.

We walked towards the door and stopped outside the door . Click click the gun went as he set the bullets in their chambers , we looked back at Alpha.

Alpha: Geez , Are going to do this shit or not?

Steve: Patience Alpha !

Alpha: Let's go inside there and take our shit and get out.

Steve : Boy you better shut your mouth or you going back to the van.

He rolled his eyes as Spike gave us the signal to go in , Alpha walked over the door and kicked it down as we launched in inside unexpected for Alpha grand entrance we had to act on pulse, we pointed the guns at them.

Alpha: Alright motherfuckers you out numbered drop those guns and kiss the floor ( they place guns down and got down laying on the floor) You ( points at one of the gaurds ) Don't you even think about it !

Leader: Do everything they tell you to do !

We looked at him as he boldly said he must be the one in charge i expected Cohen to be here , I'm very disappointed in him.

Me: What an entrance bro.

Alpha: You and your dad were wasting my time .

Me: ( chuckles) Let's get your money.

Alpha: Okay boys ! we will need your complete and undivided attention. You know what we want and what we here for right?give what belongs to Caesar to Caesar babies if you all still want to live ofcause , if not , try me ! It will be a murder spree.

Leader: What do you want ?

Alpha: And who are you?

Leader: I'm in charge here ! Tell me what you want and get out of here.

Alpha: We want everything supervisor , superintendent, CEO , whatever you call yourself!

Leader: Do you know whose Warehouse you in?

Alpha: I wouldn't be here if i didn't know !

I looked at guy as he held his hip.

Mute: Bad move.

Alpha gunned him down till the gun jammed he took out the bullet cast and tossed it on the floor loading another , the man laid in his blood bath , all the inside men looked at him like he was crazy , fear would build in me tok after witnessing the death of my leader . I looked at the men as they held their guns closer to their hands with their fingers on the trigger , they laid on the floor with their heads down . Pop's walked up the stairs and walked to the office upstairs Spike followed him up covering him , the men in this warehouse looked like armatures , they were shaking each one just cooperating just so he gets back home. They let us take everything. The 3rd team walked in and packed up the guns into bags , money and drugs. The Hughes were always into drugs this came as a surprised , we took about a bag filled with kilos of Coke. The soldiers transported the bags outside, Alpha and Pop's walked out with

the 7 bags of cash . We walked out the Warehouse.

Alpha: We can't just let them live.

Me: No ! Don't you even think about it.

Spike: Shoot everything! Just leave one so he delivers the message.

We walked to the vans that were parked in front of the warehouse loading in the bags . Shots were released inside the cabin countless, the noise went on for 5 minutes straight , the soldiers walked out and throwing grenades inside the house , explosions went off , the building was on fire. They got in the car each leaving foot prints of blood on the floor, it must be a blood bath inside. We got into the vans and drove off , they didn't kill one guy , his going to be the messenger. They dropped us off at the house with the bags the security helped us with the bags , we took off the clothes and boots dropping them inside the van.

Steve: Spike you know what to do with the vans.

Spike: I'm going to burn them

Steve : Make sure nothing points to us , we'll discuss the payments to the soldiers tomorrow for now go get some peaceful sleep boys. Mission accomplished.

Spike: You can count on us.

He drove off with his men. We walked in the house.

Alpha : I need a shower.

Steve: You deserve a whole spar day son , I'm proud of both you boys.

He held us by our necks and placed our heads on his torso kissing our heads.

Steve: My boys ( chuckles) good job.

Me: I'll get Carlos money transported tomorrow morning.

Steve: You know the drill

Alpha walked to his room , Pop's followed him off. I switched on my phone and called Abbygail it was past 1am and i doubted she would still be up , i just called just so she thinks i tried making contract .

NANDI

I woke up and sat up on the bed. Steve walked in the room.

Me: Where were you ?

Steve: Out playing with the boys

Me: You were at Thabo's Warehouse weren't you?

Steve: Looks like you know me better than myself.

Me: We spent a years together Steve.



Steve: I'm sorry for everything , I'm sorry for locking you in the mental asylum my love .

Me: I'm glad you and the boys are back alive.

Steve: Well it was a easy job, it felt like taking candy from a child .

Me: I just hope this won't come back to bite us.

Steve: Not in a million years will Thabo ever touch me .

Me: You keep underestimating Thabo , his powerful too Steve, got resources and all.

Steve: We took all his resources for now his disable. I'll go take a shower and go to bed.

Me: Okay.

He walked inside the bathroom , i laid down and covered my body with the sheet. I was happy he is back alive after all that's all that matters , we might be at a rocky place right now but Steve is my husband as much as i hate to say , i love him and i will always be his wife as he is my husband.

THABO

I hugged my wife as we were still asleep cuddling myself against her , a hard knock against the door woke us up . She got up and looked at me.

Me: Who is it !

Cohen: I'm sorry boss for waking you up but we got a huge problem.

Me: What problem Cohen! Can't that wait till the sun rises ? I'm still asleep with my wife.

Cohen: This can't wait .

Me: ( shouting ) I said it must wait I'm sleeping! Go away.

Thandeka: You should hear him out Thabo , it really sounds serious.

Me: I will get to him when i wake up.

Cohen: The Warehouse got attacked last night, talking to you it's not fire.

Me: What !

We got up from the bed and wore our gowns , we walked out the room to the seating area , Drew was awake so was Abbygail. Drew had his head in his hand looking down as he sat on the edge of the couch.

Thandeka: Oh my god are the workers okay.

Cohen: no survives

Thandeka: Oh my word what kind of people are the Smith's cause i know damn well this is their work.

I sat down on the chair , i was just quiet , i felt defeated

Drew: What about the stash and the guns.

Cohen: The warehouse was burning for hours Drew i don't know if the guns are inside burnt or they took them.

Me: How can you be this careless Cohen ! Keeping the guns and stash safe is your job !

Cohen: I know and i apologize.

Me: You apologize?

I got up from the chair and approached him, Drew got up from the chair and stopped me.

Drew: Easy Father he didn't know.

Me: He should've known ! Now how will we get out of this mess , How ? Stupid fool. It's his job to protect my money! I pay you for that ! All my shipment is in ashes because of your sloppy work ! Because of your negligence.

Drew: We shouldn't be fighting , we should be heading out to the warehouse to see the amount of damage.

Me: Shut up Drew ! Shut up ! ( imitating his voice) " we shouldn't be fighting, we should go check the damage" Shut up ! Jesus I'm surrounded by fool don't you hear the warehouse burnt for hours ! Don't be a fool.

I looked at Cohen pointing my finger at him.

Me: You are going to fix this mess , how ? I didn't know but you will fix this mess Cohen!

As i was about to walked out the room the landline phone ringed, we looked at each other as silence pierced in the room , i picked up the phone and placed it on my ear looking at Cohen.

Drew : I'll answer it.

Thandeka: No don't! What if it's a bomb or something , don't answer it.

She quickly walked to the landline and disconnected the wires , i left the room and walked to the bedroom slamming the door behind me. I sat on the edge of the bed boiling in anger, i took off the grown and tossed it on the ground, my blood pressure was rising , suddenly the room just heated up rapidly , my heart beating like a drum , i held on my heart as i was having a panic attack, i couldn't breathe.

57

LOGAN

I woke up and had my morning routine ordered breakfast and did my make up and hair . I wanted to go out today , just get some air and not weep around the room feeling sorry for myself. A knock came through as i got up to open the door

Alpha was standing on my door step , i didn't know how to react towards him , hug him for that he came or slap him for not coming to see me all this while , i looked at him as he was dressed casually came as a surprise but he looked rather cute in this wear , a black shirt with ripped jeans and white pair of nike tekkies.

Alpha: Logan.

Me: Hey , please come in.

Alpha: Thank you.

He walked in and sat down on the chair. I sat down besides him and looked at him , he was down not himself , in a very dull mood.

Me: Are you okay?

Alpha: I should be asking you that , are you okay?

Me: I'm surviving.

Alpha: Logan I'm sorry for getting you kicked out by your father i know that must've been hard for you.

Me: It actually was hard but i got passed that now , i was going out today felt like it's time i stop crying in due time everything is going to be okay.

Alpha: That's the spirit , i just came to check up on you and go

back to my house and work.

Me: We could go out for drinks?

Alpha: I have way too much work to conclude , i can't go out for drinks.

Me: Okay how about i get dressed in something cosy and we just go together to your house and you work , i won't make any noises.

Alpha: No.

Me: Come on Alpha please I'm lonely.

Alpha: ( laughs) i have been alone most of my life just a night alone and you lonely come on Logan stop being a baby.

Me: You are so mean.

Alpha: I'm realistic not mean .

He got up as i walked him to the door , We shared a hug as i tip toed holding his broad shoulders , he backed away from me and walked away , i step outside watching him stand waiting for the elevator. I walked inside and closed the door , i took my phone and called Abbygail.

Me: Hey Sis are you free for sister lunch date?

Abbygail: Not now Logan the I'm at the hospital

Me: What's wrong? Who is at the hospital?

Abbygail: Daddy.

Me: Oh no ! Is it because of me and Alpha?

Abby : No , not everything is about you Logan

Me: Sorry , i was just asking so what's wrong?

Abby : Daddy's Warehouse has been set alight Logan .

Me: I'm coming to the hospital please send me your location.

Abby: No don't come, I'll keep you updated on him .

Me: I can't sit here while my father is in hospital Abbygail.

Abby: He had a minor panic attack his fine plus the doctor said we shouldn't stress him out , you being here will just make his condition worse.

Me: Okay please keep me updated.

Abby : I will , i have to go.

Me: Okay.

I placed the phone on the bed . A panic attack?but father had never had heart problems before this Warehouse thing might have stressed him out . I wish i was besides my family right now , Ma must be going through the most. I can't be gallavating the streets while my family is in the hospital, i will stay right here and wait for Abbygail's calls , i lifted my feet up from the floor and sat on the bed.

STEVE

I woke up from bed and looked around , Megan wasn't besides me , i looked at the time it was about 9 am , i got up and picked up my boxers walking to the kitchen. She was wearing my shirt making breakfast.

Megan: Morning sleepy head.

Me: I overslept , why didn't you wake me up?

Megan: You were sleeping so peacefully Stevie i didn't want to wake your grumpy self up.

Me: I have became Stevie to you now?

Megan: See when i say you a grumpy man , you already acting up just because i called you Stevie. You like you eggs cooked or half cooked?

Me: Just a coffee , don't add sugar.

Megan: So you don't want to eat? You not hungry?

Me: I'll eat at home.

Megan : Oh i see.

She made me the cup of coffee as i looked around the house, this house has so many memories of me and my wife , Alpha was born in this house spent his childhood running around this very same kitchen , it was like i was reliving that memory over



again , could hear his soft voice calling out to me "daddy daddy come play with me" as i replied harshly "I'm working , go play with your toys or something and keep your voice down " i could see him drag his blue teddy bear on the floor as he approached his room with his shoulder pushed forward as a sign of disappointment.

Megan: Earth to Steve!

I looked at her as i zoomed back to reality.

Megan: Are you okay?

Me: Yes I'm fine , just that this house holds so memories.

Megan: Oh so tell me where were you cause you left me all alone for a moment.

Me: somewhere i wish i had done things differently, maybe if i played soccer with my son , laid down on the mat as we drove his mini cars and watch him smile. I should leave.

Megan: No please , stay tell me more.

Me: About what?

Megan: About your regrets maybe one day you will have a child Steve and you will make right all the mistakes you made with Alpha.

Me: ( laughs) Are you trying to be funny or what? Nandi is way

past the bearing children age.

Megan: I am not talking about Nandi.

She placed her mug on the counter and walked to me , she held my hand and placed it on her tummy.

Me: Are you pregnant?

Megan: No I'm not , it's a sign that , i can carry a child for you Steve, I'm willing to be the mother of your child.

Me: ( chuckles) Is this a joke or what?

Megan: Am i laughing?

I looked at her , she was really serious about carrying my child , i removed my hand from her tummy and got up the chair , i need to get away from this madness.

Me: I have to leave.

Megan: I know you running away from me Steve and I'm seriously about this, about us ! I said this before and I'm going to say it again make me your wife .

I wore my pants and shoes took my wallet and cellphone.

Me: Can i have my shirt?

Megan: I want us to be together Steve.

Me: No , that won't happen cause i wouldn't dare hurt my wife

like that . Nandi is a big part of me , big part of my life , i can't do her like that !

She took off my shirt and handed it to me , i buttoned it up.

Megan: I really don't understand you sometimes, it's fine for you to sleep with me and force me into sleeping with your son for your selfish benefits but you don't want to do right by me Steve!

Me : What is happening between us is an agreement between two adults! I'm not forcing you to open your legs for me you do that willing, marriage and babies were never part of the agreement Megan if our little get together is becoming twisted for you then it's best we call it quits.

I walked out the apartment to my car and drove off.

DREW

Dad had a panic attack and we had to rush him in the hospital, watching him lose breaths like that was scary, he just hung on his chest gasping for air. Thandeka couldn't stop crying , couldn't blame her , it was a disturbing thing to see. She was sitting on his bedside holding his hand. Father was better , he looked like himself again but the doctor insisted on keeping him over. Cohen will guard him just incase the Smith's try anything.

Thabo:Abby , Thandeka please leave the room, i want to talk to

Drew in private.

Thandeka: Okay, please don't you ever scare me like that Thabo . Are you sure you going to be okay?

Thabo: I am going nowhere that panic attack is just minor issues to me , i will not be defeated by panic attacks nor the Smith's.

Thandeka: You shouldn't be worrying yourself didn't you hear the Doctor.

Thabo: Woman just get out ! Why don't you listen to me !

Thandeka: Okay I'm leaving.

She and Abby walked out the room leaving only he and i . I sat down besides his bed as he had drips in his arms.

Thabo: You see what has happened Drew? The Smith's are attacking us now and they hitting us where it matters the most , they attacking my business , if you just let Cohen go and adapt that baby they wouldn't have had the chance to even go to the warehouse.

Me: Father i know but our victory will be sweeter , we will have Alpha son and his lover.

Thabo: What is sweet in stealing someone's woman?

Me: You don't understand, Amara is not just a woman , she is

Alpha's love, a woman he could die for . Know what hurts a man more than anything? Is watching his enemy get closer to that one thing it loves wholeheartedly. Amara is Alpha's weakness, even if he doesn't admit it but he loves that woman.

Thabo: That is a very dangerous game My boy , you don't go near a man's territory and expect him to lay down and watch you take over his family , he will surely kill you. You will be provoking him.

Me: That's what i want , i want him to feel the pain he put you through for sleeping with my baby sister ! I want to cry , even worse i want him to hit rock bottom and even commit suicide the world will be a better place without him anyway.

Thabo: So how are you going to impress this woman , if she's Alpha's woman she should be a tough nut.

Me: ( laughs) That's the surprising part , she's vulnerable, easy to manipulate and use in other words she's as soft as cotton.

Thabo: Then get on fast , in the meantime i will try and contact the Germany's and let them know about the unfortunate events of their guns. I have to spin this wheel pretty quick before my boat crashes , i can't let this be my downfall I'm bigger than this.

Me: I know but at the same time don't stress yourself, you still have to recover fully.

Thabo: I am perfectly fine , i don't even know why they keeping me in this hell whole.

Me: ( laughs ) Just take your medication and eat your meals and you will be out of here , i need to go okay , but I'll make sure i come stop by.

Thabo: Okay son.

I walked out the room and closed the door. Cohen got up from the chair and approached me.

Me: Stay woke , I'm trusting you with my dad .

Cohen : you know i care about that old man i won't let anything happen to him.

Me: Stay close to him , i will be back later on.

Cohen: Okay , I'm sorry for about the warehouse buddy.

Me: Don't worry about it , i will handle the warehouse and also the shipments for now focus on my dad and don't bring up the warehouse to him , don't stress him out.

Cohen: You have absolute nothing to worry about.

I walked out to the exit meeting Thandeka , Abbygail wasn't with her.

Me: Where is Abbygail?

Thandeka: Her anonymous boyfriend came to pick her up.

Me: Oh , i have to meet this man.

Thandeka : I'm counting on meeting him myself. Let me go see my husband.

I walked out the hospital and got in my car , i decided not to ride my bike today , i passed by a flower shop and stopped , i bought a bouquet of daises and a box of chocolates and drove to Amara's flat.

AMARA

I cleaned the house and washed the dishes , Junior was in his car seat placed on the couch as i played cartoons for him so he doesn't cry , his been moody today. I heard a knock on the door , i dried my hands and walked to the door. I opened up and a bunch of daises were flashed in my face for a moment i thought they were from Alpha as the man holding them covered his face.

Drew: Surpise.

I looked at him unsure what he was doing on my door step , i faked a smile just to not seem rude.

Me: Drew hi.

Drew: I know you must be wondering what am i doing here with a bouquet of flowers and a box of chocolates but i thought i should come check on you seeing you yesterday in that state i

just couldn't sleep.

I looked at him didn't understand why would he care so much for a woman he doesn't even know, what is Drew up to? I hope his not attracted to me cause i have had enough of men who are into black, he just looks like the type of men in Alpha's category .

Me: Thank you for the flowers and chocolate even though they weren't necessary.

Drew: They actually are , when a woman is going through emotions chocolate is the better cure to heal a broken heart ofcause. Ain't you going to invite me in?

Me: Yes sorry for being rude please come in.

He walked in as i closed the door behind him sniffing the daisies they smelt good , i placed the chocolate on the table. He walked over to Junior and looked at him .

Drew: Hey there young man , may i carry him?

Me: Uhm yes , okay.

He picked him up and kissed his cheek.

Drew: Isn't he going to grow into a handsome young man , he lookes just like you , the brown eyes and beauty.

Me: ( smiling ) You surely have noticed a lot .



Drew : I am a man with a good taste in women i could spot a beautiful women from a mile.

Me: oh i see is that how you spotted Abbygail.

He looked at me and chuckled.

Drew : I have a confession , i will confess.

Me: To what now?

Drew: Abbygail is my sister , i just wanted to see you that day.

Me: See me for what?

Drew : I have been spotting you Amara and i can say I'm a huge fan of your content online.

Me: You are ? So you like my stalker?

Drew: Stalker makes me sound like a dangerous man , I'm just a admirer.

I picked up Junior's teddy bears from the floor trying to process all i have heard , did i just let in a weird in my house? How couldn't i have noticed how he suddenly showed up yesterday when i was being attacked by the press.

Me: Uhm Drew i don't want to sound rude or anything but it's time for Junior's nap so I'd like that you leave, Please.

He handed Junior to me and walked towards the door , he turned and looke at me.

Drew: This is exactly what i was afraid of , rejection , I'm sorry if i made you uncomfortable in your own house , i thought you were different. Being able to talk to you meant so much to me , not that I'm looking for your pity or sympathy but i just thought getting to know you in a more personal level would do both me and you good not as lovers but friends.

He looked so sad , i felt guilty for throwing him out after he has done nothing but been there for me yesterday. He opened up the door.

Me: Drew , you can stay for coffee or tea.

Drew: ( smiling) What about Junior's nap?

Me: Junior will have his nap but then when his asleep i will be bored.

Drew: Then I'll be glad to keep you company.

He walked in and closed the door. He sat down as i made him a cup of coffee.

Me: Sugar or no sugar?

Drew: 2 spoons .

Me: I expected you'd say no sugar ( laughs) silly me.

Drew: Why is that? Mean who drinks coffee without sugar.

Me: Junior's dad.

Drew: Oh , Alpha Smith not surprised.

Me: Why ? You know him?

Drew: No personally but from a distance yes , his a very powerful man , his living every man's dream.

Me: ( laughs) If only they know.

I handed him the cup of coffee and sat down as Junior sucked on his milk bottle.

Drew: You and Alpha seem to be in a rocky relationship.

Me: I think it's best we don't talk about Alpha , his just not worth talking about believe me. Tell me about you what are you doing with your life who are you?

Drew: I'm Drew Hughes, I'm one of the children that were born with a golden spoon in their mouth, i have a company abroad but now I just came back home to be with my family.

Me: abroad?

Drew: In London.

I looked at him , this man must be filthy rich. But i still didn't understand why would a man like Drew be interested in me. What is wrong with me and crossing paths with rich man. We talked for a while as he told me stories of his childhood , we laughed had like two more cups of coffee , Junior was sleep

having his afternoon nap already.

Me: I'll go lay him down.

Drew: Sure go ahead.

I walked to the room and laid him on the bed covering him . I walked back to the seating room , Drew had moved from the couch he was sitting in i sat besides him . He stretched out his arm and laid it on the couch.

Drew: So are you not a chocolate type of person.

Me: You want to eat the chocolates you brought for me now?

Drew: Are you really going to eat all those 24 chocolates alone?  
Come on let's have chocolate.

I took the box and opened it up. He took a piece as i took one too, both chewing , the cocoa melting on my tougue.

Me: they so good.

Drew: Taste this one.

Me: I..i..I'm not...

He took a piece and stuffed it in my mouth. He looked at me as i chewed.

Drew: Is it good?

Me: ( nodding) Yeah it's a sweet piece.

Drew : Looks like I'll be sending you chocolates everyday.

Me : That won't be necessary .

Drew: Can't believe Alpha is letting you stay here all alone with a baby , if i was your man , I'd make sure you always by my side , I'd hold you hand and we'd take walks , going out for dates , travelling the world , just keep you happy . If i had your heart , i wouldn't do anything to hurt you not even letting anyone come in between us , not let those beautiful eyes cry , just me giving you my all.

Awkward quietness scooped in between us. I placed the box of chocolates on the table , i sat up on the couch and looked at him , he leaned against me and kissed me , i soothed his lips too kissing back he held my waist pulling me closer to him holding his cheeks as we kissed insanely passionately. I pushed him off me and got up from the couch.

Drew: I'm sorry i shouldn't have kissed you , it's my fault.

Me : ( stuttering) I'm sorry too...i shouldn't have let us go that far.

Drew: I will just go.

He got up from the couch and walked past me leaving his cologne behind as it filled my nostrils.

Me: I'll just close the door behind you.

He walked out the door and looked at me.

Drew: Don't act all weird we did nothing wrong it was just heat of a moment it's understandable.

Me: I'm grown enough to know that.

Drew: I hope we won't be weird after that kiss , here's my card , these my number at the bottom if you want to meet up for drinks or lunch or need anything, I'm here for you.

Me: thank you I'll keep that in mind.

Drew: Bye.

Me: Bye Drew.

He walked away from the door looking back at me he smiled , i walked inside and closed the door , i leaned against the door and held my chest that was rising and dropping rapidly as i catch a breath.

MUTE

We drove around as she told me everything about the burnt Warehouse and her father's panic attack little did she know i didn't even give a damn . I parked the car and looked at her.

Me: Abby i have something to tell you.

Abby: Sounds serious are you okay?

Me: It is serious.

Abby: Okay what's going on Marcus?

Me: Firstly i am not Marcus secondly i think it's best you and i never see each other again.

Abby: ( confused) Uhm.. i don't understand Marcus, what's wrong with you please talk to me.

Me: I'm breaking up with you lady.

Abby: Okay but i don't understand why? What did i do?

Me: It's not you Abbygail it's me.

Abby: What about you i need an explanation.

Me: I don't owe you one.

Abby: ( sobbing )No ! You do Marcus! You can't just break up with me after sleeping with me ! Please what did i do?

Me: You did nothing Abbygail, I am not the man you should associate yourself with, I'm bad for you young lady.

Me: What are you talking about? No you are not going to suddenly drop me not without a real explanation why you ending things between us !

Me: Okay fine then I'm Mute i work for Steve Smith and you were just part of a plan , you and i weren't anything genuine sweetheart. I'm not a man you can claim.

Her jaw dropped she just looked at me , tears streaming down

her cheeks. I looked at her , right into her eyes funny cause i didn't even feel sorry for her or feel the slightest of guilty .

Abby: ( crying) But why? Why did you do this me ? Why are you hurting me Marcus. Please don't do this to me , don't. I love you.

Me: Which part of you were part of a plan that you don't understand? The mission has been concluded so you no longer of use to me nor my family , get off my car.

Abby: No ! I am not going anymore ! You bastard!

She slapped me flapping her hands against me throwing countless slaps my way , i held her wrist together.

Abby: Don't you dare touch me with your lying and flirty hands !

Me: I wouldn't have touched you if you stop acting like a mad woman and just left my car like a grown woman.

Abby: Who the hell do you think you are Marcus or Mute whoever you are ! Who the hell do you think you are ! You think you can just play me and sleep with me and just go unpunished!

Me: ( chuckles) What are you going to do? Flap your hands at me and slap me , throw tantrums? Geez come on Abby just go.

Abby: I trusted you , i trusted you with my body , i thought we



had something.

Me : You thought wrong Abbygail.

Abby: Go to hell, you son of a bitch !

She opened up the door and got out , she slammed my door , in pulse my body jumped that's how loud the bang was.

Me: If you break my door ! I'll break your legs !

Abby: You will rot in hell!

She took off her shoes and tossed it against my car .

Me: This girl is a psychopath.

Abby: I hate you !

Me: Jesus.

I looked at the review mirror she was sitting down on the road 5 feet from the car , i climbed off the car , i could hear her sobbing. I walked towards and and kneeled down before her.

Abby: (sobbing) Just go away , Mute .

Me: I'm sorry.

Abby: You sorry? You being sorry won't take the reckless words you said to me ! It won't unbreak my heart ! You said i was part of a plan while i thought we had feelings for each other, i thought you loved me Marcus.

Me: So are you just going to seat here?

Abby: What do you want me to do ? Just go Marcus.

Me: I won't leave you here , let me drivw you home.

Abby : Why Is that part of the plan too?

I picked her up from the road , God she was heavy , she didn't fight me off. Just enjoying to be in my arms. I placed her on her feet and opened the door for her.

Me: Get in , I'll take you home.

She got into the car, i picked up her scattered shoes on the ground and her purse . I got in and drove her home. She didn't say a word in the car nor look at me as i stole glances of her , she kept sniffing and wiping her tears.

Abby: Take me to 5 Roses hotel.

Me: To Logan ?

Abby : Non of your business since you decided to play me , i don't ever want to see you again Marcus do you hear me !

I looked at her and smiled , i parked the car in front door of the hotel as she got out.

Me: No break up kiss?

Abby : Go to hell you sick twisted dog!

She closed the door and stormed into the hotel , i looked at her and laughed driving off , break up drama , she almost wrecked my car.

58

ABBYGAIL

I walked up the stairs couldn't even stand straight, i was just warned out , discouraged and just heartbroken. Honestly how could he ? How could he do this to me. I thought we had something good going on , i felt like he is the one . His was going to be my man , we were going to have a good time together why did he have to do this , he should've not said all those reckless words to me , he should've just kept quiet and just be in a relationship with me till he falls inlove with me , was his loyalty to the Smith's way important than what we shared? I walked up to Logan's room and knocked. She opened up the door , i walked in and sat on the chair.

Me: Order two bottles of champagne.

Logan: why? What's wrong? Is dad fine?

Me: Just order the alcohol please.

She walked to the phone and ordered, i sat down om the couch sobbing. I expected more from Mute than this , i can't believe that Mute is not even his name , it was all a lie , his a lie.

Logan: Abby what's going on?

Me: I got played Logan , they played me like a guitar.

Logan: What are you talking about?

Me: Alpha and his goon , they played both of us.

Logan: Alpha ? What has Alpha got to do with anything be clear please , tell me what is going on with you.

The room services brought the wine bottles and glasses, i opened up the bottle and drank from it gulping the champagne down my throat .

Me: I am so hurt Logan.

Logan: Tell me what's going on?

Me: I met this guy Logan and he was just perfect, we were seeing each other , he broke up with me Logan , he said i was just part of a plan.

Logan: What an Asshole , who is he ? He must be disgusting to even call himself a man for what he did to you.

Me: I don't mind him breaking up with me , the worst thing about this I confessed to him , i told him i wanted us to be a couple we had sex Logan.

Logan: So what ! You had sex so what , his gone so dust your shoulder off and keep it moving.

Me: (sobbing) I wanted him to be my boyfriend.

Logan : Come on now dry your eyes , you don't need this Mute guy , you are amazing Abbygail, any man that ends up with you will be the luckiest man alive.

Me: They won't be like him though.

I drank from the bottle and laid my head on her chest she brushed my weave and wiped my tears.

Logan: Stop crying for that dog , he doesn't deserve your precious tears , it's his loss not yours . He doesn't love you that's clear so don't weep over him , he must be as good as dead to you. Don't give him the satisfaction that he broke you heart . Know what will be great right now?

Me : What?

Logan: We dress up and go out partying?

Me: Are you being for real? Dad is at the hospital and you want us to go out partying?

Logan: We won't stay for long , come on sister , two sister painting the town blue and having fun. We won't call it parting then let's call it therapy.

Me: Then what am i going to wear?

Logan: Don't worry about that i think i have a dress that will suit

you every well.

Me: I really don't know about this Logan.

She got up and took out dresses from her wardrobe , i looked at her as she organized a outfit for me , i kept drinking from the Champagne bottle.

Logan: What do you think of this dress.?

Me: Oh no it's too revealing Logan.

Logan: Stop being a granny for once and just live geez , get up and go have a quick shower and wear this dress with those heels we are going to party.

I got up and placed the bottle in my armpit walking into the bathroom , i really didn't want to go out "parting" i figured we would stay in watch a sad bromance movie cry and have wine and snacks while we sniff out a box of tissue. But maybe going out is what i need , i had a quick shower and lotioned my body , Logan did my make up , we got dressed as she handed me a sling bag . She really was about looking beautiful and glamour , in a slick shiny gold dress with gold shadow and nude lip stick i felt so sexy , i wished Marcus could see me right now he will drool over me . I wasn't advance in this glam life too much but the is a first try for everything right?

THABO

The doctor walked in the room and checked my vitals and blood pressure , he checked my heart beat and pressed on my chest.

Jaden: Do you feel any pains here?

Me: No

Jaden: That's good.

Me: You see Doc i am fine and i think you should discharge me and give the bed to someone that's really sick.

Jaden: Very smart Mr Hughes but you are staying the night you will be discharge tomorrow morning.

Thandeka: Honey you need to listen to the doctors, they know best.

Me: And i don't?.

Thandeka: You are not a doctor Thabo.

Me: Fine i will stay the night here even though it's not necessary cause i feel just fine.

Jaden: Enjoy your stay .

He walked out the room , i laid my head on the pillow and looked up , i can't believe i almost had died , Steve has played his part so well , it lended me in a hosiptal bed, he must be really proud of himself probably celebrity my downfall , sipping

whisky with his little dogs laughing at me. The Germany's weren't really happy about me telling them they won't be getting their guns in time . They were angry but because of the relationship we share they managed to agree to wait till i could organize another cargo. I don't know but I'm planing to do a police station heist , I'm going to organize man that will collect guns from the police station it's risky but it's worth a try right now i have no plan but to spread my options even if they risky. I need to get 20 guns before the end of this week and have them transported. I had a split headache , i will try and get passed it without reporting it to the doctor , that lad could surely keep me in if i complain about any sore part all i want is to get out of here.

GRACE

I cleaned the house and cooked dinner for Jaden and i , i placed the pots in the warmer and wrote a message and placed it in the fridge. I took my bag and walked out to uber that was waiting for me outside. The car drove to the building were Amara is living in i couldn't just let things stay unsaid and watch her slip away from my arms , i had to reach out. I walked out the car and walked inside the building. I walked through the hallway , i didn't even know where her room was in, i asked a young lady and she walked me to the door.

Young lady: She lives here.



Me: Thank you my baby.

She walked away , i looked at the door and knocked .Amara opened the door , i looked at her as she showed not pleased to see me.

Me: Amara.

Amara: What are you doing here?

Me: That is not you sweetheart.

Amara : atleast you know who i really am cause i don't.

She left the door opened as i walked in and closed it , i looked around the house and i can say they really did good for themselves, the flat was warm and clean , it felt like home , i could feel Rose's spirit in the house.

Me: How have you been?

Amara: I'm good as you see I'm back home , have a seat.

I sat down and placed my bag on the floor.

Me: Are you not going to make your grandma some tea?

Amara: ( smiles) I will Ma.

Me: Junior looks amazing.

Amara: He has been grumpy the whole day today , i was even meaning to go collect my clothes from Alpha's house today and

Junior's too.

Me: You are no longer going back ?

Amara : No , me and that man are officially done, Alpha has brought me nothing but pain. I just couldn't take it no more.

Me: That's understandable and i support you in this decision if parting from him is what is good for you then i stand by you.

Amara: It is good for me , i just want to be the best mom to Junior before i go to jail.

I looked at her as she made the tea pouring sugar.

Me: Going to jail ? What will you be doing in jail.

She placed the mug on the coffee table and sat down besides me.

Amara : I don't know how to say this.

Me: No say it , cause i am not willing to lose you to jail, i just found you sweetheart.

Amara : by the looks of things i am going to jail Ma .

Me: Don't you say that Amara you are going nowhere.

Amara: I killed someone Ma , i gunned a man down.

I looked at her shocked, i couldn't believe my ears , no i found it difficult to believe that Amara could shoot someone, Amara

could barely hurt a fly.

Me: This must be a joke , it got to be a joke.

Amara: I'm not joking Ma and Megan knows and she is threatening me about this mistake , i went to Alpha to cry for help but that was the worst mistake of my life , he just made this whole thing about him.

Me: So what are you planning to do ? Junior still needs his mom you can't go to jail , have you tried reaching out to Megan.

Amara: And do what beg her?

Me: Maybe that will help.

Amara: Oh hell no , i am not going to beg another woman , if she wants to go to the police then fine , i will just go to jail and have my sentencing maybe that would help me be at peace with what i did.

Me: Now you are just being selfish what about your little boy.

Amara: You are his great grand mother right ? You will raise him for me.

Me: No !

Amara: Please just promise me you won't let my baby boy be raised by Alpha and his family.

Me: You are not going anywhere, you are going to raise Junior!

I refuse to promise you anything because i know you are not going anywhere as for Megan we will handle her together , maybe there is something we could offer her to back away.

Amara: Megan doesn't need anything she has everything.

Me: That's where you're wrong even the wealthiest people have something they would kill for.

Amara : I wish that was true.

Me : Don't you worry yourself sweetheart everything is going to be okay.

Amara : I should go get ready to go and collect my stuff will you stay with Junior till i come back , i won't be long.

Me: Absolutely i would be honoured .

We had our cups of coffee as i told her stories of Rose's upbringing on how much she was sweet and naughty at the same time , we shared a few cups laughing and smiling , as smiles turned to tears when she told me Rose was killed right here in this flat in her room. I got up and approached the room where my daughter took her last breath in. It was clean with the bed made and Rose's portrait hanging on top of the bed. She was so beautiful , so warm hearted her smile on the picture shouted joy and happiness . How i will forever beat myself up for what i did to my baby girl. It's hard to forgive yourself when you know as a parent you could've prevented all this, i could've

stopped Rose from running away and i could've helped raise Amara with her as her mother . She probably felt alone a child having a child , i sighed as i closed the door of the room , Amara walked out her room wearing a dress , she had tied her hair .

Me : You are looking beautiful to just be collecting clothes.

Amara: Don't play with me Ma , this is just a old dress .

Me: If you say so .

Amara: Oh my god I'm so embarrassed , I'm not dressed up plus Alpha lives with his parents I'll be alone in his house.

Me: Okay go and come back soon then.

She kissed Junior and took her purse and phone.

Amara: i will be back soon.

She walked out the door , i picked up Junior and kissed him.

Me: Hey there big guy , it's me grandma Grace , Mommy will be back in a couple of seconds how about we cook in the meantime , does that sound good? Yes it does my little prince charming.

I took a towel and placed him on my back , while i took a look at the fridge and cupboards there was really nothing much but I'll make exceptions and cook what is in the house. Amara really

needs to do some shopping for nutritious food.

ALPHA

I was in a lunch meeting with a client and Ipek having to do these lunch meetings was really not in a league , a Skype would've been a good idea. We ordered as passing out the ad plan to her. The waiter approached the table with the orders. Ipek was having a juicy steak and salad while i just had a cup of coffee, haven't had a appetite since Amara broke up with me.

Client: This is really good not what i wanted but I'll settle for it.

Me: Not what you wanted? Then what did you want cause I'm sure i will personally handle your account if you sign up with my company.

Client: Not to sound judgemental or anything but this advert is just like the others, the isn't the Wow fact, i want something that people will tune in to , to the extent that they will push each other to actually come buy my product.

Me: I see , so what did you have in mind?

Client: I figured you organize a group of women , darkskinned to actually try my nude outfits with naturally hair , I'm selling a African product here for African women so they have to be part of this amazing journey you get me ? And according to the colour of their skin with back ground music that the youth is tuning into right now that would really glue people to their

screens.

Ipek: I could organize the women plus i know someone that will definitely steal the show , mean Sir Amara is a good candidate for this job with her skin colour and natural hair.

I looked at her staring at her in disgust, what is she trying to do involving Amara in my meeting with an important client.

Client: Who is Amara? Even her name is beautiful

Me: She's no one , let's get back to the account.

Client : That's all I'm willing to add in .

Me: We'll then if that's all i think we should adjourned this meeting so i get on your ad as quick as possible.

Client: Okay , i think so too.

I got up and shook her hand . Ipek packed her bag . I settled the bill of all of us and walked out the restaurant.

Ipek: Before you say anything I'm sorry for bringing Amara up in the meeting.

Me: You will be served with you first warning tomorrow .

Ipek: For what ? I did nothing wrong.

Me: I don't care Ipek, you will be served with a warning that's it ! Are you challenging me?

Ipek: No it's fine.

Me: Good then cause you were about to get two warnings.

Ipek: Can you give me a lift?

Me: No !

I got into my car and drove off. Ma called , i took out my pods and answered the call.

Nandi: Alpha i heard from the stuff that you moved out.

Me: Yes i did is there something wrong when i move back to my house.

Nandi: You didn't infrom Alpha.

Me : Now you know don't you ? Ma please don't make a big deal out of this okay.

Nandi: You can be unbelievable sometimes Alpha. Why am i even surprised you take after your father cause he didn't sleep home last night.

Me: What are you sure?

Nandi: I am sure i watched him drive away.

Me: Maybe he had work or something.

Nandi: I don't think it's work , Steve is cheating.

Me: ( chuckles) What? Now that just sounds weird.



Nandi: And don't you dare say my mind is playing games with me cause it's not , your father is cheating on me and if i find out, I'm divorcing him .

Me: Now that's just being extra atleast wait for him to slip then you do what is necessary like punishing him divorce is just extra Ma.

Nandi : Nothing is extra in divorcing a cheating man Alpha .

Me: Mom a lot a women are being cheated at you don't hear them divorcing their spouse because of that, Dad is not cheating, his old for godsake , who would actually sleep with old man like Pop's , you just being ridiculous.

Nandi: I figured you'd say that cause you are a men not a women , if you knew what cheating does to a relationship you wouldn't be saying all this.

Me: Okay Ma can we talk later on , i have to go.

I dropped the call and parked my car in a abandoned building , that's where we conducting business since the attack at the warehouse. This building was heavily protected only we had the access to go in or out. Mute's Jeep was parked outside , i walked in the building as they opened the door for me.

Mute: This is a nice surprise.

Me: Thought i should pop by.

Mute: That's good that you thought that you will help with packing the money , as the first shipment is going out.

Me: Carlos money?

Mute: Yes , Pop's wanted us to start paying him off before the other clients.

Me : And what about the guns we took and the Coke ?

Mute: Your father hasn't said anything on what we are going to do with that merchandise so in the meantime we will just keep it here.

Me: But you have to move it fast , i will keep my ears open for a buyer , we can't be keeping someone else's dirt , that might come back and bite us.

Mute: Before you leave i just wanted to inform you i broke ties with Abbygail and i think you should would Logan so you can focus on getting Amara back.

Me : The will be no Amara i am focusing on , we are over officially this time.

Mute: And you are settling for that?

Me: What should i do ? Tie her down and force her to be with me while she doesn't? I'm bigger than that Mute , if she doesn't want me then i don't want her too.

Mute: You know deep down you lying , this whole saga is killing you.

Me: You wrong little bro. Let me leave you boys to do what you do best , while i go launder money .

Mute: Now that things are over between you two what about Junior?

Me: His my son so we will co- parent him.

Mute: That means he will stay with Amara?

Me : Yes his with his mother after all.

Mute: ( chuckles) What if Amara gets a new man?

Me: She wouldn't dare.

Mute: And why is that?

Me: I'm a rare breed it will be hard for her to settle for a man that's not me.

Mute: ( smiles) I suggest you both swallow your pride and try again than let your feelings slide.

Me: Mind your business Mr suggestion , I'm going home. You boy's keep working.

I walked to the exit and got in my car driving home. Mute was right as much as i wanted to work things out with Amara , you can't be pushing someone to love you while they dont

anymore, even when you love them heaven and back you can't make them want what you want, you just have to accept the situation as it is .

STEVE

I had a shower and changed my clothes, Nandi walked in my room and closed the door behind her. I looked at her and smiled.

Me: Hey sweetheart.

Nandi: Don't hey sweetheart me , Where were you , you didn't sleep home Steve i know.

Me: ( smiles) Isn't she jealous of me? Don't worry darling i was out on a business meeting but I'm back now you got me all to yourself.

Nandi: ( scoffs) You listen here you old man , if i ever find out you cheating on me? I will divorce you .

Me: These absolutely no need for you to even think of such with your beautiful mind sweetheart , i know what's on the line here. If i cheat or even be the first to divorce you , you are taking everything and I'll be left with nothing , i know the conditions on our marriage contract.

Nandi: i hope so .

Me: Now my beloved Lioness will you make me something to

eat , I'm starving.

Nandi : Didn't you eat in your meeting?

Me: No because i knew you would be mad if i don't eat and probably overreact.

Nandi: I'll make you a snack.

Me: Okay my love.

She walked out the room and closed the door , i sat on the bed exhaling. I handled her good , god why is she accusing me of cheating? I always cover my tracks pretty well so she doesn't sense anything . Nandi is one hell of a crazy woman she will divorce me if she even winds that i was cheating on her throughout out marriage. She will definitely take everything away from me , everything is written under her name , all my houses, cars , everything , i was young and stupid when i had the contract written, i was deeply inlove with her , Nandi was the hottest chick that time every man wanted her . I had to go above and beyond to make her my wife. I offered her what no other man in that time could that was financial stability. I had to sign everything i own under her name and the terms of that if i cheat on her and she decides to divorce me she is walking away with everything including a money for distress she is going to wipe me clean. Now with Megan talking about me making her my wife and children, she is going to become a

problem. I took my phone and called my friend from a mental institution.

Doctor: I didn't expect this call.

Me: I need your help.

Doctor : Okay on what?

Me: i need you to do some research on a drug that is undetectable but kills instantly.

Doctor: My goodness Mr Smith you want to finish you wife totally why don't you just divorce her?

Me: It's not for my wife you fool , make sure you hurry up about my order, I'll pay you handsomely.

Doctor: I'll come back to you when i have the dose.

Me: Good.

I dropped the call and tossed the phone on the bed tucking my shirt in my pants , Megan has to go. I have to think of my family , my wife is much more important than a fling .

AMARA

My uber stopped at the gate , i paid him and he drove off , i placed my bag firmly on my shoulder and held my dress up as i walked to the gate .

Security: Miss Amara.

Amara: Hi , can you let me in please i have a few of my things to collect in the house.

Security: I will have to call Mr Smith first just to check if it's okay does he know you here?

Me: No and I'd like to keep it that way please i promise i won't do anything that will jeopardize your job , in and out , he won't even notice i was here , please.

Security: Because i know you are a good woman i will let you in.

Me: Thank you so much .

He opened the gate and i walked in.

Me: I will be quick i promise.

Security: No problem.

I walked to the door and punched in the code not sure if he has changed the code or not the door opened up, i smiled and walked in the house . It was still the same just cleaned properly, looks like he has hired a maid . I figured she will be here but the house was clear just air hoovering in the building, it was spooky quiet . I walked upstairs to the spare bedroom collecting my clothes from the wodrope. I packed them up in a suitcase i had left in there. Rolling the suitcase to the main bedroom i packed Junior's clothes and his toys. I took out the black card i was using and placed it on the bed , it was his , his money i had to

leave everything that belonged to him behind if i want to move on. I walked in the bathroom looking in the washing basket if there were any of my clothes. I picked up the clothes and trip holding on the shower tap , the pin broke off as the cold water splashed out.

Me: Oh god , no please .

I tried repairing the tap pin as the water descended on my body , i was soaking wet my shoes filled with water , i placed the pin in hole on the shower hoping if it just fitted in I'd be able to close the tap i bumped the soaps and his tooth brushes . God if Alpha finds me here he will be really mad at me for even breaking his shower. I wiped my watery face shaking in fear still trying to stick the pin in.

Alpha: What the hell is going on here?

I paused , as the deep voice called out to me behind me, i closed my eyes biting on my lower lip , i turned looking him , he was staring at me frowning with his brows shrugged. The water kept sprinkling on my head as i tried to explain gasping swallowing droplets of, he walked in the shower and looked at the hole in wall pulling a part inside.

Me: ( stuttering) I..i was...it was a mistake , i was trying to pick up the clothes then i slipped and i held on our shower tab then this thing broke off.



He looked at me as i flashed the shower pin explaining and stuttering , i just kept explaining to him my heart sprinting in my chest . He took the pin off my hand and looked at it.

Alpha: How am i going to close the shower now?

Me: I don't know, i don't, I'm sorry , you are soaking water.

Alpha: Come let's get you dried up.

I took a step , stepping on the soap as it slides forward , my left feet lost balance . In seconds i realised i was falling , Alpha grapped me in time holding tight on waist as i grabbed his shoulder , i held on him tightly with my heart racing . Can't believe i almost fell in the shower , if he wasnt here lord knows I'd be laying knocked out in a opened shower probably bleeding and in pain cause i would've fell on my head. He looked at me with his hand on my waist another holding my back. I closed my eyes with the water sprinkling in my eyes , he helped me on my feet , cold breeze past thought my back , i cuddled myself back into his arms , lifted my shoulder and flinched, I was freezing. With my lips shivering , my teeth grinding , i looked at him and he dogged my eyes looking sideways , i gazed at him till he met my eyes. The water flowing down his face , he took a deep breath and he moved his hands off my body , i awkwardly did too , letting go of his shoulder , he walked out leaving me in the open tapped shower . I walked out as the soaking wet dress hugged on my body i touched it letting it loose from my skin

with my nipples protruding in the wet dress , i covered them with my arm. Dripping water from my dressed i stood at the door of the bathroom shivering. He took off his shirt and unzipped his pants and botton on his jeans.

Alpha: So what were you doing in my house Miss McKenzie?

Me: Why are you here ?

Alpha: Excuse me this is my house , where should i be ?

Me: I figured you would be at your parents house.

Alpha: So that's why you sneaked in and broke my shower ? now you will have to pay for the water that is running free and pay for the broken shower tap.

I looked at him as he said i will settle both bills of the water and for the shower to be fixed, i looked back at the running shower and wished i didn't even come here, his doing this out of spite .

Alpha: You just seem to not want to stay away from me Miss McKenzie.

He took off his pants left with his boxers i could see his cock print just draw as the wet shorts were tight on him.

Alpha : Don't just stand there take off your clothes.

Me: ( shocked) No ! No ! I will not why do you want me to take off my clothes?

Alpha: (chuckles) It's not what you think , come on what do you take me for? I won't sleep with you. I was just kind since you shivering cold.

I hugged my body and backed up to the wall, shaking my head.

Me: No , I'm fine.

Alpha: Okay then so are you done packing all your stuff or these still more you want to pack.

He turned his back on me and took off his boxers wearing his sweatpants pulling the strings on sweatpants i stared at his abdomen that had pubic hair sticking out .

Me : I'll go , i need to get back to Junior.

Alpha: You left him alone?

Me: His with Grace.

Alpha: Oh so you kissed and made up with Grace?

Me: She is my grandma what did you expect.

Alpha: (scoffs) I see .

Me: I'm just going to request and uber then I'll be out of your hair , you will send me the receipts of your shower and water bond I'll see what i can do about it.

Alpha: So you got a job?

Me: No .

Alpha: Then how are you going to cover all these receipts?

Me: I have a friend he could borrow me money.

Alpha: Who? That boy Enzo?

Me: No another man friend .

He tilted his head trying to figure out what i was talking about .  
He smiled approaching me.

Alpha: so what am i meant to do with that? Get jealous? Huh?  
Little Miss Amara , you can never break me with that , i couldn't  
care less of what you do with your life , you broke up with me  
remember that.

He leaned at my face with his lips close to mine , i could feel his  
warm breath against my lips , breathing in , i looked down at his  
abs.

Me: Can you step aside , Please Alpha.

I laid my hands on his chest he looked down at my hands as i  
pushed him away , he didn't budge , standing firmly and closer  
he got to me. This man is trying to get under my skin my worst  
fear was misbehaving with him cause i tend to when his around  
and i was going to , it takes a lot to actually say No to Alpha. He  
looked at me and leaned to my ear breathing , i expected  
anything sexual , let it be a neck kiss or a ear bite or even sexy

words from his deep thrusting voice , waiting for the first move i closed my eyes heavily breathing with my whole body warming up , sexual urges winding up , i was wet and horny.

Alpha : ( softly) Would you please leave my house , now !!

I sighed as he pulled away from me looking into my eyes , i was disappointed , i looked at him and blinked for a whole minute in disappointment. This was unlike him , what is going on with him? Is he over me? Not that i care but that would've been fast . Or is he seeing someone? Maybe it's that Logan girl. I looked at him for a while and walked away from him , i grabbed the suitcase from the bed and walked out the room to the stairs. As i step outside as cold as i was i had to get out of here. My uber arrived, i got in the car as the driver complained about my wetness , i couldn't careless , all that was circling in my mind is Alpha telling me to get out his house. I wiped my cold face and held on my mouth. I felt like crying as my heart was scattered in piece , i looked back at the road as i drove off. This was it , it really sunk in now , the is no more an Alpha and Amara story , we were going to be a modern fairytale , a arrogant rich man falling for a simp middle class woman. But i guess there is no such as a happy ending . I lost people along the way , and it hurt me like hell , People i thought I'd never lose , people i believed would always be there , but that is life , people change and relationships change , some evolve and some disintegrate .

Some people will leave through no will of their own and that hurts the most. I didn't want Rose to go i wasn't ready for to face the world all alone but i have to survive without her . I got off the car and rolled my suitcase inside the flat .

Grace: Amara you are wet.

Me: Yes i had a little awkward encounter in Alpha's house.

Grace: Go change into dry clothes my love I'll make you some coffee.

I changed into dry clothes and wore a doek for my wet hair .

Me: Is Junior asleep?

Grace: Yes , i fed him and he had a warm bath after that my little warrior fell asleep isn't he a sleep lover but that is absolutely nomarl he will grow into a strong young man just like his father.

Me: I hope not.

Grace: Even if you don't, i can see the signs that this is Alpha, he is his father's son.

I sat down on the couch and covered myself with a fleece , she handed me the cup of coffee.

Me: You cooked ? It smells devine.

Grace: Yes i did , I'll dish up for you.

I watched her move around the kitchen and smiled . Even though i lost Rose , i gained a goddess, maybe losing Alpha I'll gain a way better gentleman, I'll look back and realise that the people i need that i really need are still here, Grace is here and Junior is here with me , in a soul connective way Rose is with me too. The other relationships i lost along the way have taught me something that is going to make me better and wiser and that's life . For now I'm going to treasure those in my life now and remember those that left fondly even the ones that broke my heart , I'm regretting nothing , I'll cherish life with the hardships and difficulties steady and bravely I'll pull through.

Please invite friends to like and support the page as we few likes from 1k. I'll start posting inserts with bonus inserts each day. Thank you.❤️

59

ABBYGAIL

I woke up from the bed and looked around the room , noticing a guy next to me , he was laid face down looking at the other side. I got up and held my forehead that was extremely sore looks like we were wild last night , i got up from the bed as the sheets slipped off my naked body , i was completely naked. I grabbed a gown that was hanging on the cupboard near the bed and covered my naked body. Did i have sex with this man? Did we even use protection ?who is he? I walked to the other

side of the bed and looked at his face he was quite good-looking , with beautiful long lashes and a bushy brows.

Guy: Morning.

Me : Who the hell are you? And where is my sister?

He got up and sat up on the bed looking at me.

Guy: Is that like a joke or what?

Me: No it's not! Please, please tell me we didn't sleep together.

Guy: ( chuckles) We did .

Me: No !

I covered my face in embarrassment, feeling totally wronged and violated.

Guy: You don't remember anything?

Me: Did we use a condom?

Guy: You are acting all weird, i think it's best i get out of here.

He got up from the bed and wore his boxers and pants.

Me: If you walk out that door without answering my questions I'm going straight to the police station and have you arrested for rape.

Guy: What the fuck ! We had sex as adults and you agreed.



Me: Practically i was intoxicated and you can easily manipulate me.

Guy: You are psychopath.

Me: no I'm a Psychology student so did we use a condom?

Guy: We did geez , I'm very responsible guy plus who would want to go raw with a prostitute.

He picked up his shirt as i try to stomach what he said.

Me: Did you just call me a prostitute?

Guy: You were practically throwing yourself to every guy in the club Mem.

Me: ( stuttering) N--No i didn't.

Guy: ( chuckles) If that's what you want to believe then be my guest.

He walked out Logan's hotel room , i looked for my phone and called Logan she wasn't picking up her phone , what the hell happened last night, was i so drunk that i don't remember what happened. I took a water bottle and drank from it still stunned. I can't believe i had sex with a guy i don't even know what the hell has gotten into me. I quickly walked to the bathroom and had a quick shower so i go home , i don't even know how i will act normal after this , i felt dirty , i felt like a prostitute indeed that guy was right , did Marcus really hurt me this deep that i

found myself in bed with a man i don't know? Logan walked in the hotel room, i got out wrapping my body in a towel, she moaned and tossed herself on the couch holding her head.

Logan: My head it hurts so bad.

Me: Better your head hurt , what about me? I woke up in bed with a stranger Logan!

Logan: Geez so what just live a little and stop being so uptight.

Me: Excuse me? Live a little? How do you live a little with sleeping with an unknown guy? What did we drink last night?

Logan: We had vodka and some ciders.

Me: No that can't be , i have drank before and i wake up pretty fine the next day i don't understand what happened last night , i don't remember a thing.

Logan: Well we just had drinks and maybe i spiked your drink.

Me: You did what?

Logan : I added a party pill in your drink , you were uptight sis and boring still crying over that Marcus guy so i spiked your drink.

Me: ( angry) Logan how could you !

I took out the clothes i was wearing when i arrived and got dressed wearing my weave.

Logan: I'm sorry.

Me: You sorry ! What if i got like illnesses from that guy.

Logan: Don't overreact he doesn't have illnesses plus you a grown woman Abby I'm sure you used protection.

Me: In God's Grace we did yes ! What if that didn't happen. You just placed my life in danger Logan ! And i will never forgive you for this !

I took my bag and phone walking out the door.

Logan: Abby please listen to me.

Me: No and don't you dare follow me out this room i don't want to do something i will regret.

I walked out the room and slammed the door walking into the elevator, i requested an Uber home . I just couldn't believe Logan, how could she play with my life like this , now that guy will go around saying he slept with me and that i threw myself at him while i wasn't in my right senses , i will have to tell Drew what happened so we have the family lawyer draw up a contract of disclose about this matter so the guy doesn't go around talking about this, it could really ruin my families reputation and Father will really be angry at me.

ALPHA

I woke up got ready for work today i felt rather lonely, i just

missed the mornings i had , waking up to Amara's kisses and Junior's morning cry, i missed my family and i hated being a nuisance to Amara , i think it will be better she brings Junior over tonight , i want to spend some time with my son this weekend . I called a plumber to come fix the shower cap as the water was running the whole night. He is a elderly grown man and he lives in the township got his number from a follower of mine on Instagram as i asked for recommendations. He fixed the tap and walked over to me , i buttoned my sleeves and fixed my shirt.

Me: You done.

Plumber: Yes , it was just a minor job Sir, it needed the shower pin to switch on and off the water.

Me: How much is it.

Plumber: Well it will cost you nothing much just R500 .

Me: That small , do you have a family?

Plumber : Yes i do.

Me: A wife and kids?

Plumber: ( smiles) For now it's just me my wife and my grandchildren.

Me: That's good , i like a family man.

Plumber: And you son? Do you live alone?

Me: I have a girlfriend and a child, she's still angry and something i did so she packed and left to make things easy she's the one that broke the shower pin , she's clumsy lady.

Plumber: I see , they are all clumsy.

Me: ( smiles) Let me pay you your money so you leave.

I reached my wallet and took out money from it , i handed it to him , he looked at me counting it.

Plumber: I think you made a mistake , you gave me triple the charge.

Me: No i didn't , keep the money and go spoil your family , stay with them and be good to them .

Plumber: May god bless you and bring back the mother of your child , you are a good man son , your parents must be really proud of you.

I laughed a little as he picked up his tools and pat my shoulder walking out , This Plumber is such a good man and he thinks I'm a good man too. I collected files from the bed and my laptop and drove to the office. I walked in reception.

Ipek: You have two clients that want a video call with you and you received and invite for a gala dinner .

Me: Who did the invite come from?

Ipek: Mr & Mrs Rodriguez.

Me: That's our top client , wonder why did he invite me .

Ipek: Plus you don't even have a date.

Me: Who said i don't.

Ipek: You have someone in mind?

Me: Yes .

Ipek: Are you taking Amara?

Me: I'm taking you , get yourself the whole outfit I'll settle the bill , stick to black or white.

Ipek: ( surprised) uhmm okay i mean yes why not.

Me: Good , write me down the clients numbers so i call them and get me a coffee and a some muffins.

Ipek: On it.

I walked into the office and set up for the day ahead.

JADEN

I drove to Amara's place as Grace spent the night over at her flat , i was worried about her not sleeping at the house and she didn't have her pills . I bought breakfast and drove over the flat. I parked my car and locked it looking at the busy streets .

This place just seemed not safe . I walked inside and knocked on the door. Grace opened the door and gave me a hug.

Grace: Jaden you here , morning.

Me: Morning Ma just came to check up on you and i brought breakfast and your pills.

Grace: That was really not necessary because i feel like I'm ten times younger , i could shake my booty and dance my feet off.

Me: ( laughs) Come on Ma really now dancing ? You ?

Grace: Yes me, i guess spending the night at a place where my daughter lived revived me , i feel reboosted .

Amara: Jaden please come in , I'm making cookies would you like some? With coffee.

I looked at her as she was really steering up the bowl.

Me: Are you the one baking?

Amara: As you can see.

Me: I can't wait to taste .

Amara: You will want to have more.

I smiled as she continued filling up the cookie pan. Grace really loved it here , she was sitting on the couch with Junior holding him , i guess they have made peace. Amara handed me a plate of cookies with a hot cup of coffee , she wiped her hands on her

hips as i took a bite .

Grace: So?

Me: It's...good atleast it's tasty.

Grace: She is my granddaughter it's in her blood to bake and cook good food.

Amara laughed awkwardly pushing a smile , it looks like she has come to terms with accepting Grace as her grandmother. She walked back into the kitchen and took out the tray of baked cookies, i got up from the couch and joined her.

Me: So you will be permanently staying here.

Amara: Yes i will be.

Me: What about Alpha? Did he allow that?

Amara: He doesn't have that right anymore.

Me: What does that mean? Wait have you two broken up again?

Amara: Yes we have broken up and i don't think this time i we are going to get back together.

I was happy that they broke up , don't want to be seen heartless but Amara deserves someone way better than Alpha, he is not the love type nor will he ever be , his power hungry and needs to grow up and certain things . Amara deserves a



man that's going to love and respect her. Show her that he loves her , gives her time an attention and does everything just to see her smile , sees no other girls because his busy loving her. I looked at her and smiled.

Me: And why is that what did he do?

Amara: He cheated on me Jaden , can you imagine i have never felt that insecure about myself and actually hate myself because of a cheating and lying man.

Me: I'm so sorry you had to go through all that.

I held her hands as i pulled her closer for a hug , she wrapped her arms on my shoulder as i laid my hands on her waist , inhaling the saint of Lavender from her sweater . She smells so good , i squeezed her tight and let go .

Amara: But I'm okay now , I'm finding myself without him.

Me: That's good and I'm here for you okay.

Amara: I know and I'm grateful, you and Grace are the closest bonds to family.

Me: You know I'm not your family right?

Amara: ( giggles) Don't be silly , you are like a brother to me.

I faked a smiled as she continued baking , i was a little disappointed mean why can't she see i care for her in a way

higher level than just being a brother. Why does she even see me like that.

Me: I'm going to work I'll see you ladies when i get back.

Grace : Bye honey, have a good day.

Me: I will.

Amara: Bye.

I nodded my head and walked out , driving to the hospital. I had to discharge Mr Hughes today before he bites my head off. I walked in my office and wore my coat heading to his room. He was already up and ready to go. I looked at him and laughed.

Me: I see you already on your way home.

Thabo: I had to meet you half way.

Me: let me do my routine check up on you then when I'm done I'll let you sign the paperwork for your release.

Thabo: Then get it done with Doctor.

He sat on the bed as i did the check up.

DREW

Thandeka left for the hospital early for Dad's discharge , i was happy that the old guy was coming home after such a long stay at the hospital he really gave us a fright. I picked up my phone and called Amara as i drank some juice.

Amara: Hello.

Me: My delightful lady.

Amara: Someone woke up on the right side of the bed.

Me: Do you like it when i call you delight?

Amara: You already did so why asking?

Me: Just that thinking about you , i just think of a delight bar of rare chocolate.

Amara: Drew are you serious? This early and you already flirting?

Me: I'm sorry then for making you angry it's just that i had a dream about you.

Amara: You dreamt about me?

Me: Yes , looks like you always on my mind and even my mind is making visual pictures of you , not that I'm complaining cause you made my night worthy of sleeping if i had a choice I'd sleep the entire time be your sleeping prince.

Amara : ( laughs) You are really gettting on my nerves.

Me: Ouch now , you hurting my fragile heart.

Amara: Then you not the only one to get hurt , I'm busy here so if you'd excuse me.

Me: Before you drop the call i have one request.

Amara: What?

Me: Can i take you out for movies tonight.

Amara: Movies ? Really?

Me: Dinner then? Just a wealthy man taking a beautiful lady out.

Amara: I will be spending some alone time so no thank you.

Me: Pretty please.

Amara: I'll think about it.

Me: Amara please , I'll make it worth your while trust me.

Amara: When does the movie start?

Me:At 8.

Amara: Be at my door at 7:30.

Me: ( smiles) Yes Mem.

She hung up the call as i smiled into space , I texted a reporter to be at the cinema at 8 oclock for the morning scope , i strictly informed her to make sure me and Amara are at the front page with the heading that makes us look like a couple , she agreed on all terms and i promised to compensate her handsomely. I dropped the call as Abby walked in , she grabbed the jug of

water and drank from it , i looked at her as she seemed disturbed but then that wasn't my business, i need to stop involving myself in the Girls business. I continued having my breakfast. She kept stealing glances of me , i placed the utensils on the plate and looked at her.

Me: What?

Abby: Nothing what's wrong ?

Me: Abbygail i can sense you want something what's wrong?

Abby: I don't know how to tell you this Drew.

Me: come on just say it what's wrong ? Are you in trouble?

Abby: Not really.

Me: Then what's bothering you?

Abby: I had a one night stand with some guy i don't know.

Me: Okay pause, wait a minute, hold up . Why are you telling me this? Geez Abbygail I'm eating.

Abby: Please place your brotherly instincts aside please , it's not my fault.

Me: You slept with a guy you don't barely know and you saying it's not your fault who is it? Mine.

Abby : Oh my god Drew just drop it , forget i said anything!

Me: You damn right I'm going to drop it cause this normal , you talking about sex over breakfast, did you even take a shower? A condom did you use protection?

She got up from the chair and left the room .

Me: Yes run away from this conversations , run Abbygail, who does that? go around sleeping with people she doesn't know. You lack values. Jesus Christ i lost my appetite.

I got up from the table and left the room , what the hell is wrong with the Abbygail , i was gone for what ? A whole year and i come back and my sister have lost thier way, Logan has been sleeping with Alpha now Abby is sleeping with countless unknown men. My stomach turned green just thinking of her whoring around with countless men. What kind of women are my sisters?

THABO

I finally got discharged from the hospital. Cohen held my bag for me as i walked out holding my wife's hand . As we walked to the door Steve and Mute walked in. He looked at me and smiled, my blood ran hot.

Thandeka: Calm down , remember what the doctor said you must not get angry.

Steve: Old friend.

Me: What are you doing here Steve?

Steve: I heard you were admitted in and i just wanted to come check on you but look at you all ready to go home healthy and alive.

Me: ( laughs) You such a fake bastard! How could you stand here and smile after killing so many people.

Steve: As you can see i am standing and unfortunately i am smiling and how do you stand there and judge me while you supplying guns to wars abroad, guns that kill innocent people and you sell drugs too that are killing our youth?

Me: Look at him , Lord God Steve, marking all my sins on a register.

Steve: And it's pity you didn't die Thabo , it's a pity really cause if i were you i would've died.

Thandeka: Steve please don't talk to him like that.

Steve : And you shut up ! You better shut your month , if i hear a word I'll tell your husband about your affairs with little boys that are young enough to be your son's. Oh god me and my big mouth I'm so sorry Thandie , i didn't mean to snitch on you.

I removed my hand from hers and she bottled up tears , i looked at her disgusted of her , how could she be this stupid? I looked at Steve that was boosting and bloating watching us

drown and suffocate my wife dirty laundry that just had being aired.

Me : Cohen lead me to the car.

Thandeka: Thabo , baby.

We walked out the hospital as she tried to hold my hand, i raised up my hand to slap her she backed away from me.

Me: If you dare touch me , I'll slap you very badly you won't be able to recover from my beating, stay away from me .

Thandeka: (sobbing) Steve is lying , his just trying to break our family up can't you see that?

Me: Will you be able to hold a bible and swear that his lying ? That you never cheating on me with small boys?

Thandeka: Please believe me Thabo.

Me: Fuck off Thandeka .

I got in the car at the backseat as Cohen drove me home, i have never felt let down , disappointed in my life. My own wife , the woman i hold on tight at night was actually a horse that young men were riding. I sobbed looking through the window as i broke down , i was hurt.

MUTE

Thandeka waited for a car sobbing as Pop's approached her , he



placed his hand on her shoulder , Thandeka turned and slapped him right across the face.

Thandeka: Don't you dare touch me you son of a bitch ! You are the devil roaming earth unseen Steve! Don't you dare touch me with your filthy hands you bastard !

Steve: Come on Now Thandie don't be like that.

I looked sideways and laughed. She looked at me.

Thandeka: Do you think this is funny? This is a big joke to you? You all are going to get what is coming your way , i swear to god this is not over!

She got into the uber and it drove off her Pop's looked at me.

Steve: Did you hear that son ?

Me: I did and i thought you were here for a check up but you just here to start a fight with the Hughes.

Steve : Have i ever had a check up before?

Me: Jesus Christ not at all.

Steve: Now stop being foolish take me to the merchandise, i have buyers for the guns and coke.

Me: You do? Where did you get them?

Steve: Let's just say i have a German contact now.

Me: German's don't you think that's a dangerous route though?  
Germans are the hardest people to co-exist with doing business  
with them will be a nightmare.

Steve : Stop being too cautious about this , i made it clear that  
it is a once off thing so we need cargo boxers to ship the guns.

Me: I'll pull some strings, i will have the boxes by tomorrow.

Steve : Good boy , Have you spoken to Alpha.

Me: No haven't seen him since yesterday.

Steve: That boy's mind is off the family or the business it's like  
when Amara left she left with his mind and consciousness.

Me: Maybe that's what we call being inlove.

Steve: When are you bring in girl home.

Me: ( laughs) Oh no Pop's I'm good with Love and all those  
things involved with falling inlove , i think my soulmate is a  
machine gun and my car.

Steve: Your machine gun and car won't keep you warm at night.

Me: Then I'll find a hooker.

We both laughed as i drove him to the new warehouse , he got  
out and walked in looking at the guns that were in two bags on  
the floor. He took pictures of the guns and the coke as he sent  
the photo's to the Germans.

AMARA

I packed Junior's bag i was going to drop him off at Alpha's house for my movie date with Drew . I didn't want to go out but i just feel like going out , choosing me and wanting some me time without Junior won't make me a bad mom. I wore a black oversized sweater with short tights and a waist bag , black knee high boots tying my afro upright and applied pins and some make up and lip gloss with earrings. Grace had gotten home two hours ago , she had to go back after all she can't move in with me while she has a whole comfortable house , it was a long and sad goodbye as she didn't want to go but she had to leave , i wanted to be alone. Someone knocked on the door as i got the door , Drew was standing smiling at me , i looked at him and blushed.

Me: What?

Drew: ( smiles) it's like god too his time creating you , you so beautiful.

Me: (smiles) My god can you stop it.

Drew : No i won't stop and you know what will make you even more beautiful.

Me: What?

He took out a black box and opened it as a necklace blinged , it was so beautiful , my jaw dropped.

Drew: Diamond necklace for a rare dime.

Me: I can't accept this.

Drew: Don't be silly turn around so i can put it on you.

I walked in the flat as he walked behind me closing the door. Junior was strapped in his car seat ready to go over to his dad's house. Drew placed the necklace on my chest , i looked at the blinged , it was too much why would he buy a diamond necklace for a woman who isn't even that special to him. I turned and looked at him.

Me: I feel so bad cause i don't have a gift for you.

Drew: Don't you worried about a thing being with you is already a gift enough.

Me: We can go .

Drew: Let me help you carry my boy .

I looked at him as he called Junior his boy , what was Drew up to ? We got in the car and he drove me to Alpha's house.

Me: So why are you doing all this.

Drew: All what?

Me: Don't play dum with me Drew, why are you buying me diamond necklaces and calling my son your boy why you doing this?

Drew: I'll be honest with you Amara.

Me: Please do , be honest.

Drew: I want you , i want you to be my girl.

I just murmured at the passenger seat unable to say a word, i sighed gazing through the window.

Drew: I understand that this is a shock and i promise i won't push you into a relationship let's take your time .

He stopped the car at Alpha's house , i took Junior and his bag and walked towards the gate , the security let me in as i knocked at the door. He opened up the door half naked in a shorts , i swallowed hard looking at his body that was dropping wet , his muscular thighs and bulky shoulders that just had water running down his smooth skin.

Alpha: Hey Momma.

Me: I came to drop Junior off.

I walked in the house and placed the chair on the kitchen counter, he kissed Junior and looked at me.

Alpha: I had my evening planned out but since JJ is here I'll cancel.

Me: That's good cause you have no choice but to bond with your son.

Alpha: You look so beautiful.

Me: Alpha please don't start , don't, your mind games won't work.

Alpha: What mind games? I'm being genuine here ( smiles) You are beautiful .

Me: Thank you.

Alpha: So where you going?

Me: Not that it's non of your business but then since i just came and bumped Junior you deserve a reason , I'm going out with a friend for movies.

Alpha: ( laughs) So you going out on a date?

Me: It's friend taking a friend out .

Alpha: ( yelling) The is no such thing as a friend taking a friend out Amara , who is he?

I looked at him as he raged in jealousy could barely look me in the eyes.

Me: Are you jealous?

Alpha: I don't get jealous sweetheart.

Me:Yes you are , Alpha is jealous , wow you really amaze me Mr Smith . Does hearing me tell you I'm going to spend the night with a man that's not yout hurt you? Is your heart of stone

painfully?

I looked at him and smiled as he lost it , with his jaw grinding.

Alpha: Enjoy yourself.

Me: ( scoffs) I will , you can count on that .

Alpha: And what is that supposed to mean?

Me: you know what i mean , i packed a lot of milk and nappies cause I'll come pick him up on Sunday.

Alpha: What ! Junior needs to be breastfed Amara ! This just shows how much of a bad mother you are. !

Me: Says who ? Father of the year? Don't you dare . You have no right to question my parenting! I'm doing the best i can.

Alpha: But here you are coming to dump our son for a cock?  
Really Amara

Me: Says a cheater ! Cause you dumped both of us for a super model. I don't want want to be angry not tonight. I'm leaving.

He grabbed my arm and pulled me towards his body, i held on his naked chest he wrapped his arms around my waist , my heart

Alpha: Don't go.

Me : Are you mad ! Don't touch me , let me go.

I tried pushing him off but he held on me tightly , he held me by my neck and spinning me around as i landed on towards the wall , i placed my hands on the wall , he kissed my neck with his wet tougue running through my neck , my heart skipped massively beating at high speeding in my chest .He left my heart hysterical as i took deep breathes. he kissed my cheek and held my neck as my lips reached for his , i kissed him back , he reached inside my sweater and pulled down the short tights , the material dropped to the floor he rubbed himself against my booty as i felt the hardened man meat against me , he kept rubbing it on the fabric. His muscle is up and strong, he groaned in my ear , i cummed on my panty as my clit was throbbing . Junior is in the kitchen we can't have sex with Junior in the room . I pushed him back.

Me: Alpha we can't, i have to go and Junior is in the room.

Alpha: His not looking.

Me: No we can't expose him to such , even sounds i don't want that for my baby.

Alpha: His sleeping Amara look at him , his asleep.

I looked at Junior that had his eyes closed sucking his finger.

Me: I have to go , his waiting outside.

Alpha: Who cares ? Let him wait.



He backed me back against the wall inserting his hand in my pants inserting his finger in my vagina , i held on the wall and moaned , sighing and heavy breathing.

Me: Ohhh No Alpha please , please don't .

Alpha : Do you really mean that?

He inserted his fingers deep in me i shook my head speechless as his fingers played in me , i held his wrist letting out light screams. He lowered his shorts and took off my panty as i bent down for him , he brushed his head against me and thrust inside stroking , i grabbed hold of his waist sinking my fingers in his flesh. Stroking me against the wall , he grabbed my waist bending me all the way out, my booty was sticking out with my legs closed together, he grabbed my neck bending me towards his chest covering my mouth with his hand and held my hand against the wall. He laid against my booty , my breast got pressed against the wall. I moaned quietly in his hand that covered my mouth with him licking my earlobe. Sounds of skin slapping against each other and wet sexual organs making sloppy noises as he thrusts in and out of me , he whispered in my ear.

Alpha: Whose your daddy?

I swallowed saliva wetting my throat that was dried up , trying to piece together an answer for his question and at the same

time adapting to the painful strokes from the raw cock that was sloshing in me opening me up widely.

Me: ( stuttering) Y-you are ( heavy breathing) Oh my wordddd.

Alpha: bend over now and keep your legs closed.

I bent over even more exposing myself to him

Alpha: Just like that stay like that.

I closed my eyes with joyful tears escaping my pupils.

Me: ( moaning) Oh god.

He whispered in my ear yet again with his fingers running along on my lips, he inserted them in my mouth , i gagged as his fingers ran along inside my mouth.

Alpha: On this moment I'll remind you once again, you mine and that i own you.

He rammed me up , i flinched holding on my abdomen, I couldn't control my breaths , my lungs inflating and exhaling rapidly , could feel the make up wear off my face, as my whole body was sweaty and hot.

Alpha: You will let that bastard know these my thighs, mine.

His hand wrapped around my neck as he cummed in me . I closed my eyes with the gushy sperm shot deep in me , he got off me and wore his shorts. As i was still standing still against

the wall , trying to figure out what just happened fluids escaped my vagina rolling down my thighs. I stole a glance of him as i thought of Drew that was waiting for me outside , i have been in the house for 30 minutes.

Me: ( catching my breath) I have to go.

Alpha: ( chuckles ) You still going out for movies? You know where the bathroom is so you can go clean yourself if you wanna.

I looked at him as he smiled at me , I walked upstairs to the bathroom and cleaned myself up , freshening up. Collecting wipes from cabinet, i wiped myself and my thighs. He walked in the bathroom and hugged me kissed my neck.

Alpha: I want more, don't you want more? .

Me: No , get off me.

I sighed as i took out lip gloss from my waist bag apply it on my lips, i walked out the room

Alpha: Being denial won't help Amara you love me and i love you just come home sweetheart , you felt how i made love to you right and you liked it. You won't settle for a man that ain't me Amara and that's facts sweethearts, you will always find your way iinto my arms like it or not.

I walked downstairs and dressed properly, i picked Junior up

from the chair and laid him in his baby crib that was still in the main bedroom.

Alpha: Amara I'm talking to you.

Me: I have nothing to say to you.

Alpha: No you do , you have a lot to say , I'm sorry and i love you , i want us to work this time , i swear i won't be like him , i left the cheating Alpha in the past the day you walked out the house angry and crying because of me , baby i beat my heart up black and blue because of what i did to you cause i know it's not even half of the pain i put you through. I hate seeing you apart from me , i want us , i miss you and your kisses in the morning , i miss our son , let me prove to you that i can love you , rightfully this time.

Me: No.

Alpha : Please.

I kissed Junior's forehead and walked down downstairs rushing to the door , i reached for the door handle and walked out as i inhaled the cold night breeze. And rushed out , Drew was still waiting for me outside the yard i got in the drivers seat and looked at him swallowing hard.

Drew: At last , geez what took you so long.

I just gazed into his eyes , wondering if i should tell him what

happened inside but how was he going to look me telling him i just had sex minutes ago while he was waiting for me . I muttered and looked down.

Me: I was ...laying Junior, he woke up so i breastfed him and waited for him to fall asleep he was really grumpy today so i didn't want him to keep Alpha up all night.

Drew: I understand, might have been really nerve wrecking for you.

Me: Not at all i enjoyed it.

Drew: ( confused) You did?

Me: laying Junior to sleep nothing else , i enjoyed laying Junior to sleep.

Drew: Okay let's go watch a movie then.

I faked a smile as he drove off. I pulled down the sweater that was showing my thighs , i looked at him and comfortably sat on his leather covered seats. Couldn't keep my mind off the few minutes i spent with Alpha having mini flash backs of the steamy session , i smiled to myself and held my mouth feeling like giggling my lungs out , he really outdid himself bending me over the wall like that was just legendary as he tapped on me from the back. I could still feel him inside me with my coochie hot. He parked the car and we got out in front of the cinema , he handed out his hand to me , i awkwardly placed mine on his

as he locked our hands together he placed them on his chest and we walked in bought snacks and drinks walking quietly into the arena as the movie had began. We sat down comfortably watching a romantic comedy my mind was miles away.

IPEK

I walked into the Gala dinner party holding my sling bag . I had a glass of wine as Mrs Rodriguez approached me.

Mrs Rodriguez: Hi darling , hasn't Mr Smith arrived yet?

Me: ( fakes a smile) Some suit problems but I'm sure he will walk in the door any moment now.

Rodriguez: Please don't you dare get thirsty honey always keep your glass full.

Me: ( smiles) Ofcause thank you.

She walked away welcoming her other guests i took my phone out and called Alpha . His phone rang countless times with answer , i tried calling again walking out the venue.

Alpha: Ipek.

Me: Where are you the Gala has started.

Alpha: I'm no longer coming.

Me: What! Are you serious? I'm here all dressed up for you and you coming.

Alpha: I'm baby sitting my son , send my apologies to the Rodriguez and as for you , I'll compensate you well , bye.

He hung up the call , i looked at my phone screen , I just couldn't believe Alpha. I walked in the party and took a glass of whisky from the waiters , i drank from it frustrated. I faked a smile and walked to Mr Rodriguez.

Me: Hi Sir.

Rodriguez: You are Alpha's PA if I'm not mistaken

Me: Yes i am , i wanted to kindly inform you that he couldn't make it , His son is not well.

Rodriguez : I'm sorry to hear that , speedy recovery to his son, i have children too and hell would go cold if one of them gets sick.

I nodded my head faking sympathy while i knew i was lying to the poor man , i couldn't just say Alpha couldn't come because he was baby sitting that would've sounded off because a lot of rich couples have nannies for such things.

Me: Thank you Mr Rodriguez for hosting us and we deeply sorry.

Mr Rodriguez : You don't have to its understandable sweetheart, enjoy the rest of the evening.

Me : I will.

I picked up a glass of champagne and drank from it placing the glass on the table i made my walk to the door with my long dress that had my thigh out . I was slaying this Gala party think i should since I'll be in Alpha's arm for the night but i guess this isn't my lucky day.

60

DREW

We walked out the cinema as a whole people left after the movie, we walked out to the exit and i held her hands as the reporter took pictures. I looked at her reaching for her lips for a kiss , she turned her face as i kissed her cheek , i whispered in her ear.

Me: So did you have fun?.

Amara : Yes i had a great time plus the movie was good.

Me : Good then , i hope we will do this some other time again.

Amara : We will see about that.

Me: The night is still young what do you want to do next.

Amara: I have nothing in mind i just want to go home and sleep these heels are killing my feet.

I looked at her feet and smiled.



Me: Really you should've said something .

I held her waist and swepted her off her feet carrying her , she held on to me tightly and laid her head on my shoulder.

Amara: Oh no please , please put me down.

Me: you said your feet hurt I'm helping you get off your feet.

Amara: I didn't mean pick me up , plus your back is going to hurt.

Me: You are not even that heavy Amara.

Amara: I'm not?

Me: No .

I could see the camera flash as i crossed the road to my car , i descended her on her feet looking down at her shinny lips as she applied lip gloss on then urged to kiss her i reached down to her lips and kissed her holding her cheeks.

Amara: ( pushing him) Mhhh.

I continued kissing her as she tried pushing me away , i held on tightly on her cheeks not letting go.

Amara: (fighting) Stop it !

Finally budging off her , i looked at her wiping my lips that had lip gloss smudged all over.

Me: I'm sorry i got carried away.

Amara: I think you should take me home

Me: Amara I'm sorry.

Amara: ( yelling) I said take me home ! ( softly) this date is over.

I unlocked the car as she got in the passenger seat , i smiled walking to the driver's side. I drove her to her flat as i messaged the reporter asking if she got the photos , she sent fire emojis, i just knew Alpha will be burning in jealousy tomorrow morning when he sees the mother of his child with a Hughes kissing. I parked the car as she got out .

Me: Goodnight.

Amara: Whatever Drew.

She walked inside the building . She was angry at me and i didn't mind cause i got what i wanted a scope and when she sees the paper tomorrow she will be stunned left with no choice but to get closer to me. I drove home and parked my car walking in the house. The house was dark quiet with curtains flying as air suppressed on the fabric to rise. I looked at the chair and someone was sitting in the dark. In fear i swallowed and called out to him

Me: Who are you?

Thabo: It's me son , you don't have to be frightened.

I relaxed and walked over to him.

Me: Why are you seating in the dark?

Thabo: I'm having a emotional discussion with myself.

Me: At this time Father? You should be resting and not worrying yourself.

Thabo: How could i not worry son ? How will i have a peaceful night sleep knowing Thandeka has been cheating on me all this while.

I wasn't shocked at all , it just seemed like what Thandeka would do that lady has been nothing but a gold digging poison that is killing my father slowly and carefully. Even in this family she got in a slimming and tricking her way in , she had a one night stand with him after my mother passed away and Abbygail was produced in that mistakenly night.

Me: Why are you even surprised father , Thandeka has been nothing but a lying and conceiving woman cheating is definitely part of one of her talents stop stressing about whores.

Thabo: ( angry) And you will not speak of my wife is such a tongue!

Me: You still calling her your wife ? Know what i don't know

what has gotten into this family and i don't want to be a part of that madness so it's best i fall back and go sleep cause tomorrow is going to be a good day for me.

Thabo: What is happening tomorrow?

Me: You will find out tomorrow.

I left him in the room and approached my bedroom , i took off my shoes and laid down on the bed looking at the ceiling as i smiled to myself.

[ THE FOLLOWING MORNING ]

AMARA

I woke up and pat on my bed looking for Junior , i got up from the bed and panicked as i couldn't find him. I looked around calling out to him.

Me: Junior , Munchies where are you?

I got up from the bed pulling my panty put my booty approached the kitchen , my phone rang as i checked it was a video call from Alpha , i picked up the call and saw Junior sighing that his safe at his dad's house i could breathe. Silly me , i got so used to living with Junior i even forgot he spent the night at his father's place.

Alpha: Hey are you okay?

Me: ( yawning) I'm fine , you won't believe what just happened.

Alpha: What happened?

Me: Let's rather not talk about it , how is he doing?

Alpha: Good actually , his been nothing but a sweet little boy to Daddy. Hasn't caused any troubles for me atleast not yet. I fed him and made his milk bottle.

Me: You did?

I was surprised that he actually knew what to do when Junior woke up.

Alpha: Yes , i know i wasn't a good partner but i am a good parent.

Me: Okay so when can i come pick him up?

Alpha: I want to spend the day with him if that's possible.

Me: No it's not , when should i come pick him up?

Alpha: Amara Junior is my son too , I'm asking to spend the day with him please.

Me: I'm his mother and i know what is right for him so right now what is right is that he comes home.

Alpha: This is his home too.

Me: I won't be arguing over a baby i carried 9 months with any

assistance from you , Junior is coming home infact I'm coming to get him right now.

Alpha: You can be childish sometimes do you know that?

Me: Is that what you think of me Alpha? That I'm your stupid childish Baby Mama?

Alpha: What i think of you shouldn't even bother you if it's not true now that you fighting me and feel threatened by what i said means you actually know it's true yes you are childish Amara grow the fuck up !

The phone beeped in my ear as he dropped the call , i couldn't believe he just said that to me .Who the hell does he think he is ? Questioning my intellectual level. I made myself a cup of coffee and had some biscuits. I still couldn't believe Alpha.

ABBYGAIL

We sat down as a family and had breakfast , must say the table was quiet and very tense . Father kept gazing at Mom in a very disgusting way as Ma sat on her seat rather uncomfortable

Thandeka : Honey how is Varsity?

I looked at her as she tried breaking the silence, i drank from my mug nodding my head .

Me: It's good , I'm actually happy that I'll be doing my practicals in no time.

Thandeka: That's amazing honey . Did you hear that Thabo our daughter is a step closer to being a qualified Psychologist.

Dad jabbed at her slightly stealing glances of her and kept quiet. Drew walked in the room holding a news paper , he dropped it in front of Dad's plate and smiled laughing, he woke up in a really good mood today.

Drew: ( shouting) Say my name !

Thabo: What is this?

Father picked up the paper and wore his spectacles reading silently, we all were left craving to see what was in the paper. He looked at Drew and smiled.

Thabo: Alpha will be raging after seeing this.

Drew: Serves him right !

Me: Let me see.

I got up and took the paper looking at the cover page that had tag pictures and a main picture of Drew and Amara McKenzie with bold heading ontop , i read out the article.

Me : Amara finds love again , but this time around not in Alpha's arms but in Drew Hughes , are they going to be our perfect couple or is it just two people making each other happy for a while , Alpha is going to murder you.

Drew: ( laughs ) He won't even have the strength to lift up a gun after seeing this , he will be weak in his knees .

Me: If this was a way to make Alpha suffer for his relation with Logan you men venged in a wrong way , Amara had nothing to do with all this mess you can't be using an innocent woman to get back at Alpha.

Drew: So it's good for him to use Logan and just toss her aside after using her? Is that what you mean Abby?

Me: Alpha didn't use Logan, Logan allowed herself to be used because she can't keep her panties on.

Thandeka: ( yelling) Abby ! You will not talk about your sister like that !

Thabo: I guess Logan takes after her mom.

Thandeka: Oh no you don't have the right to pull out the victim card !

Thabo: I have every right too Thandeka! You cheating on me ! You are a whore ! Just like Logan.

Thandeka: Obviously! Obviously i am ! Because i learnt whoring from my husband !

Me : Ma please , father stop this is not how elder people act !

Thandeka: Shut up before i slap the shit out of you ! What do



you know about how elder people should carry themselves  
what do you know !

Me: I know a lot Mom ! And i know that I'm officially moving  
out of this toxic atmosphere! We are not a family but people  
who are related but treat one another like trash !

Drew: Moving out to where ? To the guy you had a one night  
stand with?

Me: see what I'm talking about ? You guys are so fixated on  
bring down the Smiths while you can't even noticed you bring  
our family to it's knees ! I hate the fighting i just want it to stop  
!

Left the room sobbing, i just couldn't take how my parents  
fought. How they were yelling at each other and calling each  
other in disgusting names. It was hard to handle , i packed all  
my clothes in a suitcase . Drew walked in closing the door  
behind him , he sat on the bed and looked at me.

Me: Don't even try to stop me Drew cause i am not backing out  
of my decision I'm leaving and thank god they fought so i can  
tell them what i have been longing to tell them all this time !

Drew: and is that leaving?

Me: What else would it be?

Drew: I see .

I closed the suitcase and placed it on the floor. He got up from the bed and hugged me , i held on him tightly .

Me: I'm sorry .

Drew:Don't you ever be sorry for what your heart desires, if moving out is what you want , i support you Abbygail cause that means you growing up , learning to strive by yourself for yourself and these nothing in the whole world i would miss this opportunity to send you off as my little sister .

I looked at him and smiled.

Me: Mom and father won't allow me to go.

Drew: It's not their call to make , if you want to go then you will go. Let me help you with your bag.

He rolled my bag to the door as we walked out , Mom and Father were quiet in the dinner area , Ma got off the chair and kneeled before Father sobbing.

Thandeka: My love please, I'm sorry , i swear to god i stopped cheating because i knew this would kill you. I love you Thabo.

Thabo: Well thank you for loving me , I will see you in court.

Thandeka: ( crying) Thabo No ! Please , Steve is doing this to spilt our family up , his doing this as destroy us , please don't let him do this to us .

Thabo: You did this to us , i can forgive a lot of things Thandeka, but not a cheating wife. I can't stand a disloyal wife ! Get out of my house , go and whore out of my premises!

Thandeka: No ! I am not going anywhere !

Thabo: Okay stay here i will be back.

He got up from the chair quickly walking to the main bedroom , i just knew something bad is going to happen, i held my Mom up.

Me: Ma let's go , you will stay with me till Father cools off.

Thandeka : No ! I am not leaving my husband if he wants to kill me then so be it!

Me: Mom please this is so unnecessary.

Dad walked out the room setting his gun , loading bullets in. Mom screamed as fear took hold of my body seeing my dad pointing a gun at the woman he claimed scared me. We both walked behind Drew as he lifted his hands , i held on Drew's t-shirt tightly as Ma held on my dress.

Drew: Father please this is not the way to handle this situation I'm sure we can resolve this issue with no one taking a bullet.

Thabo: Drew step aside ! Let me finish her off.

Drew : If you want to get to her you will have to get through me

first.

Thabo: Oh i see what is happening here ( chuckles ) Why did i notice , you are also getting a slice in the cake isn't it ?

Drew: What no ! How could you even think that ! Geez that's disgusting! I would never do you like that.

Thabo: Then why are you defending her , the last time i checked you hate Thandeka now you standing up for her.

Drew: That's because she is the mother of my sister's . When you are terrorizing her you terrorising my sisters , that's the relationship i share with her nothing more!

Thabo: You all think I'm a fool in this house ! I'll show you what a fool does.

Click click the gun chambers made , Drew held me behind him with his arm.

Drew: Father please she's leaving then , she's going please put down the mechine before you hurt yourself.

Thabo: Get her out of my house !

He walked into the hallway as we exhaled Mom was shaking in tears.

Drew: She will have to leave with you Father is upset i don't think he will be able to be in the same roof as her , for her

safety she should stay away from Dad.

Thandeka: I don't want to go, i want to beg Thabo to forgive me.

Me: How will you be able to beg him when he kills you ? ( angry) Use your brains cause this is all your fault! You should've been a good and responsible wife but no ! You chose to go cheat !

I clicked my tougue as i walked out the house angry , she can sometimes get on my nerve , she saw how father reacted towards her but she still wants to beg him. Woman should learn to know their worth and stop fighting over man that don't value them , in this whole cheating pyramid you will find it was father that cheated and to console herself Mom did the same . But look how is ready to risk her life asking for forgiveness to a man that began this whole parade. I got into my car as she got in the passengers seat sobbing, i handed her a box of tissues .

Drew : Call me when you reach your house.

Me: Okay i will , thank you Drew.

Drew: For what?

Me: For standing up for Mom.

Drew: ( nodding his head) it's nothing.

I smiled as he got on his motorbike that was parked besides me

, i drove out the house approaching my apartment.

NANDI

I looked at the news paper as Amara leaned closely to Drew , this just showed how much of a gold digging prostitute she was . This is why she didn't want to work things out with Alpha because she knew she has already caught another big fish , what was i even expecting from a Low life girl that grew up without parents. She has no values .

Steve: Can you stop staring at that newspaper Nandi please , you will get a heart attack.

Me: This is just unbelievable Steve, mean just look at her , she is hanging on to Drew with everything she has got.

Steve: I told you all about this girl but you looked at me like i was jealous that Alpha is falling inlove.

Me: To think i accepted her in my home and loved her like a daughter sickens me . Bloody trash just look at her , a whole wolf dressed in sheep's clothing a snake.

Steve: ( chuckles) And not so long ago i was the bad guy.

Me: This is not about you Steve ! Oh my baby , the hurt he will go through when he looks at this page . I think i should go to his house Steve and be there for him.

Steve: You thinking wrong , let Alpha handle this , if he is hurt

let him lick his own wounds that will make him stronger atleast now you see Amara for what she is.

Mute walked in the room , he sat down holding a plate of sandwiches that were left from the breakfast table.

Me: did you see the newspaper?

Mute: I am not really the news paper type of person.

Me: Even if you not but you will have to see this , Just look at the slut Alpha almost made his wife, she played us all with the sweet girl accent but all along the was a ruthless whore underneath , she and Alpha broke up just yesterday and she is gallavanting the streets with other man .

I handed him the newspaper. He looked at it.

Mute: Jesus Christ is this Amara and Drew? Drew Hughes?

Steve: On camera then printed on paper.

Mute: No this is unlike her the must be some sort of an explanation.

Steve : The is no explanation here , you need to process it as it came my boy, Amara was just cashing her Jackpot with Alpha now that she is done milking Alpha she placed a bet on Drew looks like she is cashing in as well and much sooner that expected , i would hate to say this to Alpha's face but i told him .

Mute: I have to go check on him before he does anything Stupid , he will go livid if he lays his eyes on this .

Me: You are right , take Spike with you .

Mute: I will , I trusted Amara so much, this is just pure betrayal.

Steve : Or maybe she was working with the Hughes all along and now that we are in control she is getting cold feet.

Mute: No , if she was working with them from the start she wouldn't have fell pregnant .

Steve: You don't know how manipulative women can be.

Me : I just wish Alpha would take Junior away from her ! Make sure she never ever sees him again.

Mute: Let's not get head over hills about this before we hear Amara's side of the story, we should be bigger than this cause we all know somtimes papers print lies.

Me: Does that look like a lie to you ? It's here ! Black and white Amara is kissing Drew infront of a Cinema! They must've went out for a movie date and only the lord knows what happened next after that date. I am done with that girl , i want nothing to do with her , she must stay the hack away from my son !

I got up from the couch and approached the kitchen pouring myself a glass of water , i was disappointed in Amara how could



she ? It's even worse that the guy she is out sleeping with is Alpha competitor, his biggest enemy. Mute and Spike left for Alpha's house as i had headache pills , this whole thing is just stressing me.

ALPHA

The door bell disturbed my sleep with Junior as he was cuddled up against my arm , i wrapped my arm around him and kissed his forehead, daddy's little boy isn't he such a sweetheart or should i say am i not the luckiest father in the world ? Melted my heart every single time i laid my eyes on him , he just makes me better father. I yawned stretching out my hand to my phone checking the time , i overslept, the last thing i remember is laying besides him and patting him to sleep , looks like i fell asleep too . The door bell went off again. I laid Junior's head on the bed slightly covering him with the blanket , i grabbed my vest and walked downstairs. Opening the door Mute and Spike walked in.

Me: This is a surprise.

Mute: Looks like he hasn't seen it.

He uttered those words looking at Spike , Spike nodded his head.

Spike: But then we not here for that.

Me: Come in boys .

They walked in and walked into the kitchen , Mute opened up the fridge taking out beers. He handed me a beer .

Me: No , I can't drink Junior is in the house.

Spike: Is Amara here too?

Me: No she's not.

Mute: So you here with JJ only.

Me: Yes , why are you asking me all these questions.

Spike: Nothing we just asking ain't we Mute.

Mute sipped on the beer clearing his throat , I looked at Mute, he wanted to say something and i can see it is big but he just won't let it slid out his tougue, i was getting really pissed .

Me: So what are you both doing here .

Mute : Can't i come over at my brothers place.

Me: What do you want?

Spike: ( fakes a laugh) Nothing we just came to see how you holding up.

Me: I'm doing great as you can see you just woke me up from peaceful sleep with my son , let me go check on him anyways.

Spike: Don't worry i will.

Me: ( surprised) No you will not , i don't want any criminals next

to my son.

Spike: Your son is fathered by the biggest.

Me: ( chuckles) I'm going to kill you Spike.

Spike: Let me go check on the lad , i think Mute has something he wants to discuss with you.

I walked inside the kitchen and took out his bottle from the warmer, i handed it to Spike.

Me: You can fed a baby right?

Spike: Giving a baby milk is not rocket science i think i will manage.

Me: If his awake Spike if not you get away from him.

Spike: Yes sir.

He walked up the stairs to the rooms , i sat down next to Mute and looked at him , he narrowed his brows and sighed .

Me: What do you want to talk about?

Mute: How do i tell you this , you know you make it hard for someone to talk to you sometimes Alpha.

I just blinked trying to figure out what he wanted to say. He placed the beer on the table and held my hand , i looked at him and got up from the chair walking away from him.

Me: Hell no Mute ! Don't you even say it !

Mute: Alpha what's going on?

Me: Are you gay?

Mute: What !?

Me: Are you gay man ? Cause the way you touched my hand just made me suspicious .

Mute: I am not gay , what is wrong with you ! No , Jesus Christ Alpha no , i am straight!

Me: Then why were you touching my hand?

Mute: ( chuckles) It's a brotherly touch you moron.

Me: Just tell me what you want to say.

Mute : So this morning a top story hit the front page of the newspaper.

Me: You know i don't entertain newsletter or newspapers cause i know they print lies.

Mute: Yes i do but this involves JJ's Mom.

Me : Amara? What is she doing in a newspaper?

Mute: Was was captured with someone that is not off your liking last night and they on the front page. And i have to say that bastard is behind all this , the is no such thing as paparazzi

in SA , he organized everything.

Me: Let me go get my phone

Mute: You can search it on mine.

He handed me his phone, i paged to google and searched for Amara McKenzie and on news a article showed up . My heart shattered as i read the title of the story. I couldn't believe my eyes , trying to piece all this in front of my eyes and what we had last night just sent me straight to ragging anger .

Me: what the hell am i looking at ? What is this! What nonsense is this?

Mute: i know it's hard to believe.

Me: Is this Drew? Is Drew holding the mother of my child?

Mute: I know what you think so don't you even think I'll let you out that door.

Me: No , This is spite , his messing around with the mother of my child to get to me ! And he did , they both going to know who the hell i am ! I will show them.

I quickly walked up the stairs to my room, i took out my pistol from the safe inserting bullets.

Spike: Alpha i know this is hard for you to accept but let this be champ, you and her broke up isn't it what she ia doing with her

life now shouldn't bother you ? You are a father now , the tendency of pulling out your gun everytime someone disrespects you won't work it will get you killed and you will leave this lad to be raised by the Hughes after they had smoke you , i know it's hard seeing someone you gave your all to love someone else trust me i do. I went into the military field for a 6 months and came back home with my girlfriend married to someone else know what i did? I pulled out my gun and almost smoked that guy but because I'm a sensible guy , i sat down with myself and had inner conflict with myself , if she really loved me that deelpy she should've waited till i got back , she should've held on tight and not give in to lust or even love to another man. If you want to live long you will have to train your heart to accept disappointments even if it comes from those you trusted and would've died for , that's the way of Life man.

I looked at him as he poured his heart about his sob story , it was touching but i had already made up my mind . I am going to Amara places and she and her little boyfriend will be sorry.

Me: Take Junior to Mom , i have business to take care off.

Spike: Alpha don't do this to yourself! Bro you bigger than this come one !

Me: You don't even know me Spike, we have been around for what ? 2 minutes and now you pretending like you were changing by diapers ? I said take Junior to Mom i won't repeat

myself .

Spike: Okay , fine.

Me: Make sure you drive carefully with my son.

I took out a jacket and placed it on zipping it up grabbing my car keys. Mute took out his gun and pointed it to me.

Mute: Let it go !

Me: If you going to shoot me make sure you kill me brother.

Mute: The must be some sort of an explanation for that picture Alpha.

Me: As you can see i am on my way to hear that explanation.

Mute: With a gun ? You are not there to talk i know you, you there to kill !

Me: ( chuckles) You damn right i am , now get out of my way.

Mute: No !

Me: Wrong answer.

I placed my index finger on the trigger , i jabbed my gun at him releasing a shot , i shot him on his arm , he groaned holding the bleeding arm.

Mute: ( yelling) You crazy son of bitch!

Me: I just grazed you stop being a baby.

I walked to him and pushed him aside walking out the door .

Security: Are you off somewhere sir?

Me: Open the damn gate.

He opened up the gate as i drove out .

LOGAN

I got a call from Mom that she and father had a fallout , i quickly rushed to the location she had given me. She was sobbing over the phone and that left my heart sore hearing my mom cry for my dad like that. I parked my car and walked to the apartment, Abbygail opened the door for me , she just looked at me and left the door opened as i got in , looks like she is still angry at me for spiking her drink. Ma was sitting on the couch with tissues laying around on the floor. I walked in the living room and gave her a hug. Her nose was red , eyes puffy , she looked traumatised.

Me: Mommy what happened? I'm so sorry.

Thandeka: It's okay my baby , it's not your fault.

Me: What happened? Abbygail?

Abbygail: Ask your mom.

She walked into the other room and closed the door , i rolled my eyes annoyed cause she's just being childish and rude.



Me : And her what is her story?

Thandeka: She's just angry over what happened.

Me : What happened Ma?

Thandeka: ( sobbing) Your father is divorcing me.

Me: ( surprised) What ! Why? You and him have been together for like what? Forever? Why now?

Thandeka: I did a very bad thing Logan , i broke his heart.

Me: It can't be that bad that it should end in court can't you talk things out.

Thandeka: You think i didn't try that? Cause i did? And you know what i got? I almost lost my life , your father was raging in anger , ready to feast on my blood , he was hungry for my blood.

Me: Oh my poor mommy , I'm so sorry

Thandeka: And if he divorces me , i will be left with nothing Logan.

Me: But you have been married for + 30 years you can't walk out with nothing.

Thandeka: I can Logan , i signed a prenuptial agreement just to prove i wasn't getting married to him because of his wealth but for love.

Me : Wow Mom good thinking.

Thandeka: I just can't let him divorce me .

Me: Then what are you going to do?

Thandeka: i will have to fight for my husband.

Me: How cause you said it yourself he can't stand the sight of you.

Thandeka: I will have to fight for him in a traditionally way.

I looked at her as i whispered.

Me : You mean like herbs and things?

Thandeka: what other choice do i have?

Me: That's witchcraft Mommy , i don't think you should resort to such atleast wait for him to cool down and go try again , you have been with that man for long you should know which buttons to press to soften him up.

Thandeka: Wait? Wait till when? Till my husband files for divorce?

Me: Till you both calm down and approach this matter in a calm way. Wipe your tears now , you are breaking my heart.

I took some tissues and cleaned her cheeks

AMARA

I walked out the bathroom wrapping my body with a towel as a hard bang on the door came through, it was so loud and hard , it scared me , i was even afraid to go open up the door , i walked to the door tip toeing applying pressure so it doesn't open up.

Me: who is it?

A loud deep voice demanded back at me to open up the door , i just knew it was Alpha. I unlocked the door as he budged in holding a gun. I looked at him in fright , i looked outside the corridors to see if no one saw him , i closed the door and locked it.

Me: Are you mad ? Why are you carrying a gun like that in broad daylight!

He looked at me and laughed throwing a newspaper at me , i picked the newspaper from the floor and looked at it , i looked at him embarrassed, i murmured unable to say a word.

Alpha: Drew though ? Drew Hughes though Amara? Why him ?

Amara: ( stuttering) I don't know ... i can't explain I'm confused.

He clapped his hands and laughed.

Alpha: Congratulations Amara McKenzie, you have got back at me ! You have hurt me too !

Me : No this is not what you think.

Alpha : It is what i think ! It is ! You are fucking my enemy.

Me: Drew is not your enemy Alpha , he is a good man nothing like you !

Alpha: Oh is he? Is that how he potrays himself to you is that how he wormed himself inside your legs?

Me: No .

He unzipped his jacket and took it off tearing off his vest. He pointed the gun on his left shoulder that had a scar of the bullet wound.

Alpha: Do you see this wound? Do you remember the state you found me in that day at the hotel? Who do you think ordered this hit on me ? The man you killed at the hotel? Who ordered that hit too. I am in a war with these people and you Amara! You ! You are sleeping with the man i hate the most , there are a lot of man in this country Amara , you can have any man you want , but Drew? Really ?

I was confused , i real didn't get what was happening? Alpha would never lie about all that , he was angry , i could see the hurt in his eyes.

Me : I'm sorry , i didn't know.

I held the towel against my body cuddling myself up against the door , he was so angry, i was so scared of him , i felt unsafe .

Alpha: ( chuckles) Oh relax sweetheart don't be scared , i just need you to call your male friend or should i say boyfriend over so we all could have a little talk.

My lips were dry , i looked at him swallowing the last saliva leaving my mouth dry , my lips were sticky and dry , could feel the peeling flesh sticking out as i bite on my lower lip ripping the flesh off with my teeth.

Me: Can i make you coffee? Just so you calm down.

He launched towards me and grabbed me by my throat. He sniffed knocking with the pistol on the door next to my head , i could breathe in fright, my heart roughly beating in my ribcage to break free , i sobbed with my mouth closed.

Alpha : What did i just instruct you to do.

Me: ( sobbing) To call Drew.

Alpha: Then what are you waiting for?

Me: I'll just go get my phone.

Alpha: Off you go , little whore.

I got my phone out the charger and sat on the couch , shaking to hold it as i typed in the password, he sat besides me and placed the gun on the coffee table. I dialed Drew's number as the phone rang. Praying he doesn't pick up the call, tears dropped from my eyes.

Me : His not picking up.

Alpha : So he usually picks up quickly or you wait?

Me: I have never called him before.

Alpha: Funny cause you even have his number saved , looks like you two chat all night huh love birds.

Drew picked up the called as Alpha placed the phone on speaker.

Drew : Hey beautiful.

I looked at Alpha he was clinching on his teeth , his jaw muscles moved. I took a deep breath.

Me: Can you ( breathes)...can you come over Drew.

Drew: Are you okay? You sound like you not at ease.

Me: No i am at ease , i just want to talk to you about last night.

Drew: Listen Amara i know we shouldn't have kissed okay , my bad.

Alpha got up from the chair stretching his head just pacing across the room.

Me: Please come over now.

Drew: I'll be with you in a minute.

I hung up the call and cried loud.

Me: It's not what you thinking , i swear.

Alpha: I don't give a damn Amara ! I don't give a hell about you swearing! I seriously don't. I don't give a flying bee . Go get dressed so we wait for your lover boy.

I got up from the couch and walked into the bedroom , i quickly got dressed .Oh god is he going to kill me ? Why can't he just let me explain. I feel so bad seeing him hurt like that , i feel so bad i wish i just didn't go out with Drew , just thinking about what Alpha must be going through finding out , i actually went on the date with the man that caused us so much suffering breaks my heart , i have destroyed him . I wore clothes and walked into the living room , he was seated on the couch with the gun next to him , his finger on the trigger.

Me: I'm sorry , i didn't know , he didn't tell me who he really was , i can see you hurting , i understand and you have every right to be angry at me but please don't allow this to destroy you , you are a beautiful Alpha , you got a heart gold , it's just that you look yourself in the wrong mirrors and you locked your heart away.

Alpha : No you wrong on one thing , i didn't lock my heart away , i gave it to you and that was the worst mistake of my life , my biggest lesson was falling inlove with you. You betrayed me Amara , you a traitor.

I held on my mouth and cried , i walked to him and kneeled before him holding his thighs.

Me : Please don't say that , you don't mean that , you know deep inside you don't mean that.

Alpha: I meant every word.

Me: ( crying) No !

Someone knocked on the door , Alpha looked at me and got up pushing me aside as i fell on the floor , i collected myself and sat up and placed my chin on my knees holding my legs. Alpha opened the door.

Alpha: Get in.

Drew: You son of a bitch where is Amara!

Alpha: Come inside and fin out.

He walked inside and walked towards me .

Drew: Amara why you crying ? What did he do to you?

Me: ( crying) Get away from me ! You lied to me ! You tricked me !

Drew: What are you talking about?

Me: Are you the one that sent people shoot Alpha?

He looked down .



Me: I can't believe you .

Drew: I'm sorry Amara.

Me : Sorry for what? For using me to get to him ! Well you have succeed ! Job well done Drew Hughes. You have just walked into the lions den.

Alpha: This is so adorable , our Bollywood couple Mr and Mrs Hughes what a touching scene to watch you look made for each other.

I got up from the floor.

Me: ( yelling) Don't call me that , I am not Mrs Hughes nor am i meant for any of you lying bastards! You both are the same conniving and deceiving you the same and I'm the fool here always.

Alpha: Victim Amara , stop acting so innocent! You not innocent either.

Drew: Just let Amara go this is between you and me.

Alpha : The bait is going nowhere , isn't it princess?

Me: what is really going on here? Why are you doing this to me ! How the hell did i end up in the front of a newspaper while you kissed me forcibly , was it all planned?

Drew: Yes it was , all of it , me knocking on your door ,

everything.

Me: You bastard !

I walked to him and slapped him continuously, till i ran short of breath. I pulled away from him sobbing in tears.

Drew: I'm sorry but you were Alpha's only weakness and i had to do what i had to do , nothing personal it was just business.

Me: Is that all i was to you ? Alpha's weakness and business?

Drew: ( smiles) Pretty much.

I couldn't believe my ears , i held on my chest taking deep breaths.

Alpha : Did you really think he loves you or he was falling inlove with you?

Me: I don't know maybe.

Alpha: ( scoffs) You got played then , fair and square so whose bed will you be sleeping in tonight Amara? Will i be banging you against the wall just like i did last night then you go spend the night with Drew?

Drew: You did what ? Amara you did what?

Me : ( crying ) I'm sorry.

Drew: You let me wait for you while you were having sex with Alpha?

Me: I just happened it was a mistake.

Alpha: ( scoffs) A tight , wet mistake.

Me : Just stop it Alpha please.

Alpha: I did nothing wrong here , just trying to prove i always win even when you think you have won Mr Hughes i win , checkmate ( smiles) bitch.

Drew : But i got to you isn't it ? Won't change the fact i had her and if i hadn't let the reporter write that article i would've slept with her.

I looked at them as they talked about me like I'm some sort of a trophy, i felt belittled as two grown men fought over me. I walked to Alpha and looked at him

Me: Don't you dare say another and this goes to both of you ( yelling) I am not the girl a boy gets at the end of the movie! I am not a fantasy! I won't stand here and listen to you two talk about me like i am a girl in a story! I am not your toy ! Get out of my house.

They both kept quiet as i took deep breaths , breathing loudly , Drew placed his hand at the back of his waist i looked at him , Alpha looked at him too and two shots were released right next to my ear , i held on my ear as my ear drum ringed . I turned and looked at Drew he was on his knees on the floor bleeding from his knee caps , Alpha shot his knees.

Drew: ( crying ) You bastard ! ( groaning in pain) Ahh !

I ran to him as Drew cried on the floor , trying to figure out what to do ? Alpha inserted his hand in his zipped up jacket.

Me: You shot him !

Alpha: Yes i did.

Me: You shot him ! ( turning to Drew) Oh my god are you fine?

Alpha: No his not fine , he won't be able to walk to any cinema dates with no ones baby mama anytime soon.

Me: You are crazy ! Alpha you insane !

Alpha : I take after my dad.

I looked at the gun that was on the floor behind Drew , i picked it up the pistol getting on my feet.

Me: ( yelling) Why are you doing all this ! Why?

Alpha: Because you fail to keep your legs closed. You cheating on me with my rival Amara! I won't tolerate being disrespected like that woman !

Me: You put everything on me and nothing is ever on you ! You cheated on me ! You left me when i needed you the most you fucked up ! Now you fucking my life up !

He looked at Drew that was groaning in pain on the carpet bleeding.

Alpha: now you got a bigger problem , don't you?

I looked at Drew .

Me: You think Drew is my problem?

Alpha: Put your big girl panty's on and take care of him

Me: Drew is not my problem!

Alpha: ( shouting) Then who is !

He launched towards me , fear arouse from my body i pointed the gun at him out of pulse to protect myself and closed my eyes pulling the trigger a bullet escaped the gun as it pushed me back , the power the gun had it made me take a step back . I opened up my eyes and looked at him , his jaw was dropped with his fingers against his torso , he was bleeding, my heart raced out of my chest as he was quiet, he looked at me his face written " disbelief " i couldn't believe i shot him , i dropped the gun on the floor.

Me : ( calling out) Alpha .

He looked at me as i took a step closer to him , he held on the kitchen counter sinking to the floor , i bottled up tears couldn't move from where i was standing. I shot him.

To be continued

MEGAN

The house has been treating me well i can say , living in a house of my own the luxuries that came with it were just worthy to be mine. I made myself a vodka cocktail and wore a lingerie walking to the pool , i sat down taking pictures and posting them on my Instagram page with the caption " if he doesn't take care of you like mine does with me , stop wasting your time sis" my followers kept commenting on my picture.

@Megan : ohhh my word , soft life

@Megan : slay slay slay QUEEN !!!

@Megan: You deserve it all , the love, the house , the luxuries , take it all.

@Megan : A whole goddess, Yass Queen.

@Megan : A Queen that just keep QUEEING.

I kept laughing at the comments as men shared silly sexual comments about my body , it was nice having that kind of attention for once in this period of my life. My phone rang and it was my mom. I got up from the pool and walked around .

Me: Ma.

Mom: Megan where are you?

Me: Why Mom?

Mom: Don't why mom me ? Are you living in Steve's house yet?

Me: No i moved out.

Mom: Moved out to were?

Me: To a house of a close friend.

Mom: You tend to forget you are the daughter of a Mayor , you act ratcheted and do whatever that suits you right without thinking of the precautions that will do to our family, i am ordering you to come back home !

Me: I'm afraid that is not going to happen order declined.

Mom: Megan i won't repeat myself!

Me : Mom have a good day okay.

I dropped my call and sat down on the pool chair relaxing my body , i am having the time of my life in a space that is mine and she wants me to throw this all away . Can't she see she is honestly killing my vibe . I have Amara in the tip of my hand and Steve too but she wants me to give that all up. Amara deserves all bad coming her way as for Steve he will have to marry me or face bankruptcy cause i know Nandi is going to wipe him clean when she divorces him. It's either we marry in secret or in public i don't care but i want to be his wife , either he likes it or not.

AMARA

I called an ambulance while waiting for it Alpha was losing consciousness. I slap him as he was closing his eyes.

Me: (sobbing) Don't ! Alpha , look at me.

His chest was rising and descending rapidly as i applied pressure on his shot wound , Drew was still kneeling on the floor also groaning in pain , i kept sobbing with my hands covered in his blood as all the terrible memories of that man i shot at the hotel came back , Alpha looked at me with his eyes slightly closing up. His lips shaked , they were dry , he tried swallowing Saliva and looked at me . I took his hand and placed it on my cheek , laying my cheek against his hand.

Alpha: ( panting) I'm sorry.

I shook my head and cried.

Me: No , I am sorry.

Alpha: ( stuttering) I..i love you so much.

Me: I love you so so much too , please don't die on me , please.

Alpha : I'm sorry for everything i hope you forgive me and my soul.

He closed his eyes and his hand descended from my cheek , i shook him aggressively and in. frustrations , he was dying and we couldn't even make things right between us , i was losing him.



Me : No ! Don't you dare ! You promised you will never leave me , you promised you will come back to me , don't you dare die on me Alpha.

I applied pressure on his gun shot wound till the paramedics arrived, they pushed me aside and quickly helping Alpha with breathing object as they pumped it on his nose and mouth , they took off his jacket he was wearing applying pressure on the gun shot wound , that was releasing blood and fluids it was gruesome seeing all the blood on his chest .

Paramedic : There is a pulse , lets get him onto the stretcher.

I exhaled holding my hands together whispering in my heart " thank you lord" loading him in a stretcher they took Drew too , i got in the ambulance with Alpha holding his hand throughout the ride to the hospital. I tightened my grip on his hand and kissed it.

Me: Don't go , not yet please my love.

I held on his hand couldn't even bare the thought of him dying and years later explaining to Junior that i murdered his father, how will my son look at me , i won't be able to forgive myself knowing I'm the reason for Alpha's death. The ambulance arrived, they rolled him in as Jaden came to assist .

Paramedic : Estimated age , 35 or 36 year old male , gun shot on the torso needs Surgery.

Jaden: Roll him into Theater.

Me: Please Jaden , help him

Jaden: It's okay Amara I'll do everything in my power to help him , don't worry yourself to much you will fall sick too.

He quickly left the room following Alpha unconscious body to the operation room, i sat down on the steel chairs holding my head crying uncontrollably. What have i done ? I sat down alone in the cold hallway of the hospital as Alpha was still inside the operation room, i heard walks across the room as they grinding my way , lifting up my head it was Alpha's parents and Mute. Nandi was in tears as she looked at me the rage and anger in her eyes , there was no hiding she hated me . She walked up to me as i got up from the chair.

Nandi: You tried to kill my son !

She got a hold on my clothes and began beating me slapping me as i shielded myself from the beatings.

Steve: Nandi stop it !

Nandi: No ! I will not stop ! I will not !

He pulled her away from me as my face was burning from the slaps and fist i endure , in tears , i got on my knees.

Me: I'm sorry, i didn't mean to shoot hin

Nandi: You didn't mean to shoot him? ( chuckles) Well you did BRAVO Amara you shot my child and he is in there fighting for his life .

Me: ( sobbing) He will be okay , Alpha is a fighter.

Nandi : you better pray he is okay! You better or i will make sure you never ever see Junior ever again mark my words you piece of trash ! I accepted you as low standard you were for my family, i accepted you and loved you as a daughter but little did i know , i was inviting in destruction in my own household, I curse the day my son met someone like you and i swear on my life if something happens to my son you will feel the wrath of my ancestors , You better pray my son doesn't die on that operation table or i will make sure you suffer for the rest of your already sorry trash of life and that goes to your generations to come that don't have my lineage in their blood steam.

Steve: Nandi that's enough!

Nandi: ( shouting) It's never enough !

She looked at me and got closer to me and spat on my face.

Mute: Ma please .

Nandi: ( heavy breathing) You witch.

She turned around and walked away from me as Steve followed

her to reception.

Mute: Here is a piece of tissue.

Me: No thank you, I'm fine, i think you should. Alpha's mom won't be happy with you if you stay with me.

He placed the tissue in my hand and walked away. I was left alone as nurses passed me looking at me cause everyone saw how Nandi disgraced me and spat on my face. She is a grieving mother and i understand her frustrations i shot her baby boy. Two police man approached me , i wiped my tears and face.

Policeman: Amara McKenzie?

I nodded my head crying handing my wrist to them as he applied cuffs on me.

Policeman: Amara McKenzie you are under arrest for shooting Alpha Smith , anything you say will be used against you in the court of law , you have a right to a lawyer if you can't afford any the state will provide you with one.

The hospital staff and patients piled up in the corridor as they shot photos of me and made vidoes. I was walked out the hosiptal and into the back of the van drove to the police station, i couldn't stop crying at the back of the van , couldn't stop thinking about being jailed for shooting Alpha and locked up for a very long time . Junior is going to grow up without his mom. I sobbed even more crying out.

DREW

The last thing i remember is being transported to the hospital that's when they gave me a shot to make me sleep. I opened up my eyes and looked around me at the room at the hospital.

Abbygail: His awake.

Thabo: Son , are you okay?

Me: Father where am i?

Thabo : You are at the hosiptal son.

Me: How is Alpha?

Thabo : He is critical and i hope he dies on that hosiptal bed.

Abbygail: How are you feeling Drew.

I blinked as i tried moving my toes , i panicked when i felt nothing, i reached down with my hands and touched my legs, i bottled up tears panicking.

Me: I can't feel my legs! .

Abbygail: Drew calm down !

Me: ( yelling and crying) No don't tell me ! I should calm down ! I can't feel my legs! ( screaming continuously) I can't feel my legs ! Father i can't feel my legs. Call the doctor !

Abbygail: It's probably shock Drew you will be okay.

Me: I said call the doctor don't tell me about no damn shock! I want my legs !

Thandeka: Abby go call the doctor please.

She walked out the room my heart was pacing in my chest as i tried to figure out why i couldn't feel my legs , i was so scared so afriad of not being able to walk again, i pinched my thighs and i couldn't feel anything tears began streaming down my face

Thabo: No ! What are you doing ! Don't you dare cry ! You will be embarrassing yourself .

Abbygail walked in with the doctor.

Abbygail: He said he can't feel his legs.

She took out a pen from her pocket as i looked down she revealed my feet, she placed the pen under my feet i could see the movement of her wrist .

Doctor: Do you feel anything?

Me:( shaking is head) No ! I dont.

Doctor: Do you feel pain when i poke you.

Me: ( sobbing) I can't feel anything.

Doctor: ( sighs) try moving you toes.

Me: I can't! I can't! I tried, i can't move my toes.

Doctor: We run some test and x-rays to see the amount of damage your legs suffered and i can say it was tremendous, the bullet went passed your knee cap damaging nerve cells in your knee , but we came to the conclusion it must be a traumatic stress disorder from the shots you endured in your knee that makes you feel paralyzed that's understandable give your body some time , I'm sure you will be able to move your toes or if not we will have to look into other treatment options for you.

Me: Doctor don't give me that crap ! Tell me facts.

Thabo: What are the chances he will be able to walk again?

Doctor : It's 30% miraculously.

Me: That the hell is that supposed to mean ! So i won't be able to walk again? Unless some miracle happens?

Doctor: I'm sorry.

Me: Don't you dare say you sorry ! Do you damn job and give me my feet back.

Doctor: I am not God sir , I'm a doctor, i will do up to my best capability to help you but in i will still demand respect, you need me not the other way around, thank you.

She walked out the room as we all looked at her.

Me: Who the hell does she think she is ? A doctor in Cuba .

Abbygail: You were kind of rude to her Drew.

Me: Just shut up ! What do you know ? Are you the one laying paralyzed on this bed ?

Abbygail: Fine sorry , I'm quiet.

Thabo: We will have to take her word on this and if she doesn't come up with a solution, we will have to get other opinions on your condition.

Me: So now i have a condition !

Thabo : I didn't mean it in that way Drew.

Me: All of you just leave ! Get out.

Thabo: Son i didn't mean it in that way.

Me: I don't care ! Get out ! Give me space!

They walked out the room as i laid down sobbing, i can't believe i lost my legs , i won't be able to ride or walk ever again. I am paralyzed.

NANDI

I sat down in the waiting room as Steve held my hand. I held his hand tightly buried in tears. Mute walked in holding a glass of water , he handed it to me.

Me: Thank you.



Mute: Any news on how his doing?

Me: No , he is still in the operation room.

Steve: Alpha is a fighter.

Thandeka and Thabo walked in , i looked at her as she gave me an evil eye .

Thabo: My condolences in advance.

I got up from the chair an slapped him as he was about to raise his hand on me , Mute took out his gun and pointed it against his head , Cohen pointed his to Mute's head .

Mute: I dare you Old man , hit her and you will see what I'm going to do to you.

Thabo: ( scoffs) My boy i am not afraid of death.

Mute: Try me old man ! Just try me.

Steve: Mute back down. We in a hospital , Thabo is not worth it , we here for Alpha we shouldn't be fighting with low lives like Thabo and his family.

Mute: Honestly i don't give a damn where we are and I'm am sick and tired of all these games we playing with these bloody Hughe people! Alpha is fighting for his life trying to protect the mother of his child from your bitch ass son !

Steve: Son please listen to me.

I held Mute's hand lowering it from Thabo's head.

Me: Listen to your father Mute, his not worth it.

Thandeka : While your son is fighting for his life our son is facing life without the ability to work.

Me: Do i honestly look like i give a damn about what Drew is going through, he deserves to be unable to walk to his legs keep him away from peoples woman.

Thandeka: ( laughs) Oh really ? Cheap coming from someone like you i thought you were better than this Nandi but clearly i was wrong.

Me: When it comes to my baby don't act like you know me.

Thandeka: I guess i shouldn't.

Me: As for you Thabo , my son is not dying just yet , Alpha will not die not till he has killed your son for coming after what he loves. Your son was playing with fire and now he got burnt.

Thabo: ( smiles) I will keep the lad in my prayers if i have the time to pray.

Me: we won't be needing your dirty prayers !

Thabo: Easy Momma bear ( scoffs) How does it feel Steve? To be at the edge of losing your son over something you would've handled in a peaceful way , all you had to do was go 50/50 with

me but because you were greedy and power hungry you declared war .

Steve: Don't talk to me boy , just walk out this room gracefully.

They all walked out the room. We sat down.

Mute : Those people are just signing their death certificate.

Me:Don't let them get under your skin Mute , they just toothless dogs barking.

The doctor walked in as he wore his coat , i got up from the chair impatiently to hear what he has to say.

Jaden : ( sighing) The operation was a success .

I exhaled and laughed in joy as i hugged them both.

Me: Thank you lord.

Steve: Thank you Doc.

Jaden : I was only doing my job,We managed to pull the bullet out without any vital complications , he lost a lot of blood in the process but we managed to supply him with blood , for now his in ICU , the first 24 hours is a crucial night so we will keep a close eye on him for any complications.

Mute: I and Spike will begin moving into the hosiptal, i will personally gaurd Alpha till he wakes up , we can't risk him being alone here.

Me: Can i see him ?

Jaden : We will let you in but only you.

Steve: Ofcause it's fine you can let my wife in , we will wait outside.

Jaden: You may follow me , I'll lead you to his room.

We walked out and approached the room Alpha is in . The doctor opened the door as i walked in , i broke down into tears. I walked to his bedside and kissed his forehead.

Me: Oh my baby , my beautiful baby boy ( sobbing) I am so sorry.

I held his hand and kissed him brushing his forehead , he was laid face up with drips in his nose and into his hospital wear , my son was quiet in deep sleep as the only noise in the room was his pulse that was beeping in the machine.

Jaden : His vitals are doing well , you gave birth to a fighting.

I smiled through my tears and kissed Alpha's hand.

Me: He is born in a family of fighters.

Jaden: ( smiles) I will be down the corridors if you need me.

Me: Thank you so much for saving my son.

Jaden : You don't have to thank me , i am doing my job.

He walked out the room as i was left looking at Alpha , his skin was pale with his lips dry with dead skin , with a ventilator covering his nose and mouth as he could breathe through it. I have never been this close to him since the age of 14 , he always back away from me when i tried being close to to hold him . Even when i get the chance to hold him and give him the motherly love it was just for seconds and he backs away from me. Remember when he had impregnated a girl while he went out movies , that girl was his first love probably the first girl he let into his heart . When he told me the girl was pregnant he was panicking thinking of all young father's are going through, asking if he would be a good father or will he fail his child. That's when we knew he wasn't ready for that , he wasn't mentally fit to be in that kind of situation , he was a kid and we made the decision that the girl should terminate the baby and we paid her family handsomely covering the damages Alpha did and my baby boy was also strong on that occasion. Even when he'd fall sick he would hide he was sick till he could barely walk because of weakness , he got so used to hiding his pain and grieve that it nearly got him killed and when he finally had someone to love and share his pain and grieve with he nearly lost his life in the hands of that woman. Amara won't ever step a feet closer to Alpha and i will make sure of it , as long as my son is laying unconscious on this bed i will rain terror and destruction on Amara's life and that is a promise.

62

MUTE

Spike and i spent the night outside Alpha's room , he was still unconscious just laying on the hosiptal bed.

Spike: do you think he will wake up?

Me: Why wouldn't he?

Spike: I know people that die in a coma Mute that's why I'm asking.

Me: He will , he will have to.

Spike: Can't believe Amara actually shot Alpha , the nerve and guts she has.

Me: I still fail to believe what led her into pulling the trigger .

Spike: Maybe she shot Alpha for Drew.

Me: No ! Don't say that ! Amara would never hurt Alpha intentionally especially for another man , she loves Alpha .

Spike: This is a woman species we talking about here , those people don't have the guts to hurt anyone.

Me: We living in the twentieth century my friend , women are just as cruel as men.

Spike: I'm still shocked , we should really watch ourselves

around that woman.

Me: Amara is no threat to us.

Spike : But still watch her.

Me: She's in jail now so there's no need to watch her . You know Spike when Alpha wakes up and Amara is still in jail he will spite fire.

Spike: Won't change the fact his mother placed Amara behind bars not any of us.

Me: He will still be mad at us and not his mom , he will just be angry at everyone cause we have the power to turn this whole situation.

Spike: We will cross that bridge when we get there. I'm going to get us some caffeine so we don't fall asleep.

Me: Please do , don't add sugar in my coffee.

Spike: Okay.

Spike got up from the chair and walked to the cafeteria, i got up from the chair and slightly opened the door in Alpha's room , i got in and checked the room for anyone inside , i looked at the window and closed it , closing the curtains. I looked towards his direction , i walked over to him and placed my hand on the sheets.

Me: Brother.

I called out to him and smiled . Alpha was like a brother to me , even though we don't share the same love but he showed the young brother love , he is the one that introduced me to his dad , i was just a bad wild kid that ran away from home because of being treated badly , i would watch my mother get beaten up day in and day out , my childhood memories are just nightmares . Just imagine a young boy standing in front of his father shielding his mother from getting beaten and i can say that was the most stupid move got i got a very good hiding from my dad that night that results to me having a broken arm . I resulted into mixing up with gangs in my neighbourhood. We would rob people their phones and wallets and i met Alpha , he was this cheese boy that had everything any young boy could imagine , he had a car at 18 , first time i met him he came to drop off a girl in my neighbourhood and i tried robbing him , fool wasn't i but i saw a jackpot that i needed to cash in , he beat me up into a pulp and took me to hospital . Then i met Pop's who took me in and treated me as his son not to mention the kindness Nandi showed me , the love she diverted my way , it suppressed the love my biological mother gave me . Years back my mother passed on , she was involved in a car accident and the Smith's were with me through that grieve , i owe this family my life .



Me: Hey bro it's me Mute , i don't know how these hospital things work but i saw in a movie that when a person is in a coma they can hear your voice so I'll just give this a try. You seriously need to come back Alpha , your mom is not well she is blaming Amara for your condition and i know she would never hurt you intentionally bro , i would hate to say this but bro i still need you bra , you are like my elder brother even though sometimes we don't get along but that's how siblings roll isn't it? You bastard shot me ( chuckles) not that I'm complaining cause i knew you would resort to such . We love you Alpha and we need you, Junior needs his dad and you better not die you bastard . I'm here guarding you and i will remain here till you regain consciousness but i need you to hang in there champ.

I tapped my fingers awkwardly on the sheet , i looked at him walking out the door. Spike handed me the cup of coffee i drank from it.

Spike: so any change in him?

Me: His still the same.

Spike: Damn looks like we will be here more often not that I'm complaining.

He looked at a nurse that passed right passed us , the lady looked at him and smiled , he smiled back with his eyes fixated on the girls booty.

Me: You are such a womanizer!

Spike: No I'm not it's just that woman like me.

I sipped on the coffee looking across the corridors and i saw Abbygail . She looked as herself , the Abbygail i rescued from a mugger. I got up and approached her as she was walking down the corridor grabbing her arm as she turned and looked at me.

Abbygail: Marcus.

Me: Mute .

Abbygail: I mean Mute, what do you want?

Me: I just came to ask how you holding up with Drew's situation is he okay?

Abbygail: Is that part of a plan?

Me: Abby don't be like that.

Abbygail: Like what Mute? You broke my heart , i was willingly to love you with every being in me. You used me slept with me and just tossed me aside.

Me: I know, what i did to you was wrong .

Abbygail: But you did it anyway did you? I don't ever want to see you again Mute, don't you ever try getting close to me ever again.

I held her hand pulling her closer to me , she placed her hand

on my shoulder, holding her waist and her neck , i kissed her. She hungrily kissed me back gulping on my lips , wrapping her arms around me as we took our time having a prolonged moment of a deep kiss mixed with emotions, i was warm towards her and i liked it , she pulled away from me breathing.

Abbygail: I have to go.

Me: I'm not stopping you.

Abbygail: Bye Mute.

Me: This is not goodbye.

Abbygail: ( smiles) I hope so.

She walked down the corridor looking back at me fixating the bag that hung on her shoulder.

THABO

Thandeka just felt it was okay to be around me now that Drew was shot not that i had a problem with her being here for Drew but i have not forgotten what she did , i was still divorcing her and that is my final decision. I looked at her as she made me coffee placing the tray in front of me.

Thandeka: Here is a cup of coffee, hope this will make you feel well.

Me: I don't want your coffee.

Thandeka: Thabo please.

Me : Don't please me ! Know what , get out of my house.

Thandeka: What should i do to make it up to you? Honestly tell me , I'm prepared to go an extra mile for you , please honey just tell me what to do?

Me: I want you to get out of my house.

Cohen walked in the room , he looked at me as i had instructed him to go get me a hooker , i needed to let some steam out , it's been a tough week. He cleared his throat standing at the door.

Cohen: Sorry for interrupting you my elders.

Me: You are not interrupting anything come in.

He walked in and whispered in my ear.

Cohen: The girl is here.

I looked at Thandeka .

Me: Get her ready in my room , I'll be with her shortly.

Thandeka: Her? Who is her?

Cohen: I think I'll leave.

Thandeka: Are you bring in hookers in my house for my husband? Cohen how dare you !

I got up from the chair unbuttoning my shirt.

Me: Get her out of my house.

Thandeka: ( sobbing) Thabo don't do this please ! We can work things out please

Cohen held her arm moving her out of the house. I walked inside the bedroom as the girl was waiting for me inside. I opened up my zip looking at her as she laid flat on the bed with her legs up.

AMARA

I sat down in the interrogation room with my hands still bloody , i felt like i was losing my mind not knowing how Alpha is doing and where my son was. A detective walked in the room , he tossed a file on the table and turned the chair seating on it , he placed his arms on the back rest and looked at me.

Detective: I am Detective Zack and you Miss Amara McKenzie are facing 15 years for attempted murder.

Me: 15 ? I can't be in jail for that long i didn't shoot him on purpose i swear please trust me.

Zack: I wish i could but looking at this file , you are going to be locked up for a very long time . Anyways I'm here for your statement walk me over what happened.

Me: Uhm , i shot Alpha.

Zack: What was Alpha doing at your flat?

Me: He came to confront me about the pictures published in the papers.

He got up from the chair and paced around the me.

Zack: So you Miss McKenzie have been dating both these men?

Me: No , that's untrue i wasn't.

Zack: Then why were you caught on Camera kissing Drew Hughes!

Me: He forced himself on me !

Zack: Why didn't you come and open up a sexual assault case against him ? This means you liked it .

Me: ( sobbing) No that's a lie , i told him to take me home.

Zack : Mhh i see . So you shot Alpha for Drew ! You wanted to kill Alpha so you can date Drew with no complications?

Me: I did not shoot Alpha on purpose, we were having a heated argument and i was holding Drew's gun , the gun went off , i didn't mean to i swear.

Zack : Your swearing won't keep you out of Jail Miss McKenzie you are facing 15 years in prison and you know is going to happen to you? You will be in jail surrounded by women that don't give a fuck, women that kill to survive in prison, you will

be with brutal and unsorry woman that have killed willingly. And you won't survive prison is a brutal war zone , it's the survival for the fittest and you Miss McKenzie don't look fit for jail.

He said holding my shoulders talking in my ear , i could hear him breathe in my ear as every word sinked in.

Me: I don't want to go to jail.

Zack: ( chuckles) And what are you prepared to do to not go to jail?

Me: I don't know what do you want from me.

Zack: We noticed you are close to Alpha Smith, " the love of his life " to be precise and am i correct?

I blinked and looked at him as he smirked at me , i nodded my head and looked at my hands that were on my thighs.

Zack: Then you must know about his money laundering business.

I looked at him in shock , How did he know about Alpha's wrong doings . I can't rat Alpha out , he will be facing a lot of years in prison and me too i will be in jail , i need him home with our son just as I'm going to jail.

Me: Laundering business? What are you talking about?

He slammed his fist against the table yelling at me infuriated.

Zack : LIAR ! You know exactly what i am talking about ! If you give me Alpha i will talk to my superiors and make sure you don't set a foot in jail , I'm giving you immunity here Miss McKenzie something you don't even deserve.

Me: I would like that immunity but at the same time i don't know what you talking about all i know is that Alpha has a advertising company and that is all .

Zack: You lying! You are lying Amara and i can see it in your face !

Me: Then jail me Detective Zack cause i know nothing about any laundering business .

Zack: ( laughs) You are going behind bars for a very long time! Are you willing to leave your not even 2 month baby protecting a man ?

Me: I am not protecting Alpha.

He walked to me and pulled the chair like i was nothing staring into my eyes

Zack: ( shouting) you are ! And i am disappointed in you , what kind of a mother that would abandon her baby for a man ! Give me Alpha !

Me: (sobbing) i know nothing.



Zack: Don't lie to me ! I thought you are smarter than this.

I closed my eyes and cried , i had inner conflict to just tell the detective everything but what use will that be when Nandi takes Junior away from me, if i betray Alpha again his family will make sure my life is a living hell , what will be the use of immunity if i lose my baby. I looked at him.

Me: Don't use me as bait to get Alpha cause you will get nothing, i am sick and tired of men dancing on my head! I want to make a call.

Zack: You are not making any call unless you come to your right sense and do the right thing!

He walked away from me picking up the files on the table.

Me: I have a right to a phone call !

Zack: oh so you know about rights now? Those rights are dead because you protecting a criminal.

Me: Okay then forget the phone call can you please tell me if Alpha is okay?

Zack: ( laughs) What a sympathetic murderer, why? You want to go finish him off?

I looked at him as tears pilled up in my eyes , how could he say that about me . He walked out the room and closed the door behind him. I laid my head on the table , Mentally i was

drained , my mind felt like it was about to explode . I closed my eyes wondering if i should pray , i had not strengthen to pray , i found it hard to believe the is a actually a god watching over me . Was there really a god? I was doubting God's plan for my life , is he really doing something ? Does he hear my bleeding and tired heart cry ? Did he care about my life? I needed him to pull through for me , to be my god , be my help , be my saviour .

ABBYGAIL

I just couldn't believe Mute kissed me , i sat down on the couch holding my highlighter and my textbook reading, i kept zooming out of my studies to the passionate kiss i got from the man that made me cry not so long ago. I wonder what changed maybe he has feelings for me , i bite on my nails just biting on my nails smiling to myself, butterfly effect warmed up my tummy with goosebumps. Ma walked in , i placed my books aside , she tossed herself on the couch.

Me: Are you hungry? I ordered a pizza .

Thandeka: No , i just want to go to bed.

Me: Are you okay mommy?

Thandeka: I'm okay baby , i will be okay , i will just go lay down my head.

Me: Okay night.

Thandeka: night honey don't stay up too late.

Me: I won't.

She got up and walked to the bedroom, i pulled the blanket on the couch and covered myself going through my socials. I really couldn't concentrate on my studies , my head was in the clouds.

STEVE

I had a phone call from the doctor, he let me know the drug was ready . Filled with excitement, i finally had a solution to my skinny problem. I walked inside in the main bedroom as Nandi had just finish taking a shower , she was sitting infront of the mirror lotioning her hands.

Me: Jesus Alpha's shooting is circulating on social media.

Nandi: Alpha is a very known man so I'm not surprised.

Me: You and Amara are trending the most , the are vidoes circulating on the internet Nandi , i just think we should've handled this privately as a family matter.

Nandi: Sorry then for going after that witch that tried to kill my baby.

Me: You were hard on the poor girl.

Nandi: ( scoffs) Hard? Oh no i wasn't! Those were just shots of

what I'm going to do to her , she has a hurricane coming her way.

Me: And Junior what is going to happen to him right now?

I walked to the baby crib that was moved into the corner of the room , Junior was asleep in the crib.

Nandi: He is going to stay here with me till Alpha awakes from the Coma.

Me: and Amara what about her?

Nandi: She can go to hell for all i care.

Me: ( sighs) We all know how Alpha will react when he wakes up and realises we locked Amara up , he will be angry at us.

Nandi: As long as his still laying in that bed , Amara can rot in jail for what she did.

Me: know Alpha and Amara's love , reminds me of us.

Nandi: We are not like them.

Me: We are exactly like them.

She smiled and got up as i wrapped my hands around her waist , she laid her head on my chest.

Nandi: What do you remember about us?

Me: Everything , how i chased after you and how i felt the need

to always protect and love you , i hated to see a man close to you because i felt he could see what i saw in you , i remember how freak out i was when you told me you were pregnant for the first time and how shattered we were when you had a miscarriage.

Nandi: And when the doctor told us , my womb is weak it can't carry a child.

Me : You cried the whole night thinking you were less of a woman and scared i would leave you.

Nandi: ( smiles) And our miracle happened.

Me: You fell pregnant and gave birth to a baby boy and we made him Alpha , because he was strong he dominated beyond clinical facts that told us we wouldn't have a child . And look at him now his dominating in everything he does because that's his natured to dominate beyond obstacles, that Coma is laying in he will conquer cause his a Smith we conquer!

Nandi: I don't disagree.

Me : I love you .

Nandi: Steve don't , I'll just go to bed.

Me: I love you Nandi.

Nandi : I love you too.

I kissed her cheek as she checked up on Junior and got into bed.

Me: Let me go sleep.

Nandi: Come to bed Steve.

Me: ( smiling) Are you sure?

Nandi: ( smiles) I'm sure .

I smiled licking my lips , this meant me and my wife are working things out , she has forgiven me. I took off my slippers and got into bed , I laid down besides her placing my arm over her body, it felt so good to be against the warm body of my wife and not that skinny girl. I held on her curved thighs brushing myself against her sticked out booty. My muscle was getting up , i was getting horny but at the same time i knew i mustn't push her to hard , sleeping next to her is already a privilege, wanting intercourse with her will be stepping boundaries. I closed my eyes and fall asleep.

To be continued.

Bonus insert . 😊

63

LOGAN

Mom told me about what happened to Drew i felt sorry for him and i just want to go see my brother and feel sorry for him . I

prepared to go visit him at the hospital applying make up and heels , i was stunning but in a respectful way , i took my bag and cellphone walking out the hotel room to my car at the parking lot. I also remember that Alpha also is fighting for his life in hospital , God what is going on with men in my life ? I drove to the market and bought him a bouquet of flowers and a basket of fruits. I drove towards the hospital and walked into reception.

Me: Hello may you please check Drew Hughes room for me please.

Receptionist: And you are Miss?

Me: I'm his sister Logan Hughes.

She smiled and browsed her computer.

Receptionist: Upstairs in room 231 it's on your left.

Me: Thank you so much have a good day.

I walked in the elevator with a guy holding two coffees, i looked at him and smiled , holding the basket with flowers and fruits close to me. I approached his room looking inside the window that had blinds opened up , he is crying, Drew has tears on his cheeks. I walked in opening up the door looking at him. He was wiping his eyes and quickly laid down like he hasn't shed a tear , i walked in the room.

Me: Hey there.

Drew: ( sniffing) hey sweetheart.

I raised up the basket and smiled.

Me: Brought treats.

Drew: I can see that.

I placed the basket aside and sat besides him , he tried moving but his legs were stiff i got up holding up the pillows behind him , he pushed me away in anger.

Drew: ( frustrated) I can do it myself !

Me: I just wanted to help you.

Drew: Don't try to help me ! I'm fine !

Me: No you not fine brother, i saw you crying.

Drew: And so? Men ain't meant to cry?

Me: I didn't say that but don't refuse to be assisted Drew please, you need your family right now.

Drew: Who said i need you? Logan get out.

Me: (surprised) What!

Drew: I said get out ! And don't you ever come back here ! You must be rejoicing with your boyfriend cause that's what you wanted when you tipped him off about our family plans.



Me: Drew what are you talking about ? Why are you so mean to me? I'm trying to be your sister and support you.

Drew: Go support Alpha he needs your support more than i do.

I looked at him with my jaw dropped, i was speechless didn't know what to say to him , how could he address me in that manner , what did i do to receive such cruelty and be treated like this.

Me: I will just leave Drew cause i could see you dealing with your unfortunate situation so you spitting just hurtful words just so i feel the way you feel and you know what brother? I refuse to let you change my mood into your bitter and hatred ways.

I took my bag and walked out the room , i couldn't stop crying thinking about the way he spoke to me , this means he is on dad's side , they actually think i am a mischievous woman who can't keep her panties on. I took deep breaths not allowing myself to cry , they not worth my tears . I walked to the critical ward and walked in , i looked around and saw two men sitting outside a room i just knew that is were Alpha is , His father is way to protective of him to leave him unguarded. I walked over towards the room , they got up.

Me: I'm not armed.

Spike: we don't care what do you want?

Me: I came to see Alpha.

Mute: Lady if you know what's good for you , you will turn around and go back to wherever you coming from.

Me: I'm Logan Hughes, hasn't Alpha informed you about me?

Mute: I know who you are .

Me: Then please let me see him.

Mute: (chuckles) You must think we fools ,why in the living hell would we let a Hughe in? You want to come finish him off? Alpha broke up with you if I'm not mistaken.

Me: I'm not here to cause trouble.

Spike: ( yelling)Hey lady , get the fuck out of here !

I looked at him as he was burning up in agitation, if i stay any longer i will get myself killed here , i looked through the blinds , he was laying on the bed helplessly , i hope he recovers.

Me: I'm leaving, goodbye.

Spike : Bye princess.

I walked towards the door and drove off , what a sad feeling of rejection to start my day.

AMARA

Last night i was locked in a waiting cell with a lot of women it

smelt all kinds of disgusting things with cockroaches and mosquitoes that were feasting on my body , i kept scratching my whole body practically the whole night , each of the women fearlessly looking at me as i sat at the corner of the room , that's where i cuddled myself to sleep. The bar gates slammed creating a loud bang waking us up. I got up on my feet , the police officer called out a girl in the inside.

Policeman: Let's go ! Let's go ! Stop wasting my time !.

She got up and approached the door , i walked towards the bars that were closing up.

Me: Excuse me sir.

Policeman : Oh wow such respect from a jail bird i wonder what have i done.

Me: I wanted to ask if you know any changes on Alpha Smith.

Policeman: You mean that big tycoon ? No i haven't heard anything.

Me: Oh god , so when am i getting out of here? This place is not for people like me.

The ladies mumbled behind me , the police laughed his lungs out.

Policeman : I can see you new to all this , to answer your question you will be here till your bail hearing what are you in

for?

I looked back to the ladies and held on the bars grabbing tightly on the metal , how do i tell him I'm in here for shooting Alpha , i swallowed hard and stuttered pieces words .

Me: I..i. I'm in for attempted murder.

He looked at me shaking his head and whistling.

Policeman: And you still have the guts to ask when are you going to get out? Lady make yourself comfortable and pray hard . Here i am wasting my time with a muderer.

He walked out the room , i turned walking slowly to the seat that was empty i sat down covering my face with my hands , Oh god , I'm going to jail. A dark voice called out to me.

Lady 1: That's my seat!

I looked at her as she approached me , she was buffy and chubby she walked like a guy with her hands holding her front. She placed her leg on the empty space near me and got closer to my face looking down on me.

Lady 1: I said you are in my seat slut !

I am not going to let this woman bully me , i hate how people have been pushing me around, if she was going to fight me then I'm going to be violent and that was it.

Lady2 : ( laughs) i think she is challenging you.

Lady 1: She wouldn't dare , Hey Miss fancy pants i said you in my seat and I'm going to say this once, if you don't move you will be spitting blood !

I looked at her and smiled.

Me: You can seat besides me.

Lady 1: I want the whole chair , are you blind can't you see am bigger than you.

Me: That's a shame cause I'm not moving from this seat .

She looked at me in disbelief in minutes she grabbed me by my throat as i fought her off , she pushed me to the ground and walked over at me brutally kicking me all around my body , she made a blow on my stomach as my whole intestines got numb, i held on my tummy puking and vomited on the floor. The pain seized my whole body , i fought to get up holding my tummy , i couldn't stand up straight as it felt like she kicked me right on my operation, i didn't shed a tear for the first time in my life knowing myself i would've cried my lungs out , i looked at her and spat on the floor.

Me : Are you done?

Lady 2: Oh wow looks like someone has found her wings.

Lady 1: And i am going to cut those wings !

Me : You will not step any closer to me .

Lady 1: ( laughs) Or what?

Me: I won't only be prosecuted for attempted murder but for both attempted and first degree murder! Try me , i dare you to put your smelling hands me ! I am a woman with a lot of issues i tell you and i don't deserve to be in here ! As i am going through hell please don't make things worse for me I'm begging you.

I walked over to the bunk and sat down , breathing rapidly, i felt like my heart was about to explode and i was proud of myself for standing up for myself. I was really not on my best state and i didn't need trouble, i just want to get out of here.

NANDI

I got dressed and ordered one of the maids to take care of Junior for me as i had to get some business done then go check on my son.

Me: You are going to feed him right now then make sure he is satisfied and bathe him then lay him to sleep okay.

Maid: yes Madam.

Me: Don't do any chores around the house , your chore is to pay attention to my grandson.

Maid: I promise.

Me: I'm leaving now make sure you let the lead maid to make sure Steve eats his breakfast and send food for Mute and Spike at the hospital.

Maid: Yes Mem.

I walked over the crib and kissed Junior on the forehead, i hated the fact he looks like his Mom , the brown eyes just piercing in my soul. Was Alpha's genes that weak? Or was Junior even Alpha's child? Let me get going before i begin to hate my grandson, i can't be thinking of such. I walked out the house to my car and drove off. I got off the police stations and walked into reception were i was directed to the superior of the police station.

Superior: Mrs Smith come in please seat.

Me: Thank you.

I walked in and sat down placing my bag on my thighs.

Superior: I am absolutely shocked seeing you here , mean we got the perpetrator that almost stole your son away from you behind bars.

Me: i know and that's why i am here.

Superior: I am listening Mrs Smith please kindly inform me why you are here?

Me: I want a favor from you Sup , can i call you Sup?

Superior: Yes please , a favour what about?

Me: I will need you to inform me when Amara McKenzie's bail hearing date and the judge am i clear?

Superior: If I may ask why?

Me: That's none of your business just let me know when she is having her bail hearing, contact me first , will you do that for me.

I said to him fixing my bra as i held my boobs up my chest making sure the skin was visible to him , he looked at my chest could barely take his eyes off my cleavage.

Superior: Ofcourse i will you can count on me .

Me: That's how a good cop acts like , i promise to pay you very , very, very handsomely.

Superior: Ofcourse anything for you Mrs Smith.

Me: I'll be on my way now.

Superior : Let me walk you out.

Me: That's won't be necessary keep on doing your police work , Thank you.

I walked out his office and got on my car driving to the hospital, i had to act fast on Amara's matter , i had to make sure she doesn't get a chance to breathe fresh air , she deserves to be



locke up like the evil person she is. She doesn't deserve my son nor Junior and i am going to make sure she is put away for a very long time. I got off the the car and walked into the hosiptal to Alpha's room.

Me: How is he?

Mute: His still unconscious.

I walked inside the room and held his hand kissing his forehead.

Me: oh my baby , my sweet darling , mommy is here and I'm going to make everything right , you don't have to worry about a thing.

I looked at him hoping he would squeeze my hand or twitch his eyelashes hearing the sound of my voice but he did non of those. Nurse walked in , i looked at her as she checked the machines and noted down on his file , she took out an injection from the medicine cabinet and a needle i looked at her , she held Alpha's drip inserting the needle in.

Me: What are you doing? Is that safe?

Nurse : Yes it is Ma , it's vitamins for his body, he needs them so his immune system can fight against infections.

Me: Please go ahead.

She smiled and injected the medicine in , what a sweet girl with a beautiful smile , i looked at her body that was curvaceous ,

she was beautiful a lady with a big pointed out booty and a small waist with medium boobs.

Me: You are so beautiful.

Nurse: ( smiles) thank you Ma.

Me: What is your name? I bet you Angel or blessing cause looking at you , you are indeed an Angel.

Nurse: ( giggles) My name is Natasha Ma.

Me: Nice to meet you Natasha.

Natasha: You too Ma.

She walked out the room as i still kept my eyes on her . Now this is the kind of woman Alpha should be mingling with not bad girls like Amara that don't know what they want in life just steering along like a cloud being pushed by wind.

STEVE

The drug was sent via post office and i received it just so nothing traces back to me , no one will be digging in my post parcels and that was a better coverage, i held the bottle of the intoxicant that was going to solve my problem. I picked up my phone and called Megan still staring at the bottle that was going to silence her forever.

Megan: Steve hey.

Me: Hey beautiful , what are you up to?

Megan: Just busy with Mayoral paper work why?

Me: I want to come over, i miss you.

Megan: Don't play smart with me Steve.

Me: I'll bring you a bottle of wine from my cellar .

Megan: What were you thinking?

Me: Red wine?

Megan: Okay , I'll prepare snacks.

Me: I'll be with you shortly.

She dropped the call , i got up and walked out the study to my basement, Nandi had a cellar of wine collection attached to the wall , i pulled out a bottle of red wine and looked at it .

Me: Hope this bottle is nice cause it will be the last thing she tastes today. I walked out with the bottle to my room , in the bathroom that's where all the magic begun , i took off the cap and poured the poison in carefully not to spill i wanted every drop in the bottle. Squeezing the bottle closed i walked out with my car keys and drove to the house. I played my favorite song on the way Tapping my fingers on the steering wheel as i singed along to the song as i looked at my wedding ring .

Me: ( singing) Stuck on you , i got this feeling down deep in my

soul that i just can't lose , guess I'm on my way , needed a friend but the way i feel now guess I'll be with you till the end , guess I'm on my way and i might be glad you stay.

I sang along to Lionel Richie till i parked outside the house holding the bottle of wine. I walked inside and she embraced me with a hug.

Megan: I knew you'd come back to your senses.

Me: And I'm glad i did.

Megan : Come in , i made you a fruit salad is that fine?

Me: Yes bring it along and a glass of water.

Megan: Won't you be drinking wine?

Me: Don't you have whisky in here?

Megan: No , i don't sorry.

Me: It's okay bring your glass and a glass of water maybe if i stop drinking whisky just for a day i won't die.

Megan: Guess so.

She brought a plate of cut pieces of fruit and a glass for herself, she sat down besides me as i poured the wine for her , i looked at her faking a smile , she smiled back at me , handing her the glass of wine she place the glass on her nose .

Me: Been in my cellar for about 2 years now.

Megan: I can smell it , it will taste amazing.

I fed her fruits and she took them down with the wine and smile.

Me: How does it taste?

Megan: God , i think I'll drink the whole bottle it's so good , wine just has that power to unleash the slut in me.

Me: ( scoffs) Then tonight you will have to show me that slut , drink up sweetheart.

She gulped the glass and poured herself another, gulping on it too , i looked at her as the poison began to kick in , she held her chest swallowing saliva as her mouth and throat dried up she looked at me as i smiled at her , she dropped the glass on the carpet and screamed with her burnt voicebox.

Megan: ( panicking) Steve i can't breathe.

I just sat down quietly and looked at her , she got up from the couch and fell on the floor holding on her throat gasping for her , she screamed crying.

Megan: You bastard! You poisoned me!

Me: Says who ? You?

Megan : You won't get away with this !

Me : Why not? These only the two of us here , me and you no

one will know that i killed you.

Megan: ( crying) Steve please .

I walked to her and i kneeled before her as she was laying on the back gasping for her , her mouth was dry , eyes purely white , she was dying.

Me: I am going to get away with this , like i always do know why? Because this will be our little secret , see you in hell  
Megan!

She gasped for air and tried spitting in my face but her salvia glands were dead already.

Me: Come on sweetheart don't be like that , you dying , you should be praying for salvation.

Megan: You will rot in hell !

Her whole body began to shake uncontrollably having a severe seizure , i got up and watched her shake on the floor with foam being released out her mouth. She shaked for 5 minutes as closed all Windows and doors , i walked outside and took out a can of patrol from the back of my jeep , i poured the patrol all around the house including on furniture and on her body that was laying helplessly on the floor . I opened up the gas tank could hear the gas escape from the tank , i walked out the house to the door opening up the letter slot on the front door, i took put a box of cigarettes from my back pocket and lit it up

one cigar , i tossed it inside the house and walked away to my car , driving off to the road a loud explosion occurred. My job was done.

To be continued.

64

GRACE

We managed to get a lawyer for Amara , he is not the best but he is affordable and good with his services. He came to pick me up at the house and we drove together to the police station. He managed to get us a private room to talk in , we sat down and Amara walked in with her hands cuffed at her back .

Me: Amara , my sweet baby girl.

She was uncuffed and walking into my arms , i gave her a tight hug and kissed her cheeks , she forced a smile on her face and went to seat on the opposite side of the table, i sat down and held her hands.

Me: How are you? How are you holding up?

Amara: I'm in jail Ma what did you expect?

Me: I'm sorry that was a silly question , I'm here with a lawyer and he will be helping you out on the case.

She and the lawyer shook hands.

Lawyer: i will need some privacy with Miss McKenzie .

Me : Okay i will be outside .

Amara: okay Ma.

I got up and walked out the door , closing the door i could hear Amara talk to the lawyer, Jaden called me , i placed the phone on my ear.

Jaden: Ma have you seen her?

Me: Yes we did , Jaden my boy things are not good with Amara.

Jaden: Why is she sick? Did they assault her?

Me: Physically she is okay but emotionally no she is not , she is probably worried about Junior and worried even more about Alpha .

Jaden: But Alpha is okay Ma , his surgery was a success now we just waiting for him to regain consciousness.

Me: I will inform her when they done with the lawyer.

Jaden: I wish the was more i could do Ma.

Me : I'm just praying that Alpha wakes up , he is our last hope in this situation.

Jaden: And what does that mean?

Me: Alpha is the key to get Amara out of here , if he was awake



he wouldn't even allowed Amara to spend a minute in a jail cell .

Jaden: Well then Alpha is laying flat on the bed these nothing he can do , what about his family?

Me: I doubt they will support Amara after shooting Alpha , they probably have already written her down in their enemies list , that Smith family is cruel !

Jaden: You don't even know them that deep Ma.

Me: You don't have to know people to see they cruel their actions speak louder ,what they did to Amara is absolute cruelty! Instead of them asking her what happened seating her down and ask what resorted to her shooting Alpha they got her arrested .

Jaden: Emotions were running high that's understandable but their fault in this is letting it escalate to the press.

Me: Are you on their side?

Jaden: On the side of the truth.

Me: What truth ? so you saying Amara deserves to be in here?

Jaden: That's not what I'm saying but truth be told Amara is in prison because she shot Alpha , Alpha didn't shoot himself .

Me: Jaden i think you should prescribe yourself some of your

brain pills cause you are obviously not thinking right.

Jaden: Okay Ma , The Smith's are cruel and i am in your side.

Me: Just go back to work before i get angry at you .

Jaden : I'll call you later don't stress to much on Amara situation mind your health.

Me: I will

I hung up and sat outside the room for a full hour as the lawyer and Amara had a chat , i walked into reception and asked if it's allowed i buy Amara some fast food , i doubt she has eaten , the police office said it was okay. I texted Jaden to order a take away and get it deliver at the police station. Still waiting on the lawyer the food was delivered.

Lawyer : We are done you can come in and talk to her , I'll buy you guys some time.

I walked in the room and sat down placing the McDonald packet on the table.

Me: Here is something to keep you going my girl.

Amara: Thank you Ma , it's like you knew i haven't eaten since yesterday.

She ate up and i looked at her munching on the fast food , she was really starving, i poke in the straw in the milkshake and

handed it to her.

Me: Alpha is okay if you wondering he is out of danger.

Amara: Thank you, I'm also worried about Junior, Alpha's mom hates me and she threatened me , she said i won't ever see Junior ever again.

Me: That's a lie ! Who the hell is she to tell you that crap ! Not while I'm still alive.

Amara: Ma i don't want to fight with her and i just hope she sees how sorry i am for what i did to Alpha , i didn't mean to shoot him , i was frustrated and angry, it just happened.

Me: Understandable but what has Junior got to do with what happened! She can't punish a little baby boy because of your mistakes ! She doesn't even have the right to keep Junior away from you.

Amara: Those people have money Ma , money that could buy anything or anyone in the world , i am just a poor graduate with nothing, i feel like i will be going up against royalty while i am just a commoner.

Me: I will slap the crap out of you if i hear you speak like that ! Those people are not royal they are just evil people! And i will be damned if they take my great grandchild away from his mother! Let that woman try you , they can come at me with guns or even billions she won't get away with her evil plan

to punish you for something that happened unplanned, Jesus Christ what kind of a woman is Alpha's Mother.

I stared into space thinking about Alpha's Mother's plan , it will not work, not while I'm still living and breathing , who was she to tell Amara she won't see her son ever again?

NANDI

I finally left Alpha and went home opening the door , i got a call from my house insurance company , i was shocked when receiving that call cause my house was in perfect shape.

Me: Hello.

Caller: May i speak to Mrs Nandi Smith please.

Me:Speaking.

Caller: Hi Mrs Smith we said to announce to you that your house has caught a fire.

Me : I am in my house right now and the is no fire here.

Caller: You house in South hills Mem , the house number is 1312.

Me: How ? Cause no one is living in that house.

Caller: I'm afraid it's in flames right now and we have contacted the fire department.

Me: Thank you i will go over right now.

Caller: Happy to be at your services.

I dropped my call as the maid handed me Junior as he was crying his little lungs out . I kissed his cheeks and sat down with him rocking.

Me: Has he eaten?

Maid: Yes Mem he has , his been crying half the day.

Me: I wonder what's wrong.

I took his milk bottle and gave it to him , he sucked just for a second and cried.

Maid: I think he misses his mom's breast milk Madam, we should take him to his mom.

I looked at her frowning my face , i have never been disrespected by a servant before .

Me: You said what?

She bowed her head brushing her hands on her thighs.

Maid: I didn't mean to upset you Madam i was just saying.

Me: You better know your place in this house if you still want to work here and i clear?

Maid: I'm sorry Madam.

Me: Get out of my sight before i fire you !

She quickly walked out the room as i looked at him. Steve walked in her had changed the clothes he was wearing without minding him , i patted Junior's back claming him.

Steve: He is grumpy today.

Me: Very if you ask me.

Steve: Hand him to me , Maybe i might give him a few lessons that Smith man don't cry.

Me: His just a baby Steve.

He took Junior and rocked him around the room speaking to him.

Steve: Talk to papa what's wrong? Why are you angry at Mama did she hit you?

I watched him calm Junior down as he held him against his chest , speaking to him , Junior kept quiet, i handed him the milk bottle and he fed him seating on the couch.

Me: Before i forget , you remember our house in south hills?

Steve: Yes what's wrong with it?

Me: I got a call our house insurance company and the house is on fire , it's burning down.

Steve: Really? I wonder what is the cause.

Me: I wonder too , let me switch on the tv.

Steve: Make sure it's not loud looks like my son is falling asleep right here.

Me: ( smiles) Okay sweetie.

I switched on the tv and the house was really on the news , they showed us live vidoes of the house on fire as fire fighters did their jobs , i was really shocked that literally the whole house was up in flames , Steve shook his head and clicked his tougue.

Steve: It might have been the bloody homeless people.

Me: Homeless people? In South hills come on Steve that's a suburban neighbourhood police would've chased them out.

Steve: Then what is the excuse? What caused the spark.

Me: We will leave the investigator for that , shush i the reporter is reporting.

[ reporter : The fire fighters did all they could to save what was in the house and the building it's self , The fire men said they found a death body , it was damanged to the extent they couldn't identity the gender of the body , the neighbours reportedly said they saw a young woman a few days back in the house and she has been living here alone, this house is reportedly to be the house of the famous family known as the Smith's but they moved out years ago leaving the house vacated. Who is the woman that has been living here? Was she

close to the Smiths? Is the burnt body found in the house the woman body? Those question will remain with us till we get a full report from SAPS , reporting to you live on the Scene is Tumelo Mabaso from SABC News. ]

I looked at Steve as we were both in shocked.

Me: This is bad Steve, arg first it's this Amara's drama now this! Will we ever have a normal peaceful household.

Steve: We should set a press conference addressing both these scandals.

Me: I think we should do that too and quickly control this before it escalates.

Steve: Darling don't stress yourself about this , we are innocent that lady that was living in there owes us an explanation how she managed to get into our house cause i don't remember selling the house or renting it out.

Me: I wonder who is she.

Steve: She is toast i don't think they will be able to identify her .

Me: I hope they do , so her family buries her.

Steve: As for that house i am cutting all ties with it , i don't want anything coming to bite me.

Me: I'm with you on that one . I'll go make us a cup of tea as we



think about this whole mess.

Steve: Thank you my love

I got up and walked to the kitchen.

MUTE

Abbygail came to see Drew and when she was done she came to see me , i walked her away from Alpha's room to the hallway.

Abby: How are you?

Me: I am doing fine actually just tired.

Abby: Are you guarding Alpha ? Cause i noticed you haven't slept in a while.

Me: I won't be able to sleep with my brother still laying in that hospital bed , i have to be here with him.

Abby: ( smiles) You love Alpha don't you? You even calling him your brother.

Me: ( chuckles) Yes i do but don't tell him i love him he'll call me gay.

Abby: ( laughs) You are such an amazing person Mute , mean who does what you do ? You sacrificing yourself for another person who isn't even your blood relative.

Me: Alpha is not just a person he is my brother as i said, let's

not talk about me and my family . How is school?

Abby: School is okay but my apartment is not.

Me: Why not?

Abby: Ma and dad fought now she is living with me

Me: Oh so you don't want her in your house?

Abby: It's not that i don't want her in my house it's just that i like my space away from them and their drama and now Ma has brought it right into my house.

Me: Why don't you tell her then , tell her you don't want her in your house and that you want your own space.

Abby: I can't just throw her out she's my mom.

Me: Then find a way to deal with her existence in your house.

Abby: I will I'm probably just being childish about this whole mom moving in thing. So tell me why did you kiss me Mr Mute Marcus.

Me: ( scoffs) You were talking to much so i had too.

Abby: I think I'm talking to much right now.

Me: Do you want me to silence you?

Abby: maybe yes maybe no , but surprise me.

Spike walked up to us .

Spike: Mute i need to go out for a while.

Me: Okay don't worry I'll be with Alpha shortly you can go.

He stared at Abby and walked away.

Abby: He doesn't look fond of me.

Me: He isn't fond of anyone that's his natured. I should go , I'll call you.

I gave her a hug and walked away from her approaching Alpha's room , with Drew in the same hospital as he is we couldn't afford to leave him unguarded. I walked in the room and sat down besides him.

THABO

I withdrew all the money i had in my account it was about R5 million , i had striked a deal with a gang in the city they charged me an arm and a leg to organize the guns for me to transport the machines to Germany , that was the only option i had left than organizing men to go rip guns from police stations cause that was an impossible mission. I packed the money in a bag , Cohen walked in .

Me: are you ready to go get the guns?

Cohen: Yes Sir.

I looked at him and walked to him holding a glass of whisky.

Me: Have you ever took your last money and went to bet with it ? Not just your last money but the money that was going to sustain your properties, pay your bills and feed your family?

Cohen: No sir.

Me: Well at this point i am that man , i took out all the money i had in my bank , i am broke as we speak.

Cohen: ( clears his throat) I hear you sir

Me : Listen to me and listen to me attentively! This is the last money i had in my account, it's a gamble cause if you lose this money make sure you kill yourself cause i will personally make sure i kill you myself , listen to me carefully when i say this 5 million in that bag is the only money i have , i am a broke man standing infront of you. And i will not tolerate you doing a sloppy job with my money, come back here with the merchandise , am i clear?

Cohen: Clear.

Me: Take the bag and go get my guns.

He walked out the study holding the bag , i sat down and held my head as i was broke , Steve didn't just burn down my warehouse, he burnt down my money, i had to cover everything after that mess that was up to Millions too, covering the coke he stole and had to pay my partners their share of the supply because i was embarrassed to tell them that i was in a

war with Steve Smith and he took everything, i would've been a laughing stock in my society. I couldn't bare that thought. The house was quiet just silence piercing throughout the rooms , i took a bottle of whisky and sat down enjoying the fine bottle of Hennessy. I looked at my glass swallowing the hot spirit admiring the easy it brought into my soul and mind , it tasted like everything is going to be okay.

65

STEVE

We managed to go to the house and take a look at it , leaving Junior behind with his nanny , the house was really burnt down , we could smell smoke from a distance , we got out the car with reporters approaching us , Spike was with us , he looked at the reporters protecting Nandi as they were handing out microphones towards her mouth.

Nandi: Spike it's okay.

Spike: Are you sure you want to talk to them?

Nandi: Yes.

Steve: Step aside.

He stepped aside as Nandi addressed the reporters, she had her head high , talking to them not in fear .

Nandi: Hi , as you can see me and my husband has just arrived

to witness what actually happened to the house , we both or any of the members of our family knew about the woman that is reportedly have been staying in our house.

Reporter 1 : So the woman was staying here without your knowledge.

Nandi: Yes that is true and it would be unfortunate that the body found in the house burnt is hers cause we also would've like to question her on her stay in a house that belong to us without our knowledge.

Reporter 2 : Mrs Smith ! Mrs Smith.

The reporter shouted at the back of the crowd.

Nandi: Yes Miss at the back.

Reporter: We heard about Alpha's shooting and that he was shot by the mother of his child Amara McKenzie, what perpetrated her into taking such harsh precautions?

Nandi: She was cheating on my son with Drew Hughes.

I looked at her in absolute shock , i held her hand trying to walk her out the crowd she pulled her hand off my touch and stared at me. As the crowd wrote down also puzzled about her answer.

Nandi: Yes it's true , ever since that girl arrived in my family it's been episodes after episodes! She has brought nothing but

shame to my family and a broken heart to my son who is still laying flat in a ICU fighting for his life because of loving that girl and i am happy to say she will be paying dearly for what she did ! Justice must be served she has proven herself to not being a fit mom to her son Junior or a woman worth loved and trusted by Alpha ! She is a danger to society and for that I'm going to personally make sure she doesn't see the light of the day , she deserves to rot in a dark cell ! In a maximum prison !

Reporter 1 : Isn't Junior too young to grow up without his mother? His barely 2 months

Nandi: Junior will be surrounded by his father's family, lot's of love and support, he is my grandchild and i am insuring that he is protect with all cost if that means keeping him away from his mother then so be it , i won't be able to live with myself if something bad happened to my grandson.

Reporter 3 : And what is the family prepared to do with the dead body found in the house.

Me :We will host a press conference , you will get our answers then , I think that will be all , thank you for your time !

I held Nandi's wrist and got her into the car , she sat down placing her bag on her thighs and sighed.

Me: What the hell was that?

Nandi: What?

Me: The crap you were saying about Amara !

Nandi: It wasn't crap ! And we both know it's true , she shot my son to be with Drew but guess what ! My living god showed her she was a lying not on his watch !

Me: You are making the poor girls life a living hell .

Nandi: Not like she doesn't deserve it ! She deserves everything coming her way ! No wonder her sister or mother wherever she is got shot and died because of the dark witch cloud hovering over that McKenzie family ! I swear on my dead body ! Alpha won't even step 4 feet closer to that girl ! I will be damned!

Me : You can't make decisions for Alpha.

Nandi: Yes i can ! I am his mother and he has to listen to me.

Me: We both know that won't happen .

Nandi: We will see , as for Amara i meant every word i said ( clicks her tougue) She must stay the hell away from my family we don't need someone like her inbetween us , she has done enough damage , she must take her bad lucks somewhere else not to my house , evil things are playing in her body controlling her , i won't be surprised even if she gave Alpha a love potion to love her so my son could save her from poverty!

Me: You need to cool down cause when i told you about this girl , you were supporting her relationship with Alpha now you



are guns blazing ready to send her to jail.

Nandi: She proven that she is an animal! Ready to spill my son's blood , I'm doing what any mother would do to protect her child.

Me: We didn't even get to view the house.

Nandi: Just take me Alpha , i want to be with him .

Me: Spike drive us to the hosiptal.

Spike : Yes sir.

Spike drove off, i looked at Nandi that was looking out the window , i held her hand and kissed it , she looked at me.

Me: It's going to be okay , Alpha is going to be okay.

Nandi : Can't help but think , maybe my son will give up and the doctor will just tell us to come switch off the machines or something ( sobbing) When i got the call about him being shot , i thought i lost my son Steve , i thought i lost my baby boy.

Me: ( softly) No darling please don't cry , you breaking my heart . Alpha is not going anywhere atleast not anytime soon.

We stopped at the hospital and we walked in going upstairs to where our son was laying , Mute was with him in the room he could barely keep his eyes open , he was tired, warned out. I could see how tired he is it was written all over his face. Nandi

walked in and sat next to Alpha's bed .

Me: Mute can we talk outside.

Mute: Sure Pop's , what's up?

I closed the door behind him , we sat down on the steel chairs.

Me: You should go home son , it's already getting late so you should go home.

Mute: No , i thought i made it clear i will be here with Alpha till he wakes up.

Me: These no problem in that my son , but you can't look after Alpha while you could barely keep your eyes open , you must go home , eat , bath and sleep , you are tired .

Mute : Well yeah i am but what about Alpha.

Me: I and Nandi will bd here , for your satisfaction we will get more gaurds , now go home son.

Mute: Okay but I'll be back.

Me: No problem just go sleep.

Mute : Okay I'm leaving.

He tucked his gun tightly on his hip and walked out .I love how my boys actually care about one another , they seem like blood brothers because of the love they share , why am i even surprised i trained these boys.

GRACE

We sat down having dinner. It was about 7 o'clock still early , i couldn't eat , didn't have the appetite .

Jaden: You haven't touched your food.

Me: I'm not interested in food .

Jaden: You have to eat Ma so you can take your pills.

Me: I will blend myself some fruit just so i get vitamins.

Jaden: That's not good enough, should i make you a salad then?

Me: No Jaden i will have blended juice.

Jaden: I was just trying to look out for you.

Me: You should stop , I am a full grown woman Jaden. I can take good care of myself thank you.

Jaden: ( scoffs) you should've made that clear so i don't bother myself anymore and Ma I'm sorry for trying so much to protect you as my mother but then ever since Amara arrived into your life you have been careless about your health and that is so unfair on me !

He got up from the table and tossed his plate in the sink walking to his room

Me: My baby , please I'm sorry , Jaden , I'm talking to you

He carried on walking into his room slamming the door behind him . I got up and carried my plate placing it inside the microwave, why couldn't Jaden understand i am worried about Amara , the poor girl will be spending the night in a jail cell and here i was eating a home cooked meal going to sleep on my comfy bed. I felt like I'm failing Amara just like failed Rose. I walked out to my room taking out an old Album i was keeping of Rose's pictures when she was still a little girl , in this album there were all her pictures from birth till 7 year's old. I was very materialistic in my younger ages , i liked fancy things so taking pictures was a norm for me , that's why i had this album full of Rose's pictures . I took out a picture and looked at her smiling at the camera.

Me: Where are you Rosie? Can't you see your daughter suffering? Why are you so quiet , while they trying to break your baby girl like this ? You should be fighting with her , fighting spiritually with her , ( sobbing) she needs you , she needs a sign of hope , she is losing hope . Please , show yourself to her , save your child.

I placed the picture on my chest and cried laying on the bed as i hugged on the picture.

AMARA

I sat down on the chair with the other ladies , they had stop bullying me , they haven't talked to me just stealing glances of

me. I didn't want to stay here no more , i just wanted to go home and scrub myself and cuddle myself next to my son , i missed him so much , wonder how is he doing? Has he eaten ? Is he asleep? Are they even taking good care of my boy . Megan has probably had the chance to get a hold of my son , she is probably thrilled to have me behind bars , Oh god no ! What if she hands the video to the police ? That would be the final nail to my coffin , i will go to jail.

ABBYGAIL

Mute came to pick me up , i didn't know why but i would really do with some time away from mom always complaining about Dad asking me and wondering if he had eaten or had his pills. She was completely fussing on someone who didn't even care about her , who didn't seat and wonder if she has eaten or where is she staying. I packed my bag with my phone and laptop cause i just knew i will be spending the night with Mute , i know you must be thinking I'm am a fool for letting him in my life after what he did to me but these nothing wrong in giving a person a second chance.

Thandeka: And where are you going?

Me: To study with a friend.

Thandeka: I wasn't born yesterday Abbygail.

Me: i will be back tomorrow morning Ma , i love you.

Thandeka: I thought we would watch a movie and have a mother- daughter time.

Me: not tonight Ma bye , lock the door.

Thandeka: Bye sweetie, be safe.

I walked outside and approached the car , Mute was inside the car with the engine still growling. I got in and kissed his cheek.

Me: hey.

Mute: Hi .

Me : ( smiling) You look sleepy.

Mute: I'm very tired if you'd ask me

Me: Then let's go.

He drove off the car , i looked at him as he steered the wheel , his arms with viens grabbing a hold on the leather covered wheel , hate to mention but I'm a slut of vieny arms on the men they just managed to bring out the slut in me. He drove into a apartment complex as i looked around i expected maybe he lived in the Smith's mansion i have never been there , heard of how beautiful it looks in the inside people that have been there say it's like walking into a royal palace with a lot of maids just pacing around in the house , i would've liked to spend the night in there . We got off the car and he locked it helping me out with my laptop bag , we walked inside the apartment , i

stepped in looking around .

Mute: Excuse the clothes laying around , i haven't been in here for days been spending nights at home.

Me: I understand.

He picked up a few clothes that were on the floor , i held my bag close to my stomach browsing the room. He had a flat screen tv hooked on the wall with an L couch at the center of the room , just at the corner of the room was a full set kitchen , this apartment looked cost and mostly it was big for him to live here alone , he could have a family in here maybe a married couple with a child could live here and happily.

Mute: Make yourself at home please.

Me: Thank you.

Mute: Are you hungry? You can order anything my treat.

Me: Okay I'll order us a pizza.

Mute: I'll go shower in the meantime.

I nodded my head as he walked inside the room , i got up from the couch and walked inside the room , his whole room was painted in black and gry with black sheets and grey pillow cases not to say I'm surprised cause basically he likes black he wears black his Jeep his back. I opened up the wodrope helping myself into a t-shirt and socks. The shower was switched off , he

walked out the shower and looked at me.

Mute: I see you have figured out what you going to sleep in.

Me: I hope you don't mind me wearing your clothes.

Mute: Not at all you look beautiful in my t-shirt actually suits you more than me.

I looked down at the t-shirt and smiled . A knock came through at the door he looked at me.

Me: I think that's the pizza.

Mute: Go get it then I'll get dressed.

I walked to the door and tipped the delivery guy , walking inside with the box of pizza . I placed it on the table and began having slices , Mute walked out the room and sat besides me.

Me: So how is Alpha?

Mute: Is the pizza good?

Me: Yeah it's good , have a slice.

Mute: Thank you , when we done here we could go sleep.

Me: Okay.

He had a few slices yawning the whole time , we watched a show and he would drop his head sleepy .

Mute: I think we should go sleep.



Me: Me too , I'm tired.

Walking in his room he laid down behind me on the bed , wrapping his arms around me. I looked at his naked chest as he pulled me tightly against him. I held onto him tightly closing my eyes.

[ THE FOLLOWING MORNING ]

THABO

Cohen came back last night and he got the guns without complications i have never been happier. I got my phone and called the Germans.

Me: My friend.

German leader: I am not your friend .

Me : I got the guns.

German: We don't need the guns chom.

Me: Come on , i did all i could to secure these guns for you.

German leader : Too late , i got my guns and i don't think i will be dealing with you anytime sooner.

Me: Why not? I have been supplying guns to you unproblematic through all these years come on man !

German leader: We are done here.

Me : My friend please listen to me , i can give you a discount.

He hung up the call , i screamed in anger ripping my telephone off the table and threw it across the room !

Me : ( screaming) Fuck!

Cohen: Sir are you fine ?

Me: Get out of my study !

Cohen: Sir please talk to me what's wrong with you.

I launched towards him and slapped him hard across the face , he looked at me as i grabbed his throat strangling him in anger , he gasped for air under the palm of my mercy , i looked at him tightening my grip on his neck he couldn't breathe his forehead had veins pop out , as he was about to blank out , i tossed him on the floor !

Me: ( screaming) You are going to walk out that door and bring me a buying !

He coughed holding onto his neck .

Cohen: The Germans? What about them?

Me: They said they got a new seller , I'm done Cohen !

Cohen: Don't worry boss , i will go out and fish for buyers.

Me: Get out of my sight !

He walked out the room , as i picked up the whisky bottle on the table, this can't be happening , i needed money as soon as possible.

NANDI

I visited Alpha early in the morning , this time i came with Junior, i figured Junior missed his dad and if maybe he was in the same room as him , he could stop crying much , the story of him missing his mother won't work on me. I took Alpha finger and placed it in his hand , he wrapped his little hand around his father's finger.

Me : That's daddy's hand , you miss your daddy? Call him out say daddy i miss you, wake up please.

Junior just looked at me with his other hand in his mouth sucking on his fist with saliva dripping on his clothes. I sighed looking at him.

Me: i know baby i shouldn't have brought you to this place , you are probably afraid of this unfamiliar room , honey you are in hospital and your father is laying here because..

Alpha's hand moved as he gripped on Junior's hand , i looked at the hand amazed , my heart speeding in excitement, i looked at his eyes as his lashes moved .

Me: Alpha , baby can you hear me.

His lips moved but he couldn't say a word, i smiled holding Junior against my chest.

Me: Oh my god , my baby is waking up.

I walked to the door and called out for a nurse , Natasha walked in , she looked at Alpha taking off the ventilation machine.

Me: Honey , please open your eyes , it's me , your mother look at me.

He blinked opening his eyes slowly. Tears of joy streamed down my cheek , this was the happiest moment of my life , took me back to when he first opened his eyes as a baby , i just held him as little as he was against my chest looking at those beautiful black eyes , i just knew he was the love of my life and i feel like a failure or even better a taboo to call myself his mother cause i didn't invest my love into him , i was too busy trying to be a good wife to Steve and i became a bad mother to my child , we would leave him alone with the maids in the house and go dine with Steve's clients and go out to met gala dinners everynight leaving him all alone at home. He opened up his eyes and looked at me , i held his cheek.

Me: My baby .

Alpha: Water , I'm thirsty.

Natasha poured him water and helped him up the bed , holding the cup for him , he drank from the cup and sat up , holding his

torso , he was flinching as he sat up on the bed , looks like it still hurt. The doctor walked in and checked on him.

Me: Is he fine.

Doctor : His fine but we will have to run a few tests just so we be sure.

Me: Yes please do so.

Doctor: I will arrange a nurse to come extract blood.

Me: Okay thank you Doc.

I took my phone out informing Steve that Alpha has regain consciousness, he was happy to hear these news and promised he will inform Mute so they both come to the hosiptal, i dropped the call and looked at him as he reached his hands out calling his son.

Alpha: Junior.

Me: Oh yeah Junior, his fine , his been living at the house while you were unconscious.

I handed Junior to him , he held him giving him a kiss.

Alpha : What is he doing with you? Hey big guy.

Natasha : Please Ma , he needs to rest.

Me: No problem my child , Alpha you heard what Natasha said you need to rest.

Alpha : I asked you a question!where is Amara and why is my son with you and not with his mother.

Me : Don't worry yourself about her , please rest.

Alpha : You ( points at the nurse) Get lost ! Ma i won't repeat myself !

Me : ( screaming) Can you stop it please ! You just woke up from a coma and all you want to know is where is the girl that almost killed you? What the hell is wrong with you!

Alpha: You not answering my question.

Mute and Steve walked in the room , i exhaled walking towards the window , thank god they have arrived.

Mute: Alpha are you okay?

Alpha: I'm good brother.

Mute: Welcome back.

Alpha: ( chuckles) It's good to be back , where is Amara?

The room went silent as we all didn't know what to say to him , we were afraid of the wrath we were going to endure after informing him Amara is in prison.

Steve: Does your gun shot wound still hurt.

Alpha: Is there something wrong with Amara that you all keep avoiding my question? Mute hand me your phone , i will call

her myself and find out why our son is with my family instead of her.

Mute: That won't be necessary Alpha.

Alpha: Why not ? I want to speak with the mother of my child.

Mute: Alpha , Amara is in prison.

He looked at him frowning with his eyebrows raised , Steve looked at me , as we stared at each other. Alpha bursted out in laughter , we looked at him as he laughed his lungs out.

Alpha: ( laughing)You joking isn't it?

Mute: No I'm not she is in prison.

Alpha: Why are you standing here then ! Go get her out !

Me: Mute will do no such thing ! Amara deserves to be there!

Alpha: Oh i see what's going on here ! You Ma ! It was you that put Amara in there !

Me: Exactly it was me and she is going nowhere not till she pays for what she did to you !

Alpha: You are really insane! Yes you are crazy Ma , who the hell do you think you are ? Putting the mother of my child behind bars, who the hell do you think you are?listen here lady you will go to the police station and drop all charges against Amara and that's not a request that's an order!

He said demanding and shouting his broad lungs out , I was close to crying hearing my son speak to me in that manner this just proved that Amara really cast a spell on Alpha and it was strong to the extent he is willingly to bulldoze anything in her way .

Me: I am the mother to Alpha Smith ! A grown man who thinks he could do whatever he wants and talk whatever he wants to me ! I am a mother who almost lost her child ! I am a mother with a bleeding heart because my child doesn't respect nor show appreciation for what i did for him , i don't know what i did to deserve such treatment from you Alpha and i will not be present in a room where i am not needed or even loved , appreciated or shown affection ! I'm done apologizing, I'm done reaching out to you for godsake hoping you would open your heart fully for me to love you my son , i apologizing for doing what i was right for my child !

I picked up my bag and left the room in tears.

66

DREW

I had been on my laptop searching on different treatments i could take to be normal again, i wanted to walk , i was desperate to walk again. I felt less of a man without legs , frustrated even more that i couldn't move an inch , i felt useless,



my father hasn't visited me , it's like my whole family abandoned me , they left me out to the wolves. A nurse walked in rolling a wheelchair.

Me: And then ? What is this for?

Nurse: I'm taking you to a Doctor.

Me: I don't recall making an appointment with one

Nurse: You don't have to Sir , it's what your doctor knows it's best for you , you have to start exercising your legs.

Me: How when i can't even feel my legs !

Nurse : The Psychotherapist I'm taking you too is very good , sha has helped a lot of people in the similar situation as you are in , telling you they walking today and they come each and everyday to thank her for her miraculously job

Me: You selling me lies.

Nurse: If that's what you want to believe Mr Hughes that's on you.

She helped me off the bed onto the wheelchair pushing me out . It was embarrassing to be rolled in a wheelchair, felt like people were looking at me , staring at me , probably laughing and gossiping about me , i just wish i stayed in London , i would still have my legs and probably be living my best life. Coming to South Africa was the worst decision i ever made for me and my

life. She pushed me inside a room with people in my similar situation. A woman approached me , she looked at me and smiled, she was actually a beautiful English woman with Blonde hair and red lips .

Doctor: Hi , I'm Dr Molly Roberts and I'm your Physiotherapist .

Me: Hi Molly , I'm Drew Hughes.

Molly: ( smiles) Nice to meet you , well shall we begin.

Me: Why not.

She walked behind me and took over from the nurse pushing me towards a bed .

Molly: Today we will start with some leg stretches just to see where are your pain points , just so i observe where you need help .

Me: Okay.

Two men helped me lay on the bed as i laid down face up , i was wearing shorts with my knees bandaged as the bullets went into my knee cap and blew my nerves exiting the backs , i haven't even spend time thinking of my comeback revenge onto Alpha . I knew deep down i deserved this suffering because of what i did to Amara , she has been nothing but a good person towards me and i used that , i used her. Dr Molly pushed my knees up banging my knees , the pain hit my nerves,

my knee cracked , i groaned covering my eyes with my arm and laid back.

Me: ( in pain) Fuck ! ( breathing) God that is painful !

I raised up my head with my eyes piling tears , i was in pain.

Molly: Breathe okay , keep breathing for me.

She continued banding my knee , i held on the sheet on the bed tightly clinching tightly on my teeth , My whole body was hot and sweaty with the pain vibrating in my body , my body was numb i couldn't feel myself but i could hear my heart beat and the blood running hot in my veins , i was burning hot , massively in pain.

AMARA

I got up from the bunk and walked to the little sink that had a cracked mirror and a toilet beside it , I washed my face looking at the image of woman before me , was it me? Is she me? she looks so tired, she looks so warned out not to mention the ugly bags under her eyes , she looked awful.

Policeman: Amara McKenzie!

I looked at him as he opened up the bars. I was even scared approaching the gate , was it my bail hearing time? Was i going to be prosecuted?

Policeman: Hey ! Stop wasting my time!

I walked towards the bars as he applied cuffs on my wrist.

Me: Where are you taking me?

Policeman: That's not on my job prescription.

He walked me out the cells towards the main entrances , the sunlight that rapidly hit my skin with the fresh air that filled up my nostrils was blissful , i was happy to be out of that place that rank only sweat and pee from the dirt toilet that has been there for years. Mute was standing at reception with my lawyer. I walked towards them confused.

Mute: Amara.

Me: Hey , what's going on?

Lawyer: The Smith family have dropped the charges against you.

My jaw dropped , i was surprised , didn't expect this cause Nandi made it clear i was going to pay for what i did and i didn't believe those were just empty threats.

Mute: I'll be escorting you home.

Me: Why you? No offense but i could never be too careful with you Smith's.

Mute: ( chuckles) I won't hurt you Amara , Alpha would skin me alive if i even dare touch a hair in your head.

Me: It's hard to believe I'm out what happened? How did i get out? Why did Alpha's Mom drop the charges?

Mute: Let's just say , Alpha regain consciousness.

Me: He did? Oh my word that's good news .

I smiled sobbing, i am really happy he is alive and well , what could i have done if he passed on ? I wiped my tears smiling as Mute gave me a hug.

Mute: You going to be okay , Everything is going to be okay.

Me : Thank you Mute.

I signed my release papers , i thanked the lawyer for trying to help me get out and he was for me too . We walked out the heading to Mute's Jeep , he drove off the police station as i kept stretching my arms , all i wanted was a cup of hot milky coffee and a warm bubbly bath then hold my baby boy . I wanted to cuddle myself against him so much , i missed him. Mute drove the car towards Alpha's house , i saw unsettled with him taking me to Alpha's house , he and i broke up , i broke every ties that connected me to him burned all bridges the only thing that is going to bring us together was Junior.

Me: Uhm..Mute i think you driving me towards the wrong direction.

Mute: No I'm not , I'm taking you to Alpha's house.

Me: Why ? I don't want to go there.

Mute: It's not up for discussion Amara so please don't fight me , I'm just following orders.

The car parked on the drive way , i walked out the car and he walked me into the house.

Mute: Home sweet home , I'll order you some food and i think you should go get a bath these clothes ontop of the bed that Alpha organized for you .

Me: Thank you.

Mute: You have 2 hours before we leave for the hospital, I'll come back for you i have business to take care off.

Me: Okay.

He walked out the house , he walked towards the door lock and pressed on it , he was setting a new security pin or was he locking me in? He smiled and walked out the house closing the door, i walked towards the door and hearing the car engine drive off , i opened up the door to check if he locked me in but he didn't the door was opened means he trusted me , he was just setting in a new pin. I walked upstairs and opened up the water in the bathtub, filling it with soap and salts , i got in and soaked myself. This felt so good , so heavenly, i just wanted to seat here for eternity. I soaked myself in for prolonged minutes. I walked out and lotioning my body and wore the

tracksuit that was on the bed. I sat down on the bed running my fingers on the sheet. Laughing to myself as i slight memory replayed itself in my mind, i remembered saying i wanted to sleep here forever, but who am i kidding? That wasn't possible, you can't expect to be happy with someone without complications , because what is love with no pain no suffer. I dried my hair with a towel and tied it. Mute is probably on his way here, the bell went off downstairs, maybe that was him but why was he ringing the bell. I walked down and opened the door it was the delivery guy.

Guy: hi, your delivery.

Me: Thank you.

I took the pack from him and closed the door , i sat on the counter eating.

Mute: Are you done ? Let's go.

Me: Yes I'm done.

I packed the pack leaving the leftovers in the fridge. I washed my hands.

Mute: Are you ready?

Me: Yes we can go now.

We walked out the house to the car , i was nervous about seeing Alpha , what was i going to say to him? How am i going

to face him .

NANDI

I got a call from the station Superior that Amara has been released, in seconds i losf my mind , livid and boiling in anger , i sat down infront of the mirror and looked at myself.

Me: I can see Amara is getting too big for her shoes? She's challenging me ? She thinks she could take me on ? Shoot myself and think I'll just forgive and forget? She thinks she has own , has Alpha dancing in the palm of her hand and she must probably think i don't know what is going on here.

One of my maids walked in .

Maid: I just came to place the towels Mem.

Me: Thank you.

She place the towels on the bed , i looked at her as she opened the door.

Me: May i ask something?

Maid: Yes Madam ofcause.

Me: Please seat on the bed.

She sat down as i turned and looked at her.

Maid: What is wrong Mem?



Me: Do you believe in witchcraft, herbs and traditional healers?

Maid: Yes Madam ! i do every much do , you know in the township where i live there are a lot of evil spirits including witchcraft, Mem tell you what ? If you always have to have holy water or salt in the township just to pour around your yard so it doesn't become a dancing stage for witchies or you are in trouble ! You won't sleep the whole night hearing cats meowing the whole night and owls hooting. Mem you have to be prayer strong , knee on the floor but here in your neighbourhood i don't believe there are witchies and evil spirits, you people here are rich what will be the need to bewitch one another.

Me: I need you to promise me you won't discuss what I'm about to tell you with anyone.

Maid : I swear on my grandmothers grave.

Me: I think Amara has bewitched Alpha.

She held her mouth in shock as i nodded my head.

Maid: My god ! Mem why do you think that way about Madam Amara.

Me: Alpha's behaviour has changed ever since he met that girl , i think Amara has gave my son herbs to control him

Maid: Like Love potion?

Me: Yes exactly, He goes above and beyond to make sure

everything goes how Amara wants things to be like , bulldozing everything in her way ! My son is not in his right senses .

Maid: Madam i know how you feel, a friend of mine was going through the exact situation , her son met a girl and the girl had him on his toes , he even was doing everything for her , like washing clothes, cleaning and cooking while the girl gallavanted the streets doing lord knows what !

Me: What ! Never, i don't want my son going through such ordeals !

Maid: Well then Madam you will have to resolve this issue while it's still new !

Me: Yes I know that but where will i begin tackling this thing before my son loses his mind trying to please someone like Amara!

Maid: Rest assured Mem , you got me in your corner, I know a very good traditional healer at my area , he can help you.

Me: Really ? Thank you so much , if you take me to him , i will pay you handsomely.

Maid: We could go right now Madam , no room for procrastination when it comes to saving Sir Alpha , that Amara girl came in like a sweet person but all along she was a wolf covered in sheep skin! Shame on her.

Me: You can say that again ! We can't leave right away cause i have to be busy with some issues, we will go tomorrow to meet the traditional healer , just so make sure it is safe .

Maid: You have nothing to worry about , When you are with me nothing will happen to you , i am well-known in the township, i will make sure he knows you coming so he makes special time for you Madam .

Me: Thank you then sweetheart, you may resume with you work.

She got up and fixed the sheet on the bed .

Maid: I will leave now.

Me: Thank you .

She walked out the door closing it , I sighed as this was a sign of hope to me , now with this Maid's help i could get to the bottom of this , i will have my son back to me , not the monster that is occupying itself in my son's body and working for Amara's selfish benefits.

ALPHA

Amara walked in the room with Mute , she stole a glance of me and looked down .

Me: ( smiling) Hey now ? How you feeling Mamma?

She just looked at me was she going to answer me already? Or was i to wait till she is ready to speak to me. I got up from the bed and approached her.

Mute : I'll just leave you two.

He walked out the room , closing the door. Walking towards her , i stepped an inch closer to her to feel my breath when i talk.

Me: Why you not answering me when I'm asking how are you? Are you mad ( angry) at me? I'm sorry i took my time to come save you . I got mistakenly shot by the woman i love and that knocked me off for days.

Amara: I'm sorry about shooting you.

I placed my finger on her lips , swirling my finger inbetween her lips.

Me: Shush , you don't have to apologize, i forgave you right after you shot me because i could never stay angry at you even in my dead bed. You shouldn't be angry yourself not at you or me or even Drew or my mom cause every minute you stay angry , you lose sixty seconds of happiness. I wouldn't like to see you unhappy so apology accepted. So how are you? Did anyone in jail bully you?

Amara: No , I was okay

I nodded my head , and held my stomach as i coughed. I walked toward the bed and sat down having a glass of water.

Me: Did anyone ask you question about me while you were in jail?

Amara: Question like what?

Me: Any question that involve my name besides you shooting me.

She shook her head .

Me: Are you sure? 100 percent?

Amara: Yes I'm sure , i would've told you if someone did.

Me: I trust you Amara and everything i told you about myself is not for police ears am i clear?Cause if you ratted your mouth while in prison , trying to get out with my name , I will lock every emotions i have for you in a dark part of my being and make you pay

Amara: ( blinking) I said nothing about your illegal dealings Alpha Smith. Now where is my child ? I just want my baby.

Me: His with a Nurse , i informed her to go change his nappy , so he will be with you shortly.

Amara: You gave a stranger our son?

Me: Before you over react Spike is with the nurse. So have

you seen your boyfriend?

Amara: Can you please not begin your nonsense , i have been in jail for 2 days ! Don't start with me !

Me: I was just asking , no need to bite my head off.

Amara: So when are you getting discharged?

Me: You want me to come home already?

Amara: Just to make things clear , you and i are still over and nothing is going to happen between us , I'm sorry for shooting you and i appreciate you getting me out but that doesn't mean you back in my good books.

Me: Do i look like i want to get on your good books ?

Sweetheart i got a lot of catching up to do at work and on my life , all i want you to do is to look after our child under my roof , where i can keep an eye on you.

Amara: And what is that supposed to mean?

Me: You know exactly what i mean ! Mute will escort you to your flat, you will pack your clothes and move in my house permanently.

Amara: You are being unfair Alpha! You can't do that , Detect my life like this .

Me: I just did.

Amara: No ! I won't let you do this to me , i am not your toy , i am a full grown woman and you know damn sure i can make decisions for myself.

Me: Really now? So Drew was a right decision?

Amara: ( shouting) Don't make your stupid demands about what happened between me and Drew ! I became a target to Drew's cruelty because of you ! And now you blaming it all on me !

Me: Fighting me won't help you Amara just make your life easy and do what i tell you to do !

Amara: You are evil !

Me: Okay enough of your tantrums.

The nurse walked in holding Junior, Amara grabbed JJ of her hands holding onto him tightly.

Amara: My baby boy , did they hurt you? I missed you so much. She hugged onto him , kissing him. Mute walked in the room .

Amara : I'll wait outside.

Mute: Okay.

She walked out the door , i could see her as the door was slightly opened, Mute sat down besides me.

Me: Amara is good to go , You know the drill.

Mute: ( nodding) I do , when she is done bonding with JJ we can leave to go get her stuff.

Me: She can go with him.

Mute: Are you sure about that? Mean giving her JJ will give her strength enough to not want to go live with you.

Me: So what are you suggesting?

Mute: Let JJ stay here with you , Amara will come back when JJ is with you.

Me: It's not like she has a choice , she will come back with or without JJ.

Mute: Funny how much you trust Amara while she shot you.

Me: She didn't shoot willingly so what is there to not trust?

Mute: She is going to be the death of you.

Me: ( chuckles) As long as she will visit my grave.

Mute: Lord spare my heart from love, i won't cope.

Me: Wait till you meet a person with whom you have an immediate connection with the moment you meet , a connection so strong that you drawn to them in a way you never experience before , you will experience a love so deep , strong and complex that you begin to doubt that you have ever truly loved anyone prior. Then my friend you will know the



woman standing before you is worthy to be fought for.

I looked at Amara and smiled, she was seated at the steel chairs , looking directly into the room.

Mute: ( smiles) And how do you know this is the one?

Me: Your heart just automatically knows.

Mute: I'll keep that in mind. Maybe when you out of here , we could go out for beer and talk more about this love thing.

Me: You have a girlfriend don't you?

Mute: Not yet .

He got up and walked towards the door , i just knew he has someone ,since when has Mute been interested in love affairs. I took my phone and called my therapist.

Therapist: Mr Smith long time.

Me: Set an appointment for me tomorrow, i will be bringing someone with me.

Therapist: But i had clients.

Me: Cancel them , I'll pay double.

I switched off my phone and placed it on the bed , Spike walked in carrying JJ.

Me: She left him?

Spike: Mute said it will be best she did .

Me: Thoughtful of him. Call Dr Jaden for me , i need to get out of here.

Spike: Already? Are you sure you want out? You have been shot not just anywhere but in your torso Alpha , that's like a area where all your vitals organs are in , lungs , heart ect, you could've died.

Me: Well i didn't as you can see I'm here breathing and alive , I'm well , i have to get out of here so i can get my life back on track.

Spike: Okay fine , your call.

He left the room , this Spike guy is seriously going to get on my nerves, who is he to question decisions about my life? I don't need permission from he or anyone for that matter , as for my mother I'm still going to deal with her , she has a lot of explaining to do , why would she take such a huge step without my consent.

LOGAN

I was worried about Alpha laying in ICU , i didn't know if his still paying for the suite i am living in or was it a pending debt the Manager will knock in at my door any day from now. I took my bag and walked downstairs heading to the mall. I needed snacks and some ice cream to watch a movie , i drove the

trolley around the store and collected the items , i placed a tub of ice cream and snacks on the till. The cashier scanned the item's as i took out my purse and took out my credit card.

Cashier: Pin please.

I punched my pin in waiting for the transaction, she looked at me stretching her head.

Cashier: Insufficient funds.

Me: What! No that can't be !

I took the black card and handed her another card.

Me: Try this one.

She did the paying process again and i typed in my pin again.

Cashier: Insufficient funds Mem.

Me: This can't be maybe these something wrong with your machines , i have money in my credit card.

Cashier: These nothing wrong with our machines girl , just call your bank , please move aside so i help other customers please.

The embarrassment as people looked at me , they probably laughing at me . Saying I'm a beautiful woman without money in my bank , what was happening with my credit cards ! I called my Mom.

Thandeka: Sweetheart hello.

Me: Ma ! My credit cards are not working.

Thandeka: What ? How?

Me: ( sobbing) I don't know ! The embarrassment i just experienced !

Thandeka: Darling please don't cry , it's going to be okay I'll check up with our banks and see what's going on.

Me: ( crying) They all looked at me as if i was some broke slay queen! Ma the cashier was even rude to me !

Thandeka: Don't worry honey , mommy will handle this okay , don't let this ruin your day please sweetheart. I love you.

Me: I love you too.

She hung up as i wiped my tears with a tissue looking around the markets parking lot , looked like they were still watching me , i drove off still sobbing. God that was tortuous , hearing the cashier say my card declined , how could my card decline while my family has so much money or maybe Dad blocked my cards, that i don't even access to his money, i wish all this was just a bad dream .

66

DREW

I had been on my laptop searching on different treatments i

could take to be normal again, i wanted to walk , i was desperate to walk again. I felt less of a man without legs , frustrated even more that i couldn't move an inch , i felt useless, my father hasn't visited me , it's like my whole family abandoned me , they left me out to the wolves. A nurse walked in rolling a wheelchair.

Me: And then ? What is this for?

Nurse: I'm taking you to a Doctor.

Me: I don't recall making an appointment with one

Nurse: You don't have to Sir , it's what your doctor knows it's best for you , you have to start exercising your legs.

Me: How when i can't even feel my legs !

Nurse : The Psychotherapist I'm taking you too is very good , she has helped a lot of people in the similar situation as you are in , telling you they walking today and they come each and everyday to thank her for her miraculously job

Me: You selling me lies.

Nurse: If that's what you want to believe Mr Hughes that's on you.

She helped me off the bed onto the wheelchair pushing me out . It was embarrassing to be rolled in a wheelchair, felt like people were looking at me , staring at me , probably laughing

and gossiping about me , i just wish i stayed in London , i would still have my legs and probably be living my best life. Coming to South Africa was the worst decision i ever made for me and my life. She pushed me inside a room with people in my similar situation. A woman approached me , she looked at me and smiled, she was actually a beautiful English woman with Blonde hair and red lips .

Doctor: Hi , I'm Dr Molly Roberts and I'm your Physiotherapist .

Me: Hi Molly , I'm Drew Hughes.

Molly: ( smiles) Nice to meet you , well shall we begin.

Me: Why not.

She walked behind me and took over from the nurse pushing me towards a bed .

Molly: Today we will start with some leg stretches just to see where are your pain points , just so i observe where you need help .

Me: Okay.

Two men helped me lay on the bed as i laid down face up , i was wearing shorts with my knees bandaged as the bullets went into my knee cap and blew my nerves exiting the backs , i haven't even spend time thinking of my comeback revenge onto Alpha . I knew deep down i deserved this suffering

because of what i did to Amara , she has been nothing but a good person towards me and i used that , i used her. Dr Molly pushed my knees up banging my knees , the pain hit my nerves, my knee cracked , i groaned covering my eyes with my arm and laid back.

Me: ( in pain) Fuck ! ( breathing) God that is painful !

I raised up my head with my eyes piling tears , i was in pain.

Molly: Breathe okay , keep breathing for me.

She continued banding my knee , i held on the sheet on the bed tightly clinching tightly on my teeth , My whole body was hot and sweaty with the pain vibrating in my body , my body was numb i couldn't feel myself but i could hear my heart beat and the blood running hot in my veins , i was burning hot , massively in pain.

AMARA

I got up from the bunk and walked to the little sink that had a cracked mirror and a toilet beside it , I washed my face looking at the image of woman before me , was it me? Is she me? she looks so tired, she looks so warned out not to mention the ugly bags under her eyes , she looked awful.

Policeman: Amara McKenzie!

I looked at him as he opened up the bars. I was even scared

approaching the gate , was it my bail hearing time? Was i going to be prosecuted?

Policeman: Hey ! Stop wasting my time!

I walked towards the bars as he applied cuffs on my wrist.

Me: Where are you taking me?

Policeman: That's not on my job prescription.

He walked me out the cells towards the main entrances , the sunlight that rapidly hit my skin with the fresh air that filled up my nostrils was blissful , i was happy to be out of that place that rank only sweat and pee from the dirt toilet that has been there for years. Mute was standing at reception with my lawyer. I walked towards them confused.

Mute: Amara.

Me: Hey , what's going on?

Lawyer: The Smith family have dropped the charges against you.

My jaw dropped , i was surprised , didn't expect this cause Nandi made it clear i was going to pay for what i did and i didn't believe those were just empty threats.

Mute: I'll be escorting you home.

Me: Why you? No offense but i could never be too careful with



you Smith's.

Mute: ( chuckles) I won't hurt you Amara , Alpha would skin me alive if i even dare touch a hair in your head.

Me: It's hard to believe I'm out what happened? How did i get out? Why did Alpha's Mom drop the charges?

Mute: Let's just say , Alpha regain consciousness.

Me: He did? Oh my word that's good news .

I smiled sobbing, i am really happy he is alive and well , what could i have done if he passed on ? I wiped my tears smiling as Mute gave me a hug.

Mute: You going to be okay , Everything is going to be okay.

Me : Thank you Mute.

I signed my release papers , i thanked the lawyer for trying to help me get out and he was for me too . We walked out the heading to Mute's Jeep , he drove off the police station as i kept stretching my arms , all i wanted was a cup of hot milky coffee and a warm bubbly bath then hold my baby boy . I wanted to cuddle myself against him so much , i missed him. Mute drove the car towards Alpha's house , i saw unsettled with him taking me to Alpha's house , he and i broke up , i broke every ties that connected me to him burned all bridges the only thing that is going to bring us together was Junior.

Me: Uhm..Mute i think you driving me towards the wrong direction.

Mute: No I'm not , I'm taking you to Alpha's house.

Me: Why ? I don't want to go there.

Mute: It's not up for discussion Amara so please don't fight me , I'm just following orders.

The car parked on the drive way , i walked out the car and he walked me into the house.

Mute: Home sweet home , I'll order you some food and i think you should go get a bath these clothes ontop of the bed that Alpha organized for you .

Me: Thank you.

Mute: You have 2 hours before we leave for the hospital, I'll come back for you i have business to take care off.

Me: Okay.

He walked out the house , he walked towards the door lock and pressed on it , he was setting a new security pin or was he locking me in? He smiled and walked out the house closing the door, i walked towards the door and hearing the car engine drive off , i opened up the door to check if he locked me in but he didn't the door was opened means he trusted me , he was just setting in a new pin. I walked upstairs and opened up the

water in the bathtub, filling it with soap and salts , i got in and soaked myself. This felt so good , so heavenly, i just wanted to seat here for eternity. I soaked myself in for prolonged minutes. I walked out and lotioning my body and wore the tracksuit that was on the bed. I sat down on the bed running my fingers on the sheet. Laughing to myself as i slight memory replayed itself in my mind, i remembered saying i wanted to sleep here forever, but who am i kidding? That wasn't possible, you can't expect to be happy with someone without complications , because what is love with no pain no suffer. I dried my hair with a towel and tied it. Mute is probably on his way here, the bell went off downstairs, maybe that was him but why was he ringing the bell. I walked down and opened the door it was the delivery guy.

Guy: hi, your delivery.

Me: Thank you.

I took the pack from him and closed the door , i sat on the counter eating.

Mute: Are you done ? Let's go.

Me: Yes I'm done.

I packed the pack leaving the leftovers in the fridge. I washed my hands.

Mute: Are you ready?

Me: Yes we can go now.

We walked out the house to the car , i was nervous about seeing Alpha , what was i going to say to him? How am i going to face him .

NANDI

I got a call from the station Superior that Amara has been released, in seconds i losf my mind , livid and boiling in anger , i sat down infront of the mirror and looked at myself.

Me: I can see Amara is getting too big for her shoes? She's challenging me ? She thinks she could take me on ? Shoot myself and think I'll just forgive and forget? She thinks she has own , has Alpha dancing in the palm of her hand and she must probably think i don't know what is going on here.

One of my maids walked in .

Maid: I just came to place the towels Mem.

Me: Thank you.

She place the towels on the bed , i looked at her as she opened the door.

Me: May i ask something?

Maid: Yes Madam ofcause.

Me: Please seat on the bed.

She sat down as i turned and looked at her.

Maid: What is wrong Mem?

Me: Do you believe in witchcraft, herbs and traditional healers?

Maid: Yes Madam ! i every much do , you know in the township where i live the are a lot of evil spirits including witchcraft, Mem tell you what ? If you always have to have holy water or salt in the township just to pour around your yard so it doesn't become a dancing stage for witchies or you are in trouble ! You won't sleep the whole night hearing cats meowing the whole night and owls hooing. Mem you have to be prayer strong , knee on the floor but here in your neighbourhood i don't believe the are witchies and evil spirits, you people here are rich what will be the need to bewitch one another.

Me: I need you to promise me you won't discuss what I'm about to tell you with anyone.

Maid : I swear on my grandmothers grave.

Me: I think Amara has bewitched Alpha.

She held her mouth in shock as i nodded my head.

Maid: My god ! Mem why do you think that way about Madam Amara.

Me: Alpha's behaviour has changed ever since he met that girl , i think Amara has gave my son herbs to control him

Maid: Like Love potion?

Me: Yes exactly, He goes above and beyond to make sure everything goes how Amara wants things to be like , bulldozing everything in her way ! My son is not in his right senses .

Maid: Madam i know how you feel, a friend of mine was going through the exact situation , her son met a girl and the girl had him on his toes , he even was doing everything for her , like washing clothes, cleaning and cooking while the girl gallavanted the streets doing lord knows what !

Me: What ! Never, i don't want my son going through such ordeals !

Maid: Well then Madam you will have to resolve this issue while it's still new !

Me: Yes I know that but where will i begin tackling this thing before my son loses his mind trying to please someone like Amara!

Maid: Rest assured Mem , you got me in your corner, I know a very good traditional healer at my area , he can help you.

Me: Really ? Thank you so much , if you take me to him , i will pay you handsomely.

Maid: We could go right now Madam , no room for procrastination when it comes to saving Sir Alpha , that Amara

girl came in like a sweet person but all along she was a wolf covered in sheep skin! Shame on her.

Me: You can say that again ! We can't leave right away cause i have to be busy with some issues, we will go tomorrow to meet the traditional healer , just so make sure it is safe .

Maid: You have nothing to worry about , When you are with me nothing will happen to you , i am well-known in the township, i will make sure he knows you coming so he makes special time for you Madam .

Me: Thank you then sweetheart, you may resume with you work.

She got up and fixed the sheet on the bed .

Maid: I will leave now.

Me: Thank you .

She walked out the door closing it , I sighed as this was a sign of hope to me , now with this Maid's help i could get to the bottom of this , i will have my son back to me , not the monster that is occupying itself in my son's body and working for Amara's selfish benefits.

ALPHA

Amara walked in the room with Mute , she stole a glance of me and looked down .

Me: ( smiling) Hey now ? How you feeling Mamma?

She just looked at me was she going to answer me already? Or was i to wait till she is ready to speak to me. I got up from the bed and approached her.

Mute : I'll just leave you two.

He walked out the room , closing the door. Walking towards her , i stepped an inch closer to her to feel my breath when i talk.

Me: Why you not answering me when I'm asking how are you? Are you mad ( angry) at me? I'm sorry i took my time to come save you . I got mistakenly shot by the woman i love and that knocked me off for days.

Amara: I'm sorry about shooting you.

I placed my finger on her lips , swirling my finger inbetween her lips.

Me: Shush , you don't have to apologize, i forgave you right after you shot me because i could never stay angry at you even in my dead bed. You shouldn't be angry yourself not at you or me or even Drew or my mom cause every minute you stay angry , you lose sixty seconds of happiness. I wouldn't like to see you unhappy so apology accepted. So how are you? Did anyone in jail bully you?



Amara: No , I was okay

I nodded my head , and held my stomach as i coughed. I walked toward the bed and sat down having a glass of water.

Me: Did anyone ask you question about me while you were in jail?

Amara: Question like what?

Me: Any question that involve my name besides you shooting me.

She shook her head .

Me: Are you sure? 100 percent?

Amara: Yes I'm sure , i would've told you if someone did.

Me: I trust you Amara and everything i told you about myself is not for police ears am i clear?Cause if you ratted your mouth while in prison , trying to get out with my name , I will lock every emotions i have for you in a dark part of my being and make you pay

Amara: ( blinking) I said nothing about your illegal dealings Alpha Smith. Now where is my child ? I just want my baby.

Me: His with a Nurse , i informed her to go change his nappy , so he will be with you shortly.

Amara: You gave a stranger our son?

Me: Before you over react Spike is with the nurse. So have you seen your boyfriend?

Amara: Can you please not begin your nonsense , i have been in jail for 2 days ! Don't start with me !

Me: I was just asking , no need to bite my head off.

Amara: So when are you getting discharged?

Me: You want me to come home already?

Amara: Just to make things clear , you and i are still over and nothing is going to happen between us , I'm sorry for shooting you and i appreciate you getting me out but that doesn't mean you back in my good books.

Me: Do i look like i want to get on your good books ?

Sweetheart i got a lot of catching up to do at work and on my life , all i want you to do is to look after our child under my roof , where i can keep an eye on you.

Amara: And what is that supposed to mean?

Me: You know exactly what i mean ! Mute will escort you to your flat, you will pack your clothes and move in my house permanently.

Amara: You are being unfair Alpha! You can't do that , Detect my life like this .

Me: I just did.

Amara: No ! I won't let you do this to me , i am not your toy , i am a full grown woman and you know damn sure i can make decisions for myself.

Me: Really now? So Drew was a right decision?

Amara: ( shouting) Don't make your stupid demands about what happened between me and Drew ! I became a target to Drew's cruelty because of you ! And now you blaming it all on me !

Me: Fighting me won't help you Amara just make your life easy and do what i tell you to do !

Amara: You are evil !

Me: Okay enough of your tantrums.

The nurse walked in holding Junior, Amara grabbed JJ of her hands holding onto him tightly.

Amara: My baby boy , did they hurt you? I missed you so much.

She hugged onto him , kissing him. Mute walked in the room .

Amara : I'll wait outside.

Mute: Okay.

She walked out the door , i could see her as the door was slightly opened, Mute sat down besides me.

Me: Amara is good to go , You know the drill.

Mute: ( nodding) I do , when she is done bonding with JJ we can leave to go get her stuff.

Me: She can go with him.

Mute: Are you sure about that? Mean giving her JJ will give her strength enough to not want to go live with you.

Me: So what are you suggesting?

Mute: Let JJ stay here with you , Amara will come back when JJ is with you.

Me: It's not like she has a choice , she will come back with or without JJ.

Mute: Funny how much you trust Amara while she shot you.

Me: She didn't shoot willingly so what is there to not trust?

Mute: She is going to be the death of you.

Me: ( chuckles) As long as she will visit my grave.

Mute: Lord spare my heart from love, i won't cope.

Me: Wait till you meet a person with whom you have an immediate connection with the moment you meet , a connection so strong that you drawn to them in a way you never experience before , you will experience a love so deep , strong and complex that you begin to doubt that you have ever

truly loved anyone prior. Then my friend you will know the woman standing before you is worthy to be fought for.

I looked at Amara and smiled, she was seated at the steel chairs , looking directly into the room.

Mute: ( smiles) And how do you know this is the one?

Me: Your heart just automatically knows.

Mute: I'll keep that in mind. Maybe when you out of here , we could go out for beer and talk more about this love thing.

Me: You have a girlfriend don't you?

Mute: Not yet .

He got up and walked towards the door , i just knew he has someone ,since when has Mute been interested in love affairs. I took my phone and called my therapist.

Therapist: Mr Smith long time.

Me: Set an appointment for me tomorrow, i will be bringing someone with me.

Therapist: But i had clients.

Me: Cancel them , I'll pay double.

I switched off my phone and placed it on the bed , Spike walked in carrying JJ.

Me: She left him?

Spike: Mute said it will be best she did .

Me: Thoughtful of him. Call Dr Jaden for me , i need to get out of here.

Spike: Already? Are you sure you want out? You have been shot not just anywhere but in your torso Alpha , that's like a area where all your vitals organs are in , lungs , heart ect, you could've died.

Me: Well i didn't as you can see I'm here breathing and alive , I'm well , i have to get out of here so i can get my life back on track.

Spike: Okay fine , your call.

He left the room , this Spike guy is seriously going to get on my nerves, who is he to question decisions about my life? I don't need permission from he or anyone for that matter , as for my mother I'm still going to deal with her , she has a lot of explaining to do , why would she take such a huge step without my consent.

LOGAN

I was worried about Alpha laying in ICU , i didn't know if his still paying for the suite i am living in or was it a pending debt the Manager will knock in at my door any day from now. I took my

bag and walked downstairs heading to the mall. I needed snacks and some ice cream to watch a movie , i drove the trolley around the store and collected the items , i placed a tub of ice cream and snacks on the till. The cashier scanned the item's as i took out my purse and took out my credit card.

Cashier: Pin please.

I punched my pin in waiting for the transaction, she looked at me stretching her head.

Cashier: Insufficient funds.

Me: What! No that can't be !

I took the black card and handed her another card.

Me: Try this one.

She did the paying process again and i typed in my pin again.

Cashier: Insufficient funds Mem.

Me: This can't be maybe these something wrong with your machines , i have money in my credit card.

Cashier: These nothing wrong with our machines girl , just call your bank , please move aside so i help other customers please.

The embarrassment as people looked at me , they probably laughing at me . Saying I'm a beautiful woman without money in my bank , what was happening with my credit cards ! I called

my Mom.

Thandeka: Sweetheart hello.

Me: Ma ! My credit cards are not working.

Thandeka: What ? How?

Me: ( sobbing) I don't know ! The embarrassment i just experienced !

Thandeka: Darling please don't cry , it's going to be okay I'll check up with our banks and see what's going on.

Me: ( crying) They all looked at me as if i was some broke slay queen! Ma the cashier was even rude to me !

Thandeka: Don't worry honey , mommy will handle this okay , don't let this ruin your day please sweetheart. I love you.

Me: I love you too.

She hung up as i wiped my tears with a tissue looking around the markets parking lot , looked like they were still watching me , i drove off still sobbing. God that was tortuous , hearing the cashier say my card declined , how could my card decline while my family has so much money or maybe Dad blocked my cards, that i don't even access to his money, i wish all this was just a bad dream .



ABBYGAIL

I made myself a sandwich and some juice since our credit cards haven't been working the whole day . Ma left to see Dad hours ago saying she was going to confront him about our cards declining thank god , i didn't embarrass myself like Miss fancy pants , I sat down and switch on my phone paging through social media. The story about the burnt girl in the Smith's house in South hills was the top trending story , i read through posts as people said the Smith's used the girl as sacrifice for money . Knowing Mute i don't really think he is a devil worshipper let alone work for the devil mean what kind of nonsense was that . People just like believing in superstition that are not even true. I tapped on my call log and called Drew , it's been a day since i haven't seen him .

Drew: Abby

Me: Hey , how are you feeling?

Drew: Crippled.

Me: Come on Drew don't be like that please.

Drew: Like what? I am crippled infact I'm handicap.

Me: You are not cripple , You will get better i believe so but for now you have to stay strong since we having financial problems.

Drew: financial problems? Who is having financial problems.

Me: Us as a whole , i don't know about

you but as for us , we are going through a tough time , We are bankrupt Drew non of our credit card have money.

Drew: ( confused) How ?! How can you be bankrupt, does dad know about this?

Me: I think he knows now that Mom went to speak with him , i just hope he fixes this soon cause i have to pay for my fees and other personal things , especially rent or i will be homeless.

Drew : You will move back home.

Me: And what about mom?

Drew: She will see what to do , either beg dad of move in with a friend.

Me: No i can't let my mom suffer like that, i will have to make a plan.

Drew: Tell me how much you want and i will transfer it.

Me: Really? You would be a life saver.

Drew: Anything for my sister and tell Logan to transfer her bank details too , i will transfer a share to her too , just to keep her afloat.

Me: I will do so brother thank you a millon times , i honestly

don't know how to thank you cause i know you sending us your hard earned money.

Drew: Listen i had some pain killers and sleeping pills so I'm quite tired , today was a long session.

Me: You already on treatment?

Drew: Yes i am and it doesn't feel like treatment it's more like torture and reliving the pain .

Me: You are stronger than that and i know you will be back on your feet in no time.

Drew: Thank you, bye.

Me: Bye , i love you.

He hung up before even saying he loved me back . I understand it's probably the pills he had . The door slid open as i looked at the dark sky with a bed of crystal milky way galaxy stars , Ma walked in , she could barely stand on her feet . I got up and helped her inside as she rank of alcohol, she was smelling bad , i was puking besides her.

Thandeka: My baby , I'm so sorry you have to see me like this.

Me: No Ma it's okay , i understand when someone is frustrated and in pain they do resort to drinking.

I walked her in and sat her on the couch.

Thandeka: I had such a great time , just drinking my sorrows away.

Me: ( fakes a smile) I can see that.

I looked at her just japping her with my eye , i was so embarrassed to even call her Mom , what kind of a mother was she ? She walked out here saying she is going to confront Dad and now she walks in drunk could barely walk and talk. I was disappointed in her . She laid down on the couch covering her legs with her shirt.

Thandeka: I just want to sleep , just a little sleep so i wake up fine.

Me: Ma go sleep in the room

She closed her eyes and began snoring like a bear. I covered her with the blanket , collecting my books and cellphone , looked like i am going to sleep on my bed tonight, not that i am complaining , i love my bed so much but with Ma living here with me it's been really hard to actually sleep comfortable. I was sleeping on the couch while she used the bedroom.

JADEN

I walked inside the house and placed my keys on the table.

Grace : Your food is in the warmer.

Me: Did you know Amara is out of jail?

Grace: Yes i do , the lawyer told me and she called me for a short while letting me know she was out and i don't nee to worry now.

Me: Oh i see and did she tell you she is now working on things with Alpha?

Grace: No she didn't and i don't see the need to know , that's her business.

Me: You are her grandmother. You should be advising her not to get back with Alpha , why can't she see Alpha has brought her nothing but misery and pain? Why can't she see, she and Alpha are not going to work , they never did , they won't!

Grace: Why are you so bothered about their affairs? Either they want to give it another try or not that non of your business son , let me go lay down , i am very tired.

She walked towards her room and closed the door , i couldn't believe Ma just left me hanging , she was supposed to be in my corner help me save Amara from getting another heartbreak yet again, i think i will have to go to Amara's flat and speak to her myself , she might be enlightened to this situation more than Alpha mean what was the use of running back and forth to a man that continuously hurts and degrades you ? This was just madness she isn't going to be any different from the ladies that are abused in their relationships and still pray with blue black

faces that their partner changes.

AMARA

I laid Junior to sleep after feeding and bathing him , he has been sleeping the whole day and i actually liked him much better asleep , it meant he was growing and i couldn't wait for him to grow up and be up and about running around in the house and calling me mommy, i placed my arm on the crib and laid my chin on my arm brushing his chubby cheeks. As he is growing he was beginning to age into Alpha , Mam'Grace was right this boy is really going to take after his father the most all i will have left in him is my eyes.

Alpha: Dinner is ready.

I got up and looked at him folding my arms.

Me: You cooked?

Alpha: Something like that.

Me: Why do i fail to believe that?

Alpha: That's because you don't trust me. Come let's go have dinner.

He held my hand as we walked downstairs, really he did cook , the table was laid out with two plates and glasses of wine next to the cutlery. He pulled the chair for me as i sat down laying the napkin on my thighs. I looked at him amazed , what was

wrong with him? He opened up the plate that was covering the food . I looked at the plate that had a slice of steak and a salad besides it , we were actually having a slice of steak and a salad ! that is dinner . I looked at the plate and blinked.

Me: Ummm..this looks good.

Alpha: I know right, let me pour you some Juice since you breastfeeding I'll have the wine.

He gulped on my glass and walked into the kitchen, i stared at the plate picking up a fork , he placed the glass of Juice besides me and walked over to his seat. I poked the meat slicing with the knife when blood just flooded the bottom of the plate. I swallowed hard , what kind of dinner is this , i figured he liked his steak half cooked and raw but i wasn't that kind of a person , i like my steak overcooked with no blood in it. I drank from the juice glass and looked at him.

Me: Thank you for dinner but i think i will eat tomorrow.

Alpha: Why is the food ugly? I prepared it specially for you please eat.

I picked up a piece of meat and stuck it in my mouth quickly chewing, could taste the salt and meat juices in my mouth and it was actually good.

Alpha: And?

Me: It's good.

Alpha : See i told you, i might not know how to cook but i make the best steak .

I faked a smile and drank from my glass . We continued eating just out plates communicating while we just stole glances of each other and didn't say a word. He frowned staring at me holding his whisky glass. I looked at him and he smiled sipping from his glass.

Alpha: So tell me Miss McKenzie , why are you staring at me ? Do i look that lovely that you can't take your eyes off me?

I looked at him as he bluntly uttered the truth , he placed his elbow on the chair and laid back looking at me smiling. He was really seating and looking lovely, a handsome caramel man , with a big up chest peeking out the shirt with medium small pink lips and horse capped teeth as he flashed his billion dollar smile , he has such a beautiful smile no wonder he got to cheat with whomever he wanted , i just frowned at him as the cheating term migrated into my mind. Damn bloody cheater ! That was exactly what he is a cheater and i knew what they say , once a cheater always a cheater. I glanced at him as he sat up straighter on the chair , his plams running up and down the leather arm rest of the chair, he picked up his phone and patted on it staring at the screen , i had to break the awkward silence between us or better yet just go to bed and sleep.



Me: Before you came with your drama ending up getting yourself shot, i was thinking of getting a job to provide for myself and Junior.

Alpha : ( nodding his head still looking at his screen) Mhhh.

Me: Mhh? is that all you going to say? Mhhh?

Alpha: Do whatever you want Amara, you are not a prisoner.

I slightly breather of his unexpected answer somehow freed me , i thought he is going to argue with me and strictly tell me i wasn't going to get any job while he has money . I was actually surprised about his response.

Me: Okay then , now that is out of the way , i will go to bed.

Alpha: On one condition.

Me: I knew you wouldn't just allow me be without opposing or giving me the terms and conditions, what are they Alpha? I am not allowed to be in a room with a man? I'm not allowed to have a boss that is a man? What are t's and c's?

Alpha: It's a morning till 6 pm job , no after work hours or anything! That has to do with you working after hours.

Me: Why are you so controlling!

Alpha: I'm looking out for you here !

Me: Stop lying! You scared history will repeat itself!

Alpha : What are you talking about?

Me: You scared what happened between me and you might happen again, we had our after hours remember?

Alpha: Stop being pathetic , i didn't even think of that , know what fine , do whatever that makes you happy, even if you come home in the morning i seriously don't care !

I cleared the table and made myself a cup of coffee dipping rusks in the mug . He was on his laptop busy with work as always , he just got himself discharged from work to just weigh his body with work , I washed the cup after filling my stomach with some coffee because dinner just didn't do the trick. He clinched on his hand , forming a fist and relaxing his hand , his arm was tired , in a caring manner i walked to him and placed my hands on his shoulder for to give him a massage, he rose from the chair and took his laptop heading upstairs.

Me: Alpha are you being seriously?

Ignoring me he faded up the stairs, i couldn't believe this man that just avoided me was the one that was pleading we give us a try again. His so inconsistency no wonder he cheats and make it looks like he had no choice but to do it . Alpha is a two faced hypocrite. I walked up to my room and opening up the sheets and laid down , the bed was so big and so cold , i swirled into a ball to keep myself warm placing my hands inbetween

my thighs.

[ THE FOLLOWING MORNING ]

THABO

Cohen walked in after disappearing from the house and leaving me all alone . I looked at him as he walked in.

Cohen: Boss morning.

Me: Long time.

Cohen: I'm sorry for not being present for a day , i was out combing the streets and asking my contacts for a buyer .

Me: And ? Did you find someone?

Cohen : I found a gang but they only have R500k .

Me: Are you fucking kidding me ? What the hell am i going to do with those peanuts!

Cohen: I told them , the guns cost double that money and that is how high they were prepared to pay.

Me: God damnit Cohen ! I trusted you with this !

Cohen : I tried everywhere sir , but no one wants to buy these guns , they too expensive, we dealing with Locals here boss we can't sell them guns for + Millions and expect them to actually have the money, money is tight.

Me: I wonder who the hell stole my German contact , they were my hope , they only people that actually paid me well ! Where are the guns now?

Cohen: They in my car.

Me: Go get them, we need to keep the guns safe till we find buyers.

Cohen: Have you eaten and drank your pills sir?

Me : I'm not interested in food

Cohen: You have to take care of your health Sir , we can't afford to lose you.

Me: Dying would be a privilege to me right now.

Cohen: Don't speak like that sir you won't die ! I will go and keep looking i know i will find something for now just stay strong. I will make you a sandwich or something.

Me: Okay boy thank you when you done please go check Drew for me.

Cohen: i will do that.

ALPHA

I prepared to go to the office today , i was really looking forward to go to work and get the business up and running that also includes the money laundering business. I fixed my shirt

collar wearing my black suit blazer , adding my silver cufflinks. I collected my files from the bed and my laptop bag , walking downstairs , Amara was setting the table carrying Junior, i looked at her as she placed the jar of orange juice on the table.

Amara : ( smiling) Morning.

Me: Morning

Amara : I made breakfast , there is eggs , bacon , sandwiches and omelet and i made you coffee , just the way you like it.

She held the cup of coffee , handing it to me , i looked at her as she smiled.

Me: I'm not hungry, I'm going to work , you will call me for any emergencies.

I leaned and kissed JJ's forehead

Me: Daddy is off to work, be a good boy okay , i love you.

Looking at Amara , she glanced at me like she was expecting a goodbye kiss to i just walked towards the door swinging my car keys on in my finger.

Amara : What about breakfast? I made all this food for us .

Me: Throw it out , go donate it to the homeless , i don't know.

I walked out the house and my phone rang , it is Mom , wonder

what does she want now. I got in the car and drove off the yard plugging my ear pods.

Me: Yes.

Nandi: Alpha , hi , how are you?.

Me: Talk to me , what is bothering you?

Nandi: Today at 8 the will be a press conference here at the house regarding the trending news about the burnt body in our house in South hills including Amara's drama of shooting you , i want you to come.

Me: Okay no problem , i will be there.

Nandi: Okay baby have a good day okay and please take it easy on your healthy.

Me: Okay i will bye.

I hung up speeding my car towards my building as i parked before the door , the security gaurds were happy to see me , their faces brightened up, i handed my keys to one.

Me: You know what to do.

Security gaurd: Welcome back sir.

Me: Thank you.

I walked into the lift paging my phone , the elevator was really taking it's precious time. The minute the door opened up and i

set my eyes on the reception table , i knew my day was going to go back to normal , i felt like i was supposed to be here , my company felt , home , i am home. I walked out as my stuff came to me.

employee: Alpha is here , welcome back big boss.

They all clapped their hands and smiled at me , i just faked a smile.

Me: Thank you guys this is so unexpected of you but i really appreciate it.

employee: And i hope you won't be ditching us anytime soon again, we were so scared almost thought we will have to look for other jobs .

employee 2 : I was praying for your recovery but then knowing you i just knew you will bounce back.

Me: Lucky for you , i didn't die .

They all laughed, it was actually heartfelt that they cared about me , Amazing knowing there were actually people that i made a huge impact in their lives. I was a little unhappy this morning, i am upset with Amara what she said last night to me , she actually hurt me but i just didn't have the guts to actually address her cause that might make me seem jealous , not that am not but knowing she's looking for a job , i just can't stomach having her being with a man and that man ain't me , it really

gets to me, makes me rage in anger at the same time I'm happy she is considering being independent , it just makes her even more remarkably sexy.

Me : You guys can go back to making me rich.

The crowd dispersed as each walked to their work station, Ipek walked with me into my office.

Ipek: Welcome back.

Me: It's good to be back.

I unbuttoned my blazer and sat down , opening up my laptop.

Ipek: Do you want anything? Coffee? Water?

Me: Coffee .

Ipek: Coffee coming right up.

She walked out the room closing the door. I took my phone out and called Mute.

Me: I need you to organize a guy for me that's going to follow Amara.

Mute: You mean a spy.

Me: More like a guardian angel.

Mute: ( laughs) Okay , i will organize one for her.

Me: He must be discrete make sure she doesn't feel like she is



followed , i want to know her every move , okay.

Mute: I will inform him.

Me: Thank you bye.

I had to do it , i had to organize protection for her , i know my mom and she is much dangerous than my father. As she has begun the Amara hate movement she won't stop till Amara is out of my life , she will do anything possible to make sure Amara doesn't get away with shooting me , even if that means killing her .

NANDI

I collected a Gucci doek from my drawer and took my bag , the maid was waiting for me outside the house . I walked towards the door and Steve stopped me.

Steve: And where are you off too dressed like that?

Me: Like what?

I looked down at my black long sleeved dress with a neck collar.

Steve : You are up to no good.

Me: Is it a crime to wear a black dress?

Steve: No it's not darling.

Me: Then i need to go out shopping i have so much shopping to do especially with the press conference.

Steve: Really? Then let me not kill your shopping spirit .

He kissed my cheek as i faked a smile dying in suspense that he gets off my case so i can leave.

Me: I will be back in no time.

Steve: Okay honey.

I walked out and got into my car , the maid got into the passenger seat , i will be driving myself today, i don't want no one but me and the maid to know about this. I drove towards the township with her showing me the way we made it to your destination, i looked around the place , the houses here were packed together with children playing on the streets , i took out my glasses and wore them wearing the doek over my head. We walked out as i held my bag closer to me and locked my car , she opened the gate for me and we walked to the back of the main house , there was a hut at the back with dead animal skin hanging on both sides of the door , i looked at her .

Me: Are you sure this place is safe?

Maid: Yes Madam it's safe i swear. Let's get in Gogo ( traditional healer) is waiting for us. I sighed and she took off her shoes , i did the same taking my pumps off. We walked inside the hut and sat down on the mat , the man inside was wearing his traditional healer gear , he looked scary to me , i sat down browsing the inside of the hut , he burned incense's and

looked at me.

Healer : You are here in behalf of your son?

Me: Yes , yes sir.

Maid: Gogo Madam his not Sir.

Me: Sorry Gogo.

Healer : Blow in here.

He handed a sack to me to blow in , i blew in the sack as he shook it , speaking , looking at his mouth looked like he was summoning spirits. He emptied the sack on the mat and made sounds , i looked at him as he moaned like he was in pain , moving his body , he flinched holding on his back breathing heavily. I whispered in the maids ear.

Me: ( whispering) What is going on now?

Maid: His talking to the ancestors Madam , they are showing him , revealing your problems , just relax.

I looked at him as he pointed at a bone with his stick. He looked at me with his eye filled with tears , sobbing.

Healer: You haven't been manipulated or anything, your son is in his right senses .

Me: But Gogo he has been acting strange.

He shook his head and closed his eyes flinching.

Healer: No ! You shouldn't be worried about your son !

I looked at the maid confused .

Healer : You should be worried about the man in your life .  
Warn him about what he is about to do , he will be bring war  
into your household ! And I'm afraid you won't be able to  
conquer!

Me: What is he talking about?

Maid: I don't know Madam.

Healer: Go home and tell your husband to let the family have  
the body ! Or he won't be at peace , tell him to unbury the  
buried and let them be rightfully buried so the family finds  
peace and closure .

I looked at him as he picked up his bones inserting them into  
the sack , this guy is really legit, i know my husband has blood  
in his hand i just didn't understand, what body was he allowed  
to leave for a family , what was he talking about when he  
speaks of the buried?

Me: Uhm .. about the mother of my grand child, can't you give  
me a potion so my son doesn't love her again or even better  
give me a potion to give to Amara so she hates my son and  
never want to be with him , Gogo i don't want that girl next  
to my son.

Healer : ( chuckles) I won't give you anything.

Me: Why not ? I'm going to pay? I have money.

I said digging in my purse taking out my wallet.

Healer: ( laughs and shakes his head) It's not about the money Mem.

Me: Then what it is about? You don't understand Gogo that relationship is just frustrating.

Healer: I understand clearly and i am advising to not touch that girl, she is spiritually protected by her mother don't even think about it unless you want to go mad or have a death wish , no spell cast on her will affect her.

I just got even more frustrated when he informed me about Amara being spiritually gaurded , he took a jar of herbs and folded it in a paper.

Healer : You can walk out and never look back , remember what i said about your husband and when he is done, he will boil these herbs and sprinkle them around the yard that chases away evil spirits.

Me: Thank you.

I paid for the herbs and we walked out , i wore my shoes and speeded out the yard to my car. She got in next to me as i slammed my palms on the steering wheel screaming.

Me : Damn you Amara ! This was just a waste of my time and petrol! All the way from the town to a dusty township just to be told my enemy is untouchable! Really ? Arrg !

Maid: I'm sorry Madam but atleast you can warn Sir to stop turning your house into a grave yard.

I looked at her , the nerve to spite those words in my presences , i wanted to slap the living hell out of her but i didn't have the strength for all that , i felt like tossing myself on my bed and just cry .

Me: Whatever that was said in that hut stays in that hut am i clear ?

Maid: Yes Mem.

Me: If i hear you have been running your mouth about my family issues? I swear to god i will kill you.

Her eyes popped out in fear as she nodded her head.

Me: Good let's go back , the is a lot of work to be done at the house.

I drove the car off , heading towards town with my mind still thinking about what the healer said . Maybe Steve had a hand in that woman's body found in the house in South Hill's , i wil have to approach him with these news in a more smart way so he doesn't manipulate me or use my words against me , i need

to get answer's as for Amara i will think of a way , for now let her think she has won.

AMARA

I sat down on the couch watching a movie as Junior sucked on my nipple , I have never been so bored , the house was so quiet and it felt even more bigger than it already is . A notification beeped on my phone i checked and it was a message from Jaden , he was asking where i was and i replied i was in Alpha's house , he let me know he was coming over , he wanted to discuss something with me. As soon as i got off the phone with him , i called My grandMa to check if she was okay , i just got instantly worried and thought maybe something happened to her , she is the only thing that bonded me and Jaden and we would seriously talk about , now that i knew she is okay , i kept wondering to myself why would Jaden have something to talk to me about? What was wrong? I picked Junior up and he let out a burp , he is gettting bigger and growing each and every day , even hard to carry for a long period of time . I was even scared he might get be over weight. Maybe he will grow out of the chubby cheeks and body most babies do. The door bell went off , i got up and went to the opened it.

Security: These a guy at the gate said his name is Jaden .

Me: Let him in please.

Security: Thank you for breakfast Mem it was delicious.

Me: It's only a pleasure.

He smiled and walked away , Jaden drove in and got out his car , I walked inside the house and he looked around.

Jaden: Hey , oh wow this is a nice house.

Me: Thank you please take a seat.

Jaden: Thank you .

Me : Juice? Coffee.

Jaden: No thank you seat down please.

I sat down on the mat and place Junior down , handing him his toys.

Me: You wanted to discuss something with me?

Jaden : Yes i did .

Me: Is it about Alpha's health? Is something wrong with him?

Jaden : No , Alpha is completely fine , it's not about his health it's about your relationship.

Me: My relationship?

Jaden: Yes.

Me: With Alpha?



Jaden: Yes , i don't want to seem like I'm getting into relations that don't concern me .

Me: You actually are , i don't get why you will come all the way here to discuss my relationship with Alpha? Mean you must be really concerned about me and Alpha.

Jaden: If you would just let me explain you will understand my visit.

Me: Please go ahead , I'm all ears ( I'm listening) .

Jaden: Amara your relationship with Alpha is completely toxic , it's not good for you or Junior. Staying here with him is not good for you , for how many months, years will you keep getting yourself hurt and broken down in the hands of this man?

I looked at him and laughed, i just couldn't help but just laugh , he came all this way to talk about how Alpha's hurts me? Was he okay? I think he must've bumped his head.

Me: Don't mind me laughing please, just that I'm surprised, listen Jaden , i appreciate you worrying about me but please don't bother your spirt like this , Alpha and i are still over , we not dating or even sleeping together , we sleep in separate rooms .

Jaden: Till when? Till he mistakenly kisses you?

I faked out a laugh feeling guilty of the kiss i had with him in the room.

Me: No , that's not going to happen.

He sneaked up to me on the mat and sat besides me holding my hands.

Jaden: How sure are you , you are not going to sneak into Alpha's arms again?

Me: Jaden i think you are paranoid, i don't know where the sudden drive to convince me to stay away from Alpha came from but i think you should stop , it's not giving you a good look.

Jaden: Don't take this in a wrong way , I'm just a close friend looking out for a heart felt friend.

Me: Oh okay , so are you sure you don't want me to offer you anything?

Jaden: No I'm good , i think i will go back to duty .

Me: Okay , let me see you out.

He kissed Junior's cheeks as i walked him to the door , we stood at the door awkwardly smiling at each other. He stretched out his arms and i hugged him , he wrapped his arms around my waist and lifted me up. I let my arms loose around him.

Jaden: I will go then.

Me: Bye .

He walked towards his car and waved , i waved back and got into the house , that was a weird talk to be honest since when has Jaden had an interest in my love life. Anyways i walked into the lounge and sat down with my son as i browsed on the internet for Accountant open jobs to apply in . I paged through looking for a suitable job that actually met my qualifications.

MUTE

I took Abbygail out for lunch after her classes in a cafe near the University, we sat down and she ordered coffee with chocolate muffins, i just had coffee.

Me: So how was your classes?

Abby: Tiring and very long.

Me: I see , atleast you chasing your dream.

Abby: Yes i am and you? Did you have a dream?

Me: ( chuckles) Dreams are for you and people that dream , i have non.

Abby: What ? Are you serious? Everyone has dreams , even people like you have dreams just that you fail to dream.

Me: If that's how you want to see it then fine , i won't be

arguing with you.

Abby: I heard about the press conference at the Smith's tonight.

Me: Oh you did?

Abby: Yes , it's all over social media , we just can't wait to stream it and hear the tea on what actually happened, I'm sure you will be all suited up and looking handsome.

My phone rang , i lifted up my finger as a sign to her to shut up.

Me: Pop's.

Steve: Where are you ? I need you to do a job for me .

Me: I'm listening?

Steve: Not over the phone come over at the house we will discuss it in person.

Me: I'll be there in half an hour.

Steve: Okay son i will be waiting.

I hung up and got up from the table taking my wallet out from my back pocket.

Abby: You need to go?

Me: Yes , i have work to do.

Abby: That's a shame i hoped we would talk .

Me: We will talk when i get the chance to sweetheart.

Abby: I hope so and then maybe you won't be busy or get any calls.

I took out money from my wallet and covered the bill with a tip for the waiter. I walked over to Abby and kneeled before her , she reached down to my lips and kissed me holding onto my cheeks.

Me: I have to go , I'll check on you later on.

Abby: How about , you find me in your apartment tonight.

I looked at her and smirked.

Me: I'll be looking forward to that.

Abby: Me too, don't keep me up.

Me: I won't naughty girl.

I got up and walked towards the door , she kissed her palm and blew a kiss at me , i walked out smiling , i don't know but my body suddenly warmed up , i got into my jeep and drove home just smiling throughout my trip , what the hell is going on with me? My tummy just twisting and turning , i think i am happy or am i inlove?

69

STEVE

Nandi came home and began organizing the house for the press conference, it looked like she was organizing more for a event than a press conference, there were food platters, wine , whisky vodka it was a beautiful scenery . She placed the snacks on the tables next , there were chairs lined across the room. She was using our dining area as the venue of the press conference . Felt some way with having reporters in our home but whatever Nandi wants she gets and if she wants the press conference to be held in her home then so be it.

Me: honey this is beautiful, you really are doing a great job.

Nandi : ( coldly) thank you.

I looked at her as she placed the snacks platters on the table, she wasn't herself since she got home .

Me: darling is there something wrong?

Nandi: You tell me Steve?

Me: Nandi what is going on?

She held my hand and we walked to the bedroom, she closed the door and looked at me.

Nandi: Who did you kill and bury in our yard?

The question sank deep in my throat choking me , i faked a laugh and walked towards the window laughing.

Me: Honey , where is all this coming from?

Nandi : Don't honey me ! For once in your life just tell me the truth without manipulating it or sugar coating it so it looks good in my eyes , please just tell me !

Me: Who told you about the body buried in our yard ? Was it Mute?

Nandi: ( scoffs) So there is a body in my premises? How could you Steve! How could you bury someone right in our yard , are you mad?

Me: It was nothing, i just needed to get rid of the body fast.

Nandi: Who was it ? Did you kill him right here in our house?

Me : It happened unplanned

Nandi: Oh my god Steve! What have you done to our home.

She covered her face with her hands and sat down on the edge of the bed.

Me: Honey you don't have to worry, no one will find the body.

Nandi: You have to dig it out of my yard and get it out now of here , i will not live in a house with ghost wondering around in my house , you have to do the right thing and send the body to it's family so they rightfully bury it and it finds peace , i don't want dead man haunting me in my own house !

Me: ( laughs) What? Since when have you believed in such superstition , the is no such thing as ghost and the dead coming to haunt the living , stop being silly.

Nandi: I don't care what you believe in Steve but all i know is , you are going to dig out that body and go hand it over to its family let it be you leave it infront of the gate or at their door step but you are going to get that body out of my yard ! And you doing it tonight.

Me: Okay fine i will dig the body out and wrap it in a gift bag with a bow tie and send it to her family.

Nandi: It's a her ?

Me: Yes but it's a nobody , you shouldn't worry yourself about her.

Nandi: And also when you done doing all that, I also have to warn you to not pursuit the plan you working on , let the family have the body so it rest or you will be invite disruption and chaos into our home.

Me: Where is all this coming from Nandi ? Why the sudden warnings did you go see a pastor ?

Nandi: No , a traditional healer.

Me: Traditional healer? Since when have you been into traditional healers?



Nandi : That's non of your business , i went there for my own reasons and i was told to warn you.

I looked at her and shook my head, what the hell is wrong with my wife? Is she into Traditional healers and Muti now? I just looked at her suspiciously , this was really unacceptible i can't have my wife engaging herself in such cultures.

Me: I'm really disappointed in you Nandi .

Nandi: In me ? Why because i got info that i shouldn't have known about you? Is that why you disappointed in me , you listen here , i will keep going for consultations till i hear every single dirt about you and i have a feeling Gogo is going to help me repair my family.

Me: Gogo? What the hell is wrong with you ! I forbid you to go anywhere near Gogo or whoever the hell is his or her name ! That's if you still want to be my wife , i won't have my wife gallavating walking in and out of traditionally healers den what do you think people will say about us ! We already are treading people are saying we used the woman that burnt dead in our house as a sacrifice for money and here you are associating yourself with Sangomas ! Stop being a fuck up Nandi ! Where are your brains! Think and stop being controlled by anger and revenge!

Nandi: ( laughs) The people you so worried about don't give a

damn about our family , why am i even surprised the real reasons we are going through so much problems in this house is because of you ! You are burying dead bodies in our house Steve!

Me: Yes blame me ! Go ahead that's all you good at is blaming me everytime something goes wrong in our lives , blame me for global warming, blame me for the suffering economy, blame it all on me , I'm giving you the right too !

Nandi: Know what , I'm not going to let you ruin my night, not tonight Steve.

She walked out the room slamming the door behind her. I shook my head in anger forming a fist and punched the wall !

Me: Damn that traditional healer ! Damn you !

I took deep breaths calming myself down , Nandi and i were making so much progress and now we are drifting away again , if i find whoever took her to a traditional healer that person is going to pay.

DREW

God my legs were even painful this evening, the exercise session i had with Molly today was painful than the first. I paused for a moment and looked up.

Me: i can feel my legs , i can feel my painful legs .

I exhaled and tried moving my toes , they didn't move but i could feel my painful knees , i could feel my knees , this meant i was getting better . A nurse walked in with my pills and a cup of water.

Nurse: Time for your bone calcium pills.

Me: I can feel my knee is pain.

Nurse: that's good , it means your exercises are challenging your nerves that's a good start.

Me: Can I book doctor Molly everyday?

Nurse: That's possible but i don't believe she will allow that , you can't push yourself too much or your body will snap, these only a limit for the pain your immune system can take.

Me: But what if I'm willing to push myself too much, that's allow right.

Nurse : I think it's best you discuss that with your doctor , she knows best when it comes to tackling your injury, I'm just a nurse I'm here to take care of you and make sure you drink your pills. Here is your dose .

Me: Thank you.

I took the pills and drank them down with water.

Nurse: You should rest now .

I laid down my head as she fixed my pillow for me.

Me: Thank you.

Nurse: Pleasure, if you need anything, i will be right around the corner.

I nodded my head and faked a smile , she walked out the room and closed the door , i got up dragging my legs up so i seat straight up , i took my phone out watching YouTube videos of people that suffered from my exact condition and regained their legs back , i wanted to explore very treatment possible to walk again.

ALPHA

I knocked off work in about 7 pm , i had an hour to get home and freshen up for the press conference. I brushed my eyes as they were tired from staring at the laptop all day, i managed to get half my work done , that was cashing in money into accounts and checking files with clients that have low capital and cash in money into their accounts. Some money i cash is in undetectable to them , so i get to withdraw the money without them noticing, i call that the invisible capital.

Me: I think we should call it a day Ipek.

Ipek: Yes please, I'm so tired , i want to get home and soak myself into a bubbly bath and drink wine.

We packed our things , she picked up files and we both walked out the door , she dropped the pile of files on the floor , i looked at her as she band down picking the files, i could see her inner thighs and her booty as i was behind her . A part of me is tempted felt like grabbing her and pinning her against the wall just ram her up but another portion put on a strong fight reminding me of the hurt i caused Amara the last time i slept with a woman , Ipek wasn't worth it , I'll just go .

Ipek: I'm so sorry , i know you in a hurry, stupid files.

Me: You will close the door when you get out .

I passed her and walked into the elevator leaving her to pick up the files. I walked out the elevator to the parking lot , i got into my car and drove home. On my way i called in a nanny for Junior and called a stylist for Amara , i wanted her to be dressed beautiful since the press will be there they will take pictures i just know and she should look stunning. I wanted Amara to accompany me to the press conference so she speaks for herself when needed I don't want no one narrating her story for her . The lights were already on figured she will be really angry at me for getting home late . I walked inside and place my laptop bag on the kitchen counter and had a glass of water.

Amara:You back.

Me: Yeah , I'm home.

I turned and looked at her , she covered her body with her gown folding her arms.

Amara: How was work?

Me: Tiring but these no complaining , i love my job.

Amara: Good, i haven't had dinner i was waiting for you to come back and eat together , Junior is already sleeping.

Me: That's good , you should go bath , we going to a press conference in an hour.

Amara: What but i don't have anything to wear.

The bell went off , she looked at the door and looked at me.

Me: That must be Candy.

Amara: Who is Candy?

I walked to the door and open it up , Candy and his team walked in .

Candy: Thee Alpha , you looking smoking hot as usual

Me: Come in.

He held his dress and walked inside with his crew behind him holding his styling tools and a bag of dresses , he walked to Amara and kissed her cheeks , Amara smiled. He held her

cheeks brushing her skin

Candy: Beautiful skin , i could work with this.

He opened Amara's gown and touched her thigh exposing her skin to me , i enjoyed this , i folded my arm across my diagram with my finger in my mouth looking at Amara's thigh.

Candy: Something revealing will do , thigh out honey, and chest out . Let's go up stairs we need a private room so mister here gets the big reveal , when I'm done with her you will want to eat her up , off we go darling.

Me: Please be gentle on her .

Candy: You can't have a smoking outfit from being gentle Alpha.

I let out a light laugh smiling sideways. He held Amara's hand and they walked up the stairs , Amara was still confused but i could see she actually loved Candy . Candy is a gay man that is inlove with fashion, He just adores dressing people up for events , it's a talent to him and he is using it to make money , he has dressed my mom before and Diana when we still had our little affair. I unbuttoned my shirt walking to my room , as i was about to open the door. Someone blocked it from opening up.

Candy: We are using this room.

Me: I just want my suit ontop of the bed.

The door was slightly opened and the suit was handed to me , i walked into Amara's bedroom careful not to wake Junior up , i had a quick shower freshening up , i quickly got my pants on fastening my belt. I looked at Junior as he was laying in the crib , i kneeled down and placed my finger on his cheeks brushing his soft skin.

Me: Hey there young boy, were you good to mommy today? I know you were , you a good boy , you daddy's precious boy , i love you so much little champ and i promise you , i won't ever allow anything to happen to you or your mommy , cause both of you are precious to me. Mommy and daddy are going out for a few hours and you will be left with your nanny , she is going to look after you till we get home okay. I love you boy.

I got up and leaned kissed his forehead. He let a sigh and sucked on his hand still fast asleep , god i thought i woke him up. I walked over the bed and picked up my shirt the door opened up and a high heel peeked at door with black painted toes , i looked at the feet slowly browsing my eyes up her body, as i stood straight looking at her face. She looked at me blinking as i gazed at her. She looked angelic , so i just fell deeply inlove with her in that black dress , god can't i just wrap my arms around her and tell her she looks beautiful. I kept on gazing at her face that was slightly touched with make up



brightening up her complexion so she shines like the star she is when she is in a room. She looked at me and gazed down with her palms brushing against her hips that were curved out by the dress , my beautiful curved mamma. She looked at me and glanced down walking towards the mirror that was placed in the corner of her room , she took her sling bag inserting her phone and lip gloss inside. I just stood there looking at her through the mirror she too glanced at the mirror looking at me and continued looking down at her bag. She turned and looked at me.

Amara: Is there a problem?

I looked down wearing my shirt.

Me: No , not at all.

Amara : Oh i thought the was since you staring at me.

Me: No don't mind me.

She walked out the room , I buttoned up my shirt , and wore my tie and blazer. I took out money from wallet and walked into the main bedroom , Candy approached me .

Candy: So how does she look?

Me: looks good

Candy: Come on now Daddy Alpha , you can do way better than that.

I looked at her as they made touch ups on her face , Candy place his hand on my shoulder and whispered in my ear.

Candy: Just look at her seated like a goddess, look at the black dress that just exposes her body to you, look at how blended her skin is to the fibre that is just art on it's pure form , and that is a fine young lady you have here , keep a leash on her

Me: Here is your payment, thank you for your services .

Candy: You are such an uptight man you should loosen up .  
Girls we can leave now.

They packed their things and carried them out the house , i stood at the door and the nanny arrived, it was a little chilly outside with a cold night breeze. She walked downstairs and spoke with the nanny , giving her instructions on how to gaurd JJ . I just watched her talk to the nanny taking charge as the momma bear.

Amara : that's all then please don't wake him up , he could get really grumpy.

Nanny: Yes Mem.

She walked to me hanging her bag on she shoulder.

Me: Shall we?

Amara: Yes , we can go.

I opened the door for her as we walked to the car , we got in and drove out the house , we drove towards my family's house , i just couldn't stop stealing glances of her. It felt like i was warming up to a new different kind of feeling , the were certain emotions you get used to when seeing your spouse . But this was a different kind of feeling it was new love just building up in me , blooming and blossoming into something big beautiful and Candy had no mercy on me when he decided to just dress her up into this woman i never thought she would be. I looked at her afro that was tied up with black pins placed nicley to hold her hair down with her blushing cheeks sparkling in make up when she gets nervous or flustered . Her voluptuous and curvaceous form as she seated next to me .Couldn't help but look her her cleavage on her V necked dress that exposed her chest covered in magnificent dark chocolate moderated skin. I murmured my lips trying to pass out a complement but my pride just wouldn't let me , i steered the wheel driving into the mansion's drive way. I stopped the car switching off the engine.

Me: Uhm Amara i just want to have a word with you.

Amara: Okay what is it?

Me: If you feel overwhelmed and want to go home , you can tell me and we will leave okay.

Amara: Okay.

Me: Okay we can go in.

She opened up the door and climbed off , i locked the car as we walked towards the door , she slid her hand in my arm holding onto my arm , i looked at her as we walked in the house , cameras began to flash at us , press taking photo's. Mom approached us and kissed my cheeks as i gave her a hug , she whispered in my ear.

Nandi : You looking handsome , what is she doing here?

Me: Behave yourself .

Nandi: You should tell that to your little witch.

She looked at Amara and walked back into the crowd.

Me: You still okay?

Amara: Your mother doesn't want me here.

Me: Who cares , come let's go take a seat.

I walked her over to the front row of the chairs she sat down as we were offered champagne and whisky , i expected she said she will have juice or something non alcoholic but she grabbed on the glass and drank from it . Pop's clicked on the glass with a fork.

Steve: May i have your attention please.

Everyone settled down as we listened to him giving a speech.

Amara was really hitting her glass , i had her second glass of wine, just drinking throughout my father's speech.

LOGAN

I sat down streaming the press conference on my laptop , i was just yawning to see Alpha , just to see him blink or move. The cameras were streaming throughout the room as soon as it faced Alpha's direction it zoomed to him , he was sitting with Amara with his hand holding hers. I don't even know why this was bothering me , i just switched off my laptop and laid down on the bed and covered myself with the blanket. Are they back together? She shot him , why would Alpha just forgive her just like that? I figured he would drift away from her , this woman has proven herself to being dangerous and obviously she doesn't love Alpha, You can't go around gallavanting with men and get caught by paparazzi and still get the guts to seat besides the man you were cheating on smiling and looking good like you did nothing, like you didn't shoot him. Alpha is just gambling with his life and i pray he sees that before it's too late.

NANDI

Steve held my hand as he was delivering the opening speech to the press, i faked a smile so we look like a happy couple .

Steve: I will leave the rest to my beautiful wife , my pillar , the

only woman that matters , Nandi Smith.

I smiled as he kissed my hand.

Me: Thank you Honey, oh god I'm blushing .

The crowd laughed.

Me: Thank you all for finding the time to come over personally and hear what we have to say about the strange and unfortunate ordeals our family is experiencing. Without wasting your time i just wanted to make things clear to all the social media trolls , In my family we are not devil worshippers , what sort of nonsense is that ? We are a prayer strong family and we believe in fair justice and ofcause have your opinions about us if that makes you have a good night sleep we don't care, just keep them to yourselves because we are going to sue you if we hear any of this devil worshipping and sacrifice superstition. Back to the real reason we here , i would like to kindly inform you that the case of the body that was found in our house got nothing to do with us , whomever is that person we are truly sorry for what happened to her/him but at the same time he/she left us questioning ourselves too , mean we knew nothing about the woman that was supposedly living in our house , we knew nothing, we are just in the dark as you are , My husband and i will be doing follow ups on the detective on the case so we quickly put this issue to rest .( smiling) My son Alpha is here with us , i asked him to be present so he

answers any questions regarding his shooting , ( looking at Amara faking a smile) And of cause Amara McKenzie is here too , she will be answering questions too on why she shot my son for another man.

I looked at her as she drank from her wine glass , i could see the frustration and guilt in her eyes , Alpha placed his hand on her thigh.

Steve: Ummm.. thank you a lot , i think we have covered everything and if someone has questions you can approached us individually. Thank you.

Me: And please let's eat, drink and be merry.

I said letting out a kind smile and laugh , the crowd dispersed to the food stall as people helped themselves to food , Alpha got up and approached me.

Alpha: Did you really have to lie about Amara like that?

Me: I didn't lie , it's just you fail to see the truth and it is right infront of you , if you would excuse me i have important guest to attend to.

He looked at me and chuckled.

Alpha: Okay Mommy.

I walked towards the mayor and his wife smiling.

Me: Hey how are you.

Mayor's wife: I'm holding up okay.

We shared a hug holding our wine glasses.

AMARA

I couldn't stop drinking as the press approached me with question all i could say was no comment with my wine glass on my lips. I was drinking everything offered to me let it be wine , champagne and whiskey , i could feel i was getting drunk and clumsy. I looked across the room , Alpha was laughing with a female journalist , i placed my hand on my cheek drinking the wine glass empty.

Reporter: Hi Miss McKenzie can i ask you a few question please.

Me: Yes please go right ahead what do you what to know?

Excuse me , can you fill my glass please .

The waiter filled my glass with wine .

Me: Know what , just leave the whole bottle!

He placed the bottle on the table and left , the reporter sat down as i sipped on the sweet- sour red wine.

Me: Mhhh , this is nice , no wonder people are drunkards.

Reporter: So Miss McKenzie i just wanted some clarification on what perpetrated you into shooting Mr Alpha Smith.



Me: ( laughs) What perpetrated me into shooting him huh? Let me think , well i was angry and hurt , i was just a red flag caught inbetween two bulls that wanted a piece of me.

Reporter: So it's true that you and Drew Hughes were having a affair?

Me: Oh no , we didn't have anything serious, it just happened it was a innocent mistake.

Reporter: Did you and Alpha mend things between you two after the shooting?

Me: Yes we did , we co- parenting our son together but we not a couple.

Reporter: So you are a single lady , this article will help you find some suitable bachelors.

Me: ( laughs) No I'm not looking .

Reporter: Thank you so much , you are such a good sweet person Amara , you are not the devil your mother in law paints you out to be.

Me: Really ? Thank you so much.

I got up and strained my ankle almost lost balance but the reporter held me. She was such a good person. She pretended to hug me so people didn't notice i was drunk.

Reporter: Oppss , watch your step.

Me: Thank you , yho ! I would've completely embarrassed myself.

I sat down and she walked away from the table to approached other people, i sat down alone just drinking alcohol.

Me: Lord Jesus i am drunk.

I said laughing to myself , i kind of liked this feeling , i am happy , joyful and full of life , i wasn't bothering anyone just enjoying my company as Alpha went about whoring the whole room smiling and taking photo's with woman.

Mute: Hey .

Me : ( smiling) Hi.

Mute: I can see you looking stunning and enjoying your drinks.

He said laughing , i shrugged my shoulders and smiled.

Me: Unfortunately yes , i am enjoying my company since the guy that dragged me here is busy flirting the whole room.

Mute: You know that's not true.

Me: What is true then Mute? I'm sitting here alone in a press conference i have never been in , this life is all new to me.

Mute: I know and you doing just fine , you know what ? I'm going to drag Alpha's ass here , he must come and keep you

company.

He got up and disappeared into the crowd. I drank from my glass hearing a tongue click behind me. I placed the glass on the table as Nandi walked before me. She looked at me gazing at my drunk self.

Nandi: What have i done to you Amara?

Me: Oh god , I am sorry for shooting your child for the hundredth time.

Nandi: Why are you always sorry ? That's not the answer that i want , i want to know what have i done to you.

Me: Can you just leave me alone , please i am not in the mood for your nonsense.

Nandi: ( yelling) Excuse me ! In my own house !

Me: Throw me out then! I am sick and tired of you dancing on my head , enough is enough! I have had it with you and your pretence like you this caring mother while you know damn well you failed your child , he is that bitter and cold hearted bastard because of you , you raised a monster not me , you make your son look some sort of an Angel when you know damn well who Alpha is so don't you dare crucify me for your son's sins ! Your son came into my life willingly i never forced him and till you get that into your brain you will remain writing me down into your enemy list while I'm harmless to you .

She raised up her hand in attempt to slap me , i held her wrist and looked at her , the crowd had stopped and looked at us as the drama unfolded. I looked at her and shook my head.

Me: Not again , you will never ever raise your hand at me ! Not now not ever! The last time was the last time . Mrs Nandi Smith , i have lost respect for you , i thought you were different, took you like a mother and if you hate me , that's on you sweetheart, i don't give a damn.

Alpha : Amara , you are drunk honey come let's go home.

I tossed Nandi's hand aside , as Alpha held me by my waist picking me up the chair i could barely stand on my own feet without my knees wobbling.

Me: I am not drunk !

Alpha: Okay let me help you.

I pushed him off me , yelling while holding on the table.

Me: Don't touch me ! I am not drunk i can walk on my own .

Alpha : Okay i am not touching you , let's go.

I walked through the crowd and stopped.

Me: Where is the door?

Alpha: It's right infront of you.

I stumbled across the door holding my dress so i don't trip over

it , Alpha took off his blazer and placed it on my shoulders. As we walked to the car he was holding me , he opened the door and i walked in. And sat down on the seat taking my heels off. I felt guilty i was rude to Nandi , that wasn't how Rose or should i say my mom raised me ? Tears just flooded my cheeks . Alpha looked at me driving .

Alpha: What's wrong?

Me: ( sobbing ) I'm fine , I'm just drunk.

Alpha: ( smiles) How does it feel to be drunk?

I looked at him pushing a smile through the tears .

Me: ( laughing) It feels good , it feels so damn good.

I laid my head on the window , sniffing and crying. I didn't realise that the was so much happiness and guts that laid in a bottle filled with alcohol, if i was sober wouldn't even had the guts to talk back to Nandi like that , I don't want to seem cold hearted but I felt good telling Nandi off , i felt like this huge load has been removed off my chest , i felt lighter. My eyes were zooming out , i was really sleepy , i closed my eyes just for a minute.

ABBYGAIL

I sat down on the couch wearing a black laced lingerie, waiting for him. The door opened up and he walked in , i got up

and stood before the door biting my lower lip smiling. He slowly closed the door smiling with his eyes running on my body.

Mute: Hey there .

Me: Hey , missed me?

Mute: Now that you dressed like that , i think i just miss you even more.

I catwalked to him wrapping my arms around his neck , his hands made their way around my booty as he squeezed my bum cheeks.

Me: Do you like my outfit?

Mute: It's ...cute.

Me: Cute? I thought you were going to say sexy or something?

He wrapped his arms around my waist and kissed my lips.

Mute: You'd be even more sexy if you take that off.

Me: Oh , you want me to take it off?

Mute: How am i supposed to eat my sweet in a sweet wrapper?

Me: My god , isn't he smart.

I backed away from him , walking slowly towards the bedroom sliding the lingerie off .

Me: Are you coming? To have some sweets?

Mute: You can count on me , I'm definitely coming.

I got on the bed as he took off his clothes , he climbed the bed wearing only his boxers . I sneaked under the sheet , he joined me in i sneaked under and pulled his penis from his boxers rubbing it gentle down and up twisting my hand around the tip. He groaned lifting up his knees , i placed my hand on his tummy for momentum, gulping his cock in my mouth. Stroking it down in my mouth , i wrapped my lips around the tip , sucking , he held on my head.

Mute : ( groaning) Ah fuck ! You so good.

I stroked his cock deep in my thoat choking myself. He was fully erected with his cock bent a little , i got up and climbed ontop him kissing his lips, he rotated me to the sheets , i weighed on the bed lifted my legs to his waist . Slowly running his index finger in clit , he slid it down inserting it finger inside. He rubbed on my vaginal wall , stroking his finger inside . I gasped letting out a light sigh. I was wet and frustrated horny, i wanted some cock , i wanted the muscle , desperately, i looked at him , demanding.

Me: Give it to me please.

My clit was already throbbing in suspense , my body ready to rammed up. I took frantically multiple shallow grasps on the sheet . He positons his tip gently at the base of my entrance ,

hold me tightly he laid his forehead on mine looking in the eyes pushing in . My vagina gladly opened up to him so accommodates himself. I moaned closing my eyes. He pushed in me , i could feel his cock make way deep inside my tunnels , he stroked in repeatedly raising his pounding pace. He bounced up and down inbetween my legs looking down at me , staring back , i kissed his lips inserting my tongue in his mouth, he gulped on my tongue , his finger held on my clit as he rubbed my clit for me. Electric pulses travelled my whole body as i spilt my legs far apart for him. He is pleasuring me in every way possible passionately, juices escaping my vagina making way down my buttocks , I laid back on the bed taking that cock.

ALPHA

I parked the car in the drive way and got out the car , she had cuddled herself in the seat fast asleep. I opened the passengers door , waking her up .

Me: Amara , wake up we home.

She shook her head and continue sleeping.

Me: Sweetheart come on let's go in.

Amara: ( shaking her head) i just want some sleep please , just a little sleep.

Me: I can't let you sleep in the car , ( calling out) Amara !



She had her eyes closed sleeping , Guess this is what i get for letting her drink alcohol while she is not a alcohol drinker. I picked her up from the chair and carried her out the car , i held her onto my arms with her head laid on my shoulder . She held on me tightly. The security gaurd helped me with the door and he locked my car for me , i walked up the stairs each step taking a big toll on my body, she was heavy. I kicked the main bedrooms door opened and laid her on the bed , i sat down on the edge of the bed covering her body taking my time looking at her , I got up and walked to the nanny to check on JJ.

Nanny: Sir you are back?

Me: Yeah we back , his still asleep i see.

Nanny: I'll request an uber.

Me: No don't you can spend the night , and go home tomorrow morning.

Nanny: Really ? I don't want to impose.

Me: Not at all , i can't let you go this late at night.

Nanny : Thank you.

Me: Okay , night.

I checked on JJ and he was still alseep . I walked out the room closing the door slightly. I walked in my bedroom and closed the door , unbuttoning my shirt , i took off my shoes and pants

and got into the sheets , i kept my distance away from Amara laying on my side of the bed , i folded my hands on my abdomen and laid back looking up at the room , i am so proud of her for standing up for herself against my mom , so proud, i closed my eyes.

70

[ THE FOLLOWING MORNING ]

NANDI

I woke up and had a bath wearing my comfortable dress , i sat before the mirror puffing my face . Steve woke up yawning behind me on the bed , i clicked my tongue in anger.

Steve: Before you start spitting fire , good morning my love.

I got up from the chair and opened up my wardrobe taking out clothes.

Me: Can you believe the guts that girl had ? How dare she touch me with her filthy hand ! Dare spit rubbish and garbage my way ! Who the hell is Amara to question me? Just because my son is sleeping with her she thinks she has made it in life , she is in my league? What nonsense, and you know what Steve my beloved son just stood there watched me being insulted by his little whore ! And you too Steve you just stood there!

Steve: To be honest sweetheart you pushed her to that length,

she was just minding her business getting herself drunk but you just had to go over and push her to her limit and remember baby there is always a limit to a person you shouldn't cross or they will snap and that was Amara's snapping point.

Me: Snapping point? So what now days when youngsters disrespect their elders you call it a snapping point?

Steve : Please just let what happened in the past stay in the past .

Me: What past ? I will not let anything stay in the past as for Amara , let her ride the high horse she is riding, there will come a time she will drop off that horse she is riding and we will see who will have the last laugh then.

I took out all my clothes from the wardrobe , just ripping them off the hangers.

Steve: What did the clothes do now? Where are you taking the clothes.

Me: Dry cleaning, i want my clothes re-washed ironed and packed again.

Steve: And when you done with that , you will want the whole house to be redecorated? Furniture moved?

Me: This is no time for your cold jokes Steve .

Steve: Don't do this to yourself please darling , don't frustrate

yourself like this.

I walked out the room and approached the kitchen . The maids came in early to clean the house . I walked over to them and took a apron , helping around the kitchen , whenever I'm frustrated and angry , i clean or i cook or make people work hard. I just keep myself busy and with Amara disrespecting me last night in front of the press i needed to keep myself busy or i will think irrational and just order hitman to wipe her off the living list. I still couldn't believe Amara spoke to me like that , i was still processing it , i couldn't even sleep at night tossing and turning the whole night.

AMARA

I woke up to my back shivering cold , opening my eyes i felt the window behind me was open with the curtain slightly opened with the first golden rays of the sunrise peaky in. My head felt with a headache slightly hitting the corner of my brow , felt like my skull had broken into two . Feeling a heavy warm arm wrapped around me , i looked at Alpha's chest , that was right before my face , i looked at his nipples that were placed nicely on his beat up chest , why was he naked , did we have sex? I reached down my hands feeling my body, i was still covered in fabric, thank god i sigh in relief. I looked at him wondering if we spent all night like this , cuddled against each other all night long with his arm hooked firmly on mine . I found myself

leaning into him , resting weight against his solid chest , i let my cheek press on the top of his arm as he shielded me with another wrapped around me . He snored like a bear , with his eye lids covering his eyeballs , beautiful long lashes with bushy black brows. Could anyone be this beautifully perfect, i lifted my hand slowly too careful to not wake him up , pleased to rest it on his face and touch his skin . As my hand approached his skin just inches before i could finally get the chance to hold him after days of separation and no affection, he opened his eyes . I held my forehead and moaned.

Me: My head , oh god.

Alpha : ( yawning) Is it sore? I'll get you headache pills in the medicine cabinet.

He got up unwrapping his arms around me for a moment i felt like telling him to not get up so we lie in bed one more time on a more prolonged moment were time suspense and definitely as i lay my hand on his chest and hear his heart beat for one more time i'll be okay. He sat up on the bed wiping his face stretching his arms.

Alpha : I'll go check up on Junior first then make you some coffee

Me: No need too go make coffee I'll go check on him , before you go can you please help me with the dress zip , this dress is

squeezing me.

I got up from the bed and turn around, my body was squeezed in this dress , it was so tight i don't even know how i manage to sleep all night long with it on. He stood behind me and unzipped the dress. I held the dress against my boobs as the shoulders slipped off , it was a quiet and awkward moment for the both of us .

Alpha: There you go , I'll be downstairs .

Me: How did i end up in your bed?

Alpha : We came home late so i couldn't let the nanny leave at that hour you were drunk so i laid you here , i didn't touch you inappropriately if you wondering.

Me: Thank you i hope i didn't strain your back.

Alpha: You were heavy but I'm okay.

Me: Was i that drunk? Did i hurt someone ?

Alpha: I don't believe you did , no you didn't.

He took out a t-shirt and sweatpants wore them and walked out the room . I walked out his room to mine , the nanny was up already she was holding Junior feeding him his morning bottle for today i won't be breastfeeding him i drank alcohol a lot last night.

Nanny: Morning.

Me: Morning, thank you so much for guarding him while we were asleep.

Nanny: There is no problem Mem .

Me: You must want to go home , uhmm i will inform Alpha about your payment.

I took off the dress and wore my gown taking Junior off her hands. She collected her things and we walked downstairs. Alpha was making coffee , he really knew how to work the kitchen just not for preparing meals maybe coffee or blending his smoothies that's what he actually knew how to make .

Nanny: I will be on my way now.

Alpha : I will transfer your payment in your account.

Nanny: Thank you, my uber is waiting for me outside, bye.

Me: Bye , thank you.

She walked towards the door . I sat down on the chair , he handed me headache pills and a glass of water .

Alpha: You should set an appointment for a full body check up for Junior.

Me : Why? He is not sick?

Alpha: His sleeping levels are alarming Amara , most 1 month

babies don't sleep all day long, he is no longer a new born.

Me : I see nothing wrong with Junior, Alpha babies sleep all the time, that's how they grow .

Alpha: We not taking that chances you are not a doctor, we have to get professional opinion about this.

Me: Why would you think our son is sick because he sleeps to much?

Alpha: Maybe he has autism.

Me: Are you being serious? Autism in a 1 month baby.

Alpha: I know it's mad but we have to acknowledge this , other babies usually are able to murmur try pronouncing vowels, they baby talk , they giggle or when you call their name they look at you because they acknowledge you calling to them , we don't even get the chance to talk to him because his sleeping, plus he likes cuddling. Babies suffering with Autism like cuddling.

Me: ( laughing) You are being silly Alpha , i like cuddling too does that mean i have autism too?

Alpha: Can you be a concerned parent for once in your life and stop laughing or making jokes , you should be paying attention to your child noticing his behavior pattern and i say our son is way more introverted to be a baby . Babies cry , i don't hear Junior crying , his too quiet.



Me: Okay fine , i will set an appointment with a doctor.

Alpha: No don't, i don't want my child checked by Jaden , i will set the appointment and let you know , for now i want us to discuss a sleeping routine for him , how many hours he should sleep and keep him active in a long period of time let it be he is watching cartoons.

Someone woke up in parenting mode. But i didn't understand what a month old baby would understand in watching cartoons that will just cause eye problems for him. Junior is a baby , why couldn't he understand that? He will sleep throughout his period being a baby and when he begins to crawl , walk and actually be able to pronounce words like Mama and papa , that's when we will watch the symptoms of Autism that he claims our son has , i wasn't sure if he was scared of having a child with Autism or was he afraid of the stigma that will come with " A Smith child can not get sick " even if Junior has autism it won't make any difference , he will still remain our baby boy.

Me : I Don't believe Junior has Autism, it's just him being a baby not all children have to cry all the time, but now that you insist on having him get checked up , then fine .

Alpha: I have to go get ready for work. Any improvements in getting a job.

Me : I have applied in multiple companies just waiting for my

phone to ring off the hook.

Alpha: okay goodluck on that then you should consider getting a nanny too for Junior.

Me: Why do i feel like you don't want me to work? You want me to be a house baby mama that depends on you for everything.

Alpha: I don't find anything funny with that, mean i got money you can everything you want , you and Junior, you want a car ? You getting a car , you want to renovate the house and make it more homely for your liking ? Go right ahead all the cost will be covered. You are the mother of my child after all.

He picked up his coffee mug and walked upstairs , did he just offer to buy me a car ? Renovate the house , i looked around the house and smiled . I placed Junior on the table and looked at him smiling . He just looked at me as i gazed into his eyes , he quickly moved his eyes away from me gazing over my shoulder. No , my child can't have autism , his just a baby and babies have running eyes thats how they adapt to an environment by browsing the room and noticing things , my baby is not sick.

MUTE

I woke up and yawned turning my face to her , she blinked prettily , hiding a yawn behind her hand. I could tell she has been awake for a while now . Something bubbled up inside of

me as i remembered last night , last night was steaming hot , we had sex almost all night long each taking charge as we fucked the hell out of one another . Wanted some morning's too but in pity i just figured she pussy would probably need a breather, her member has been taking dick all night i had to be considerate even though i couldn't get enough of thrusting in and out of her we could have sex everyday. She rested her hand on my thigh and smiled .

Abby: Morning tiger.

Me: Morning.

Abby: I'm so tired, i just want us to stay in bed the whole day and rest.

Me: That won't be possible i have work to do.

Abby: What kind of work do you do anyways? You always have work to do but never say what you do.

I got up from the bed picking up my boxers from the floor, i wore them looking down at her on the bed.

Me: It's just work.

Abby: Is it illegal work? Like what Cohen does for my dad? Cause you don't want to tell me how you make a living.

Me: Ask me no question about my work, i will tell you no lies.

Abby: But baby i figured we are a couple now so we will tell each other about our lives , you know everything about my life but i know nothing about yours , why are you so uptight about yourself ? I want you too open up to me .

I looked at her and chuckled walking inside the bathroom and had a shower , why the sudden curiosity on what i do for a living , she was beginning to make me doubt our affair , made me think maybe she is her father's spy , coming to suck information out of me but for her information she is getting nothing from me . Pop's didn't get a chance to tell me about the job at the conference. I will need to first drop by at home before going to the warehouse . We were back in business now and i had to get my socks up , as for Abby i enjoyed having her around i just don't like how she be questioning my life . Mean I'm giving her my time , brought her into my home giving her access to me many girls be dying to have , she must be satisfied with that and stop demanding to much of me. I got dressed and wore my leather jacket.

Me: You should get up so i drop you off at home.

Abby: It's fine you can go right ahead, i will clean up and get an uber home .

I nodded my head and walked out the room , i took off a painting on the wall and opened my safe taking out my gun , i inserted bullets in and placed it in my hip hiding the safe. There

was about 500k in my safe and gun magazine's and a box of bullets , my password was hard to crack, i was the only one that could gain access in that safe. I walked out the house and walked downstairs too my car and drove out.

GRACE

Ever since Jaden paid Amara a visit he has been in a good mood , i looked at him packing his doctors bag and lunch box whistling.

Me: Baby , can i steal a minute of your time please.

Jaden: Ofcause Ma.

Me: Come seat down.

He sat down besides me , i held his hands and looked at him.

Jaden: What is going on?

Me: Tell me my boy and please be honest okay.

Jaden: okay.

Me: Are you attracted to Amara?

His facial expression changed , he couldn't even look me in the eyes.

Jaden: ( fakes a laugh) Where is all this coming from now Ma ?

Me: be honest with yourself and your heart . It's good to have

feelings for someone, it's good to love them and it's even great to actually want them to be happy and wish you could make them happy, i have no problem with that , i know you are a great man and i know you would actually love Amara rightfully and make her happy. But baby you need to understand you can't force Amara to be with you by badmouthing the father of her child. To Amara , Alpha is what is right , she is devoted to him , his exciting to her and nothing draws a woman better than a dangerous man that is just mysterious and keeps her on toes . Woman tend to crave what is toxic than what is good for her .

Jaden: So you saying I'm boring? You saying i can't be exciting?

Me: That's not what i mean my son.

Jaden: What exactly do you mean Ma , you think i can't go against Alpha? I actually think you are degrading me , you don't think I'm man enough to actually make your granddaughter happy and you know what i will prove you wrong.

He got up from the table and took his bag and car keys.

Me: Jaden i didn't mean it like that , all i am saying is that you won't be able to create a life with Amara while Alpha is still in her life , she will always find her way back into his arms and that is going to break your heart .

Jaden : We will see about that , when i bring Amara home not just as my girlfriend but as my wife , i will make her something Alpha never dare to do and that is to do what is right by Amara, make her a married woman , love and treasure her. I'm off to work.

He walked out the house and i just couldn't help but let out a laugh. Jaden was really inlove with Amara , but why didn't he say something all this while ? I did suspect he might actually fall for her when she was here but i figured it will just be a crush and blow over . Being Freak Amara would actually be good with Jaden and they'd build a strong healthy family and home together , at the same time it wasn't my choice to make.

STEVE

Mute walked in the house and we sat down out in the patio having coffee. I woke up in a really good today . He picked up the mug and had his coffee , i looked at him as smiled as his skin was radiating. Alpha walked in the patio too , he sat down and poured himself some coffee.

Alpha: Just what i needed.

Me: What do these ladies say ? Oh yeah , Mute is glowing this morning .

Mute: ( chuckles ) What ! No Pop's come on.

Alpha: His even blushing , i suspect he has a girlfriend.

Me: Do you son?

Mute: ( breathes in) Well the is a woman I'm seeing and she's been worth my while.

Alpha : ( laughs) Worth your while , mhh i see.

Me: Do we know her?

Mute: Yes you both do .

Alpha : So are we going to play this guessing game or you will just tell us what is going on?

Mute: It's Abbygail Hughes.

Alpha: Huh? ( laughs)

Alpha couldn't stop laughing, my mood just dropped , i went from floating freely in the sky to dropping from Kilimanjaro in about a few seconds , what the hell is going on with the boys of this family and always falling for the wrong women ? Why do they fall inlove with women that are not acceptable in our family. Alpha looked at me still laughing.

Alpha : Watch how he will explored , the is a lecture coming your way on how you shouldn't be inlove you are going to get weak , on how you will lack on your work.

Me: I am not going to lecture any of you on your love lives, you can be with anyone you want as long as you won't jeopardize



our business , that's all i want from you.

Alpha : Oh i see , but when i was inlove and pleaded with you that i only wanted to be loved , you fought me tough guy , you came with every gun blazing shooting me down .

Me: Son i thought we made it pass that , can we please stop drooling over the past

Alpha: What Past Pop's? Past the fact you stole me away from the mother of my child when we were about to welcome our son , you stole the feeling we should've had together holding our new born baby , is the past I'm drilling on ? Past the fact you made me lose the most precious time i should have had with Amara ? No tell me , what we have made it past? You never gave me a chance to be happy? It was you and now it's your ? You know i find it hard to actually believe you two are really my parents? How do you break your own flesh and blood like this? Why does me being happy kill you so much that you try so hard and even turns to make sure I'm miserable? Well then tell your wife to rest assured , these nothing going on between me and Amara , we sleep in separate rooms , i can't even touch her , wrap my arms around her willingly without feeling I'm actually violating her , you have been with Ma all these years while she wasn't happy being with you , i don't want that for Amara , i don't want to her to turn out and be just like my Mother , being unhappy for years with me , i just

wanted a normal love life , where laundering money doesn't exist , where being Thee Alpha Smith a business man with billions that has to be ruthless and self centered doesn't matter , i wanted to walk in a loving home filled with warmth , love care , meet my loving wife and baby and wrap them in my arms and tell them in loved them so much. But screw that , I'm a Smith i don't deserve all that. ( chuckles) let me not bore you with my sob story , congratulations Mute , i hope your Pop's doesn't your joy cause they usually advantage when you let them.

He smiled and got up from the chair , that was actually the first time Alpha really gave me heartfelt mouthful of words , he really opened up about how he felt and it broke my heart to see my boy this hurt .

Me: Alpha please seat down so we talk about this.

Alpha: ( yelling) Talk about what ? You bastard ! You drugged me ! You erased my memory!

Nandi walked outside so did the whole house of maids and gaurds.

Mute: Alpha calm down please.

Alpha: You better shut up ! Cause i know you knew everything! You planned it with him ! You Judas Iscariot , you know everything that happens in his life , you are his lap dog !

Nandi: Honey what is wrong? What is going on please talk to us.

Alpha : Oh there she is , Our very own Royal her Majesty. Know what both of you are not worth getting me angry , I'll just walk out that door , You both deserve each other.

Nandi: For how long will you keep running away from us? Why can't you help us make make things right between us , i want to be there for you my child , i really do , i love you and i am so sorry if i made things worse between you and Amara , i was just trying to protect you , i was trying to be your mom.

He just clicked his tougue and walked out just left us outside exiting the room.

Nandi : You see what i was talking about ? You need to fix this ! Till you remove those things from our house we will keep fighting each other till we kill one another !

The maids dispersed going back to their work . I was beginning to believe Nandi , maybe if i remove the body, peace will reign between me and my son . I still didn't know Alpha knew what i did , he knew all along i drugged him and he never said anything, he never showed any hatred or signs to want revenge. This means i was dealing with a very dangerous person, he laughed with me , called me Pop's countless times while he knew i was the reason he mistreated Amara , I'm the

reason Amara never got to see her child after birth, i took her child and made her suffer watching her child and Alpha bond with another woman.

Mute: Pop's are you fine?

Me: I'm good boy , I'm just trying to process what just happened but I'm fine.

Mute: I think i will have to go have a word with Alpha.

Me: No don't, give him space and time , his angry so he needs time , all we have to do is give him time.

Mute: About the job you wanted me to do, what is it ? So i get to it.

Me: I will get back to you about the job , for now give me space , i need to think.

He got up and left , i laid back on the chair searching myself about what Alpha was prepared to do with all this , now that i know he knows , i will have to be ready for him . Alpha is not really a forgetful person nor does he like being betrayed, i raised that boy and i believe he will come back to get me and when he finally does , he will bite hard , i have to be ready .

COHEN

I sat outside Alpha's yard scouting the yard , A car pulled up at a front yard as a elderly woman got out , I looked at her as

she approached the gate and a security guard walked to her they talked for a while . A woman carrying a baby walked out the house , i looked at her as she stood at the drive way and she and the woman hugged . That must be Alpha's baby mamma and his son . I looked at her as she smiled at the woman she is really curved no wonder Drew is laying crippled in hospital, i licked my lips looking at her as they walked into the house together . The guard looked across to my car, i lowered my chair so he doesn't see my face but i could see him , he opened up the gate i peeked a little i could see he was coming to me direction cause his eyes were fixated on my car , i closed the windows and revved my car driving off . I couldn't give out my identity i just had to find a way to make money for the boss and fast .He was really drowning , i could see desperation in his eyes to have money and no one wanted to buy the guns , they said we were too expensive. I have been working with Thabo for years now and developed a bond . I wanted to help him even though this plan came with great danger but it was a simple plan that came with a lot of money , if i get this right i will be able to cash in big money, a cut for me and the boss . Alpha is rich , that boy is filthy rich and a man would do anything to save his family.

Every beauty has her own beast

Yte70Sst19oenrsday 2g22fatt e72:20u PM .

70

[ THE FOLLOWING MORNING ]

NANDI

I woke up and had a bath wearing my comfortable dress , i sat before the mirror puffing my face . Steve woke up yawning behind me on the bed , i clicked my tougue in anger.

Steve: Before you start spitting fire , good morning my love.

I got up from the chair and opened up my wodrope taking out clothes.

Me: Can you believe the guts that girl had ? How dare she touch me with her filthy hand ! Dare spit rubbish and garbage my way ! Who the hell is Amara to question me? Just because my son is sleeping with her she thinks she has made it in life , she is in my league? What nonsense, and you know what Steve my beloved son just stood there watched me being insulted by his little whore ! And you too Steve you just stood there!

Steve: To be honest sweetheart you pushed her to that length, she was just minding her business getting herself drunk but you just had to go over and push her to her limit and remember baby the is always a limit to a person you shouldn't cross or they will snap and that was Amara's snapping point.

Me: Snapping point? So what now days when youngsters disrespect their elders you call it a snapping point?

Steve : Please just let what happened in the past stay in the past .

Me: What past ? I will not let anything stay in the past as for Amara , let her ride the high horse she is riding, she will come a time she will drop on that horse she is riding and we will see who will have the last laugh then.

I took out all my clothes from the wardrobe , just ripping them off the hangers.

Steve: What did the clothes do now? Where are you taking the clothes.

Me: Dry cleaning, i want my clothes re-washed ironed and packed again.

Steve: And when you done with that , you will want the whole house to be redecorated? Furniture moved?

Me: This is no time for your cold jokes Steve .

Steve: Don't do this to yourself please darling , don't frustrate yourself like this.

I walked out the room and approached the kitchen . The maids came in early to clean the house . I walked over to them and took a apron , helping around the kitchen , whenever I'm

frustrated and angry , i clean or i cook or make people work hard. I just keep myself busy and with Amara disrespecting me last night in front of the press i needed to keep myself busy or i will think irrational and just order hitman to wipe her off the living list. I still couldn't believe Amara spoke to me like that , i was still processing it , i couldn't even sleep at night tossing and turning the whole night.

## AMARA

I woke up to my back shivering cold , opening my eyes i felt the window behind me was open with the curtain slightly opened with the first golden rays of the sunrise peaking in. My head felt with a headache slightly hitting the corner of my brow , felt like my skull had broken into two . Feeling a heavy warm arm wrapped around me , i looked at Alpha's chest , that was right before my face , i looked at his nipples that were placed nicely on his beat up chest , why was he naked , did we have sex? I reached down my hands feeling my body, i was still covered in fabric, thank god i sigh in relief. I looked at him wondering if we spent all night like this , cuddled against each other all night long with his arm hooked firmly on mine . I found myself leaning into him , resting weight against his solid chest , i let my cheek press on the top of his arm as he shielded me with another wrapped around me . He snored like a bear , with his eye lids covering his eyeballs , beautiful long lashes with bushy



black brows. Could anyone be this beautifully perfect, i lifted my hand slowly too careful to not wake him up , pleased to rest it on his face and touch his skin . As my hand approached his skin just inches before i could finally get the chance to hold him after days of separation and no affection, he opened his eyes . I held my forehead and moaned.

Me: My head , oh god.

Alpha : ( yawning) Is it sore? I'll get you headache pills in the medicine cabinet.

He got up unwrapping his arms around me for a moment i felt like telling him to not get up so we lie in bed one more time on a more prolonged moment were time suspense and definitely as i lay my hand on his chest and hear his heart beat for one more time i'll be okay. He sat up on the bed wiping his face stretching his arms.

Alpha : I'll go check up on Junior first then make you some coffee

Me: No need too go make coffee I'll go check on him , before you go can you please help me with the dress zip , this dress is squeezing me.

I got up from the bed and turn around, my body was squeezed in this dress , it was so tight i don't even know how i manage to sleep all night long with it on. He stood behind me and

unzipped the dress. I held the dress against my boobs as the shoulders slipped off , it was a quiet and awkward moment for the both of us .

Alpha: There you go , I'll be downstairs .

Me: How did i end up in your bed?

Alpha : We came home late so i couldn't let the nanny leave at that hour you were drunk so i laid you here , i didn't touch you inappropriately if you wondering.

Me: Thank you i hope i didn't strain your back.

Alpha: You were heavy but I'm okay.

Me: Was i that drunk? Did i hurt someone ?

Alpha: I don't believe you did , no you didn't.

He took out a t-shirt and sweatpants wore them and walked out the room . I walked out his room to mine , the nanny was up already she was holding Junior feeding him his morning bottle for today i won't be breastfeeding him i drank alcohol a lot last night.

Nanny: Morning.

Me: Morning, thank you so much for guarding him while we were asleep.

Nanny: The is no problem Mem .

Me: You must want to go home , uhmm i will inform Alpha about your payment.

I took off the dress and wore my gown taking Junior off her hands. She collected her things and we walked downstairs. Alpha was making coffee , he really knew how to work the kitchen just not for preparing meals maybe coffee or blending his smoothies that's what he actually knew how to make .

Nanny: I will be on my way now.

Alpha : I will transfer your payment in your account.

Nanny: Thank you, my uber is waiting for me outside, bye.

Me: Bye , thank you.

She walked towards the door . I sat down on the chair , he handed me headache pills and a glass of water .

Alpha: You should set an appointment for a full body check up for Junior.

Me : Why? He is not sick?

Alpha: His sleeping levels are alarming Amara , most 1 month babies don't sleep all day long, he is no longer a new born.

Me : I see nothing wrong with Junior, Alpha babies sleep all the time, that's how they grow .

Alpha: We not taking that chances you are not a doctor, we

have to get professional opinion about this.

Me: Why would you think our son is sick because he sleeps to much?

Alpha: Maybe he has autism.

Me: Are you being serious? Autism in a 1 month baby.

Alpha: I know it's mad but we have to acknowledge this , other babies usually are able to murmur try pronouncing vowels, they baby talk , they giggle or when you call their name they look at you because they acknowledge you calling to them , we don't even get the chance to talk to him because his sleeping, plus he likes cuddling. Babies suffering with Autism like cuddling.

Me: ( laughing) You are being silly Alpha , i like cuddling too does that mean i have autism too?

Alpha: Can you be a concerned parent for once in your life and stop laughing or making jokes , you should be paying attention to your child noticing his behavior pattern and i say our son is way more introverted to be a baby . Babies cry , i don't hear Junior crying , his too quiet.

Me: Okay fine , i will set an appointment with a doctor.

Alpha: No don't, i don't want my child checked by Jaden , i will set the appointment and let you know , for now i want us to discuss a sleeping routine for him , how many hours he should

sleep and keep him active in a long period of time let it be he is watching cartoons.

Someone woke up in parenting mode. But i didn't understand what a month old baby would understand in watching cartoons that will just cause eye problems for him. Junior is a baby , why couldn't he understand that? He will sleep throughout his period being a baby and when he begins to crawl , walk and actually be able to pronounce words like Mama and papa , that's when we will watch the symptoms of Autism that he claims our son has , i wasn't sure if he was scared of having a child with Autism or was he afraid of the stigma that will come with " A Smith child can not get sick " even if Junior has autism it won't make any difference , he will still remain our baby boy.

Me : I Don't believe Junior has Autism, it's just him being a baby not all children have to cry all the time, but now that you insist on having him get checked up , then fine .

Alpha: I have to go get ready for work. Any improvements in getting a job.

Me : I have applied in multiple companies just waiting for my phone to ring off the hook.

Alpha: okay goodluck on that then you should consider getting a nanny too for Junior.

Me: Why do i feel like you don't want me to work? You want

me to be a house baby mama that depends on you for everything.

Alpha: I don't find anything funny with that, mean i got money you can everything you want , you and Junior, you want a car ? You getting a car , you want to renovate the house and make it more homely for your liking ? Go right ahead all the cost will be covered. You are the mother of my child after all.

He picked up his coffee mug and walked upstairs , did he just offer to buy me a car ? Renovate the house , i looked around the house and smiled . I placed Junior on the table and looked at him smiling . He just looked at me as i gazed into his eyes , he quickly moved his eyes away from me gazing over my shoulder. No , my child can't have autism , his just a baby and babies have running eyes thats how they adapt to an environment by browsing the room and noticing things , my baby is not sick.

MUTE

I woke up and yawned turning my face to her , she blinked prettily , hiding a yawn behind her hand. I could tell she has been awake for a while now . Something bubbled up inside of me as i remembered last night , last night was steaming hot , we had sex almost all night long each taking charge as we fucked the hell out of one another . Wanted some morning's too but in pity i just figured she pussy would probably need a breather, her member has been taking dick all night i had to be

considerate even though i couldn't get enough of thrusting in and out of her we could have sex everyday. She rested her hand on my thigh and smiled .

Abby: Morning tiger.

Me: Morning.

Abby: I'm so tired, i just want us to stay in bed the whole day and rest.

Me: That won't be possible i have work to do.

Abby: What kind of work do you do anyways? You always have work to do but never say what you do.

I got up from the bed picking up my boxers from the floor, i wore them looking down at her on the bed.

Me: It's just work.

Abby: Is it illegal work? Like what Cohen does for my dad? Cause you don't want to tell me how you make a living.

Me: Ask me no question about my work, i will tell you no lies.

Abby: But baby i figured we are a couple now so we will tell each other about our lives , you know everything about my life but i know nothing about yours , why are you so uptight about yourself ? I want you too open up to me .

I looked at her and chuckled walking inside the bathroom and

had a shower , why the sudden curiosity on what i do for a living , she was beginning to make me doubt our affair , made me think maybe she is her father's spy , coming to suck information out of me but for her information she is getting nothing from me . Pop's didn't get a chance to tell me about the job at the conference. I will need to first drop by at home before going to the warehouse . We were back in business now and i had to get my socks up , as for Abby i enjoyed having her around i just don't like how she be questioning my life . Mean I'm giving her my time , brought her into my home giving her access to me many girls be dying to have , she must be satisfied with that and stop demanding to much of me. I got dressed and wore my leather jacket.

Me: You should get up so i drop you off at home.

Abby: It's fine you can go right ahead, i will clean up and get an uber home .

I nodded my head and walked out the room , i took off a painting on the wall and opened my safe taking out my gun , i inserted bullets in and placed it in my hip hiding the safe. There was about 500k in my safe and gun magazine's and a box of bullets , my password was hard to crack, i was the only one that could gain access in that safe. I walked out the house and walked downstairs too my car and drove out.

GRACE



Ever since Jaden paid Amara a visit he has been in a good mood , i looked at him packing his doctors bag and lunch box whistling.

Me: Baby , can i steal a minute of your time please.

Jaden: Ofcourse Ma.

Me: Come seat down.

He sat down besides me , i held his hands and looked at him.

Jaden: What is going on?

Me: Tell me my boy and please be honest okay.

Jaden: okay.

Me: Are you attracted to Amara?

His facial expression changed , he couldn't even look me in the eyes.

Jaden: ( fakes a laugh) Where is all this coming from now Ma ?

Me: be honest with yourself and your heart . It's good to have feelings for someone, it's good to love them and it's even great to actually want them to be happy and wish you could make them happy, i have no problem with that , i know you are a great man and i know you would actually love Amara rightfully and make her happy. But baby you need to understand you can't force Amara to be with you by badmouthing the father of

her child. To Amara , Alpha is what is right , she is devoted to him , his exciting to her and nothing draws a woman better than a dangerous man that is just mysterious and keeps her on toes . Woman tend to crave what is toxic than what is good for her .

Jaden: So you saying I'm boring? You saying i can't be exciting?

Me: That's not what i mean my son.

Jaden: What exactly do you mean Ma , you think i can't go against Alpha? I actually think you are degrading me , you don't think I'm man enough to actually make your granddaughter happy and you know what i will prove you wrong.

He got up from the table and took his bag and car keys.

Me: Jaden i didn't mean it like that , all i am saying is that you won't be able to create a life with Amara while Alpha is still in her life , she will always find her way back into his arms and that is going to break your heart .

Jaden : We will see about that , when i bring Amara home not just as my girlfriend but as my wife , i will make her something Alpha never dare to do and that is to do what is right by Amara, make her a married woman , love and treasure her. I'm off to work.

He walked out the house and i just couldn't help but let out a

laugh. Jaden was really inlove with Amara , but why didn't he say something all this while ? I did suspect he might actually fall for her when she was here but i figured it will just be a crush and blow over . Being Freak Amara would actually be good with Jaden and they'd build a strong healthy family and home together , at the same time it wasn't my choice to make.

STEVE

Mute walked in the house and we sat down out in the patio having coffee. I woke up in a really good today . He picked up the mug and had his coffee , i looked at him as smiled as his skin was radiating. Alpha walked in the patio too , he sat down and poured himself some coffee.

Alpha: Just what i needed.

Me: What do these ladies say ? Oh yeah , Mute is glowing this morning .

Mute: ( chuckles ) What ! No Pop's come on.

Alpha: His even blushing , i suspect he has a girlfriend.

Me: Do you son?

Mute: ( breathes in) Well the is a woman I'm seeing and she's been worth my while.

Alpha : ( laughs) Worth your while , mhh i see.

Me: Do we know her?

Mute: Yes you both do .

Alpha : So are we going to play this guessing game or you will just tell us what is going on?

Mute: It's Abbygail Hughes.

Alpha: Huh? ( laughs)

Alpha couldn't stop laughing, my mood just dropped , i went from floating freely in the sky to dropping from Kilimanjaro in about a few seconds , what the hell is going on with the boys of this family and always falling for the wrong women ? Why do they fall inlove with women that are not acceptable in our family. Alpha looked at me still laughing.

Alpha : Watch how he will explored , the is a lecture coming your way on how you shouldn't be inlove you are going to get weak , on how you will lack on your work.

Me: I am not going to lecture any of you on your love lives, you can be with anyone you want as long as you won't jeopardize our business , that's all i want from you.

Alpha : Oh i see , but when i was inlove and pleaded with you that i only wanted to be loved , you fought me tough guy , you came with every gun blazing shooting me down .

Me: Son i thought we made it pass that , can we please stop

drooling over the past

Alpha: What Past Pop's? Past the fact you stole me away from the mother of my child when we were about to welcome our son , you stole the feeling we should've had together holding our new born baby , is the past I'm drilling on ? Past the fact you made me lose the most precious time i should have had with Amara ? No tell me , what we have made it past? You never gave me a chance to be happy? It was you and now it's your ? You know i find it hard to actually believe you two are really my parents? How do you break your own flesh and blood like this? Why does me being happy kill you so much that you try so hard and even turns to make sure I'm miserable? Well then tell your wife to rest assured , these nothing going on between me and Amara , we sleep in separate rooms , i can't even touch her , wrap my arms around her willingly without feeling I'm actually violating her , you have been with Ma all these years while she wasn't happy being with you , i don't want that for Amara , i don't want to her to turn out and be just like my Mother , being unhappy for years with me , i just wanted a normal love life , where laundering money doesn't exist , where being Thee Alpha Smith a business man with billions that has to be ruthless and self centered doesn't matter , i wanted to walk in a loving home filled with warmth , love care , meet my loving wife and baby and wrap them in my arms and tell them in loved them so much. But screw that , I'm a

Smith i don't deserve all that. ( chuckles) let me not bore you with my sob story , congratulations Mute , i hope your Pop's doesn't your joy cause they usually advantage when you let them.

He smiled and got up from the chair , that was actually the first time Alpha really gave me heartfelt mouthful of words , he really opened up about how he felt and it broke my heart to see my boy this hurt .

Me: Alpha please seat down so we talk about this.

Alpha: ( yelling) Talk about what ? You bastard ! You drugged me ! You erased my memory!

Nandi walked outside so did the whole house of maids and gaurds.

Mute: Alpha calm down please.

Alpha: You better shut up ! Cause i know you knew everything! You planned it with him ! You Judas Iscariot , you know everything that happens in his life , you are his lap dog !

Nandi: Honey what is wrong? What is going on please talk to us.

Alpha : Oh there she is , Our very own Royal her Majesty. Know what both of you are not worth getting me angry , I'll just walk out that door , You both deserve each other.

Nandi: For how long will you keep running away from us? Why can't you help us make things right between us , i want to be there for you my child , i really do , i love you and i am so sorry if i made things worse between you and Amara , i was just trying to protect you , i was trying to be your mom.

He just clicked his tongue and walked out just left us outside exiting the room.

Nandi : You see what i was talking about ? You need to fix this ! Till you remove those things from our house we will keep fighting each other till we kill one another !

The maids dispersed going back to their work . I was beginning to believe Nandi , maybe if i remove the body, peace will reign between me and my son . I still didn't know Alpha knew what i did , he knew all along i drugged him and he never said anything, he never showed any hatred or signs to want revenge. This means i was dealing with a very dangerous person, he laughed with me , called me Pop's countless times while he knew i was the reason he mistreated Amara , I'm the reason Amara never got to see her child after birth, i took her child and made her suffer watching her child and Alpha bond with another woman.

Mute: Pop's are you fine?

Me: I'm good boy , I'm just trying to process what just

happened but I'm fine.

Mute: I think i will have to go have a word with Alpha.

Me: No don't, give him space and time , his angry so he needs time , all we have to do is give him time.

Mute: About the job you wanted me to do, what is it ? So i get to it.

Me: I will get back to you about the job , for now give me space , i need to think.

He got up and left , i laid back on the chair searching myself about what Alpha was prepared to do with all this , now that i know he knows , i will have to be ready for him . Alpha is not really a forgetful person nor does he like being betrayed, i raised that boy and i believe he will come back to get me and when he finally does , he will bite hard , i have to be ready .

COHEN

I sat outside Alpha's yard scouting the yard , A car pulled up at a front yard as a elderly woman got out , I looked at her as she approached the gate and a security gaurd walked to her they talked for a while . A woman carrying a baby walked out the houss , i looked at her as she stood at the drive way and she and the woman hugged . That must be Alpha's baby mamma and his son . I looked at her as she smiled at the woman she is really curved no wonder Drew is laying crippled



in hospital, i licked my lips looking at her as they walked into the house together . The gaurd looked across to my car, i lowered my chair so he doesn't see my face but i could see him , he opened up the gate i peeked a little i could see he was coming to me direction cause his eyes were fixated on my car , i closed the windows and revved my car driving off . I couldn't give out my identity i just had to find a way to make money for the boss and fast .He was really drowning , i could see desperation in his eyes to have money and no one wanted to buy the guns , they said we were too expensive. I have been working with Thabo for years now and developed a bond . I wanted to help him even though this plan came with great danger but it was a simple plan that came with a lot of money , if i get this right i will be able to cash in big money, a cut for me and the boss . Alpha is rich , that boy is filthy rich and a man would do anything to save his family.

72

ALPHA

Junior needed his milk bottle , i sat with him for 30 minutes top , trying to put him back to sleep again . He just stared into my eyes sucking his bottle , i felt so tired i was just up for a shower and then go to bed and sleep but my son wasn't prepared to sleep anytime soon from now.

Me: Why are you not sleeping champ? What's the problem talk

to daddy.

He stuck out his tongue pushing the milk bottle out of his mouth . I laid him on his side patting his back for a burp.

Amara: Is he still up?

Me: Yes , guess his not sleepy today.

Amara: He should be , he didn't sleep the whole day.

Me: Did you breastfed him? Maybe he wants breast milk .

Amara: No , I'll begin tomorrow when the alcohol is out of my system .

She hugged me from behind wrapping her arms around my neck , i kissed her arm countless times.

Me: I'm sure he will fall asleep eventually.

Amara: Been thinking about what you said of making the house feel homely but at the same time an idea crossed my mind.

Me: Okay , what is the idea?

Amara : Why don't we host a party for Junior.

Me: A party? I never had a party.

Amara: we'll call it his milestone party, we will be thanking god for trusting us with him and for bring us together each and every time we fall out.

Me: Oh that sounds expensive.

Amara: It does ? I figured it won't cost you too much .

Me: I'm joking sweetheart, that's actually a good idea a milestone for our baby boy , you can go ahead and make preparations for everything I agree on everything you will be choosing .

Amara: Yes , and we could invite friends and family and we all rejoice with Junior not a lot of babies actually reach 1 month surviving and the fact he never fell sick after birth in the condition he was born in is tremendously amazing.

Me : Second you , he really is a strong boy but still we are getting him checked up.

Amara: Yeah he will be , if that's what his father wants.

I got up and wrapped my arms around her , smiling.

Me: You know Junior is no longer seeking attention, his calm.

Amara: I can see that , so what do you actually have in mind .

Me: I don't know maybe we could cuddle against each other naked and if you like we could get nasty , dirty you name it.

Amara: We should jump right into it.

Me: I think so too.

We got on the bed and laid down , her black messy afro laying

on my pillow . Facing her one on one with my eyes locked in her brown glittering eyes , i brushed my cock inbetween her legs , squeezing on her panties so she feels my erection. I laid my head on her chest kissing her neck bones , leaving wet trails on her body , i kissed her lips , felt a tougue sneak in my mouth , light sensual breathing fills the gaps between each kiss. The kissing stops for brief moments , stripping each other naked , she kept breathing , moaning with sharp exhales . We were left naked on the bed , my body on hers , i lifted her legs placing it on my waist so i she couldn't move an inch under me , i had her on lock down , no running away from me . She placed her hands behind my neck pulling me down to her lips for her kiss ,her tongue wrap around mine the trace amounts of saliva from each one combining to escalate the trangling feeling against each other. I pull away from her , panting heavily , my hand made it's way up her thighs into , i brushed against her coochie inserting two fingers in her , she moaned. I stared down to her face underneath me , i gazed into her beautiful lively brown eyes as she struggled breathing , her chest raising and dropping. I took my fingers out Swirling the body fluids on her clit , excessively wet she is and i was getting more and more horny by the second , now was no time for hesitations. We both stared at each other , lips parted wondering what to do next , i just felt like apologizing to her over and over again , can say i learnt my lesson i don't want no woman to ever feel like

she has access to me , only my momma had the access to me in whatever way she wanted i will bend over backwards for her , i looked at her about to talk to her , she didn't give me a chance to say a word ruthlessly attacking me with her mouth. Our lips connected again smooth lips slithering her wetness against mine. She grabbed my body pushing me down to the bed happily i fell on the bed , she climbed ontop of me and vicariously hugs me , effectively pinning me to the bed , she sat on top of my erected cock which is hard as a rock. I could feel the outline of her pussy on the base of my penis , i groaned sighing heavily .

Me: ( groaning ) fuck me !

I commanded to her with my head sinked in the pillow as i tried to control my groaning . She rested her thighs , squeezing me inbetween her feminine child bearing hips , she held my cock straight up and sat on it positioning the tip gently at the at the base of her entrance . She lowers herself onto me only the tip enters her , she closed her eyes and moaned.

Amara: Ohhh my word.

She stopped for a bit , i freezed under her abounding surges of pleasure rocketing through my body . The warmth and wet coochie wrapped around my cock made me struggle breathing if i was incharge I'd be pumping the shit out of her but i just wanted her to feel in control this time around , i

wanted her to blow me away. She pressed herself down i held her waist helping her push down. Fuck , it's so hot and wet inside. The tight walls pressed against me with their sodden grip , it's a sensation that cannot be rivaled. She pushes her waist forward several times holding ontop my chest getting a feel of me. She tested the waters before she roughly rides me , after that she shows no remorse actively rams up and down around my dick , i seemingly reach new depth in me in every stroke she takes , she dropped her head backwards looking up , loud moaning and light screams escaping her lips her hands travelling my whole body not knowing where to place them , i held both anchoring her besides my shoulder , she leaned down closer to me and continues hopping on me. Amara's breaths become ragging , she bite her lower lip , closed her eyes takes constant breaths , all this happening infront of my face. I grabbed Amara by the hips assisting her smacking her down as her pussy took all my length she jumped up closing in her thighs

Amara: ( screaming) Ahh !

looks like i stroked in way too deep , she let out deep breath smiling .

Me: Sorry , are you okay.

Amara: I'm fine , it just poked in unexpectedly painful.

Me: Okay , i won't hold you.

I took my hands off her placing them behind my head. She penetrated herself again as i slowly entered her pussy. Her butt bounced against my cock we excitedly continue mating , i looked at her biting my lip.

Me: God i want to marry you, i want to make you my wife. I'm not saying this because I'm enjoying your pussy but i want you to be wife , let's get married tomorrow.

I held her playfully tossing her face down on bed lifting her booty up to me , kneeling before her round booty , aggressively smacking her bum cheek , she raised her head , i held her hair and pinning her head against the pillow. Spat on my hand and brushed the spit on her vagina , that was prominently placed inbetween the curvaceous bum cheeks , i pressed on her head and back down on the bed penetrating inside , she gripped on the sheets. I moved in thrusting, penetrating, charging in , her virginal juices dripping onto my dick sinking in deep , the further i go the warmer it gets and the faster i wanted to ejaculate , her bum cheeks jiggled slightly as i spanked her

Amara: ( crying out) Aah !

Far more aroused she dugged her head into my pillow hands clinching desperately to the pillows as i fucked her from

behind , grabbed her bum cheek spreading them apart , her body was shaking , coochie vibrating , she lifted up her head and placed her hands on her mouth.

Amara: ( whispering) I'm cumming ( heavily breathing) ohh lord! Oh my god.

She crossed her legs , i stroked her gently . Her body tightened up , her vaginal walls closing up on my cock . Just like that , i stroked her tight pussy laying down on her back , allowing her to cum , she went silent for a while hanging tightly in the pillow and exhaled , gasping for air. I stroked her feeling the wet cum on my abdomen as i laid on her butt , thrusting in and out , my tip was hot, i reached down brushing my balls as i was reaching orgasm , with electric pulse choking my body sending pleasure throughout my veins. I clinged tightly onto her desperately fucking her , the sperm were coming i could feel them. It took one last stroke and i lost it , curling my toes I held her tightly ejaculating deep inside , i shot it hot , hitting the bulls eyes. Her hips tremble and quake as semen fills her tight little pussy. My cock throbs repeatedly realising load after load. I exhaled swallowing saliva to wet my dry throat , i pulled out dropping weight on the bed as i took deep breaths intensively my heart speeding in my chest , she cuddled up against me , i wrapped my arms around her and kissed her forehead. She longingly gazed at me , we were both exhausted and feeling relieved ,



lightly panting with our mouth agape . Amara's soft breaths bouncing off my face , i wasn't annoyed , I'm very much enjoying inhaling her warm breath , enjoying how close we are.

Amara : I'll go get us some water..

I hanged on tightly to her.

Me: I don't want water , i want you, let's fall asleep in each others arms.

Amara: ( smiling) You are low key simp.

Me: I'll be a simp , I'll be goofy , I'll be anything you want me to be.

Amara: I'm so tired in a good way.

She laid her head on my chest and closed her eyes. My phone beeped, i stretched out my hand and checked the notification , i had work to do , had to send Mr Rodriguez's ads how could i forget. I got up from the bed .

Amara: Baby where you going?

Me: I'll be downstairs , i have an email to send, I'll be with you shortly okay.

She covered her body with the sheet , i picked up my boxers and checked on Junior. He eventually fell asleep , i hope he was asleep throughout the intimate moment i had with his mom ,

Junior is a baby his still blind to things like these we shouldn't be worried about him hearing sex sounds. I walked towards and got my laptop.

[ THE FOLLOWING MORNING ]

LOGAN

I tossed and turned the whole night could barely keep my eyes closed. I got up and brushed my eye getting off the bed , i really didn't know what to do with myself, or what was keeping me up the whole night. I took my phone and browsed through social media laying on my side. I got a call from Abby , excitedly i picked up my phone and placed it on my ear.

Me: Sister.

Abby: Morning, how are you?

Me: I'm doing fine and yourself ? How is Ma ?

Abby: She is okay , she has too be. I called you because i wanted you to come over at my place at 4 oclock i have someone i want you and Ma to know.

Me: Oh , who is it?

Abby: My man.

Me: You lie ! When?

Abby: It's not a question of when it's about what i am feeling

and how i feel about that , that's reason enough right?

Me: Uhm who am i too say No ! I will surely come over.

Abby: I can't wait for him to meet you guys , his been nothing but a great lover to me , Logan i think i love him.

Me: Oh my word, i am so happy for you unlike me my life is just a complete mess ( sobbing) you know Abby , i ruined my life for him and do you know the thanks i got ? He threw me out his office like a used toilet paper.

I held my mouth and cried , closing my eyes.

Abby: Log please don't do this to yourself, please my darling sister, you need to understand Alpha wasn't yours from the start, what you were doing with Alpha wasn't right from the start, i told you this would end up badly you are going to get your feeling hurt not him , because you know what? He knows Amara will be home waiting for him , he knows were his heart lies . You brought this on you , you knew exactly who he is , Alpha doesn't give a damn about you , he made you special for the two mintue he did just so he gets something out of you . You were stupid enough to believe the was actually something happened between you two.

Me: ( sobbing) I really am stupid

I cried out loud with tears streaming down my cheeks . Abbygail is right , i am a fool , i was stupid and in my stupidity i lost my

bond with my father, i broke his heart , I am a very bad daughter, i failed my father , i failed my family.

AMARA

Alpha : wakey wakey sleepy head.

I opened my eyes as countless kisses landed on my face. I covered my face and smiled.

Me : Stop it I'm awake , (yawning) what time is it?

Alpha: Breakfast time.

I sat up and a tray of breakfast was laid on my thighs. I smiled to myself picking up the single daisie on the tray , i sniffed it and smiled looking at him , he was carrying Junior, even Junior was up already? Did i oversleep?

Me: What the hell is going on?

Alpha: Can't i wake my baby up with some fresh breakfast with coffee , i figured you will need some strength after last night. ( winks) But let's not get into details we have a baby in the room.

Me: I figured you will say that.

He sat down next to me holding Junior against his chest. I picked up the mug having a sip on the sweet creamy coffee. I looke at him and smiled , i am so happy , no words could describe how i was feeling , i wanted this , i wanted us to be like

this , happy and together, i just wanted us to lock the world out of our lives and just live here , just the three of us and pretend like we were the only people surviving in the world . But i just knew that was impossible , we have to go out , we to meet people. I placed my hand on his cheek and smiled with a glimpse of tears in my eye balls.

Me: Please don't you ever break us apart again , please don't cheat on me , i love you so much Alpha. Don't ever be reckless about us ever again.

He wiped my tears and held my hand kissing my fingers.

Alpha : I promise , this time will be different, we will be different. It's you and i against the world.

He kissed my hand again looking at me with his mesmerizing black eyes , i just hope he really means what he saying , i pray he really is going to treat me better this time around, cause if he slips and makes a mistake , i'm afriad i won't be coming back to him. I will force myself to leave him , force my heart and mind to forget about. I looked at Junior and held his small fist kissing it .

Me: Morning Pappa ? Where are you going? Why are you up so early?

Alpha: Tell her she is the one that's up late .

I had a bite on the food and drank from my mug.

Me: Shouldn't you be going to work?

Alpha: I am but i wanted you to get enough sleep before i go to work , as for your pappa he is just troublesome, i don't know how you manage to look after him the whole day , you woman deserve a medals each and every year for this mothering thing.

He laid Junior on the bed and walked into the bathroom still speaking. I whispered to Junior

Me: Hear that your father said you very troublesome , are you? No you definitely not , you are mommy's angel .

I kissed his cheek and picked him up laying him on my chest , he buried his head in my boobs and cried.

Me: What do you want Junior?

He continued crying , i should breastfeed him he probably misses breast milk , i placed him on my arm and took breastfed him. Leaching on , he sucked on me aggressively , hanging on my nipple. I can't wait for him to reach two months so i stopped breastfeeding him.

Alpha : have you ever thought of having your own business.

Me: My own business no i haven't even thought of that because i don't have funding , know Rose wanted to have a boutique, like dress people and sell clothes to them so they look beautiful, she was a hairstylist, she loved to see people

happy and beautiful.

He walked out the bathroom and took out his suit from the wodrope.

Alpha: Then open up a boutique in her memory.

Me: I know why you doing all this.

Alpha: What? I'm doing what any husband with money would do for their wife.

Me: I am not even your wife .

Alpha: You are , we don't have to be legally married to be husband and wife , i married you spiritually a while ago woman.

Me: That even doesn't make sense.

Alpha: If you wanted it to , it would. So what do you say about the boutique?

Me: The boutique is a great idea i like it.

Alpha: I'll finance everything.

Me: Let's call it an investment.

Alpha: Why do you like negotiating?

Me: I'll give you 50% share of the boutique.

Alpha : 15 is enough, the other share will be given to our little partner Junior Smith.

He fastened his waist belt applying his cufflinks and deodorant. I watched him get dressed and finish off his handsome wear with brushing his head.

Me: You look handsome.

Alpha : ( chuckles) Really? Too handsome or just handsome?

Me: Too handsome.

Alpha: Can i go out looking like this?

Me: Yes you can , i giving you permission too.

He walked over the bed and kissed me , he place a black card on my thighs.

Alpha : I'm off to work, I'll see you two when i get back , i love you guys.

He walked out the door.

Me: Have a good day honey.

I looked Junior and sighed. It was just us two again. But i just had a feeling my day is going to be good. I will have to call Grace and infrom her about my party plan's for Junior maybe she might help me with taking care with Junior as i ran my errands.

MUTE

I drove to the house for breakfast, i also wanted to have a word



with Pop's , i got off my Jeep and locked it.

Security: Mute.

I nodded my head and walked inside the house , they were sitting in the breakfast table arguing, i could see from Nandi's facial expression that the conversation they were having was serious. I walked in the room and they kept quiet , Nandi got up and walked out the room.

Me: Pop's.

Steve: ( sighs) Son , take a seat have breakfast.

Me: What is going on ? What are you and Alpha's mom arguing about?

Steve: Nothing serious or that you should worry about .

I took the juice jar and poured myself some juice dishes fruit salad for myself.

Me: We are already in business.

Steve: That's good and Alpha have you seen him?how is he?

Me: I last saw Alpha yesterday, i haven't spoken to him or made contact with him .

Steve: Why not his your brother, you should check up on him !

Me: You said i should give him space and I'm doing just that.

Steve: Not too much space.

Me: I think it's about time you actually sat down with Alpha and got rid of this beef , maybe apologize Pop's and try to fix things, i can't be at the edge of you guys everytime you have a fall out cause you heard what Alpha said , he said I'm a hypocrite and you know i knew nothing about you taking Alpha's son and erasing his memory.

Steve: Give him time , he will come back to his sense.

I laid back on the chair and laughed , i shifted to the edge of the seat .

Me: Time passing is not an apology.

Steve: So what now i should go on my knees and beg Alpha to forgive me ? That is not going to happen boy ! I raised him , i natured him , i fathered that boy ! I will not have him climb ontop of my head , we will not dance to Alpha's tune ! For how long will we keep drilling on past things , Megan is off the way ! He is with Amara so the fuck what ? He is so fixated in this fairytale life this girl planted in his head it makes my stomach turn ! It sickens me !

Me: Wait ! What do you mean when you said Megan is off the way.

He got up tossing the napkin on the table , he looked at me then stormed out the room.

Me: What ( pauses) ...the hell is going on in this house?  
goddamn it !

I sat down and stretched my head , laying back on the chair my  
phone beeped it was a text from Abbygail

[ baby , can you please come by my flat at 4 or 5 , i want to  
discuss something with you XOXO]

I just looked at the text and placed my phone in my pocket. I  
should just go to the warehouse. I picked up my car keys and  
walked out.

To be continued.

I think it's time they tied the knot, what do you guys says?